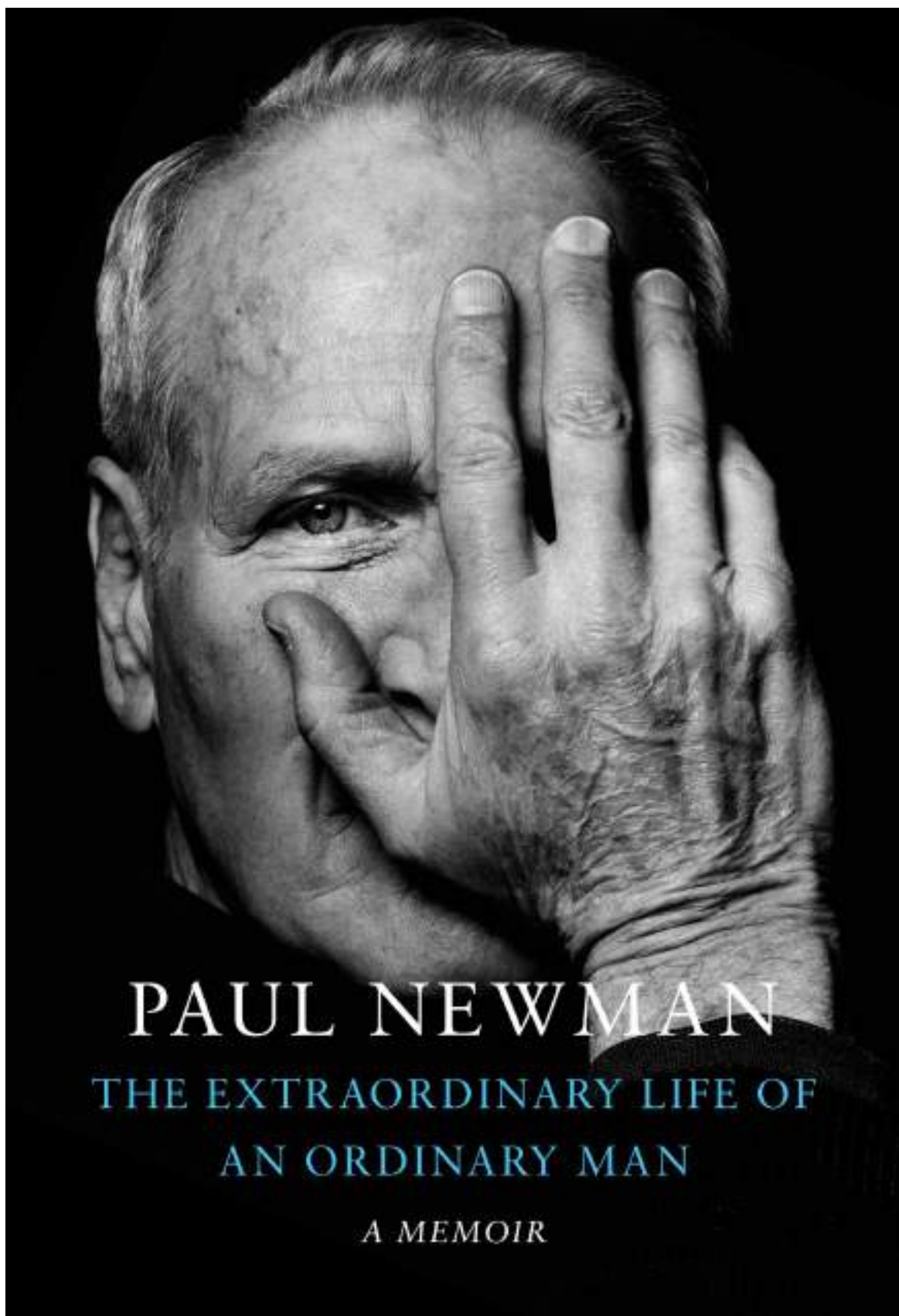


A black and white close-up portrait of Paul Newman. He is looking directly at the camera with a serious expression. His right hand is raised, with his fingers spread, partially covering his forehead and the right side of his face. The lighting is dramatic, highlighting the texture of his skin and the lines on his hand. The background is dark and out of focus.

PAUL NEWMAN
THE EXTRAORDINARY LIFE OF
AN ORDINARY MAN

A MEMOIR



PAUL NEWMAN
THE EXTRAORDINARY LIFE OF
AN ORDINARY MAN

A MEMOIR



THE
EXTRAORDINARY LIFE
OF AN
ORDINARY MAN

• A MEMOIR •

PAUL NEWMAN

BASED ON INTERVIEWS AND ORAL HISTORIES CONDUCTED BY

Stewart Stern

COMPILED AND EDITED BY

David Rosenthal

FOREWORD BY

Melissa Newman

AFTERWORD BY

Clea Newman Soderlund



ALFRED A. KNOPF • NEW YORK

2022

THIS IS A BORZOI BOOK PUBLISHED BY ALFRED A. KNOPF

Copyright © 2022 by Joanne Woodward Newman

All rights reserved. Published in the United States by Alfred A. Knopf, a division of Penguin Random House LLC, New York, and distributed in Canada by Penguin Random House Canada Limited, Toronto.

www.aaknopf.com

Knopf, Borzoi Books, and the colophon are registered trademarks of Penguin Random House LLC.

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS CATALOGING-IN-PUBLICATION DATA

Names: Newman, Paul, 1925–2008 author. | Stern, Stewart, interviewer. | Rosenthal, David, [date] compiler editor.

Title: The extraordinary life of an ordinary man : a memoir / Paul Newman ; interviews and oral histories conducted by Stewart Stern ; compiled and edited by David Rosenthal.

Description: First edition. | New York : Alfred A. Knopf, 2022. | Includes index.

Identifiers: LCCN 2022008087 | ISBN 9780593534502 (hardcover) | ISBN 9780593534519 (ebook)

Subjects: LCSH: Newman, Paul, 1925–2008. | Newman, Paul, 1925–2008—Interviews. | Newman, Paul, 1925–2008—Friends and associates. | Motion picture actors and actresses—United States—Biography.

Classification: LCC PN2287.N44 A3 2022 | DDC 791.430/28092 [B] —dc23/eng/20220217
LC record available at <https://lccn.loc.gov/2022008087>

Ebook ISBN 9780593534519

A select few names have been changed either due to inability to confirm a memory or to protect them from a subjective observation.

Cover photograph by Bruce Davidson / Magnum Photos
Cover design by John Gall

ep_prh_6.0_141619437_c0_r0

Contents

[Cover](#)

[Frontispiece](#)

[Title Page](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Dedication](#)

[Epigraph](#)

[Foreword](#)

[Introduction](#)

[Chapter I](#)

[Chapter II](#)

[Chapter III](#)

[Chapter IV](#)

[Chapter V](#)

[Chapter VI](#)

[Chapter VII](#)

[Chapter VIII](#)

[Chapter IX](#)

[Chapter X](#)

[Chapter XI](#)

[Chapter XII](#)

[Chapter XIII](#)

[Chapter XIV](#)

[Afterword](#)

[Editor's Note](#)

[Index](#)

Photographic Credits

A Note About the Authors

This book is dedicated to Stewart Henry Stern

March 22, 1922–February 2, 2015

*Success is what determines the difference between vision and
irresponsibility.*

*If I had to define “Newman” in the dictionary, I’d say: “One
who tries too hard.”*

—PAUL NEWMAN, UNPUBLISHED INTERVIEWS, 1991



PAUL NEWMAN, CIRCA
1929

FOREWORD

In September of 1986, the year he embarked on this project, an article in *The New York Times* described Paul Newman as “a lean 5-foot-11.”

A gossip columnist in the *New York Post* countered that “Anyone who has met Paul face to face says he has never hit 5-foot-11 except in heels” and offered a challenge: “\$1,000 to Newman’s favorite charity or political candidate for every inch he measures over 5-foot-8...barefoot.” Relishing the opportunity to stick it to Page Six, our dad matched it, upped the ante times a hundred and purchased some inversion boots so he could hang upside down for good measure. To our knowledge, the challenge was dropped.

In 1986 we can say with reasonable certainty he measured a solid 5-foot-10. Both papers were wrong.

He had integrity. He also had an abiding preference for privacy, and always felt awkward in interviews. The fact that our father ever considered the book you now hold in your hands seems completely weird to us, but he did keep at it for five years. An offering to the offspring is how he originally thought of it. That and maybe a way to “set the public record straight” after being dogged most of his life by the tabloids. Part confessional, part self-analysis, it’s full of the kinds of revelations that, had they been shared with us sooner, might have made for some deeply meaningful conversations about relationships, identity, luck, and art, and, most likely, some pretty uncomfortable family dinners.

He decided the only possible choice of collaborator would be Stewart Stern, a dear friend, faithful keeper of family secrets, and a breathtaking writer. Probably best known for his screenplay of *Rebel Without a Cause*, he had also penned multiple screenplays for projects that involved both Paul and his second wife, Joanne.

Stewart's adoration of both of them, their collective children, and their children's children made him the kind of adopted relative who intertwined blissfully with the family DNA. Starting in 1986 he threw himself into this new project, passing along the subject's insistence that all the interviewees be as bluntly truthful as they could manage. Close friends and relatives were hired to transcribe. By 1991, however, he and our father seemed to have completely overwhelmed themselves out of it. They were up to their eyeballs in material.

Not much was said after that. After a year's illness (and almost one year exactly from his final win at Lime Rock race track), our father passed away in 2008. He was eighty-three. For us, for what seemed an eternity, the world stopped. There was the inevitable confusion and chaos to be dealt with, and the fog of grief.

Nearly a decade crawled by. Once in a while, the topic of the transcripts would come up. Details were hazy. There had been rumors of a bonfire. Stewart, who at ninety-two was now coming to the end of his own life journey, was desperate to know what happened to them. He wanted them archived at least for posterity. Before the mystery could be solved, he was gone.

We assumed the transcripts were floating around somewhere. Or perhaps not. We wanted to see them...or did we, really? In 2019 we stumbled upon some ancillary interviews in locked file cabinets that had migrated to the damp basement of the family house in Connecticut. Sometime later our friend, producer Emily Wachtel, found the entirety of our father's transcripts as she was archiving a family storage unit. A cursory peek turned into a year-long reading project, and what was revealed felt raw and personal. Fourteen thousand pages in, she suggested it might be interesting to try to finish what was started.

You can read about private jets and red carpets elsewhere. This is definitely not that. Instead, it's sort of a self-dissection, a picking apart of feelings, motives, and motivations, augmented by a Greek chorus of other voices and opinions, relatives, Navy buddies, and fellow artists. One overriding theme is the chronic insecurity which will be familiar to so many artists. Objectivity is fickle. It's difficult for some people to understand, given all that success, how that sense of doubt could be so relentless. Here was someone who suspected himself an impostor, an ordinary man with an extraordinary face and luck on his side, achieving far beyond what he'd set out to do. He always felt it was tenacity, not talent, that saw him through. There were some who dismissed him, but luckily there were also plenty who recognized something remarkable in him long before he did.

And finally, there is the public fairy tale of two Hollywood stars and their blissfully uncomplicated fifty-year marriage, which, besides being bogus, seems unfair to anyone, famous or not, who has ever committed to a romantic relationship. Acknowledge that there were two families, half siblings, and other collateral damage and suddenly the story becomes far more relatable. The mood in the house was unstable, stormy one minute, joyous the next. The truth ultimately gives more credit to the flesh-and-blood couple who weathered all of that drama and betrayal and came out on the other side, battle-scarred but still inexorably intertwined.

It's a cliché for fathers of a certain vintage to be distant or unknowable. Ours was the inevitable sequel to his own frustrated father and all the preceding generations that flailed away at parenting with little or no guidance. This book looks backward from a moment in time. To his lasting credit, our father continued to evolve after these interviews were conducted, contributing some of the best of himself, emotionally, artistically, and altruistically all the way to the end. To suddenly have at our fingertips this encyclopedia of his thoughts and motivations, his conflicts...his context, has been, shall we say, deep. That he speaks about wanting us to know everything is beyond moving.

Melissa Newman

INTRODUCTION

Let's see if we can write a first chapter, then try that with a second chapter, then a third, then a fourth and a fifth...Let's see now: we've got *that* covered, we've got *this* covered—we've got the attitude down, the creation, the drinking and all of the humor and whatever the morality is.

The most ironic thing of all is that one could say at the beginning, like writers do in some biographies, "This is the boy who accomplished this and then that and then grew up to be the prime minister. And now we'll go back and look at the details of how that happened."

But it turns out that this book is just the story of a little boy who became a decoration for his mother, a decoration for her house, admired for his decorative nature. If he had been an ugly child, his mother would not have given him the time of day. If he had had a limp, or an eyelid that drooped, and she stopped to comfort that small invalid beside her, it would have been to satisfy her own sense of needing to comfort something—but nothing actually to do with the boy.

And the boy became so offended by the artificiality of it, and the fact that it did not relate or connect to him in any way, that the core of this kid finally said, "Jesus Christ, take it, it's yours! I'm going to save what's left of me over here."

Then the boy with the decoration just ran away with the football. He was getting everything. He was eating and living well, and he was leaving the the core—the orphan, if you will—in the dust.

But the orphan kept running to catch up with that decorative little shit he so despised, even as the decorative little shit was getting away with all the honors, doing all the plays, grabbing all the encomiums and the praise, and the orphan kept losing ground. He never did catch up until the last few years, and then he said, “Whoa. Wait a second. Let me at least look around and see if I can make any sense out of this.”

I was my mother’s Pinocchio, the one that went wrong.

And I’m still trying today to disentangle my own heart and wants from everyone else around me who are certain they know the answers.

This book came out of the struggle to try and explain it all to my kids. I was thought of as distant and reserved; well, that happened not because other people’s arms were too long but because mine were too short. And as their arms became longer and longer, my own became shorter and shorter: it was a sense of suffocation that happened to me.

I want to leave some kind of record that sets things straight, pokes holes in the mythology that’s sprung up around me, destroys some of the legends, and keeps the piranhas off. Something that documents the time I was on this planet with some kind of accuracy. Probably, in my dotage, I’ll go over it and create an autobiography with some semblance of truth. Because what exists on the record now has no bearing at all on the truth.

That’s all I really want to do.

I'm in my Connecticut house, in the library, sitting by the fire on a formal little couch. I just smoked a joint and remembered with absolute clarity the whole map of my boyhood hometown, Shaker Heights, Ohio. It's all there to be remembered, things I thought were dead and buried, things I never thought I'd recall...

I was born there in 1925. Shaker Heights then was the Cleveland suburb that every other American suburb aspired to become. It was the standard by which other affluent places measured themselves. We lived in a spacious, three-story home on Brighton Road, which was far from the wealthiest stretch in the neighborhood, but we were certainly well-to-do. My father, Arthur, and his brother, Joe (known as J.S., and in his spare time a prolific author of popular doggerel), ran the Newman-Stern sporting-goods company from an imposing corner building downtown; in its category, it was second only to New York's original Abercrombie & Fitch.

Having grown up in Shaker Heights, I can still remember the horse-drawn carriages that pulled the milk wagons or the blocks of ice. Our public schools were considered the best in the United States. There were hundreds of acres of woods, and five little lakes where we'd fish and explore. Safety was never an issue; in summertime, you could spend four days in those woods and nothing would happen to harm you. The most raucous it got was when we kids had a "war"; we'd snatch people's tomato-plant stakes and throw them as spears, defending ourselves with garbage-can lids. It was like a ritual from Papua New Guinea.

All the families were lily white; no foreigners, no Black people, either, amid the quiet streets and estates. The Newmans may have been the first

Jewish family to penetrate Brighton Road. But we were really just like anyone else; we'd hold makeshift circuses in our backyard, selling lemonade, doing fancy tricks on our swings. Young kids my age and that of my older brother, Art Jr., would come to my house and our father would entertain them by telling them made-up stories, starring his creations the ever-adventurous Terry Berry Boys. He'd recount them as a serial, a different chapter every night. And when he was finished, he'd make believe he was a scary animal, and all the neighborhood kids would jump on top of him and wrestle him. He'd cover up, like a boxer; then it would just be over. "That's the end, guys," he'd say, and the children would be ushered back to their own houses while Art and I headed to bed. Of course, Art would always find the time to kick the bejesus out of me, often in what we called "the club"—actually our home's third-floor "attic," where we shared a playroom.

He'd delight in sitting on my back, taking hold of my chin and seeing just how far he could bend back my neck. I think he felt I deserved it, because he thought I was getting all the attention from our mother, Tress, all of her devotion, and that he didn't get more than crumbs. The big difference between Arthur and me was that our different relationships with our mother didn't ultimately bother him. Arthur always thought that of the choices available to him, God had put him in a place where nothing could be better. My brother chose to remember the good things from our childhood, while I best recall the failures and the things that didn't go right.

We spent a lot of time up in our playroom; it's where we did our homework. Art practiced his drums there, too, while I played records on the Victrola and sat in a comfortable chair reading lots of comic books. Our "club" was more congenial than our family's fancy living room downstairs, where no one really did any living. You might say my sense of "decoration" began right there in that carefully furnished showplace. My mother took great pride in how that living room looked; to me, her taste was chilly, sort of what today might be called "Bloomingdale's Modern." Everything was manicured; everything was designed for appearance, not comfort. Early on, she decided to lay down all-black carpeting—and then bought herself a

white Spitz dog because it looked great on the carpet. Of course, whenever the dog moved, he left a trail of white fur.



PAUL AND ARTHUR JR., CIRCA
1929

Next to the living room was a proper dining room, where for years we ate virtually all our meals together; there was rarely any conversation, and the evenings at the table could be painful. Our dining table was inlaid, and always covered with a linen tablecloth. It would be set each night with wonderful china. We'd be sitting there, my father always the last to arrive. He often wore a jacket and tie, though if he'd had the time to change after work, sometimes a bathrobe. Although we had a maid, my mother would

pass the plates around herself, often serving some very simply cooked meat, vegetables, and mashed potatoes. Before beginning, there'd usually be some sort of toast offered by my father; my brother and I would clink our water glasses.

My mother eventually decided she didn't want to keep ironing that linen tablecloth, so she had us move to the much smaller breakfast room off the kitchen for our meals. My father disagreed with that shift, so he continued to eat in the dining room, alone. Dessert would be pudding or cake—my mother was a fine baker—and after that Father would say “Excuse me” and go upstairs to read (he never tired of the *Encyclopaedia Britannica*, which he went through end to end more than once) or to take a nap. Art and I would help with the dishes, then go up to our playroom, cook a batch of popcorn, and drink iced tea or pop.

It was also in the dining room that Art and I would bang our heads against the wall. Literally. We did it in secret until the dent got big enough for my parents to notice. This was not some tippy-toe banging; this was a serious whacking that took down the plaster behind the wall covering. We must have knocked our fucking brains out. It was our own Wailing Wall. I couldn't take my rage out on anybody my size, so I took it out against the wall. Today, it makes me laugh to think of us—these two little guys tapping each other on the shoulder, saying: “My turn.”...“Oh, after you!” Art was bigger, so he probably got the first shot. Since his head was about six inches higher than mine, we never banged at exactly the same spot. (Years later, when I came home after World War II, I checked on the wall and was amazed to see the huge ruptures.)

Our house contained the sounds of constant warfare. It could be a quiet war, like the chunking of knives in human flesh, as surreptitious and stalking as commandos moving silently through the night. It could also be explosive and noisy, which was usually my mother erupting. Or threatening to erupt. We'd sit there waiting for something to go wrong, for somebody to fall off the eggshells and run, waiting for a mistake and the explosion to follow. We'd be in bed, and we'd hear our parents fighting, hollering at each other. I'd hear things breaking. There was one fight where my mother

took a picture down from the wall and broke it over the top of my father's head. It was a pastel of nymphs cavorting nude (which I had examined many times with a magnifying glass). It hung right over the sofa in the living room. My father must have been left walking around with the frame around his shoulders. I'm certain there'd been serious grief, but all I see in my head now are cartoon images of these things.



ARTHUR AND PAUL IN THE MID-
1930S

When I was five years old, America entered its Great Depression. A full 85 percent of the sporting-goods stores in the country went bust in those years, and my father seemed in the depths of despair. We were a luxury store at a time when no one was buying luxury items. Newman-Stern would hold a sale, and whether it was successful or not would determine whether we'd stay open.

At one point, the brothers Newman ran out of cash; I remember my father going to Chicago and getting the Spalding and Wilson companies to extend him \$250,000 worth of merchandise on consignment; my dad had such a fine reputation for integrity, the manufacturers knew they'd eventually get paid back for their goods. It was an extraordinary testament to my dad and my uncle Joe and their code of doing business that they survived the Depression financially intact.

All of us helped out. My father would never let my mother work, but she still let the maid go—and he was furious about this. My mother said, “I’ll clean, and I’ll take the money I was paying the maid and buy the kind of furniture I want.” And she did. She took on all the washing, the mangling, the ironing, purchased new furnishings or reupholstered the old furniture herself, even sewed the drapes and valances. (It was a great source of pride, and a triumph of keeping up appearances, that my father never let our membership lapse at the Jewish country club, the Oakwood.)

I began working in the Newman-Stern stockroom, and as I got a little older, I was moved to the sales floor. I sold all kinds of things: binoculars, balls, tennis gear. I was a good salesman, an honest salesman. If I was selling a guy a bowling ball and he said, “Golly, I really don’t know if I need a new bowling ball,” I’d say, “If you don’t need it, don’t buy it.” I enjoyed working there.

Following World War II, Newman-Stern also carried army surplus. A guy had dropped by peddling crates of leftover Norden bombsights, the futuristic, once-top-secret military device that allowed US planes to accurately drop their payloads on Germany and Japan. This guy couldn’t unload his cumbersome inventory, understandably. You’d see these elaborate contraptions and think, “What can anyone use this thing for?” But

Uncle Joe (who'd studied applied science while in college) and my father began taking the machines apart and figured out the puzzle. There was a segment of the bombsight where if you pushed a little button, a powerful electric motor turned on, and with a little improvisation you could have yourself a relatively inexpensive automatic garage-door opener. There were rheostats that could be repurposed for many critical household uses, and even an early analog computer was built in.

The brothers took a full-page ad in the *Cleveland Plain Dealer* describing how each of the bombsight's thirty-six separate components might be repurposed. For three or four days, you couldn't fight your way into our store. Cleveland's renowned Case School called and bought two entire units for \$2,800 apiece—a tremendous amount of money then. It was bedlam—maybe \$200,000 in revenue for a few days.

Uncle Joe and my father were ebullient. It wasn't so much the money, but that they had taken something that had been offered around everywhere and only they had the vision to see its possibilities. They'd invented a huge success. This was the romance of retailing. And the brothers Newman were romantics.

It hadn't started that way, certainly not for my father. When he was a young man, my father wanted to be a writer; it was really all he wanted to do. Not long after returning from his service in World War I, he became the youngest reporter ever hired by the *Cleveland Press*. But brother Joe seduced him into joining his fledgling sporting-goods business, which originally had specialized in selling electrical-experiment kits for boys as well as more sophisticated microphones, transmitters, and telegraphs. (The big move to sporting goods came after the government banned private telegraphy equipment sales following America's declaration of war on the Kaiser in 1917.) Joe was the firm's president, my father the secretary-treasurer, and he fell under the shadow of my uncle. He couldn't find a way out—he was just starting a family, he had responsibilities, and he was an honorable man. He couldn't possibly place all the financial burden on his young wife, and Arthur Newman Sr. never believed in divorce.



ARTHUR NEWMAN SR. AT HIS OFFICE IN
1938

He became a prisoner: imprisoned by the store, imprisoned by his dick, with no time to really think through his decisions.

I don't think his work ultimately pleased him. I don't think his castle pleased him. And I don't think his family pleased him, either.

Teresa Fetzko, my mother, was a beautiful young woman who immigrated here with her family from Eastern Europe (what was then the disintegrating Austro-Hungarian Empire, the part we now call Slovakia). She arrived not

long after the turn of the twentieth century, practically a girl, practically in rags. Her family was very poor, and that contributed to my mother's everlasting fear of losing everything. She claimed her father was a professor, but in fact he was a bricklayer. Her own mother had died when she was still a child, and at sixteen she married a young guy, but divorced him shortly afterwards because, she claimed, he abused her.

When my father met her, she was working as a ticket taker at the Alhambra Theatre in Cleveland. Going out with my father, who was far more accomplished than she was, she decided to convert from Roman Catholicism to the relatively less fraught (and perhaps less familiar to her beau's Jewish family) Christian Science. She soon became pregnant by my father, and despite a great deal of pressure from his family, the baby (my brother, Art Jr.) was indeed born and Arthur Sr. and Tress married sometime later. My father did so under duress, and I suspect had he not been such an honorable man, he would have left her in a minute. I'm not sure if my mother simply loved him greatly, abhorred abortion, or had other reasons for wedlock, but the two of them managed to settle down together. I was born just about a year after Art Jr., a pending birth that apparently prompted considerable discussion about alternative options.

The Newman relatives, from the beginning, had an attitude about Tress for many reasons. Because she was a Gentile and they were Jews, even if mostly nonpracticing ones. Because she was gorgeous. Because they considered her a hussy ("Wasn't she a divorcée?"), a gold digger, and below their social and educational station (ironic, given that only one generation removed, the Newmans themselves were itinerant peddlers and tinkers). They viewed my mother's people as an embarrassment. How inferior that must have made her feel; how left out it must have made him feel!

My father was basically a shy man who never, in my memory, mingled with his wife's family. My mother took my brother and me every other week to visit our dour and silent grandfather (where we were fed his wife's wonderful chicken soup), but my father never came along; I think he met them only twice. I also think my father was angry at us for going, because we always visited our grandparents on a Sunday; my father worked six days

a week, and our trips left him home alone. Sunday, in fact, was less happy for him than any other day of the week. Still, my father didn't want anything to do with them; I don't even know if he ever allowed them to set foot in our house. They were the poor relations.

It's probably not surprising, then, that my mother became a very private woman with only a few close friends. And while she was devoted to her house and her husband, she ultimately despised them both, and mistrusted all of her family. She was the most suspicious woman who ever lived, hysterical with the thought she'd never be accepted or get her fair share of anything. And those suspicions followed us throughout our lives.

What my mother did embrace was her own consuming passions—although never the objects that created the passion. She came to love opera, for example, and would drag me to five-hour Wagner performances at Severance Hall; the music would provoke a soaring response in her. As a child, I might do something cute or come downstairs looking especially pretty, wearing little shorts and a sweater, and she reveled in the great flood of emotion that flowed through her, whether it was tears or joy. The child himself was not really seen, just as the opera was not really heard. What happened inside her head and heart had very little to do with the Wagner or with me, only with her own flood of ecstasy. You could only pray that she'd let go of you. And if the child managed to pull away or the music stopped, she wouldn't have missed either of them; her emotions would have continued, fed by their own size and scale, until they died of exhaustion. Only then might she have asked "Where is he?" or "Did someone turn off the music?"



ARTHUR AND TRESS IN
1921

Sexually you could probably have taken away her partner and the passion wouldn't have stopped until she came and asked "Where'd he go?" That's a terrible thing to say about your mother, I know, but I think it's terribly funny—and terribly sad.

There's an image I see in my mind's eye where I'm a child in some kind of pain with a splinter in my finger, and my mother surrounds me, cooing and grappling and groping until the life is squeezed out of this little wretch.

And as she discovers the lifeless form in her arms, bewildered, she cries out, "But I was only trying to comfort the poor thing!"

I was like one of those poor fucking dogs of hers who became cancerous and so obese they could hardly move, and my mother would keep feeding them chocolates until she killed them with kindness. My mother was oblivious to the damage being done. Her need to bestow affection not only overwhelmed the object she bestowed affection upon, but had nothing to do with that object. My mother's dogs were an analog to her children, to that empty decoration running around loose grabbing all the affection while his orphaned core just tried to protect himself from being crushed by the decoration. It took fifty years before the core could sit down and begin to deal with it.

She never saw the dogs themselves, only her own kindness. And she was so flooded with and in love with her own kindness that she kept poisoning these squat, obese dogs till they melted like ice-cream cones and slithered down the side of the living room couch to join all those white hairs they'd shed on her black carpet.



LUCILLE NEWMAN WAS PAUL'S AUNT, THE WIFE OF
ARTHUR NEWMAN SR.'S BROTHER, JOE

Both of the Newman boys, Paul and Arthur Jr., have to realize that both their mother and father were sick people. Sick in the sense that they had no peace, real peace, ever, and that they were drowning.

If Art Sr. had tried to divorce Tress, given her temper, she might have done something very irrational. She was a lonely person, and some of the things she could do were plain cruel.

I really don't know what kind of life Art Sr. would have had if he'd married someone else; there really was a tremendous attraction there. And to Tress, he represented a

kind of security. Whether she had real love for him, I don't know. But she couldn't have really loved anything except that blind, fat dog she fed the candy to.

One of the ways their marriage may have affected my father was that he developed into a secret drinker, an alcoholic. I'd always thought that when my father died, in 1950, the cause was cancer. But it is only recently that we examined the results of his autopsy and discovered that it was alcohol's effects on his pancreas that was a major contributor to his untimely death at age fifty-six.

This was the routine: The Newman-Stern store would close each evening at 5:30. It would take my father exactly twelve minutes to walk from there to the Terminal Tower in downtown Cleveland to catch the rapid-transit train to Shaker Heights. That would leave him seven minutes to stop into Fred Harvey's, the bar where all the businessmen went after work, and quickly down a couple of drinks—two double bourbons with water chasers. He'd dash for his train, and when he got home he'd head right upstairs, where he had a bourbon bottle stashed in his closet, and pour himself another double.

BABETTE NEWMAN WAS ONE OF ARTHUR NEWMAN SR.'S
SISTERS-IN-LAW; SHE MARRIED HIS BROTHER AARON.

STEWART STERN WAS A HIGHLY REGARDED
SCREENWRITER AND HE WAS ONE OF PAUL NEWMAN'S CLOSEST
FRIENDS.

LUCILLE NEWMAN: Tress told me Arthur would do things like this: Let's say it was a holiday, and the children were there, of course, and they were dressed for the occasion and she had prepared a nice dinner, set the table pretty and everything,

and he'd go upstairs and put on the dirtiest old rotten clothes he could find and come down to the table looking a wreck.

BABETTE NEWMAN: Just a sad, sad thing. You want to cry.

LN: It's terrible.

STEWART STERN: But what was he protesting, I wonder? Her perfection? He wanted to dirty it up and make it liveable, do you think?

BN: Well, I know that I never saw Tress without being perfect. Her hair was beautifully—

LN: Right to the last minute of her life, and she was wearing wigs.

BN: He may have been protesting that.



At the kiosks along the rapid transit line, there'd be ones where you could buy magazines, candy, bubble gum, and, at one point, 3.2 percent beer. It was called Fort Pitt beer; the label conjured up images of cowboys and Indians. One Sunday afternoon, Arthur and I, who were probably around eleven and twelve, talked our father into buying us a bottle. We brought it back to the house, and with great ceremony he opened it up and toasted us. I had my first taste and thought, "God, what affliction is this? Why would anyone drink something that tastes like that?" It was just awful.

My father didn't care. "You wanted it. We ordered it. You didn't like it. Now you better finish it."

I got it down the hatch and swore to myself that I'd never drink another glass of beer.

I don't think Art and I ever saw our father truly drunk. We knew he'd taken the edge off before dinner, and years later we'd find empty liquor bottles secreted in a crawl space near our basement. No wonder he went downstairs to check on the furnace so often. What we also later found were piles of secreted cigarette butts. Though Arthur and I were often berated for sneaking smokes up in our attic "club," it turns out our father was regularly

having his own cigarettes—despite the fact he had sworn to my mother he wasn't smoking.



LUCILLE NEWMAN

When Paul went back with Arthur to see the house at the time of Tress's funeral, they wanted to see two things—one was if the dent in the wall was still there where they had banged their heads, and if the hole was still there in the third-floor screen where they had shoved their cigarettes for fear that they might be caught smoking them.



I didn't want generations of Newmans doing secret things in different rooms again. If my son, Scott, smoked pot, I'd smoke with him, too. I've wondered in recent years whether the serious problems I eventually had with booze, that Scott suffered so terribly with addiction, might have somehow been partly inherited—bad blood with the Newman men. And I also often wonder whether my father's drinking had anything to do with the difficulties the two of us had in communicating.



ARTHUR JR. AND PAUL IN SHAKER HEIGHTS, CIRCA
1928

The strongest recollection I have of my father (and that best describes our relationship) happened when I was about twelve. It was on a Sunday, and my father said to me, “Let’s go take a walk.” I was delighted, staggered by the opportunity. We walked and walked, but I could think of nothing to say that was of any interest to him. Nor could he find anything to say that provoked a response from me. The best we could do were rhetorical exchanges like “Isn’t that a nice tree?” or “Isn’t that a nice fire hydrant?” I’d walk sideways, half skipping, looking up at him, and he’d just keep nodding his head affirmatively. Not a single thought passed between us.

Kids find out about their parents only by asking questions. Unless, of course, their mothers and fathers are tellers and talkers, which I never was and never have been. My own kids were fascinated once I did start talking to them; but if you're a nontalker and your kids never ask, what then?

One afternoon, playing baseball, I was trying to catch a fly ball but missed it and landed on top of the ball; I badly hurt my ankle. It was right before dinner, and I started practically crawling home. My father, who'd just come from the rapid-transit station after work, passed by. I asked him to help me, and he replied, "Are you kidding?" and just walked on. He probably thought I was being a crybaby. The next morning, when my ankle blew up to the size of a grapefruit, I was taken to the hospital. It turned out to have been broken.

There was a sense of dissatisfaction around the house that I couldn't do anything right. My father was dismissive, disinterested; a note of sarcasm would always creep into his voice. I think he stopped trying to inspire me because he felt he was licked. I didn't try harder to be an educated man because in a strange way I knew I couldn't. When I read Schopenhauer in school, I didn't remember it, and I didn't even remember what I didn't get. Years later, when Joanne and I became good friends with Gore Vidal, it was difficult for me to be around a man who could speak so intelligently about so many things: American writers, the Greeks, the Romans, French playwrights, while I was just an illiterate. I've come to realize I have some kind of disability that makes it difficult for me to listen, to hear people, to read faster than I can speak, even to memorize. Whatever the reasons, I never did anything academic with distinction, never gave my father anything to be proud of.

The only way I could get any sense of accomplishment was through work, to make money. It may have been the only thing I did that really pleased my father, to show him I could be a self-starter, able to get jobs all by myself. I think I also had a desperate need to be independent, to get away from a sense of always being taken care of at home. And we were always being taken care of—I can't remember my brother and I ever having to clean up anything. I sure worked a lot. I was making deliveries for the

florist and for the dry cleaner, carting pickle barrels and Coca-Cola cases up and down stairs for the delicatessen, and even did a stretch as a Fuller Brush man. I applied when I was thirteen, and became an undersized little towhead carting around this suitcase filled with samples that weighed more than, and was fully as big as, me.

I did have a perfect route, in a blue-collar neighborhood off Kinsman Road. My mother would pick me up after school, then drop me off there with my gear and collect me three hours later. Kinsman was where the working people lived, and they all needed what I was selling: garage brooms, hairbrushes, toothbrushes, whisk brooms—sixty different varieties, excellent quality, and much cheaper than they'd cost in a store. I didn't have much of a spiel, but I didn't have to walk far from house to house, either, and wound up making maybe forty dollars a week.

I remember ringing a doorbell to one house and this very good-looking young woman, maybe twenty-four, answered the door wearing just a slip with her breasts practically falling out; she seemed slightly wasted and degenerate to me. She said, "Come on in, little boy," and I instantly sensed this was highly irregular and had nothing to do with Fuller Brushes. Quickly calculating the odds of surviving this lady, I fled, dragging my suitcase flat on its side, with my samples falling out behind me as I ran.

The job I had that may have left the strongest impression was when I was delivering newspapers. I was a really good bike rider, and my paper route was near my house. On Shaker Heights Boulevard there were these huge houses—they'd be selling for millions of dollars now. They were right out of F. Scott Fitzgerald and *The Great Gatsby*, all the pretty women in their summer dresses, patrician elegance, and ease of grace and manner. I developed a real yearning to be rich. I mean *fiercely* rich. I got it, because I saw all these beautiful people to whom I was delivering my papers. And it seemed so far from anything I could ever reach toward, just out of sight.



ARTHUR NEWMAN JR.

Paul ended up with drive and energy and resourcefulness and maybe it came from being a boy who wants to pull himself out of his environment by his bootstraps. Maybe all the things he has in the back of his mind with respect to his youth and his mom's domineering were the seeds for all that drive, energy, and guts. He gets this self-starting built into him and what happens to him? He becomes a success.

Art and I had a friend, Dick Goss, whose family was very wealthy—we'd always heard that the father, Colonel Goss, had gotten rich developing chemical-warfare weapons in the First World War. Besides their Shaker Heights home, they also owned a plantation down south and summer places up north. One day after school, I was visiting, walking through their library, and saw their new Christmas tree was up, all covered with lights—and decked as well with five- and ten-dollar bills. When Mrs. Goss, a very dignified-looking woman, who was reading in the corner, saw me, she said, "Good afternoon, Paul." And I replied, "Mrs. Goss, excuse me, but could you please explain to me why your Christmas tree has all these five- and ten-dollar bills on it?"

And this was her exact answer: "It's to prove to Dick that money does not in fact grow on trees—it is put there."

It left an impression.

STEWART STERN

What would make kids in that household bang their heads against a wall?

Paul never knew what was going to hit him because—though Tress was overwhelmingly proud of him, proud of his beauty, and dress him up like another part of her house—she

would suddenly, without any reason Paul could think of, attack him savagely with a hairbrush then immediately smother him with love. He wouldn't know who she was or who she thought he was. How did he survive?

Paul has told me he so often feels anesthetized that he blacks out most of his childhood, doesn't remember most of it. What he's been looking for is the answer to the riddle of his being—why he has so much distance from his own emotions that, until recently, he could feel very, very little. A little sad, a little happy—but could never allow himself to feel all the way with either.



JEWELL FETZCO WAS A SISTER OF PAUL'S MOTHER, TRESS.

Before Tress met Art Sr., she married a plumber named Elmer. He was insanely jealous of her; if she just looked at someone, there'd be hell to pay. He beat her terribly. I went over to see her one Sunday, and her face was so disfigured you couldn't even tell it was her. "Tress, what happened?" I asked. She wouldn't say anything except, "Well, I just had some trouble."

Elmer was a handsome devil, dark hair, a moustache, nicely built. But he was as mean as the dickens. My sister Mae and I told her she was going to get killed, that she needed to get a divorce. She was embarrassed about the whole thing, but she agreed to go down to the court with us so a judge and an attorney could see for themselves what she looked like all beaten. She went to live with Mae for about six months while the divorce was getting finalized; she came home one afternoon and everything she had, all her furniture, had been

taken, everything except a mattress to sleep on. She screamed.

We took her back to see her attorney the next day, and he got an order for Elmer to return it all. Not long afterward, the divorce became official.

When she met Arthur, Tress fell madly in love with him. That he was Jewish made no difference to her; she didn't care whether his family or her family liked it or not.

I think Arthur was in love with her, too. Tress said: "I'll get him."

And she did.



BABETTE NEWMAN

>Arthur was going with a beautiful woman before he met Tress, and was very much in love with her. She turned him down and he married Tress on the rebound. Tress looked a great deal like the woman who turned him down.



JEWELL FETZCO

Tress was living alone in an apartment when Arthur Jr. was coming into this world. Our mother sent me to stay with her; I didn't know what was going on. "Where is Arthur?" I asked Tress. "Why do I have to be here with you all the time?"

I was a dumb kid. Then, after she started to show, she didn't discuss it. You didn't mention it. When she finally told me she was pregnant, she said Arthur's family didn't accept her and that's why he wouldn't come live with her. All I can remember is she cried a lot.

LUCILLE NEWMAN

Tress was pretty, she was bright, she was a talented person. But her sense of values was not an ordinary sense of values—she would rather sacrifice people before sacrificing her house or any piece of it. Tress had to leave home very early and all her life she wanted the security of a home. She was always so set on ensuring the security of their house that she would not even allow anyone to come in and clean or put up wallpaper or paint. Even after she sold the place many years later, she took the chandelier with her and substituted a different one because that chandelier was just a part of her. Once, she gave me a gift, six salad bowls. And a few days afterwards she called me and asked: “You really don’t need six, do you?” and she took four of them back.

When Scott Newman was a little boy, he locked himself in one of the upstairs bathrooms and couldn’t get out. Tress refused to let Paul break down the door. He ended up having to call the fire department to go in through the bathroom window to get Scott out.

II

I remember a lot more about grammar school and junior high than I do about high school. How the places looked. The classrooms and auditoriums. What it was like to walk home. I felt very much a part of those schools and the life that went on around them. I felt accepted and involved.

I rode my bike well and dangerously, pretty daredevil stuff. We'd follow the rapid-transit tracks to where the streetcars stopped; there were kiosks there to buy ice cream and soda pop. We had yo-yo contests, too, and I was very good.

We'd play hockey in the winter; holes were dug in vacant lots, to get flooded and freeze; there was also a big pond for hockey or ice skating. Sometimes we'd take our car out for Sunday trips to the outer reaches of Shaker Heights, the end of civilization, and my father would teach Art and me how to drive our Studebaker. Other times we'd head over to Akron and get sandwiches at a great barbecued-beef joint. I remember these days with great affection; these were easygoing times.

Then, around when I started adolescence, something in me closed down. I don't know what it was, but I began to feel like an outcast. I began to sense I was on the outside looking in, and didn't even know what I was looking for inside. I got painfully shy. I tried to play football, and though I knew I was fast, everybody else seemed to have gotten five times bigger than me, and I couldn't be successful anymore.

I was so small, I had to get special dispensation from my school's principal to play on the ninth-grade team; at fourteen, I didn't even weigh a hundred pounds. I felt like a goddamn freak. I also didn't know how to deal with girls, because I was so short; they thought I was a joke, a happy

buffoon. I was a lightweight—a description that permeated every area of my life.

I started to develop an awareness that certain other people were true originals, instinctive at whatever they did, and everyone could recognize that. Everyone could separate the natural football player from the ones that had to labor at what they were trying to be. Everyone could separate the great lovers—great because they were instinctive—from those who *studied* love. Some people were simply who they were, and the rest were scholars.

I wasn't naturally anything. I wasn't a lover. I wasn't an athlete. I wasn't a student. I wasn't a leader. I measured things by what I wasn't, not by anything I was. I felt that there was something lacking in me that I couldn't bridge, didn't know much about and couldn't fathom. I wasn't getting it. I wasn't getting the message.

So if I read stories today where people who knew me growing up say they saw me as some swaggering romantic, as a loner too confident to bother with their company, it comes as a real surprise. I was just too painfully shy to pursue friendships with the people I wanted to be friends with. I was afraid they'd recognize me as a fraud, just pat me on the head and say, "See you around."

All I was interested in was girls; they were all I could think of. And I just wasn't very successful with them.

Sex, in my youth, was seen in a different context than it is today. Back then, if a button on your pants was accidentally left open, and someone said, "Hey, your fly is open," my God, you'd walk around in paroxysms of embarrassment for a month. Talking about sex in the 1930s is like talking about people in the Stone Age, draped in furs and carrying clubs. If there'd been such a thing as *Playboy* magazine back then, I would have cut off my arm just for a peek. If I wanted to see a picture of a woman's breasts I had to sneak into our library's stack of *National Geographics* and thumb through pages that were already softened by wear. Either that, or ride my bike at dusk down to Hathaway Brown, the all-female boarding school in Shaker Heights, and try to spy a glimpse of some unsuspecting girl walking naked past the window on her way to the shower. Or scoot over to that new

house on Eaton Road where the lady who moved in had mistakenly installed a two-way mirror in her bathroom. From a distance—until she and her husband figured out the problem and put up some blinds—she unknowingly serviced quite a few prepubescent neighborhood boys.



PAUL AND FRIENDS IN SHAKER HEIGHTS, EARLY
1930S

There were no adult movies. No dirty postcards. And no dirty girls, which made it hard to follow my mother's advice that any kind of sexual intemperance was to be exercised only with ladies of the lower caste, not the well-bred ones of Shaker Heights. My mother's highfalutin ideas were

perhaps born of her feeling that she once had been the woman soiled and trampled on, forced to bear children out of wedlock—and her wonder at now being a part of the upper class herself made her resolve that Art and I must remain unsoiled.

The best Arthur and I could do was the old burlesque house on 9th Street in Cleveland. I don't know how we got in; I must have looked like I was nine years old; maybe I hid underneath someone's coat. Anyway, it was absolutely riveting. Though Arthur ran home and tried to sterilize himself afterwards.

From my earliest sexual memories, it seems I was getting the short end of the stick. When I was maybe six or seven, I went into the bushes with Dorothy Frances and her friend and said, "I'll show you mine if you show me yours." And I did show them mine—but they just giggled, clutched their panties, and wouldn't show me theirs.

Later, in junior high, I went to my first hayride and barn dance; I just knew I was finally going to have a serious sexual foray. What I didn't know was just how bad my hay fever was, and just as Mary Jane Phipps was about to lay back in the hay and enjoy my advances, I started sneezing. I was absolutely crippled. There'd be no lengthy kisses, because there was no way I could breathe through my nose.

It wasn't long afterwards that Mother fired Ruth, our longtime maid; I'd heard it was because she'd gotten pregnant by her boyfriend. She was promptly replaced with a seventeen-year-old girl who'd been the runner-up beauty queen at a Cleveland high school. My mother assigned her a bedroom right next to Art and me. My God, what could have been better than to be a fourteen-year-old boy with an attractive seventeen-year-old girl nearby that you could imagine banging? I would have been such a willing and anxious student! The delights that might have surfaced, the dalliances between two o'clock and four o'clock when she had a couple of hours off! But I was deprived of that experience. My mother, the harridan, was lurking everywhere, omnipotent, and it wasn't long before she caught me in the girl's room, where we were simply looking at each other provocatively. That new maid was packed up and gone the next day.

My losing streak continued even after I enrolled at Ohio University before being drafted. I auditioned for a part in a student production and actually got the role (probably because there were so few other men left on campus owing to the war). It didn't take long before I became infatuated with another cast member, a statuesque French beauty who was likely a full head taller than me; I loved to dance with her because I could just lay my head between her boobs. I think she was indifferent to me, but I did finally manage to get a real date with her. I had visions of, if not getting laid, then at least rubbing my lips across her neck. I brought her back to the dorm, and as I prayed for an invitation up to her room, she patted me on the head and affectionately said, "I like going out with you because you're so harmless!"

Sometime in the late fifties, I saw a poll in a popular magazine where they asked a lot of women which well-known personality they had sexual fantasies about. Whose picture did they use when they abused themselves? Well, the "winner" happened to be me. Which I guess is pretty funny, until you consider that had I been killed in my bomber during World War II, had I gone down in flames, that was as hot as things would have gotten for me—I'd been laid only twice. Which is a fact that likely would have both elated and displeased my mother. The young woman who took my virginity (which I dispensed with quick charity) was a lady whom I'd picked up in a disreputable part of town. My second encounter, for the record, was with a lady of very lofty birth in Jacksonville, Florida, where I would undergo part of my naval training. Needless to say, neither of these breakthroughs occurred until I was out of my home and safely heading to the South Pacific on my way to fight the Japanese.



PAUL, TRESS, AND ARTHUR JR. ON VACATION AT PIKES PEAK IN THE LATE
1930S

A strong sense of otherness also emerged pertaining to religion. When I was young, being half Jewish—or simply thinking of myself as Jewish—got in the way of sitting at the “A” table, which was important to me.

Nothing in my childhood gave me the instructions that would have made me proud or knowledgeable about my Jewish heritage. I only knew that if you were Jewish, some avenues were shut to you, avenues you might have liked to walk on. That hurt me and my brother a great deal. And I think there was a period in my life when I tried to make up for it.

One way was to deflect pain with humor. The attacks came not just because I was Jewish, but because I was so small. (After you’ve been punched and been sat on a couple of times, you learn ways to avoid punishment.) I started to do Yiddish voices for laughs, volunteering to do an imitation of Schlepperman, a popular recurring character on Jack Benny’s radio show, voiced by Sam Hearn with a thick Yiddish accent.

When I was fifteen or so, I began to realize there was exclusion. I was applying to a high-school fraternity—they were very popular then—when Arthur told me, “I wouldn’t expect very much. You’ll get blackballed because you’re half Jewish.” And I thought to myself, “No, that could never possibly be true.” But then my friend Roger came back from his frat meeting and told me the news: “God,” he said to me, “I’m really sorry, but there are things in our bylaws that say we can’t have Jewish brothers.”

I’m ashamed of the fact that I was vulnerable enough to be deceptive, or at least not a hundred percent open, on my original Kenyon College application after my time in the Navy. The application asked for my religion. I didn’t just write in “Preference: None” or “Half Catholic, Half Jewish.” I wrote in my mother’s adopted faith, claiming I was a Christian Scientist. Other than that, I never hid my background from anyone; nobody had to dig it out of me, and I certainly didn’t deny it.

It’s probably not a coincidence that when I served in World War II the only bloody fight I got into involved an anti-Semitic taunt. I was based in Hawaii on my way out to the Pacific theater. There was a beer garden there for the sailors, though you weren’t supposed to take the beer off premises. I figured a way to smuggle out the bottles, by wearing a denim jacket under which I could hide four or five brews inside my belt. The trick was you’d go over a back wall, then right back to your barracks with the contraband. One of the sailors there looked up from his bunk and said to me that I owed him a beer.

“For what?” I replied.

“You kike, you owe me a beer.”

I charged the guy and a big brawl ensued. Though I wasn’t much of a puncher, I had practiced wrestling at Ohio University; I had an extraordinary sense of balance and could throw down an opponent, get on top of him in midair and fall on him. When I landed on this guy, he had his arm underneath his hip and tore everything out of his elbow. When he got off the floor, he could only move one hand. The fight was called off and no one bothered me again.

Years later, when my acting career started gaining momentum, I was given the opportunity to pass, to change my name and become a Tony Curtis (born Bernard Schwartz) or Kirk Douglas (aka Issur Danielovich). Broadway and Hollywood suggested I become Buck Something-or-Other, a really WASPy identity; and I could have eliminated my Jewish roots, simply obliterated the thing that had caused so much discomfort. But it seemed more of a challenge to me to keep my real name, to insist upon it as a badge.

In 1953, the famed, ruthless producer Sam Spiegel, who went by the pseudonym S. P. Eagle for over two decades, was briefly considering me for the Terry Malloy role in *On the Waterfront*; he asked me to get rid of “Paul Newman.” “What do you want me to change it to?” I asked him. “S. P. Ewman?”

My father, unlike some of his relatives, was always a nonpracticing Jew. Nevertheless, he held on to two seats at our local synagogue, which he paid for every year. One weekend, my mother told him, “I’d like to go over to that synagogue, see what it’s like in there.” And so they went: the husband and the wife he routinely took out late on Saturday nights so she wouldn’t have the energy to wake up on time to attend her Christian Science service on Sunday morning. The only problem was that when they got inside the synagogue, my father’s seats were occupied. So my father went right to the business office, where it was explained to him that they’d indeed sold his seats, twice; since he never did attend services, what harm would it do? After some back-and-forth my father ended up keeping those seats for the rest of his life, to guarantee that he and my mother, the Gentile, could one day be buried side by side in the Jewish cemetery administered by the synagogue. And so they were.

Other than the pew he rented, my father displayed no outward symbols of Judaism. We celebrated Christmas with caroling and a generous pile of beautifully wrapped gifts under an impressive tree (which, to my chagrin, my mother insisted on buying, and she embraced a metallic one with the awful artificiality that conveyed). In our home, my father (though he received a daily copy of Cleveland’s Jewish newspaper) didn’t own so

much as a menorah. Still, he was anything but naive about the bigotry Jews faced in the world.

Though we rarely took family vacations, one year we got in the car and took a summer outing to Maine. Though this was in the midst of the Depression, my father insisted that we travel in style, and he booked a cabin at the Black Point Inn on Prouts Neck. It was grand, on the sea, surrounded by blueberry bushes, and was unquestionably stuffy, ritzy, and very Gentile—a point not lost on my father who decided to register us under an assumed, very non-Jewish name. Honestly, I think the only reason they let us check in was because we were driving a classy Studebaker Commander.

BUSH KEELER WAS A CLOSE CHILDHOOD FRIEND OF
PAUL'S.

The Jewish stigma in Shaker Heights was very strong. I know that my mother had a certain reluctance about me seeing a lot of Paul because he was partly Jewish. She was dissatisfied with our companionship. Although her true self liked Paul, her socially conditioned self made her ambivalent.

She just wanted me to be involved with that damn private-school crowd. Paul didn't seem Jewish at all, but he paid a price, he had a rough time. There used to be a lot of ethnic quips about Jews that would go around the high school.

Paul was a funny guy, and he could find humor in almost everything. And that's how he bounced back from the prejudice. Do you know the Schlepperman character from the old Jack Benny show? Paul was the master impersonator, and he'd get everyone howling. I think he did it to tell them they were hurting him. Somebody used to pick on him, but he would always come back laughing.

JIM MARTIN WAS ONE OF PAUL'S CLOSEST FRIENDS IN
SHAKER HEIGHTS AND THROUGH COLLEGE.

I always found the younger Paul quite frivolous. I always felt he was very happy, with nothing to hide. And Paul's mother, Tress, was an absolutely wonderful person. She'd normally have a big strawberry cake baked for us after school.

But I also was troubled that Paul's household seemed somehow sad. The place was immaculate, always. We'd have to remove our shoes before we came inside. There were always sheets covering the furniture in the living room—the lamps, the sofas, everything. It didn't feel like anybody lived there.



— III —

My one recurring nightmare is only sound, and it has never gone away. It's very impressionistic, benign at the beginning, just a sense of clouds with a kind of ease about them. And then it's as though these clouds are accompanied by a noise that is not really definable. Rustling leaves, maybe, the sound of water, maybe, but always closer and closer.

There's a great sense of roiling, nothing distinguishable, until it can't get any closer, can't get any louder. But it does get closer and louder and closer and louder and closer and louder. It's wind and sea and sound but never identifiable.

I've had this nightmare since my memory begins. Never more specific, but ominous somehow.

When that nightmare first started, I had never flown, nor did I know what it was like to be in an airplane during a thunderstorm. In my dream, there's something of that same threat.

It terrifies me.

My father went out for a Sunday stroll on December 7, 1941, and came back to our house by the side door. He was white as a sheet and he told us the Japanese had just bombed Pearl Harbor.

For all that it meant to me, he might as well have said that Mickey Mouse and Minnie Mouse had just given birth to four dogs. I hadn't the slightest idea where Pearl Harbor was. I didn't know what a war was or what constituted a war. I didn't even know what cancer was. These were years of my illiterateness of the most shallow kind. I was just living inside

my head. I was occupied creating an imaginary, exciting world in which I was the White Knight who vanquished all enemies, a world where I was seven and a half feet tall and only did important things.

I always tell people—and I know it has been written about—that I was thrown out of the Navy’s pilot-training program because it was discovered I was color-blind. But it’s a little more complicated than that; looking back, it wasn’t just my color blindness but a combination of issues. I couldn’t do the mathematical things that being a pilot requires. I don’t really understand hard science. It does not penetrate. This doesn’t mean I am unwilling to learn it, but the more I’m involved in the pursuit of *how* to understand something rather than actually understanding it, we appear to be in trouble. Physics, trigonometry, and chemistry—they were too complex for me. I got discouraged and just gave up.

I hadn’t yet finished high school when the war began. And after graduating in June 1942, when I was still seventeen, I had, as usual, absolutely no solid plan for what I wanted to do. But I did know that if you didn’t pursue your education, you’d be drafted as soon as you came of age and end up swabbing decks on a battleship. This was a big reason I enrolled at Ohio University—attending college was the way I might eventually get to make some choices for myself, at least as far as the military was concerned. So when I began college at Ohio U, in Athens, I also enlisted—knowing that my official call to duty was set to occur no sooner than my eighteenth birthday, on January 26 (and likely later); I took the written aptitude tests and applied for pilot training.

To my surprise, just after my birthday, I was summoned from school and directed to Detroit for a physical. And I was stunned, because I flunked; the medical examiners discovered I was color-blind. (I should have had a tip-off a few months earlier when my brother, Arthur, wrote me that he’d been rejected for pilot training because—guess what?—the doctors found out he was color-blind.)



TRESS AND PAUL AT OHIO UNIVERSITY IN ATHENS, OHIO, IN
1943

So my choice was to continue with my officer enlistment protocols or just withdraw and head back to Ohio U and wait for my draft number to come up. But, I thought, to what end? I'd enjoyed the drama classes I'd tried in my first semester, but Ohio U really was nothing but a lot of beer drinking and dating. The only thing that distinguished me there was that I was a great chug-a-lugger. And since it was taking forever for my Navy paperwork to get reprocessed and have me officially thrown out of the pilot program, I was still sent to deck officers' training school, which was held on Yale University's campus. With the luck of the draw, I got billeted in a structure that was actually an old annex to the finest dormitory there. I had a big living room with a bedroom off to one side, even a wood-burning fireplace. I guess if I'd been a good student in New Haven, my color blindness might have been overlooked entirely; but pretty soon I was ordered off the campus and back to square one to attend enlisted men's boot camp, basic training, in Newport, Rhode Island.

Hundreds of sailors-to-be lived in my barracks, and like me they were not even given a bunk bed but assigned to a hammock—I didn't get a decent night's sleep for four months. We were roused at four thirty or five each morning—and it was cold there. The first order of business was calisthenics, and then we'd have to run a couple of miles. I was not in very good shape and was smoking cigarettes, so these were hard times.

When at Newport, I was required to undergo another physical. One of the corpsmen administering the exams was a guy I'd met during my brief time at Yale; he'd been thrown out of medical school there, and ended up in my boot camp, too, as a pharmacist's mate, third class. And when he gave me the color-chart test, I was, bewilderingly, not color-blind anymore.

What it meant was I could now apply for the Naval Air Corps, at least as an enlisted man. No, I likely couldn't be a pilot, but I applied for training as an aviation radioman and was accepted. So I was assigned to radio school in Jacksonville; I finished that course and volunteered to fly on torpedo bomber planes. These TPM Avenger bombers, manufactured by the thousands by General Motors, were slow, lumbering, single-propeller aircraft, carrying just three-man crews—a pilot, a machine gunner based in a “bubble” just above the cockpit, and a radioman/gunner based in a turret under the plane's belly. The cruising speed was only about 150 miles per hour. The TPM's primary mission was to spot enemy submarines and torpedo them from the skies. We'd see a sub, lock in the gyroscopic aiming device on our target, and then drop down to between six feet and fifteen feet over the water and hold a steady position before firing. That made the TPMs sitting ducks for enemy planes, perfect for the enemy's target practice.

My next stop was Miami for gunnery classes (Robert Stack was my instructor), and to tell you the truth, I wasn't an especially talented machine gunner. Then it was off to Oxnard Air Base in Southern California and finally to Pearl Harbor as part of a squadron of six TPMs.

I became pals with two sailors during my Florida training: Milt Dance, whom we called Danny and who came from the Maryland shore, and Tommy Brady, a tough little guy from Boston. What first drew us together

was that the three of us were all roughly the same size; we were also good-time Charlies who discovered we liked to laugh a lot. When we were asked for our preferred assignments, Danny, like me, volunteered for torpedo-bomber duty, while Brady somehow got himself attached to a dive-bomber squad.

A few days later, on Brady's very first exercise flight off the Florida coast, he was killed when a wing on his plane got clipped by another dive bomber's wing and went down in a midair crash. I remember being stunned by the news, but I somehow didn't connect it to myself. I don't even recall getting edgy about getting in an airplane afterwards. Back then, there must have been a strange, wonderful sense of immortality. And my own evolving type of emotional anesthesia.

It never entered my head that there was a chance we wouldn't come back alive.



MILTON DANCE WAS A TORPEDO PLANE CREWMATE OF
PAUL'S THROUGHOUT WWII.

When we had to qualify for gunnery, they flew a towed sleeve behind a plane and you'd have to hit it with your anti-aircraft gun. Each sailor was given a belt of ammunition that was painted a certain color, so when you shot through the sleeve, it was easy to tell whose bullets hit and went through.

As a gunner, Paul couldn't hit beans, couldn't hit that towed sleeve with the turret gun to qualify as our plane's gunner. But someone else on another crew had hit it, putting fifty rounds with red on their casings through that sleeve. When we landed, we told the Navy trainers: "Paul was shooting those red ones, that's him!"



PAUL IN HIS NAVY UNIFORM,
1944

We lied so Paul could qualify—but I don't think that son of a bitch ever hit the sleeve.

We stayed in Hawaii while our squadron awaited orders to be assigned to some battle-bound aircraft carrier. Each morning I'd report for duty to the flight shack, a little makeshift wooden structure attached to one of the hangars. Sometimes we'd have to take off for flight exercises, but we

generally did absolutely nothing all day, sitting around, just playing Hearts and drinking a little beer (after five o'clock, of course). I did use a lot of the down time to read a tremendous amount, mainly philosophy by the likes of Spinoza and Nietzsche; I was trying to get an education, and was probably also trying, I suppose, to impress people. There was also an enormous number of letters from my family to go through; I was receiving more mail, it seemed, than anyone else in our flight group. Arthur would regularly write me from his base in England, and my father corresponded just about every day I was in the service. My father's letters were very unemotional, often focused on bringing me up-to-date about what was happening at Newman-Stern.

And my responses were anything but candid. I lied to my brother, I lied to my mother, I lied to my father. Gross, personal deceptions. I can't think of any true thing that came out of my letters, except maybe "I stood watch last night." But there wasn't a single adroit perception in any of them; I think I resent that the most about myself.

To be honest, though, I was much more interested in getting letters from a couple of ladies I'd left behind. The one I remember best was Joan Gloeckler. She was exceptionally good looking, with a sensational figure; we were in the same class at Shaker Heights High. I don't think it was anything steady, but just as I left for the war, there was some sense that we were suddenly romantic. I wouldn't call it a hot love affair, maybe it was just wishful thinking, but it was comforting to have someone back home you thought was your girlfriend. She wrote to me for a long time while I was in the Navy. But about a year before the war ended, she sent me another letter saying that she had found some other guy; I was history. It broke my heart; I don't know why, because it had never been very serious.

Sometimes a bunch of us would get a pass and go out to a place just north of Barbers Point, about sixty miles from Honolulu. There was an extraordinary beach there with very soft sand, and the water was pleasantly warm. You'd spend a couple of hours just running into these five- or six-foot waves that would break against an angled falloff point close to the shore, and get bowled ass over teakettle without any movement or

restriction. Again and again you'd be washed up on the beach, like a frog. Our whole squadron would head out there and the Hawaiians would throw a luau for us, cook a whole pig outdoors.

On many days, Danny and I would get in some flight exercises and practice antisubmarine attacks, strafing targets towed by target planes or dropping depth charges. Then we'd just head back to barracks, where we'd hang out with the other crews; it was pure boredom.

The most exciting thing that happened to me—and the most harrowing—came when Danny and I agreed to participate in a little “experiment.”

The Navy was concerned about the possibility of our planes that were attacking the Japanese mainland getting shot down by coastal batteries and ditching into Tokyo Bay. What needed to be tested was a method by which the survivors in those downed planes' life rafts could be saved by Allied submarines. The idea was that our subs might somehow grab hold of the lifeboats and drag them into deeper water unseen by the Japanese; there, the airmen could actually be taken on board by the sub—all hands safely out of the range of the Japanese solid shore armaments.

Danny and I thought it would be a diversion and no big deal. So off we headed to a staging area, where our test raft launching had to be abandoned because the water was infested with sharks. So we were ferried to an alternative site, where each of us was put in a one-man raft tethered to each other by a rope—then abandoned together in the Pacific Ocean to await our underwater ride back home.

We'd taken a bunch of contraceptives with us which we used to hold our keys and keep our cigarettes and some cookies dry. As instructed, we released green-dye markers around us, to make us more visible to our planes. Dive bombers would be sent out, spot us, and then radio our position to nearby subs. It was really a hoot. At first.

And so we waited. And waited and waited some more. The sea was coming up, the air was starting to get cold, and all we had on were sweatshirts and shorts. We were alone in the ocean and there was still no sign of any aircraft.

Suddenly into view came a big amphibious transport boat that had no connection to our experiment but had noticed our dye markers. They signaled us they were heading our way, but we signaled back “Go away, go away!” They ignored that, and pretty soon, they launched a smaller craft and pulled alongside our rafts. The commanding officer said, “Get on board,” but he finally got the message when we said, “We can’t—we’re doing a test.” I could swear the waist gunner on the ship was so angry at us that he unlatched his safety and considered pulling the trigger. At any rate, they took off and we continued to watch the sky for our rescue dive bombers.

Late that afternoon they finally appeared. And a half hour behind them was a Navy submarine. It was weird seeing a submarine coming right at you at water level; it had about eight feet of periscope pinpointing us, but when it tried to snag our tether to haul us from danger, it missed completely. It could only spot us at a specific angle. The sub sailed about 150 feet past us before it realized we weren’t attached. We were hysterical until the sub made another run at us, caught us, and started to pull. No one had anticipated that with our hookup at the top of the rafts, a sub would not only pull us forward but under the surface; we were dragged for about two miles and held on for dear life. Then the submarine started to surface. I didn’t know what the hell was happening. It’s hard to describe what it’s like being on a tiny raft when this huge thing starts blowing its tanks, rising out of the sea. The noise was unbelievable; this was the only time I was really scared. Even worse, the sub’s antenna poked right through the bottom of Danny’s raft and practically impaled him in his butt.

We were safe, but there’s a postscript here, too. The skipper welcomed us aboard his sub, and noticed we looked blue.

“God, you guys must be frozen!” he said.

So we were very appreciative when the skipper disappeared for a moment and came back with an old and very good bottle of Canadian rye. He poured the three of us a couple of fingers, we slammed them down, then he poured another round.

“Well,” the skipper said, “now I’m supposed to ask you some questions about the rescue. Please tell me your names, ranks, and serial numbers.”

“My name is Paul Newman, sir. I’m not an officer. I have no rank. I’m an aviation mate, third class.”

“You’re an enlisted man?”

“Yes,” I replied. And with that, he took away our whiskey and poured it right back into the bottle.

Booze would play an interesting role in my war. Danny and I got teamed with a pilot named Pat Filippi, an ensign. Like the other officers, Pat would receive a booze ration every month. Since Pat didn’t drink, he’d often give his bottles to Danny and me.

If we didn’t drink it ourselves, we’d sell the booze to other enlisted men for anywhere from fifty to a hundred bucks a pop, whatever the going price was that week. I had more than adequate money to start with, since my pay was seventy-eight dollars a month for being a third-class mate, plus a 50 percent bonus for flight duty. Problem was, I was a terrible gambler. Between poker, shooting craps, and blackjack, I’d lose my whole check within an hour of getting it. So I had to earn it back somehow, which I did by playing bridge for money against the pilots and selling the booze I got from Pat. And what did I use this money for? To buy beer, of course. If I couldn’t steal it.

Right after we were finally ordered off Hawaii, my TPM crew (and our plane) sailed much closer to the war zone, dropping anchor off Guam. The first night we disembarked to the island, all of us got pissed off because there was no beer rationing. But it didn’t take long before we discovered where the beer and liquor cache was stored.

Everything was kept under a big supply tent and was protected by a couple of marine guards. We sent a couple of decoys over to the sentries to ask directions to the infirmary and distract them while the rest of us snuck under the canvas to where the beer cases were stacked. It wasn’t like we planned on rifling thousands of dollars’ worth of alcohol; we just wanted to grab a few for ourselves and sneak back to our bunks. But instead, we all

ended up just sitting down under the tent, finally back on dry land, just bullshitting with one another until we heard taps and the lights went out.

“Let’s go,” said one of my companions, while another guy suggested, “Well, why don’t we just wait until things quiet down a little bit.” Which we did. Until we heard shots fired. Turns out one of the marine sentries caught a couple of other soldiers sneaking under the tent and shot them both. I don’t know whether they lived or died, though word was they were hurt pretty bad. Needless to say, my crew soon got out and decided not to try that stunt again.

We’d traveled to Guam on a CVE, which everyone called a “jeep carrier.” These were converted troop transports or freighters, and they became our floating home until the end of the war. The CVEs were like miniature aircraft carriers, complete with a flight deck, though their runways were much, much shorter and thus scarier. This made for many a white-knuckle landing, especially in rough weather, when the nose of the CVE was constantly rising and falling in the swells.

One afternoon we had a routine patrol flight with a pilot I didn’t know who was filling in for Pat. We came in for a landing and as we were close to touching down, the deck controller gave us a wave-off, which meant we had to climb and come around again. It made me a bit nervous, because this was usually done only if a plane came in improperly aligned with the runway. We made another descent, and again we were waved off; I was getting more uncomfortable, especially since I was in the turret with my back to the cockpit and couldn’t really see what was going on.

So around we went one more time, and I got pretty unsettled when yet again we weren’t allowed to land. This time, though, our pilot turned to the right of the bridge when he was waved off, which was unheard of, because it was truly dangerous—if you misjudged your turn, you’d hit the carrier. Next time we approached, we were finally permitted to touch down, and as soon as we came to a stop, our pilot jumped out of our plane and started yelling angrily at the sailor who’d been waving us off. What we found out later was that there had been nothing wrong with our pilot’s flying, only that on board our CVE was a photographer from one of the big weekly

magazines taking pictures of planes touching down on a flattop. He wanted the perfect shot, and the Navy was just helping him out by giving him some extra material for his pictorial.

We were honestly very fortunate. A few months before, when we were still in Hawaii, the six planes in our original TPM group were assigned to report to the USS *Bunker Hill*, one of the most powerful carriers in the Seventh Fleet. But our pilot took ill that morning, and we were grounded; we never went there, and we became an unaffiliated plane waiting to become a replacement on one of the other big ships—something pretty unlikely for an unattached aircraft, as entire squadrons tended to be assigned together. Late in the war, off Okinawa, the *Bunker Hill* was attacked by two kamikazes, each carrying a 550-pound bomb. One of the suicide pilots penetrated the flight tower and the pilot's ready room, setting off huge fires and killing close to 400 sailors—including ten of the fifteen crew members from the squadron to which we'd originally belonged.

We sailed from Guam to Saipan, where we disembarked in the aftermath of one of the war's most ferocious battles. Even though our commanders told us to be on our guard for Japanese army stragglers raiding our camp at night for food, I don't think it was actually very dangerous by the time we got there. In fact, eight or ten of us marched ourselves into the mountains one day looking for souvenirs—discarded helmets, uniforms, or ammunition belts; we didn't see any sign of Japanese survivors. The worst thing that happened is that we hiked through a thicket and I was attacked by a swarm of yellow jackets; I think I got bit twenty-four times.



PAUL SHOWING OFF HIS NEW NAVY DUDS TO HIS MOTHER IN
1944

Most of our time, really, was spent on our jeep-carrier ship. Everybody was talking about our anticipated invasion of Japan, how we were really grouping for a final attack, and how the potential for huge losses in that invasion was very high.

Our ship was about seventy-five miles off the Japanese mainland when we heard about the A-bomb, and then the surrender. There was a

tremendous sense of elation that this whole thing was over. Just a few days after Nagasaki, our CVE was ordered back to Pearl Harbor. My first thought was “Here we go again—we’ll all get stuck there for another year before we’re discharged.” But as we got close to Hawaii, new orders came down that basically said “Keep going.” And so, without stopping, we just headed straight for San Francisco. We docked and were given a two-week leave, with orders to report afterwards up in Seattle.

But before that happened, there was celebrating to do. Some pilots I had met on board rented a big room at the renowned Mark Hopkins Hotel, and a couple dozen of us sailors stayed at that party for about three days. There wasn’t an orgy, but it got pretty wild. The pilots would head down to the Mark Hopkins bar, pick up some girls, and bring them upstairs to the party. I remember a lot of guys from the flight crews running around in their boxer shorts; the girls seemed to think we were all officers. You’d wake up and start drinking beer again in the morning. Remember, the war had only been over about three weeks then; we were all behaving badly.

The five months I ended up spending in Seattle were equally “productive.” I was assigned to an airplane hangar, where they had me doing mechanical work I was in no way equipped to do. That, or helping to pull old generators out of Hellcat planes.

Since I was still losing money gambling, I needed cash to keep from going broke. To that end, I got guys who were being discharged to give me a piece of ID and their booze coupons, which entitled the bearer to buy liquor on the cheap. Another sailor I met, Joe Beeler from Kansas, had gotten \$1,300 from his father to buy a used car, and he picked up a four-door Pontiac. Out of spare wood and scrap metal, I fashioned a bar that we slung over the back seat; I covered it with carpet, and cut holes in the plywood for bottles, glasses, and even an ice chest. In 1946, there wasn’t another limousine out there that looked anything like that.

We essentially used the Pontiac for three things. On weekends, we’d take a couple of girls we met, students at the University of Washington, up to Mount Rainier to go skiing. It was an expensive proposition; so during the week we ran a car service from the base to the mountains, and we’d take

pilots and other officers along for a price. Beeler and I would do some work waxing skis, then go skiing ourselves—and still get back to the parking area in time to ferry our customers back to town. Our finest work came when we would drive to the downtown Seattle dance halls, which closed about midnight. There were all these guys there who had picked up girls but now had no place to drink. So Beeler and I would pull up and just stand there holding these unmarked pints and quarts of liquor. We'd charge them fifteen or twenty-five bucks each, and that would finance our next week's ski trips with the girls, with enough left over to buy them dinner.

I was honorably discharged in April 1946, went home to Shaker Heights, and by June 1, was enrolled at Kenyon College. Perhaps the most notable thing that came out of my years in the service was that I really shot up. When I went in, I barely made the height minimum of five foot five. I left at least five inches taller.

For all the effect the war had on me, it was probably the same thing as being in a touring company of *The Taming of the Shrew* going through Schenectady, Poughkeepsie, and upstate New York. There was no sense of amazement. No sense of survival. There was very little sense of danger, very little sense of growing up or developing some maturity as a result of it. It was like going through a shower, that's all.

Sometime in the mid-1950s, Joanne and I snuck off for a weekend together and we ended up on Cape Cod. I pulled into this little dock area and saw a guy coming out of a shack at the end of the pier. And I yelled out to him, "Hey, where can I get a sport-fishing boat out here?" He didn't answer but started walking over toward me, so I asked him again: "Do you know where I can get a sport-fishing boat?"

I got a good look at him and noticed a tear trickling down the side of his nose. He comes over, throws his arms around me, and starts crying. I didn't

know what the hell was going on. Joanne was hopeless, too.

“Martin. Randy Martin,” he said. I had no idea who Randy Martin was, but he seemed to know a great deal about me.

“Do you remember Kathy Anne?” he went on. “I married her, we got two kids...” And this all started to ring a bell. “Come on over to our place and have some dinner.”

Joanne and I got in our Volkswagen, and I said to her, “I know who that is; he’s a guy who I was in the Navy with, he was in our squadron.” He’d made some reference to the beach at Barbers Point, and I finally remembered—he was a gunner. We went to his home, ate dinner with his family, and learned a lot about lobsters.

I ended up going out on his boat with him the next day, and it was the most exciting time. It was like being in Vegas, pulling up lobster pots, seeing if there was anything in them. I’d start jumping up and down when we got a big one, a fifteen-pounder, but Randy would turn it on its belly to see if there were eggs; if there were, he threw it right back in the water.

Pretty soon, there were lobsters crawling all over our deck and we’d chase them around and try to put these wooden plugs in their claws. And coming back to Chatham at low tide, there was a narrow channel into the inlet, and Randy just waited for a wave and rode it to the dock like we were on a surfboard. What a wonderful skipper! In fact, in years to come, I’d take my kids up to visit, and it was great seeing them so excited, trying to grab the clacking lobsters on the deck and put rubber bands around them.

But Randy turned into a terrible drunk, a bad alcoholic. He lost his family, he lost his boat, and one day he turned up on our doorstep in Connecticut. So I took him over to the rehab center near Westport, where they admitted him and dried him out. When he was discharged, he had a girlfriend from AA come to pick him up and take him back to the Cape. I arranged a loan for him so he could get a new boat.

But Randy went off the wagon, crashed his car, broke his shoulder, and ultimately sank his boat.

I haven’t heard from him since.

PAT FILIPPI

Newman always cocked his hat, and I used to chew his ass out. “Get that thing on right!” He’d tilt it back properly in front and the next thing you knew, it was angled on the back of his head again.

From a thousand yards away, I could tell it was Newman coming because of the way he walked. He had a certain stride about him; he was a confident kid even then as a nineteen-year-old. Hell, I was only three years older, but he impressed me that way.

Paul was a one-liner. Whenever he expressed himself, he said it in one sentence. When I hear him now in an interview I say to myself, “Jesus Christ, this kid hasn’t changed one bit.”

—≡ IV ≡—

The incredibly stupid mistake I made coming out of the war, having not been shot down in the Pacific, was signing up for a non-coed school like Kenyon College. I thought what I wanted, even more than women, was a good education. I was something of a rake, and having women on campus, as I found at Ohio University, could cause a deflection in my concentration; going coed would be a great detriment to me. In an all-male school, I could really buckle down and study. Problem was, without women there, women became the obsession. Your every waking hour was spent figuring how you could get yourself a Gambier, Ohio, town girl. So instead of having girls on campus and kind of basking in their company, being able to pick and choose, their absence became the preoccupation.

I had also neglected to research Kenyon College's reputation as a party school.

The very day I arrived there, dropped off by my parents on a Sunday afternoon in June at about three, I got distracted by a beer keg. By six o'clock, I was crocked. That was how long it took me to get in with the wrong crowd at Kenyon. So much for discipline. By the time I left Kenyon, I had no real education but owned the school's beer-chugalug record. The caption under my yearbook photo said: "Prone to getting out of hand on long tiring evenings."

Unfortunately, I wasn't really a student of anything. I did start out by signing up to be an economics major. Maybe I'd been thinking that I could end up working for my father at Newman-Stern (I even mentioned that as a possibility on my Kenyon application). I liked the store—and as I said, I was a good salesman—but the idea of a career there bored me. And while I

got through my economics classes, even through accounting, I switched my major to poli sci. To tell you the truth, though, aided by the new stature I'd attained in the Navy, what I most enjoyed was being on the college's football squad.

Of course, when I found myself in disciplinary trouble, my plans had to change. Here's how that happened, and it had everything to do with attending an all-male school.

About ten miles east of Kenyon is Mount Vernon, Ohio, where many of us would hang out. There was a club there, the Bluebird Club, that sometimes had live dance bands or popular canned music. On the weekends, it was where you went to try and pick up single girls from town. And on this particular night, a bunch of us from the football team decided to visit together.



PAUL (IN WHITE T-SHIRT) WITH FRATERNITY BROTHERS AT KENYON COLLEGE IN THE
LATE 1940S

There was a lot of antipathy between the local town boys and us. The townies were about our age, but they weren't in school, many of them working for a living with their hands. We were the outsider college kids, so the antagonism was natural. It wasn't unusual for fights to break out. What precipitated things was that we Kenyon guys were regularly trying to take their girls away from them. The townies would go to the john and when they came back, we'd be dancing with their dates.

Usually these fights were really more pushing matches than anything else. Maybe some bloody noses or black eyes. But nobody ever kicked anyone when they were on the ground, and no one hid anything in their pockets. In fact in the days after these typical altercations, you might be walking down the street and see one of the townies you fought walking just across the way. You'd wave at each other and say, "I'm going to get you next week," and the other kid would reply, "I'm around," and that's all there was to it.

One night though, things might have gone a little extra over the line; there'd been more of a real fight, though it quickly had simmered down. But the bartender at the club called the cops, and two plainclothesmen came through the door. Before they could fish out their badges, Bert Forman, our quarterback, decked one of them. Bert went out into the middle of the dance floor and said, "Come and get me!" One cop now flashes his badge and Bert responds, "I'm right here, where do you want me to go?"

The other plainclothesman turns to the bartender and asks, "Who started all of it?" and the barman pointed to three or four of our guys, who were promptly marched outside and put into police cars. Just as they were about to be driven away, one of the guys flipped me his keys and said, "Bring my car into town."

So forty-five minutes later I take his car to the police station and I find the sergeant and tell him, "One of the guys you've got in the slammer asked me to drop his keys off." And the sergeant answers, "Let me see your knuckles." And, of course, my knuckles were pretty cut up from the fight. Before I knew it, the sergeant said, "Well, you're in, too," and they threw me in the slammer with our other guys.

When I looked outside through the bars, I saw the whole courtyard next to the station house loaded with Kenyon kids who'd come out to support us. Someone had gotten a keg of beer, and everyone was sitting on the ground singing old college songs until about three a.m., when the cops dispersed them. There was a great sense of fun about the whole thing.

The next day, the story appeared in the newspapers, including the Cleveland *Plain Dealer*—Kenyon's football team was in hot water. My name was listed among those arrested, and my father saw the article—it was, to him, a reaffirmation that I was screwing up, which I was. Three or four kids were thrown out of Kenyon right away, and another three or four, including me, were placed on probation. For good measure, I was also kicked off the football squad.

With all this extra time suddenly on my hands, I went down to the speech department and read for a play. I was going to try out for the theater.

It made sense. I had done some drama at Ohio U and liked the experience. Plays were less problematic for me than taking traditional classes; I had always had a terrible time studying from books. Part of the reason was that I had never learned how to study. I still maintain I have a learning disability, and even today I don't read right. In fact, I still have difficulty memorizing scripts.

I'd actually started early onstage; in grammar school, we put on a show about Robin Hood, and I played the court jester. I sang a song my uncle Joe (who besides being my father's business partner was a published author of light verse and even the lyricist of the song "Black Cross," recorded by both Lord Buckley and Bob Dylan) had written for me about Robin's bow and arrow: "Robin Hood he saw a flea / And knocked the fuzz right off its knee / In merry England isle-o"—and then I yodeled. (I was a very good yodeler before my testicles descended. I yodeled until my thirty-eighth year, waiting, hoping. Well, not really that long, but my body did grow up late—late growing hair, late growing taller, late growing testicles. A close friend of mine, steeped in psychoanalytic theory, once suggested that I subconsciously caused the delay in my testicular descent as a way of

prolonging my mother's babying me. "Boy," I replied, "that would be one incredible act of will!")

Some people thought "Isn't he cute?" and after a few more stage turns, my mother decided to get me into the theater, regardless of what I wanted to do. My mother had hated football, and didn't want me to play a game that was inherently dangerous. She was always fluttering around trying to put on my eyelashes and straighten my lipstick when I escaped to football practice.

JOANNE WOODWARD

I remember Paul used to say to me, "For God's sake, she treated me like a girl, she wanted me to be a girl!" He was her doll.

My mother wanted me to sing, to go to dancing school, to do something arty like be an actor. So she brought me down to the Cleveland Play House, where the legendary K. Elmo Lowe, a good friend of Uncle Joe's, was the artistic director. The Play House was an acclaimed regional theater, and also ran a highly-regarded program for youngsters, called the Curtain Pullers, to which I was admitted. One play we put on was *St. George and the Dragon*, a kids' version, where at age nine I got to be St. George. I didn't slay the dragon, but I did pour salt on its tail, put my foot on its chest, and make a fiery gesture with my wooden sword. The poor dragon went through a terrible fit of writhing. It even resulted in my first professional stage photo. We did a few performances, apparently successful, and most of the moms and dads came to see us.

At Kenyon, we would put on a full schedule, between eight and ten productions a year, at the Hill Theater. Jim Michael, who was my instructor, director, and ultimately good friend, gave me a great deal of confidence by casting me all the time. Did I reach that moment of understanding or perception that someone instills in you, plugs you in, and all of a sudden the light goes on? It certainly wasn't that. I never got the sense that anything I did on stage there was spectacular, or even something very exciting. It may have been workmanlike or okay, but I was really a highly, highly unknowledgeable actor. I was a kid with an attractive exterior, had a tremendous amount of energy and a lot of personality. But was I someone who instinctively knew how to do Shakespeare or naturalistic roles? My stage work at Kenyon was just an average college performance; it would have been recognized as a product of a university and a lot of phonetics classes.

In my own mind, certainly, there was nothing special going on. Everybody shakes their heads and says, "Couldn't you read the signals that people thought you were really something?" To which I say, "No."

Take someone whose experience at almost everything has been mediocre and who then finds something that at least is the best of whatever it is that they can do—it's not great, it's not even all that rewarding, but it is their best. They know that they wouldn't be a good mechanic, they wouldn't be a good football coach, they couldn't teach history or algebra. They could still sell bowling balls—but they don't want to sell bowling balls. So the next best thing they *can* do is to somehow be connected to the theater. And it's not a triumphal thing, but it is, again, the best they can do.

If I think back at the work I did early in my career ages ago, I can't even look at it. That doesn't make me a bad person, it doesn't mean I aspired to something unreasonable. And even though that may not be okay for you, it's okay for me. I just get so pissed off when everyone imposes their standards and evaluations and their remembrances of what they worked on, what they did, and they assume that's the way it happened for me, too.

I never enjoyed acting, never enjoyed going out there and doing it. I enjoyed all the preliminary work—the detail, the observation, putting things

together. Every once in a while I'd do a scene that might come together in some unusual way and I would be astonished. But that was a tiny percentage of the time I actually spent doing it.

It's probably a reason I drank as much as I did. The exuberance, the danger, the exultation of performing was multiplied by a factor of eighty. If I got it just from acting, I wouldn't have had to go out and get bombed.

But I'm getting ahead of myself here.

The first big show I starred in was *The Front Page*, playing the fast-talking, wiseass tabloid editor Hildy Johnson. There's not much I recall about our production itself, but it was clearly well received by the audiences, and Jim Michael came to believe I had a real flair for comedic roles. I did everything from Captain Shotover in George Bernard Shaw's *Heartbreak House* (in which I was actually a last-minute replacement for another actor and had to learn the script in ten days—not a memory I'm comfortable with) and the drag role of Lord Fancourt Babberley in the Victorian farce *Charley's Aunt* to Čapek's modern science-fiction classic *R.U.R.* to Petruchio in Shakespeare's *Taming of the Shrew*.

I know there were some people in the drama department who seemed startled by some of the stage business I did with Katherina in *Shrew*, especially when I grabbed her, forced her to the ground, and straddled her. Even trying it unprompted in rehearsal was pretty courageous, they thought. But I never felt it was some great step forward. "Want my tongue in your ass, Kate?" is what Petruchio is basically saying. It's a pretty bawdy scene when they get together. All you need to do is go back and look at the lines.

Reminds me of the response to *R.U.R.* Lots of praise, but when I think back on my attack, it was really just highly oratorical. It was way out of style with what actors were doing in New York back then. (When I eventually got to New York and read for my first stage play with Anne Jackson, she just looked at me afterwards and said, "Don't work so hard. Don't act.")

Performing in Jean Anouilh's *Antigone* was most memorable in that it brought on one of the worst cases of the giggles I've ever had. I played the First Guard, which is a pretty substantial role; he has to keep an eye on the doomed princess, Antigone, and then report to King Creon the news that "the sergeant found the shovel," which was the key evidence that Antigone herself had illicitly tried to inter her brother's corpse. For some reason, I found it ridiculous that someone would think their life had been changed by finding a shovel, and that line, "The sergeant found the shovel," just started me laughing. And every time I entered during rehearsal to say the line, I just laughed uncontrollably. The cast became infuriated, and no one could do anything to help me. The company took a break, but we had to work until three a.m. before I could enter stage left and proclaim "The sergeant found the shovel" with a straight face.



PAUL IN A PRODUCTION AT KENYON
COLLEGE

It reminds me of a similar situation years later when we were filming *Butch Cassidy and the Sundance Kid*. I wrote a line for myself: When Sundance and I get off the train in Bolivia and there's nothing there but hovels and pigsties, Butch puts on a brave face and tries to bolster Sundance's sagging morale. I just look at Redford and say, "It's hard to believe that just fifty years ago, there was absolutely nothing here." I thought it was a great line, hysterical, and it just broke me up. They had to

back up the antique train we were riding for a retake, but as soon as the cameras rolled again, I just started laughing. That train kept backing up, and George Roy Hill, the director, tried everything—long shots, medium shots, whatever, but he finally called a wrap in surrender. The line never made it into the film; I'm still looking for someplace to use it.

Anyway, as much attention as I was getting for my onstage work at Kenyon, I never regarded my performances as real successes; they were just something that was done, nothing more important than someone working hard and getting an A in political science. I was doing the same thing other people were doing in class or on the tennis or football team. I didn't attach any glamour or celebrity status to it, nothing like that.

I don't remember the success of those plays, I only remember the work on them. I remember being there, being onstage, the rehearsals, making the sets, more than I remember anything about being in school. And I realize now that the most barometric incident in my college life was entrepreneurial, not theatrical: it was my laundry business.

Newman's Laundry started from absolutely nothing, but it had invention, it approached things in a revolutionary way. Though a lot of people predicted doom and dire consequences for me, it was almost bulletproof, and became the biggest triumph of my school days.

Picture Main Street, Gambier, a nineteenth-century group of storefronts, a barber, some tiny grocery shops, each maybe twelve feet across and forty feet deep, like railroad flats. I noticed one place was vacant, and it struck me that this would be a great spot for a laundry collection agency—if I could only get the Kenyon kids to use it. And I imagined that the one thing that might entice students was free beer: bring in your clothes, we'll give you a beer.

I approached the venerable Licking Laundry Company in Newark, Ohio, and asked if they'd consider a deal with me. They told me if I could make \$200 a week gross in laundry, they would do the actual washing and folding. I could practically guarantee it, I said, and they offered me 25 percent of the profit—and they'd even do the pickup and deliveries. I agreed, but said I needed them to give me enough money up front so I could

paint the place, buy bins, and build a counter—and they did. I distributed hundreds of flyers that said, “Free beer if you bring down your laundry!” The first weekend alone, we got \$300 worth of wash. And in the middle of a beautiful Saturday afternoon, a lot of my customers left the shop really intoxicated. I even took an ad in *The Kenyon Collegian* with the line: “Yep, the only student entraprise on main-street!” On the receipt slips it said: “If your clothes aren’t becoming to you, you should be coming to me.” By the time I graduated, I knocked out all the student laundry competition, and I was even able to sell the business when I left Gambier. That was my real success story at college.

C. RAY SMITH WAS A CLASSMATE AT KENYON WHO WAS
ACTIVE IN THE THEATER.

Late one night we were finishing building the set for *Charley’s Aunt* (which I had designed); Paul often stayed late to help work on sets. The smell of paint got to be too much and he said, “Let’s go take a ride!”

So out we went in an open jeep, and we had wonderful views of the valleys, the dogwoods, and the moon.

“Look at that moon!” he said.

“That’s terrific,” I said. “I wonder why the moon affects us the way it does. It makes us romantic, questioning...”

And there I was, in the middle of this great cosmic question, when Paul says, “Oh, why worry about it? Why not just enjoy it?”

After rehearsals, performances, or spending my evenings constructing sets or painting flats for our theater, I’d head over to a place called Dorothy’s. It was in the ground floor of a farmhouse on the outskirts of

town, and it held Gambier's only beer license. It was where everyone would congregate at night. Dorothy Rattray was a plump, jovial, blond-haired lady who ran the place with her partner, a fellow who called himself Jean Valjean. Dorothy loved her Kenyon boys and it was mutual.

The bar itself was situated right off the front door, with maybe eight or ten stools, and there was a room in the back with some old wooden kitchen tables and booths. There was one small bathroom.

There were other places you could go around Gambier, but you didn't bother. Dorothy's didn't serve hard liquor, though you could order some not very sophisticated sandwiches with your beers. If you were going to drink too much, there was no other place you went, even though Dorothy's closed at eleven o'clock. You couldn't get into trouble, it was the same as being home.

And, I guess, I was making a second home out of Dorothy's. Because I didn't belong to a frat, I was living in a dorm called the T-Barracks with a bunch of other "independents." The rooms were tiny, each with a pair of single beds, a couple of small desks and dresser drawers. No space even to turn around. I liked most of my classmates—Jonathan Winters, also just back from the war in the Pacific, was in my dorm that first year; you could see the beginnings of his diabolical wit, but his head was on the other side of the moon—and I had a good time with them; but what stopped me from having an *unbelievably* good time was that I just wasn't becoming a good student. I couldn't enjoy the good things I had. We were all loose and drank too much beer. Most of the time I had not done my assignments, or I turned them in late.

It likely didn't help that I sometimes acted a bit out of control. My first roommate was a kid named Charlie. He was very studious and thought that I partied too much; I didn't think ours was going to be a wonderful marriage. I came home one night after Dorothy's closed carrying a pint of cheap muscatel someone had given me. Well, Charlie was just lying there, snoring away with his mouth open, and little by little I poured about half a pint down his throat before he coughed and woke up. He packed his bags

the next day and was gone. (Charlie later got even: he drained all the water out of the radiator on my Ford and filled it with muscatel.)

I did work very hard at the theater, but that just meant that when I played, I played as hard as anybody. And I played a lot. I think the first panty raid ever organized at Kenyon was staged by my class. There was a very well-off student named Nicholson—I think he was part of one of the big Ohio tire-company families—who had a pilot’s license. One Saturday, he chartered a plane that took off from Mount Vernon while a bunch of us drove the twenty-five miles down from Gambier to Denison University in Granville.

We plotted it all out and it worked like a charm. Nicholson flew above the girls’ dormitories doing aerial acrobatics. He also dropped leaflets overhead urging the girls to “Ditch Those Wimps at Denison.” Of course, all the girls ran out on the lawn to see what was going on up in the sky. When they did, we ran into the girls’ rooms and rifled their panty drawers. They came back in and discovered they had no brassieres, shorts, or anything. We took the trophies and attached them to our cars’ antennas and drove around the campus honking our horns; we thought this was the cat’s pajamas! It was considered very daring. And to do it in conjunction with another student doing airplane stunts? Well, that was classic 1948.

Long after I graduated, Dorothy got old and sold her place. I went back to visit her and talked over times past, and I ended up buying one of the bar’s tables where each student over the years had carved his initials; I paid a lot of money for it. I didn’t have room for it in Connecticut, so I gave it to either the Williamstown Theatre or to one of my children’s camps. I wish I could remember exactly where, because I’d take it right back home with me. Sentiment, I suppose.

BOB CONNOLLY WAS A FRIEND AND CLASSMATE OF PAUL'S
AT KENYON.

Paul was wild, lascivious, dangerous. He was probably the most well-known guy on campus. He drank more. He screwed more. He was tough and cold—it turned on the girls. They liked him because he was the devil.

Paul would run around stark naked, sloshed out of his mind. Everybody drank, but he drank more than anybody else. At Dorothy's, he once pissed in an empty beer stein and put it back on the bar. Paul would mistake my room for his, and he'd come in and pass out on the bunk on top of mine.

This was an ambitious guy; Paul knew what he wanted to get and he got there.



On the last weekend of February 1949, I'd been to a party in the Deke wing of the dorms. Like each of the frats, they had what we called a bull's-eye room on the fourth floor, which had common areas where the socializing and drinking went on. It had been a long Saturday evening, and a bunch of us decided to sack out or just pass out there. Kenyon was wonderful that way; you spent weekends sleeping in different places. Nobody paid much attention to the overnight boarders.

I couldn't smell any smoke, but a fire marshal was running around, banging on doors, waking everybody up and yelling, "Fire! Get out of the building!" We couldn't see any flames, but we got up and started down the stairs. I was just wearing my boxers and a T-shirt, so I ran back up and grabbed my Navy flight jacket and began running down again. With a buddy of mine, I also grabbed a keg of beer that we had just tapped at the party before falling asleep. We carried that keg from the building, passed around some glasses, and a bunch of us drank beer outside while we watched the flames.

From where we were standing, we had no idea at first that there had been injuries; we were in the front of the large building, and the worst of the fire turned out to be in the back structure, known as Middle Kenyon. We watched it go up in flames, but assumed everyone had gotten out. We didn't know there had been anybody left in there and that the fire had actually sped through the floors so quickly.

We tried to collect ourselves, huddled together in the night. No one went around the back, because the ambulances had probably left by then. There was no communication about what was going on. Then word began to filter out little by little that some kids had been hurt.

It wasn't until dawn that we heard that at least six kids had died and there were others in the hospital. By the next day, the death toll had risen to nine students.

I did know some of the kids who were killed. The grief on campus was just so powerful. No one really was able to take in what had happened. A couple of days later, classes resumed, and many of the kids didn't have any books or coats they could wear; they'd been burned.

The fire was on the front page of every big newspaper in the country. A mass was offered for the dead. And at the Hill Theater, the cast and the speech department decided we would finish rehearsals for *Charley's Aunt* and perform it the next week as originally scheduled. I have no recollection of how the decision was reached. We didn't want to give the play, we didn't want *not* to give the play. We wanted life to go on, but we didn't want to make the performances formal. Anybody who wanted to come was invited. I've read that it was the first time laughter was heard at Kenyon since the night of the fire.

I'm not sure who first had the idea, but heading into senior year I became determined to put on a satiric revue show before graduation. The conceit was that a well-to-do kid comes to Kenyon to be shown around as a prospective student. He meets the dean. He meets the dietician. He gets

introduced to all the campus characters. He even tours T-Barracks and greets the football team. A classmate named C. Ray Smith choreographed the dances to Gilbert & Sullivan music and did the orchestrations. I wrote the lyrics and the book and directed. Perhaps our greatest accomplishment was convincing a bunch of intensely macho, painfully shy, gorilla-size football players to squeeze into tutus and waltz onstage like they were in *The Nutcracker*.

The whole show was a howl; it was raucous, hysterical, and became a very hot ticket. Since no one at Kenyon seemed familiar with the annual club spoofs performed at Harvard and Yale, this truly broke new ground. I remember some of the songs even today; they were pretty damn good:

*For fifteen years we've lived up here,
Like any early pioneer,
And filled with joy and kegs of beer
Our only happy moments.*

*At last we have a legal chance
To put some ants in babies' pants,
And nurse them with a song and dance
Discouraging enrollments.*

*But wait a moment, change the pace,
Don't hack the nose despite the face
Nor pull a tricky coup de grace,
Contented we'll appear.*

*Forget the ants for babies' pants,
We'll have another drink perchance
To chip in for the beer.*

When I first thought of putting this show together, I tried collaborating with C. Ray. I even invited him to my house in Shaker Heights—something

I rarely did with anyone—so we could spend a weekend writing. We ended up staying just one night.

I know C. Ray felt my father was treating him very badly. He was a guest in our house. At the dinner table, my father picked on him, wondered why he wasn't on the football team or going to dances, even suggesting C. Ray should visit a psychiatrist. C. Ray was shaken by his behavior, and I was badly embarrassed by the whole thing. I suspect what actually happened was my old man had a couple of drinks, because he wouldn't have done that if he'd been sober. Maybe he thought C. Ray was gay, but thinking about it, I don't think that would have offended him—he knew actors from his associations with the Cleveland Play House. I do recollect some other occasions when I brought home a visitor, and my father gave him the silent treatment. A buddy of mine once said that at my home, it seemed like I needed an appointment just to talk with my father.

After that dinner, C. Ray was very upset, frozen with humiliation. And when we sat down to try and get back to work, he couldn't write a thing. I knew it would be best if we returned to Kenyon early. And he suggested to me that the show would be better off if I tried working with another classmate, Doug Downey, rather than him. When the winter break started in 1948, Doug and I stayed behind from December 17th until Christmas Day at T-Barracks, alone in an empty building, on an empty campus, trying to finish the revue. Which, with a good deal of help from Budweiser, we did.

I decided to show the script to my father. He read it and said, "Well, I suppose there are some funny things in there, and some funny lines of poetry. But it's not what I would give. It isn't the kind of show that pokes fun at national or international foibles or that kind of thing. It's really a very local script." What he was saying, I suppose, is that if I wrote it, it was probably not very good. I guess I was disappointed. But it was expected, too. Though I can look back at it and say, "Yes, I concur without any kind of rancor or acrimony. It's probably true." The show was very funny to the guys at Kenyon, but they hadn't had a musical performed there in fifty years.

At the end of our first performance, we were taking curtain calls. We took our first one, and were about to do our second one when the whole cast jumped in back of me and pushed me out in front. I was embarrassed, I ran off the stage, and they did the next curtain call without me at all. I hated being singled out. The fact was, I worked hard in the theater or whatever, and when that was over went out and drank a lot of beer and drank hard. I suppose that was something about me, doing things hard. I don't know if it was an affectation, but that's what I did.

I was never sure what I thought of the *Kenyon College Revue* when I was doing it, but what mattered was that when you are committed to something, you go ahead and finish it. If I made up my mind to do something, then it would get completed and it would get done. I don't know any other way to attack things.

A BRIEF BIOGRAPHICAL ENCOMIUM

by Paul Newman

PUBLISHED IN *THE KENYON COLLEGIAN*, MAY 4, 1949, PAGE 1

Checking through *Life* magazine a few weeks ago, I was not surprised to find myself listed as an unmistakeable highbrow. This discovery, however, was noted without the aid of *Life* as early as 1946 and was basically responsible for my enrollment at Kenyon. After three hell-raising years in the Navy, I was ready to forsake previous attachments to co-eds, frat clubs and beer mugs in order to pursue the contents of the *Encyclopaedia Britannica* and a Phi Beta Kappa key. (How else but to isolate oneself at Kenyon?) With this in mind I packed a four-year overnight bag in a trunk and shipped myself first class to Gambier. As Hamlet said, "Alas" (Act VII, Scene 1), in one way or another, my lofty intellectual goal was thwarted. My first contact was not with Aristotle's *Poetics* or even a reasonable facsimile, but with a roommate

who was cleverly disguised by the Dean's Office as a cocktail shaker. Introducing myself as an Old Fashioned glass, we poured through many interesting things together, none of which I presently recall. And so it continued, nip and sip....

Suddenly, I found myself a Junior, much to the surprise of my father whose only report of me for two years had been when a Cleveland *Plain Dealer* reporter called up home to tell him that I was in jail with five other Gambierians, one of whom had kicked five teeth loose from the face of a local constable. The people at home began to wonder what kind of company I was keeping. And people who were keeping company with me began to wonder what type of company they were keeping with.

No longer able to show my face (or what have you) in Ascension Hall, I found refuge beneath the skirt of Dona Lucia d'Alvadorez [impersonated by Newman in *Charley's Aunt*] where the nuts come from. (It was here that I departed entirely from the pursuit of Phi Beta Kappa by developing the unique philosophy that I would not let my studies interfere with my extracurricular activities.) I modestly nicknamed myself "Barrymore." The directors modestly recognized my talents and set me to work—painting flats. I may say without fear of contradiction that painting flats is a filthy job. The result was obvious. I attached myself to a laundry business. Every Monday night I would trudge around the barracks area collecting shirts with dirty collars. Every Friday afternoon I would trudge back through the barracks area returning shirts without any collars. Sometimes not even returning the shirts. The business grew and grew until now the laundry is, as one Gambier citizen put it: Yep, the only student entrapment on main-street...

Finally, in my senior year, I became adjusted mentally. Professors tore out *mit der hair und trousers*. Why?

“Barrymore” made the merit list, right between Moorman and Nugent.

Merit List! My dream come true.

—≡ V ≡—

I graduated from Kenyon at two o'clock on Monday, June 13, 1949, and by four o'clock that same afternoon I was on the train to Chicago, headed for Williams Bay, Wisconsin. A summer-stock theater there, the Belfry Players, offered me a "scholarship" for its upcoming season. Of course, a scholarship to the Belfry meant you acted for nothing and built sets for nothing—but you had the opportunity to earn honor. Plus free room and board.

My father's lack of expertise in the going rate for summer-stock theater employment made him insistent that I should be paid for my labors or reject the Belfry's offer. What he didn't understand was how many other young theater people were waiting to take your place if your demands were too high—or you made any demands at all. I was as much a professional actor as any of the other kids in the company, and they weren't professional, either. Belfry did employ (with pay) some recent drama-school graduates, who formed a sort of resident company, and they also managed to engage some people who were not of the highest echelon to direct our shows. But theaters like the Belfry really didn't have much to recommend them except the chance to do a lot of plays in a very short time.

The Belfry Players leased a lovely old wooden house at nearby Lake Geneva. It was connected to the Yerkes Observatory, a nineteenth-century scientific landmark (and tourist attraction) that was run by the University of Chicago and housed what was once the world's largest telescope. There were six tourist-cabin-type structures around back, and that was where all the apprentices lived, including myself and a beautiful, local Wisconsin drama student I met named Jackie Witte.

We'd go out in the evenings and talk at one of the local bars, and when the bars closed, we'd sit together in the moonlight on the doorstep of the residence house and talk some more about our futures. Jackie was still in college and wanted to be an actor, too; I spoke with her about the play we were both in, *John Loves Mary*, about my aspirations, probably in a very unrealistic, poetic way—and I remember her responding in kind. We were two provincial yokels thinking that what they had to say was terribly important because it was the first time they'd said it out loud to anyone. We didn't know about Freud. We didn't know anything about the Constitution of the United States or anything else remotely adult. I didn't know who any of the great actors were; if you asked me who Olivier was, I couldn't have told you. (I probably would have recognized Van Johnson.) I could not have named one play on Broadway. We wanted to do big things. I don't remember what they were, I only remember that they were big.

To have a friend in the theater that you saw not only working during the day but even at night, someone who didn't have to dart back to her family, someone who after a hard day of building sets together, of rehearsing together, would share the privilege of going out for a beer together, too, well, that was an almost unspeakable ecstasy.

I'd never been with a woman I could talk to; I'd never even had the opportunity. There was my mother, of course, and then, at seventeen, the war. After the Pacific, an all-male college with Dorothy down at her Gambier tavern. There were the faculty wives and their daughters who acted with us in the plays. Then no one else until Jackie.

She was the first and best I'd ever seen.

Jackie's folks lived in Beloit, though they also owned a waterfront summer cabin not far from Lake Geneva; it was a great refuge and a great place to hide. Jackie introduced me to them early on but I didn't really know what to make of them. Her mother was a nervous woman who never looked you in the eye and darted around like a ferret. She was perfectly pleasant, but

somehow very evasive, always bustling about, busy organizing bridge parties. The dad was a nice, decent man, thin and not very talkative, but with an occasional burst of dry humor. I thought he must be miserable. Occasionally, I went out fishing with him in his rowboat. These were idyllic days.



JACKIE WITTE IN
1949

I suppose marrying Jackie—which I did just a few months after meeting her—was like the *Kenyon College Revue*. I’m not sure what I thought when I was writing the revue, but once you were committed to doing something, you simply went ahead and it would be done. With Jackie, I made the first real contact I had made with anyone, and I thought that having made that initial contact with a woman, the next thing you did was get married and have lots of kids.

I wish someone, a priest or a social worker or a psychiatrist, had just sat the two of us down for a minute and said, “Think this out, just follow it

through and create a script for yourselves.” I probably would have looked at Jackie and said, “Well, I’m not really sure. How do you feel?” And Jackie would have said, “I’m not really sure, either.” It was the first experience with a relationship either of us had with the luxury of time, the first we’d ever experienced in an atmosphere of freedom. But we simply followed a set of half-learned things that we thought were rules. There was some book we were playing this by, some music we were singing all the songs to. It was as if it had all been decided and decreed, with no choice but to perform things as written. You’re supposed to graduate from college, you’re supposed to find a profession, you’re supposed to get married, you’re supposed to have children, you’re supposed to protect and provide for those children. There was very little I understood beyond that. Neither Jackie nor I had a clue of our own, not an inkling. We never thought of using contraceptives, never asked. We had no philosophy about raising kids, we’d never even had a discussion about having children or not. Things just happened because they happened.

Looking back on it now, from a more sophisticated vantage point, I ask myself how I could have been so irresponsible as to take the first girl with whom I had a speaking relationship, marry her, and impregnate her right away. Then, it felt appropriate. There was a sense of fatality about it, that it was somehow all predestined, preordained. You finished what you began.

I had no awareness that I could shape things myself.

After we became engaged that summer, I’d sometimes spend nights at Jackie’s parents’ house. Jackie’s room was downstairs, and her folks’ room was up. I was petrified that her parents would come down and surprise us.

We waited until our wedding night.

I don’t remember a thing about our actual wedding, at an Episcopal church near Jackie’s folks’ home, only about leaving the reception afterwards. We borrowed her father’s old Nash, and ended up driving five or six hours through a snowstorm. By the time we got to our hotel, we were

completely exhausted. If we'd had any sense, we would have said, "Why don't we just rest up now?"

But I think our son, Scott, was conceived that night.

The next morning, we just got up, got into the car, and drove around in a big circle. Eventually, we pointed the car down toward Woodstock, Illinois, where we both were scheduled to start work at a winter theater company. We arrived there very quickly.

Though Jackie and I were both promised jobs at Woodstock, when we got there the shady guy who managed the theater said there was no room for Jackie in the company. He promised her a couple of parts, but instead hired her for the box office at ten dollars a week. I got forty-five as an actor and got cast in a stage adaptation of *Ethan Frome* and as Christian in *Cyrano de Bergerac*; our company's *Cyrano* had a southern accent, and we nearly lost our Roxane one night when her balcony started to collapse.

We rehearsed those plays in only six days and it was all pretty hysterical. Though the company had completed one successful season and the local community was supportive of the performances, which took place in a beautiful old opera house, the theater started going bankrupt and couldn't pay its bills. Our sleight-of-hand manager absconded with the money and the Woodstock Players went under. Still, Jackie and I had this four-room furnished apartment on the upper floor of some grand home in town that we rented for just a few dollars a month. We got what we paid for—for that price, we had no running water.

I wrote to my father that it would likely take me another month to find another regular job, and that I was applying for unemployment insurance. The letter he wrote back to me was absolutely scathing. Lethal. Welfare was for people, he wrote, who couldn't earn a living; it would be a blight on the Newman family name to admit that one of his sons had gone out and collected unemployment.

So I took a job at a nearby farm run by a guy named Tilley. I had to clean the sheep pen in the barn. The sheep would pee and shit and you'd cover it with clean hay. Then they'd pee and shit some more and you'd cover it again. After it got to be about six feet deep and practically up to the eaves, you'd finally clean the whole thing out. That was my job. With my allergies, every day by two or three in the afternoon I couldn't breathe. I stayed there though for about six or seven weeks.

It was my father's illness that brought me back home. He had exploratory surgery in January 1950, but I don't think they ended up doing anything to him. The surgeons said his illness was too far along. He'd be in and out of the hospital for the rest of his life.

I went to visit a couple of times while he was recuperating from the operation. He would still go to his sporting-goods store sporadically. But with me having no job, and with my father's health rapidly declining, Jackie and I headed to Cleveland.

Jackie, my brother, Arthur, and I moved into my parents' house. Jackie was pregnant while my father was wasting away. It was the toughest time I ever spent. My mother hated Jackie, who tried to be as nice and sweet as she could, but she took a tremendous shellacking. There were two main things, I think, that turned my mother against her. First, because she was my wife; my mother lived this terrible illness of jealousy that isolated her so. And second, because Jackie's father was a butcher and my mother expected me to marry better than that. She treated Jackie as an inferior.

Jackie was a stoic. She was not a whiner or a crybaby. If my mother was a monster to her, well, that's the way things were. Jackie had come from a home where there wasn't much joy, and so our household was not really a change. The horrors of being left alone with Tress Newman all day? An absolute nightmare. My mother, with her sweet, perfectly modulated voice, was like a steamroller over Jackie. The only option Jackie had to protect herself was to learn exactly what it was my mother did and follow what she was told exactly. My mother was doing to Jackie what she had always done to me. I don't even remember talking with Jackie about it. I was away at

Newman-Stern, pitching in twelve-hour days at the family store. All I could get was hearsay.

Ours was a big house, and it could have been a wonderful sanctuary. It's too bad the time for Jackie had to be so miserable. I don't think I even realized then how bad it was.

After dinner there each evening, we'd get out of the house as quickly as we could, and come back as late as we could.

While he was failing, my father still seemed to greatly worry about his appearance—not surprising, perhaps, as this was one of the last gentlemen to regularly wear spats. He didn't have the strength to shave himself, and he hated not being shaved. Arthur would shave him almost every day, but one afternoon, though Arthur was there, my father asked me to do it. I remember a combination of wanting to be at his service and at the same time drawing back. He was so frail, and I was afraid I would cut him; we had almost never touched. Not long after, as Arthur and I both sat together near his hospital bed, I heard my father say, “Paul is the better shaver of you two.” I can still remember the disappointment on Arthur's face.

Before he died, my father made it clear to Arthur and me that there'd be nothing for us in his will. We had no expectation, so no disappointment. “I figure I owed it to both of you to clothe you, feed you, comfort you, and give you a decent education,” he'd always said. “But when you reach your maturity, you're on your own.”

As he realized he was dying, my father wanted to put all his money into a trust for my mother, to protect her—he did it that way because he was afraid that otherwise she'd lose everything playing the stock market. He felt she was unstable. What he didn't realize was how suspicious she was, even suspicious enough to think he might be plotting to deny her the inheritance.

Tress was convinced my father had a girlfriend stashed away somewhere, and that he was scheming to take away her home and the control of Newman-Stern from her and bestow it to the “mistress.” As he

lay there ill in the hospital, he just needed to get her agreement to his estate plan, but she refused to sign anything. Tress kept yelling at him on his deathbed, accusing him, vilifying him. She wouldn't let him fucking die!

When my father finally passed that spring, Tress's hysterical response had more to do with her fear of what might be stolen from her than the fact that she had lost a husband. A man had died, but what was important was not that a flame had gone out of a human being who would never see the sunset again, or read another book, or make people laugh. What was important to my mother was that his family was going to rob her.

At the time of my father's death in May 1950, my mother hadn't spoken with her own family in three years. She asked them all to the funeral. What did she do that for except to show the Newman side that she had friends, too? By inviting her people to our house and immediately herding them up the stairs, though both families were at our home together to pay respects—and never even going back downstairs to offer the Newmans a cup of tea—was she declaring her separateness? Was it a punishment? Was it like the child squeezed to death in her embrace, or her dog poisoned by chocolate? Emotions triggered with no sense of the consequences?

My father was a battleground during his marriage and a battleground while he was dying. Did her fight with my father's brother, my uncle Joe, about her share of Newman-Stern, her mistrust of my father's intentions for his estate, and now the sudden inclusion of her own relatives (and the exclusion of his) in the mourning period define the sheet of steel that existed between the two families?

I wonder whether it wasn't also true of their marriage itself. I've tried to understand what they meant to each other. My mother had always said to me: "Your father and I argued a lot, but we were great together in bed." Maybe that's what it was, the glue, that passion. Maybe it was that she was the student and my father the willing teacher?

I think she could never be aware of the carnage she created.

After he died, my mother keened over my father. I didn't know why. A week before his death, she'd been kicking the bejesus out of him, accusing him of keeping another woman. Things had become very unpleasant in our household. Arthur wouldn't speak to her. Things were bad between her and Uncle Joe over her stake in the store; it was hard to convince her Joe was an honorable man. But when the will was finally read, Tress was, to say the least, surprised. My father had left her all his interest in Newman-Stern, the house, everything. Arthur and I had kept telling her, "Mother, Dad always told us it is all going to you, and nothing is coming to us." She never forgave my brother and me for being right about the will.

My father was a highly moral, deeply unhappy man who got what joy he had from observing his own ethics; he certainly never got that joy at home. I see him as a funny little clown of a man who's off doing a jig someplace, behaving very much like me.

One of my great regrets about my father's early death (he was only fifty-six) is that the two of us never really connected. His response to the recognition that eventually came to me would have filled him with wonder and relish. There was a lot we could have shared—a sense of accomplishment for one. He would have been proud of our association in a way that wasn't simply the reflection on him of me, his puppet, a possession. He would have honored me and recognized me. Whereas my mother thought I was simply a weapon of her Catholicism to be paraded in front of my father's people as the royal vindication of her own family, her smartness, her genes. My satisfaction with my success has always been tempered with a great sadness that my mother could never truly feel a part of the enjoyment.

Most people who have experienced themselves fully have in common that they remember some person—a teacher, a religious figure, a parent, uncle, grandfather—someone about whom they can say, "That was my mentor. That was my rock. That's who pointed me in the direction I

followed, who inspired me, who gave me the example to learn from and emulate.”

I never had that.

I’ve always wondered that I was never able to find a mentor. I never had anyone in my childhood I can look back on as an adult and say, “Boy, I never realized what a foundation that was, how I leaned on that.” I did get little bits of morality from my father; I don’t know what I got from my mother. I don’t know that any teachers gave me anything or any understanding of myself. No scout leader or camp person. Nobody in a church. Nothing.

As far as I can tell, I got no emotional support from anyone.



ARTHUR NEWMAN

If Paul had accepted my advice and gone into business he still would have been successful because he was loveable, had a great personality, and made people instantly like him. Furthermore, he was smart and he was perceptive and he had all the ingredients no matter what he did.



I wasn’t very happy with the Newman-Stern Co. I was making about seventy-five dollars a week, but I couldn’t find any thrust to my life there. I don’t know whether it would have been offered to me, but I had no interest in one day running the store. By the following May, the Newman-Stern Co. was sold, and I went to work at a golf range run by Newman-Stern’s new owners. I stayed there until the end of July, but I stole money out of the driving range’s cash register. It came to maybe \$175 over a three- or four-month period; I kept a record of it (and when I later took a part-time job in graduate school, I reimbursed the golf range). I don’t know why I did it—beer money or something?

I guess I also needed the extra cash. By the time Scott was born, in September 1950, Jackie and I had moved into a new home in Bedford, a Cleveland suburb close to Shaker Heights. I think the way I was able to buy it—for \$11,700!—was that just before he passed, my father signed a note guaranteeing a loan.

My new house was one story, on a tiny corner lot, with a tiny living room, a tiny kitchen, a tiny garage, and two tiny bedrooms. It was all brand-new. There were no furnishings or appliances. There was no front lawn, no hedges, no shrubs or landscaping. I had to put them all in. I went to work, came home, we went across the street and had dinner with one of the neighbors, or sometimes over to Horrigan's, downtown, a long, narrow old Irish bar where I liked to loosen up (and the very amiable proprietor would delight us by sitting down at a piano and singing "H-O-double R-I-G-A-N spells Horrigan!"). Not every day in Bedford was a delight; nor was every day a disaster.

What Jackie and I were mostly doing was expecting our first child. I don't think, as per usual, we made a lot of plans. We were having a baby, and it was going to grow like tulips on the new lawn or whatever else we stuck in the ground, that's all. We were two very young people trying to act grown up.

I know I've told people that if I had one plan in life, it was to apply to the Yale School of Drama and get a master's degree in directing so I could always teach if I couldn't get jobs as an actor. (And I never thought I would be in the movies.) But if I had actually thought through going to Yale in 1951, why did I buy this new house in fall 1950, with all that interest to pay? I wasn't thinking far ahead, or else I just figured I could root or uproot my family at will, make plans, cancel plans, and never have any of it be a big deal. Adventurous? Whimsical? Uncaring?

Going to Yale was not exactly a rational decision. My GI Bill education benefits were getting set to expire; I suspect I'd had a couple of beers, gone off inside my head someplace, pounded my fist, jumped up and down and said, "Let's go to Yale!"

I guess I thought of Yale as running away from something that wasn't providing any sense of growth or advancement. I know I didn't have a real sense of running hysterically toward the affirmation of theater, because I had no expectation of achieving anything professionally. Still, I was starting to get known in Cleveland with a couple of small jobs on radio and TV. I did a few commercials for a local bank—kind of ironic, since I was advising people to put money away for their kids when I had never saved a nickel in my life. I did late-night TV weather, too. I was scared to death when I had to deliver lines right into the camera. Television was brand-new then (though my mother had one of the first sets), and I'd never done that before; I still can't talk to anything that doesn't talk back—it's pretty frightening. I have no idea why they hired me.

I don't think I ever had a real discussion with Jackie about going to New Haven. I sent in an application. I'm accepted. I remember it as a fait accompli. Let's pack up the car and go.

The period between my father's death and our driving the Chevy to Connecticut is really just a hodgepodge of impressions for me; no single, strong, lasting memory. Except, really, for becoming a father with Scott's arrival. I remember a great sense of physical connection with Scott. Holding him and bouncing him, working his legs, taking him up and down the street in his perambulator.

But the connectedness was more brotherly than paternal, because I somehow didn't think of myself as a father. I have a great sense of omission now about this, of things unfinished or never started. A sense of screwing up. What should have been a strong father-and-son attachment was failing, a marriage was coming apart, and I didn't even realize it. I didn't know enough about my own feelings to start examining them or take any real actions; I had a real sense of disgust with the fact I was being so ineffective.

For all the hard work and joy of immersion that came at Yale, my time there was a kind of purgatory, just a resting place. I see that period in my life as the beginning of a great failure: failure to provide relief for Jackie at the home she lived in, failure as a husband, a lover, as an actor, as a father. I

don't deny anything. I'm not trying to allay anything. I do, though, have a predisposition to look at the negative of things.

JACKIE WITTE

I actually don't remember when or how we became engaged.

That summer at the Belfry was the first time I'd lived independently. (At the start of the season, I'd been driving back to my parents' home each night, but I soon decided to move with another girl into one of the converted chicken coops that served as housing for the company.) I was still in college, and all these people who I looked at as being a lot more than I was professionally were accepting me.

Paul and I spent a lot of time together. We probably both had hidden needs to escape whatever was holding us back. We must have decided we were each other's salvation. I think I was very, very infatuated, and in my experience that was love.

I'm not sure whether Paul had an overwhelming desire to become an actor. I'm not sure what kind of commitment he really had to theater, but he had a stage presence, a magnetism. He played the Gentleman Caller in *The Glass Menagerie* that summer, and I think he was quite good. I'm sure he was very good-looking, too. But I would have been much better off if there'd been at least a part of me worrying more about what Jackie was going to do rather than what Paul was going to do—with Jackie just tagging along.

What Paul did have, though, was a real desire not to work at his family's Newman-Stern Co. Paul's father didn't envision him in a theatrical career; that was not Arthur Sr.'s

wish, and he made no pretense about it. I think this probably bothered Paul a whole lot more than I realized then.

When we went to visit my parents to tell them we were engaged, my mother was charmed by Paul; neither of my parents gave us any protest over our plans. Paul had written to his family to tell them about the engagement, too; and while we were staying at my home, he received a letter back from his father. Paul read it aloud to everyone under the guise of “Isn’t my father a witty, clever man?” Later on I thought, “Yeah, but what a letter to write your son when he tells you he’s getting married!” There was no affection, no concern for his future, no fatherly anything—just a very clever, calculated exercise in wit. Of course, at the time, I took the letter at face value; I honestly don’t know how Paul really felt.

By the end of that summer, both sets of parents were exchanging letters and phone calls, and Paul took me to Cleveland to meet everyone. We went to dinner at their country club, and I ate my first lobster there that night. I’d put on a new dress, all little knife pleats of taffeta, and Tress—accidentally, I’m sure—spilled melted lobster butter all over me. My pleats were never the same.

I thought the Newmans’ house was quite lovely, and they seemed to live in a very affluent neighborhood (or at least Tress told me it was affluent). I met quite a few of Paul’s relatives, and liked them. The way I grew up, somebody would have had to take me by the hand and tell me, “This is a Jewish family.” This was all totally out of my ken.

We eventually moved into the Newman house. After Paul’s father died, Tress was undone, a poor, distraught woman who was at loose ends and didn’t know how to cope with anyone or anything. Tress also had the most irritating voice I ever encountered in a human being. That’s probably unfair,

because the voice wasn't her fault, but it just grated on the ear.

Tress had always been a well-groomed woman, but now she often wore a certain housedress that I thought she never changed. She never went anyplace. Paul and his brother, Arthur, were at the store all day, and I was in this big home with a woman I didn't even know; it was weird. I didn't know a bloody soul in Cleveland; there was no car for me to drive; I was just stuck inside with Tress as we rattled around the house all day.

With Paul and Arthur now living at home, Tress had her two sons back—and I was just somebody there. I think she had absolutely no concept that Paul and I were husband and wife, an entity of our own. It always struck me that she gave us a bedroom with a pair of twin beds—to a newly married couple!—which to me was very reflective about her attitude. I thought we would never get away from the presence of Mommy.

Paul was very, very upset by his father's death. He loathed being at Newman-Stern, of having to fit into the mold of that company. He probably did it because of pressure from Tress and guilt—and after a long day at the store, he must have thought, "What an awful household to come home to! There's Tress with a list of complaints, my pregnant wife, who's certainly got her list, too." And Paul's upset showed by him becoming even more closed up.

Somewhere along the line, we came to a point where Paul finally said: "I'm not going to do this anymore. Enough of this already. I'm going to enroll at Yale." Tress was not happy about our plan to move all the way to New Haven. For us, it was a great sense of relief.

Scott was born before we left Cleveland. I just went about my business, doing all those things you were supposed to do:

cook the meals, wash the clothes, tote that barge. I hadn't known anything about pregnancy; I didn't know what any of the risks were, didn't know anything you were supposed to be careful about. I did whatever I did, including smoking.

Paul was very much the proud father. I'm not saying he did it consistently—the diapering and whatnot—but he certainly helped with Scott; he wasn't one of those husbands who said, "That's woman's work." Scott was born into a household where the mother and father knew absolutely nothing about parenting. As time went along, I honestly felt my instincts were probably better than Paul's, but these were instincts I grew into.

Scott was an incredibly sensitive child. And I don't think incredibly sensitive people fare well in this world.



—≡ VI ≡—

What I remember more than anything else about Yale was the work. I started at nine in the morning, went on until dinner, and then continued with rehearsals till maybe eleven p.m. You'd be doing two or three plays at the same time, as well as one-act plays on Saturday mornings that the Yale playwrights' group asked the student actors and directors to perform.

This was total theater immersion; yet there seemed to be no pressure. Hard work, but fun. There were so many compatible people at Yale that you had a real sense of community and ease.

I decided to major in directing, but it was really a subterfuge. The idea was to shine a little dignity on what I was studying. I was convinced the nameplate that said "Director" on your door was better than one that said "Actor." As I mentioned, I had no real plan; but with directing, what I had was a parachute.

A longtime faculty member named Frank McMullan taught acting and phonetics at Yale, and he was in charge of our directing studies. I thought he was kind of pedantic; in fact, Yale's whole approach to theater was very academic—we even were required to learn fencing. At one point in the semester, I'd gone down to Manhattan to try and meet some agents; I was really affected by the personality, haste, tension, and urgency in their offices. Young actors were being shoveled in and out of doors, new ones hustled in and then hustled out. When I got back to campus, I created a scene for McMullan's directing class based on that experience. I got a garbage can and had a kid upstage beating on it with a stick; meanwhile, a typist was typing away in a different rhythm downstage with seven or eight

actors hurrying around in time to the beats. My class loved it. But when it was done, Frank McMullan looked at me and said, “Why don’t we do this in a more realistic way? Let’s take that beat out of it.” Of course, the actors did what he said. It was so funny that what I had seen as the heart of the exercise was the very thing he excised. But that is my memory of Yale.

What I most remember about Connie Welch, my primary acting teacher at Yale, was everything I don’t remember about later studying at the Actors Studio in New York. Her classes seemed orchestrated, technical, planned, and, again, academic. They were not, to me, very inspired.

Strangely, the course at Yale that helped me the most was the History of Theater, taught by a German refugee named Alois Nagler. It ran all the way from the Greeks through the classic French playwrights like Racine. Even with my terrible work schedule—besides classes and rehearsals at the drama school, I was also selling encyclopedias for extra cash—I had to read all kinds of plays. Which resulted in my getting a much better sense of what constituted a good play and a bad play.

And ultimately, recognizing the difference between a good script and a bad one.

I’d found my family a place to live on New Haven’s Chapel Street. It was three rooms on the third floor of a building with a furrier’s shop at street level, and where the second floor had been condemned. There was a kitchen, a bedroom and a screened porch; we gave Scott the bedroom, while Jackie and I took the porch, which the landlord had glassed in so he could charge for another room.

A lady by the name of Mrs. Dupuy lived there, too. The first time we met, she had rapped on our door and introduced herself; as she did so, we noticed she was scratching the side of her head with a .45 Colt revolver. Mrs. Dupuy told us she was a widow, but was doing just fine, because she kept this gun at her side in case her apartment was invaded. She also shared that what she best recalled about her marriage was that she gave off so

much body heat that it drove her late husband crazy, since he could never get their bed cool enough for him to sleep.

We had parties at our place all the time. We cooked in the tiny kitchen, and also did barbecues in the backyards of some of the other married students nearby. I'd make a special dish, like open-faced grilled-cheese sandwiches with garlic butter, bacon, and mozzarella. People thought they were wonderful, and whenever they heard I was cooking them, they'd show up in droves. (I recently tried making them again and they actually tasted pretty bad.) We never had much money, so all of us bought food in a communal way to save.

In warm weather, each Sunday, we'd have picnics in a wonderful little spot next to the Merritt Parkway. Scott was nifty, sort of the center of attention. Everyone would bring their own young kids, and we'd play with them beside a little stream that ran nearby.

I liked having a lot of people around. We had good times in New Haven. Probably the best of all our family times, the best times for Jackie and me.

I don't remember much about the Yale production of *Beethoven* except that I wore a red jacket while everyone else on stage seemed to be dressed in black; my costume was so bright it was like a flashbulb going off in the dark. What I actually do recall is the name of the playwright, another graduate student at the drama school named Dorothy Bland. The title role was performed by Sorrell Boone; though he was just twenty-one, he was already going bald. He was the Yale drama class's resident intellectual, who hoped to one day shake the very foundations of American theater and become the reigning Shakespearean actor of our time. (His career didn't work out quite that way; Sorrell often appeared on Broadway, and spent years as a successful character actor, best known, perhaps, as one of the stars of *The Dukes of Hazzard*, playing the comically corrupt politician Boss Hogg.)

I was Karl Beethoven, the composer's conniving nephew, who sold his famous uncle's latest music for the money to buy himself clothes—thus the bright-red jacket, which was supposed to show, I guess, what a bastard he was. Frank McMullan directed and cast me in the part that first got me recognized onstage. It was pretty unusual for a first-year student to get a leading role in what was considered one of the year's major productions.

ANNE KNOLL NIXON WAS A FRIEND OF JACKIE WITTE
FROM BELOIT, WHO ATTENDED THE YALE SCHOOL OF DRAMA
WITH PAUL.

Every actor at the drama school wanted to play Karl Beethoven; it was a juicy part, very dominant and sexy. The competition for the role was extraordinary. Paul got it because he was by far the most magnetic and attractive of all the actors there.

Karl wasn't even Paul's kind of part; it wasn't in him, really, to do Shaw or Shakespeare; he's not a classical actor, he doesn't have that sort of language or presence. What Paul did have was personal presence. He looked wonderfully handsome. He plunged in; he may not have done it right, but he didn't hang back. It was a chance to make an impression on his peers, and also on the theater people who'd come up from New York to see the main Yale productions.

Was it luck he got the part in *Beethoven*? No. He got Beethoven because he made sure he got it.

In those days—and still today—theatrical agents took the train up from Grand Central Station to New Haven to scout the new talent at the drama school. There was apparently at least one in attendance for one of Yale's

four performances of *Beethoven*, a fellow from the Liebling-Wood Agency, Jim Merrick. He came backstage afterwards, gave me his card, and suggested I come see him sometime in Manhattan.

The Liebling-Wood Agency was a powerhouse on Broadway. It represented many of the era's leading playwrights—such as Tennessee Williams, William Inge, Yip Harburg—as well as some of the hottest stage talent, including Marlon Brando and Montgomery Clift.

So I began making day trips to the city during the rest of the semester, just to test the waters, maybe three or four times, on those days when I didn't have classes. I read a theatrical trade paper called *Actor's Cues* to find out about open casting calls, and went to many of them at CBS and NBC. They were airing a lot of live television dramas then being shot and broadcast from New York, but I never got any jobs from these open calls. I did meet some casting people who said, "Well, come back another time and maybe we can find a part for you," but that was about it.

Jim Merrick wanted to sign me to the Liebling-Wood Agency, but his bosses didn't want to make a commitment to me. Why they didn't want me to actually sign was bewildering; they'd send me around without any contract with them, and made it clear they'd be pissed if I got work through anyone else. In the meantime, unbeknownst to Liebling-Wood, I'd also been seen by another talent agent, Maynard Morris, from the big MCA operation—but again with no commitment or obligation.

One afternoon, Maynard sent me out to see a theater producer that the Liebling-Wood Agency had already had me visit. I told Maynard I felt peculiar about it, especially given what might happen if I actually got the job and had to pay commission to one side or the other. "Well," he said, "we can't have you going around anymore until you make up your mind about who you belong to."

That's when I decided to leave Liebling-Wood.

That summer, I told Jackie I wanted to give New York a real try. For the time being, she would remain in New Haven with Scott, while I moved into a tiny apartment on the corner of Spring Street and Sixth Avenue, what's now considered SoHo. It was incredibly tiny and I stayed there with two

other people—a Yale-connected young woman named Joan Szell and her boyfriend, who were summer housesitting for the actual tenants.

Even when I decided not to return to Yale, to take a leave beginning in September, it was an extremely speculative choice, with no sense of any surety. I'd only studied at Yale for around eight months, and despite all the open calls I went to during the summer, I'd gotten no speaking roles, nothing. Maybe there was a walk-on in *The March of Time*. The thought of an acting career was all really just a hunch.

What eventually made the whole move easier was that Jackie had an aunt who lived on Staten Island. By the summer's end, the aunt gave us a place to stay, plus free babysitting for Scott. Plus, while we were there, someone we met suggested I might be able to get a job as a model.

I was broke. I owned only one suit. And when I got offered a cover shoot for a detective magazine, I took it. I was posed with a girl in a brassiere, and I was supposed to be grabbing her arm. I was really embarrassed—but they paid me \$150, which was quite a bit of money then. And they paid in cash. Well, I walked out of that studio thinking, “Boy, I can go out now and buy me a new suit for \$39.95!”

Just as I hit the street, some guy rolled up in a panel truck and said, “Hey, buddy, you wanna buy a suit?” I thought: “How did he know that?” I got into the truck and he showed me these bolts of fabric he ordered for some of his Park Avenue customers. “I thought you sold suits,” I said. “No,” he replied, “all I've got are these bolts, but they're worth eight hundred dollars each. How much have you got on you?” I answered, “Only a hundred and fifty.” To which he replied, “Okay, that'll do.” Ten minutes later, I hopped out of that truck with two bolts of cloth that I didn't even have the money to have turned into suits.

Flash forward a year or so. There was a tailor's shop in the theater district, at the corner of Eighth Avenue and Forty-Fifth Street, that I walked past every day on my way to work. I had some money, and took one of those fabric bolts to the tailor and got myself measured with great fanfare. I chose a style, picked out a lining, and in a week or so it was finished. I had a new suit and it looked great. On the second day I wore it, I spilled

something on it and carried it to the dry cleaners. I knew the owner, and when I came by to pick it up four days later, he said to me, “Tell me about this suit.”

“I just had it made,” I said. “What’s the problem?”

“With the lining,” he said, “nothing. But as for the rest of it...” And then he carried out the rest of my suit. It had absolutely shrunk into itself. All that remained really was an outsized, perfect lining attached to a tiny outfit that seemed to have melted down.



PAUL AND JOANNE READ A DRAFT OF *BABY WANT A KISS* WITH PLAYWRIGHT JAMES COSTIGAN IN 1964. PHOTO BY PHILIPPE HALSMAN

I never did anything with that second bolt I bought. God, I can’t believe I was ever that naive. Actually, yes I can.

I left the ranks of the bourgeoisie and became a member of the Actors Studio, the extraordinary acting study group headed by Lee Strasberg and

famous for preaching the Method—the art of using your own memories and feelings to inhabit a role. How, I still wonder, did I ever pass that audition?

They didn't, and couldn't, have responded to my acting. I'm sure the other actors there wondered, "How did this son of a bitch get in here?" But when I mixed my confidence and energy with my real emotions—terror and fright (which came out as rage)—something genuine was going on, even if just by accident. I felt the Actors Studio members were the real actors, the bohemians, and they saw this kid from Shaker Heights wearing his seersucker suit and, well—I was *in* their world but definitely not a part of it. There were people there like Geraldine Page and Kim Stanley and Ben Gazzara, Frank Corsaro, Julie Harris, Jimmy Dean, Eli Wallach, and Annie Jackson; Brando was basically emeritus by the time I joined, but he did come around once in a while, especially if Elia Kazan, the director, had a scene he wanted him to look at.



STEWART STERN

For many years, Paul's favorite short story has been *Tonio Kröger* by Thomas Mann. It's about a boy in nineteenth-century Germany who adored an older boy with blue eyes who came from the north like his father. Tonio's mother came from the south and gave him her brown eyes. All his life he envied the blue-eyed people. When he grew up and became an artist, the conventional, blue-eyed part of his nature—successful, socially acceptable, was always criticizing his brown-eyed part—the sensitive, poetic, creative persona.

From the time he's been conscious, Paul has felt split down the middle of his soul. He can't permit himself to be blue-eyed or brown-eyed, because when he moves toward one side, the other pulls him back.



In high school I felt unaccepted by the people I wanted to be associated with, the socially acceptable people, the beautiful people at the Christian country club. I really just wanted to be social. I didn't want to be academic, and I didn't want to be a poet.

Ultimately, I thought talent would be a measurable explosion, an incredible sense of bohemia, somehow, a scarf that wrapped around your neck that disconnected you from any predisposition to the conventional. To be the innovator, a person who discovered things, new modes and new styles. I never felt that. I never had a sense of talent because I was always a follower, following someone else with stuff that I basically interpreted and did not really create.

I was sure none of these people at the Actors Studio actually considered me an actor. I was a pretty boy, a real conventional kid who somehow had staggered into this melange. I wasn't even a Yalie anymore. Also, I'd arrived there just as I was starting to work on Broadway. I now had a family settled in Staten Island. I couldn't really socialize, participate in what the Actors Studio folks did at night, and it was difficult to get into Manhattan early enough to attend classes and exercises. Everyone else seemed to have an extracurricular life that didn't involve me.

I did very few scenes myself, but I learned from osmosis and observation, watching these people, seeing how they did it. They had the pursuit of intentions, the impetus of active verbs, and just the simple act of moving. Successful actors really don't have to do anything more than that; of course, it took me thirty years to figure that out for myself.

When I first got the job in *Picnic*, I had a wife and child (with another one on the way) and only \$250 in the bank. I don't know how long I would have been able to stay afloat without some financial cushion or if the play didn't run. I'd even applied for a job at the Hillside Avenue branch of the US Post Office in Queens.

I always could have gone and sold encyclopedias again. I wasn't actually worried about starving and going on welfare. If some opportunity had arisen that was secure but was away from the theater, I might have done it; I don't know.

So this bright-eyed yokel in his seersucker suit comes to New York via Yale, gets a few TV walk-ons, graduates to three- or four-line parts. He's introduced to the director Josh Logan, who's putting together a production of a new play called *Picnic* by William Inge. I get cast in the small part of the newsboy, with about ten or twelve lines in the first act. I'm also the understudy for Hal, the seductive drifter, and for the main supporting role of Alan, his hapless rival. Pretty soon, before the opening, I'm promoted to play Alan full-time, whose part seems exactly what the bright-eyed yokel was: a kid from Shaker Heights in a tan linen suit, who has to compete for the girl against the star, Ralph Meeker, who was Mr. Animal, and not having a clue physically or mentally about what that involved. The Shaker Heights kid, already married with a wife and child, runs into a sensational twenty-three-year-old girl named Joanne, who herself is understudying the play's female lead and some other parts. *Picnic*, memorably, has a long dance scene that triggers the primary onstage romance. The kid has no physical grace, so back in the wings Joanne, pearly of skin and sensitive to touch, teaches him how to dance. I was nursing an ailing marriage and this thing I carried around in my trousers every time we danced backstage together. Every day.



PAUL AND JOANNE IN THE BROADWAY PRODUCTION OF *BABY WANT A KISS*
IN 1964

And still, after the play was a hit, and Ralph Meeker was set to take a two-week vacation, and I asked Josh Logan whether I could take over the part, Logan patted me in a fatherly way on top of my head and said, “I’d like to, kid, but you don’t have any sex threat.”



JOSH LOGAN, PULITZER PRIZE WINNER AND DIRECTOR OF
WILLIAM INGE’S *PICNIC* ON BROADWAY IN 1953

Paul was introduced to me by William Liebling, husband of Audrey Wood, who was the agent for the play. I met Paul just

to please him. My first impression of Paul Newman was that he was way too much of a gentleman to be a good actor, and that it would take too much effort to break down all his politeness to get to the real core of the man. But when we were casting the show, Paul's good looks made him right for the part of the one-line character, Bomber, who makes a pass at Madge after the picnic.

We also made Paul the understudy to the play's rich boy, Alan, and he soon proved to be better than the man he was understudying. So I asked Bill Inge if he could rewrite the part of Alan for a younger man and we recast Paul. He immediately fell into the part of the rich boy, and made the play stronger. In fact, it was Paul who made the play a hit.

I also ended up making Paul the understudy for the lead role of Hal. I noticed Paul had a good build and if he would work out and learn to dance, he could play the part. We did one rehearsal with Paul as Hal, and I said he'd be fine if he could wiggle his ass a little bit when he danced.



Sometime between the opening of *Picnic* in February 1953 and filming *The Long, Hot Summer* four years later, I went from being not much of a sexual threat to something else entirely that people recognized. I never thought it was really genuine, any more than I felt my anger on screen was genuine—I well remember Ben Gazzara criticizing my stage anger during a scene at the Actors Studio as “phony...it’s just yelling”—but I guess it fooled enough of the people enough of the time to seem convincing. Something had rubbed off on me. It was the introduction of Joanne and her sexuality into my life. The years of dreaming and longing were suddenly a possible reality.

Joanne gave birth to a sexual creature. She taught him, she encouraged him, she delighted in the experimental. I was in pursuit of lust. I’m simply a

creature of her invention.

STEWART STERN

Joanne relates with her heart, spontaneously and unmistakably. I mean she is a lady whose emotions come right out of her skin. She is sudden, and she cannot be false: it is not in her system.

You know how it's decided some luminary deserves a special evening, an honor night? If I ever deserve an evening tribute, it should be for the invention of that sex symbol that was created by Joanne. And it shouldn't be done at the American Film Institute or the Oscars—it should be a parade right before the Orange Bowl or the Rose Bowl. There could be a float with flag waving. There could be interviews with women who remember the French soft-core porn film *Emmanuelle*, where the heroine opens a magazine to a photo of me. I thought that was really the moment of my arrival.

In my marriage, Jackie was available, but there was always a gauze, a veil, over our responses to each other. At the core of my marital problems was a deep-seated sense of responsibility gone wrong, starting out with the delusion that we were building on a firm foundation. And when it wasn't that firm, neither of us had enough courage to say, "Let's stop here." You determine to hold the thing together, to churn your way through with pure stamina.

I suspect Jackie and I were doing that from our first moments of marriage. I know I couldn't be personal with anybody. And she probably wanted just that more than I gave her credit for.

We were deluded: blue skies—no need to deal with black clouds. Everything is terrific! I never realized how shallow I made the waters.

She had a tough go of it, Jackie did.



PAUL IN THE LATE
1950s

Still, I knew there had to be something else down the pike. There were a couple of quick diversions here and there; you couldn't even call them one-nighters. And they were always followed by terrible pangs of recrimination and guilt.

My ethical self was overwhelmed by the discovery of much more powerful appetites. Betraying my marital vows to Jackie seemed insignificant against that discovery. All my desperate fantasies and years of being turned down disappeared with Joanne. I suddenly found the door of opportunity flung open right before my eyes. Joanne made me feel sexy.

Orphans do have big appetites, and Joanne and I seemed like a couple of orphans. She first knew I was one because of that problem in my pants each time we danced, and I knew that she was an orphan because I couldn't see the definition of her personality other than her sexuality. It took one to know one, and we just banged it together. We made a point during *Picnic* and afterwards to let the lusty aspects of ourselves have time to function without interruption or distraction; I think we were pretty good about that, we left a trail of lust all over the place. Hotels and motels and public parks and bathrooms and swimming pools and ocean beaches and rumble seats and Hertz rental cars.

I don't know that Joanne and I sat around questioning our morals. There was passion in what we had. Something had happened to us and we had no idea where it was going. One day I'd determine to commit to her, and the next day, faced with having to do it, I'd find I couldn't bring myself to break away from Jackie.

I remember a night when everything exploded on me. I was leaving our house for the theater, the kids were carrying on, there was food all over the floor. I just wanted to drop down on my knees and tell Joanne that I really loved her, and I had to get out of this mess that I was in. Then, all of a sudden, I realized I couldn't do that; I didn't have enough money and just couldn't desert Jackie—God, it was horrible.

My indecision and judiciousness, constantly weighing all the elements, was paralleled by Joanne's unpredictability. There was a wonderful joining in that, too. We were constantly keeping each other off balance; I think that

was great, because there was no commitment in that, and I don't know that either of us really wanted a commitment. Yes, we did want all the movie-star shit and the lust and the scuttling around—I know we said we didn't, but that was part of the allure. Because it was naughty and somewhere, somewhere, there was sacrifice involved. I don't know when exactly that became clear, but there was also the most incredible, unforgivable brutality in that. Brutal in my detachment from my family. There was no signal given to Jackie, no chance for her to regroup.

Each time there'd be an evening of great passion and affection with Joanne, I'd change my mind again about a divorce. My vacillations went on for years.

JOANNE WOODWARD

I was already having a hard time because there was something so amazing about living this fantasy, even for someone who had lived her entire life in fantasy, as one long movie script, there were just things coming in that I couldn't grasp onto.

There were also times that Joanne felt guilty, that she was betraying a family and children. But we'd always come back to the point that what bound us together was irresistible.

ED LEVY, A CLOSE FRIEND OF PAUL'S AT KENYON AND OF
BOTH PAUL'S AND JACKIE'S IN NEW YORK.

Paul invited my parents and my aunt to see *Picnic*, and he set up to meet us for a drink after the show. He brought Joanne.

She was eager to be there, eager to please. She was just waiting for things to happen, euphoric because she was starting to fall in love with Paul.

As we were leaving, Joanne said she was afraid to walk home alone, it was dangerous; Paul said he would see her home, and they left. My aunt said to me, “She’s kinda sweet on him.”

“No, nothing to it,” I said.

I refused to believe it was anything; I’d never easily suspect Paul of having an affair, because he was kind of straight—the way people were back then who were recently married.

Not long after that evening, when I saw Paul and Jackie together, I said to him, “Oh, tell me about Joanne Woodward. I have a feeling she might be living with someone.” And what I meant was: might she be available to date me? Then Jackie said, “I have that feeling, too, about her living with someone.” But she said it with an edge.

Paul kind of slid down in his chair, because he obviously hadn’t clued me in. I think he’d been throwing out hints to me, but I refused to take them, because I didn’t want to give up my image of Paul. The two of us would go out drinking and he’d say, “You know, I met this girl in a bar...” I couldn’t believe it was anything more than him making conversation.

A couple years later—Paul was still married then, and I think he’d just had a third child with Jackie—and I ran into Joanne and him in Detroit, where Joanne was doing a play, *The Lovers*. I felt loyal to Paul, always. I wrote him that I didn’t think he was a bastard, that I understood what he saw in Joanne and that I could tell where things weren’t right with Jackie. Paul wrote a note back to me.

“You’re the only one,” he said, “who doesn’t think I’m a shit.”

Around the time *Picnic* opened, Jackie and I decided to move from Staten Island to a rental in Fresh Meadows, near the Queens/Nassau County border. By then, I was regularly going out at night after our performances to one of our show bars with actors from the cast, including Meeker, Janice Rule, and Kim Stanley. But really, in my mind, it was mainly Joanne and me. There would also often be some college buddies of mine or friends of hers, TV folks—each night, a lot of people around us. Joanne had a fourth-floor walkup studio over on the East Side, it was just one room with a built-in kitchenette, so we'd often end up nearby, like at Costi's. Was Jackie suspicious about what was happening? I don't know; Jackie was the only person more naive than I was.

As the *Picnic* run came to an end, I wasn't sure what to do next; there'd been talk of starring in some TV productions, and some other Broadway shows, and Hollywood also came calling. Josh Logan told me not to sign up for movies. And my agent, Maynard Morris, said, "Well, listen. If you don't want to go to LA, it's okay. Just remember, though—people wait around and they wait around and they knock on your door, then they knock on your door again, and one day there's no more knocking. You never know when that last knock is going to be." And the knock I finally picked up on was for *The Silver Chalice*. Years later, when my career was a lot farther along, I was widely quoted as saying it was "the worst movie produced in the fifties": it was not an inaccurate quote.

My time in California didn't have an auspicious start. I drove there from New York, alone, and literally didn't know where I was going. I was booked for a room in Hollywood, at the Roosevelt Hotel, but I got off at the wrong exit on one of the freeways—I'm not even sure whether it was the Ventura or the Pasadena; I must have cut all the way through Kansas. Anyway, I don't really remember ever coming into Los Angeles itself, but I

ended up exiting at Santa Monica Boulevard. I later, of course, found out there was a much easier way to get where I was headed, but I had to drive a long way on local roads along Sunset. It took forever until I found the Roosevelt.

The Silver Chalice was being shot at the Warner Bros. lot in Burbank, but early on I also had a meeting at MGM at the other end of the city. Some lady with a baby carriage had been coming across the street and I nearly ran her over. I started yelling, “You dumb shit!” A cop pulled me over and started railing: “You almost ran over that woman in a crosswalk!”

“What was wrong about that?”

“Well, in LA, pedestrians have the right of way. Where are you from, anyway?”

And before I could answer he noticed my New York plates and asked for my license.

“It’s being sent out from New York; I just got here but I left my wallet at home.”

Somehow, I wasn’t locked up.

The Silver Chalice was a big-budget biblical toga epic about a young silversmith—played by me—who was asked to create the Holy Grail after Jesus’s death. The director was Victor Saville, whose movies went back to the silent era and who had spent years getting the financing together to make this movie. During the few rehearsals we actually held, I realized that I wasn’t going to get any help from Victor, whom I must have been driving crazy.

ARTHUR PARK BECAME PAUL’S PRIMARY MOVIE AGENT AT
MCA.

He was totally unlike himself when he was doing *The Silver Chalice*. Because he hated it. He hated the part, hated the way they were making it, hated the fact that he'd fallen into what he considered a trap. It was painful for him, and he was kicking himself in his own shin for letting himself get into this mess.

JOHN FOREMAN, PAUL'S AGENT AND LATER BUSINESS
PARTNER

After Paul opened in *Picnic*, every studio wanted him. He was the hot guy. And the reason “coast” (what we called our LA office) made the decision in favor of Warner Bros. was that Paul had the chance to be the star of his first picture—plus they offered the best terms. Everyone went into *The Silver Chalice* with their eyes wide open, including Paul Newman, who at the time of the deal was thanking the heavens above for an opportunity to make some real money. He'd go from making around \$350 or \$400 a week on Broadway, to \$1,750 a week to start at Warners.

MEADE ROBERTS, A SCREENWRITER BEST KNOWN FOR
HIS COLLABORATIONS WITH TENNESSEE WILLIAMS ON *THE
FUGITIVE KIND* AND *SUMMER AND SMOKE*, WAS CLOSE TO BOTH
JOANNE AND PAUL IN THE 1950S.

Before he headed out to Hollywood, Paul told me he was very nervous about the *Silver Chalice* part. Paul said Maynard Morris had told him, “No Bible movie is ever a flop. Look what *The Robe* did for Richard Burton!”

To which Paul replied: “I don’t think *The Silver Chalice* is *The Robe*.”

Someone I met there suggested I smooth my path by trying a Hollywood acting coach. To which I replied, “Are you some kind of freak?” But the more I thought about it, I began to see I was in trouble, and had to get on my feet with the part. So I ended up working with a little Hungarian lady named Elsa Schreiber. She wasn’t attached to Warners, she was an independent coach, and always wore a bandanna around her head. She had me rehearse with one of her other students, doing some of the scenes from the film’s script. It wasn’t the same, of course, as working with the actual actress you’d be working with, and that didn’t make much sense to me. But I’d practice the scenes and Elsa would stop me.

“You’re not thinking,” she told me. “You’re just *thinking* that you’re thinking.”

And here I was, someone who’d already been on Broadway and had a year at the Actors Studio, and it finally occurred to me what the hell she was saying. There were a lot of other people who probably would have gotten that instantaneously, and here I was, someone who was already a couple of years into being a reasonably professional actor in New York. And this was the first time anybody said that to me in a way that made sense—and I listened.

Just when I began working with Elsa, I was at the lot and ran into Jimmy Dean, whom I knew from the Actors Studio. He was getting ready to start filming *East of Eden*, and we went to the commissary.

“Hey, I read your script,” he said.

“What do you think of it?”

“Well,” he answered, “it’s just endless pages of exposition.”

Here was Jimmy launching his movie career in a film directed by Elia Kazan, and I was about to work with Victor Saville. Somehow, it seemed appropriate.

MEADE ROBERTS

A few months after *Chalice* was released, I met up with Paul at a tavern we liked at Fifty-Fourth Street and Sixth, right across from the old Ziegfeld. And sitting right inside was Jimmy Dean.

The word was already out about Dean's upcoming picture.

Jimmy said: "Oh Paul, you poor guy! Look what you're in! Have you heard how great *East of Eden* is?" He got very snide and just awful.

Paul took it with a great deal of dignity. I'd have hit him. I was itching to.

— VII —

For me, the experience of making *The Silver Chalice* became a metaphor for the whole movie junk, the failure of it, the hollowness, the superficiality. I guess that made it appropriate that it would be the first film I would do and that it would fall flat on its ass. And it would be appropriate that I, sensing the disaster of it, sensing the amateurishness of it before the movie was even finished shooting, would already be negotiating to go back to New York and do another Broadway play. Thus began the struggle to extricate myself from this image I couldn't escape. But like a great many other things in my life, to paraphrase Theodore Roosevelt, on the one hand I would stomp it underfoot, but on the other hand, not so fast.

I'm not talking about success (or lack thereof) but about my appearance. It isn't uncomplicated. It was my appearance that got me in the door. Where the hell would I have been if I looked like Golda Meir? Probably no place; it was like being a guy with a trust fund who doesn't have to work. I always had that trust fund of appearance. I could get by on that. But I realized that to survive, I needed something else.

Especially because my life seemed to be changing again.



MARY HARA, NICKNAMED BLATZ, A FRIEND OF PAUL'S
FROM YALE'S DIRECTING PROGRAM

Paul had just come back to the city from making *The Silver Chalice* and he took me to see *Gate of Hell*, a samurai film from Japan.

“What was it like in Hollywood?” I asked. “Did you enjoy doing it?”

“Blatz,” Paul answered, “they’ll do anything for money out there. They’ll do anything for money, they’ll kill for money. It’s just awful.”

When I left Hollywood after *Silver Chalice* wrapped, Joanne (who’d also been working there) and I had this terrible fight. It was over, all finished between us. We decided we’d never see each other again. I decided to drive back to New York; my mother had been visiting, and I figured I would drop her off in Cleveland. (We even stopped off in Vegas, where we had a great all-you-can-eat dinner for one dollar.)

It was a miserable situation for Joanne; she was a backstreet wife and I wouldn’t get a divorce. I didn’t know how I’d do it, but I wanted to try and straighten out my marriage and be with my family. That idea permeated my thinking, and after I left California, Joanne and I didn’t talk or communicate for what must have been months.

I began rehearsals for the Broadway version of *The Desperate Hours*—I played an escaped convict who takes Karl Malden and his family hostage. It became a hit play, and Jackie and I decided to rent a house in Sea Girt, New Jersey, only an hour and fifteen minutes from Manhattan. There were a lot of Grosse Pointe/Shaker Heights-type homes just a block away from the ocean, and in the middle of them all was a Charles Addams house that was unfinished on the inside, and had everything falling down on the outside. It was sensational.

The surf at Sea Girt was big and delicious. I’d drive there every night after the theater, and I’d swim at midnight in the breakers. I felt at home in those enveloping waves that knocked you right down, the wonderful comfort of being engulfed in that tumultuous water.

Strange, but I never was frightened by water despite almost drowning as a kid. I don’t remember exactly how old I was, but I was in the town pool

and I couldn't yet swim. A counselor was there, and maybe a hundred and fifty kids in the big pool with him. Six of us would jump on his back at once, and he'd go wading out into the water up to his shoulders—and over my head. One afternoon, I just dropped off and sank. Absolutely gone. Another counselor came swimming by—I remember the flash of his bathing suit—and I grabbed hold of his waist and would not let go. I was underwater around his belt, but the counselor thought I was just screwing around; so whenever I managed to surface, he dunked me. I was beginning to drown and he finally got it, pulling me to the side of the pool. I couldn't have lasted much longer. With all that bedlam, I would simply have sunk to the bottom, and much later someone would have said, “Well, isn't that funny? Some little fellow's down there looking for pennies at the bottom of the pool!”

Jackie and I had very good times in Sea Girt. Scott must have been four or five then, and our first daughter, Susan, was still a toddler; it was a good time for them, too. We'd always bring people to visit on my weekend—which was Sunday to Monday, since we did no Sunday matinees back then—and I'd do cookouts and everyone would go down to the beach for swims.

Then one day back in the city, I went to a script reading at some producer's place, and bingo, there's Joanne coming out of a neighboring office. We both just stood there, looking at each other, and it was on again.

And then it was off again.

There were more separations, breakups, lots of times we were not together. Terrible fights. But again, after some time passed, I had to go out to Warners in California for meetings. Joanne was already in Hollywood doing some TV shoot for 20th Century-Fox. There's a long boulevard within the Warner Bros. lot that passes by dressing rooms, parking lots, an administration building, an executive dining room, and the commissary, which one afternoon Joanne was just leaving. From the equivalent of four blocks away, we somehow saw each other and hollered; then, just like in some old movie, we began running toward each other, arms outstretched. It was amazing.

There came a point when I was really leading two lives. I was living my life with Jackie and I was living my life with Joanne. These were impossible times. Till then, I'd never had a sense of consequences, never suffered from them. I volunteered for a torpedo bomber and survived. I graduated college without working. I drove cars off cliffs after having too much beer. But now, with Jackie and Joanne, consequences began to weigh heavily on me. I was a failure as an adulterer.

My private turmoil was not interfering with my career. I was cast in *The Battler*, an hour-long TV drama, telecast live, based on one of Hemingway's Nick Adams stories and directed by Arthur Penn, about a punch-drunk ex-boxing champion who tragically chooses the glory of the arena over the love of a loyal woman. Jimmy Dean was cast as the lead, while I got the main supporting role. Two weeks before the show was to be broadcast, Jimmy was killed when he crashed his Porsche on a small highway in California. The decision was made to go ahead, and I took over Jimmy's part as the fighter.

It was exhausting. There were three rehearsals a day, from eight a.m. to ten o'clock at night. A run-through. A dress rehearsal with wardrobe changes and makeup—my character had to go from beat-up to handsome to beat-up again during the course of a live sixty-minute show; I was having prosthetics glued on and taken off my face at a crazy pace. When we finally got done preparing the night before, I went out with an executive from our show's sponsor, Pontiac, and with our producer, Fred Coe. I had two glasses of beer and I got really wobbly. And as we came out of this restaurant on Sunset Strip and waited for the valet to bring our car, Coe and the adman noticed a fancy sedan just sitting there idling—and they decided to have a little fun and fill one of its hubcaps with gravel. Some kid, the owner, came out of the restaurant, got into that car, and drove off—and it immediately sounded like the whole transmission was falling out.



JOANNE AND PAUL IN THE LATE 1960S. PHOTO BY KAS
HEPPNER

He jumped out of the car, ran at us, and screamed: “Who did that?” Fred Coe pointed at me. The kid comes right over, punches me in my face, then gets back in his car and drives away. I made it back to my room at the Chateau Marmont, where Joanne had been staying with me, and I’m laughing. “I’m supposed to be a middleweight champ and I’m standing there with both hands in my pockets and a kid crawls up on an orange crate and belts me in the eye. I never even knew what hit me.” Over the next couple of days, everyone wanted to know how I got the terrible whack on my face. I made up a story that my costar Frederick O’Neal hit me too hard with his shoe in an action sequence; thank God, I said, it didn’t blossom until we’d finished airing the show. I can’t tell you how impressed they all were that I’d been wounded in the line of duty.

The Battler won a lot of positive attention, including from Bob Wise, the director who was getting ready to make the big Rocky Graziano biography picture, *Somebody Up There Likes Me*. Graziano was a true American sports star and folk hero, a tough New York kid who fought his way up from the slums and juvenile prisons to become a champion, a world title holder. Word was that the film was to be Jimmy Dean's next project, and his sudden death obviously scrambled things; Wise and the producers cast me, probably on the strength of my handling the part in *The Battler*.

I know there are some people who attribute my career breakthroughs to Jimmy's death. Yes, there were elements of luck—and a lot of my success has indeed involved what I call Newman's luck. Newman's luck began in 1925 when I was born white in America. Appearance is the second luck. Cognitive skills in inventing is the third luck. And I had the luck to overcome the fact that people always said about me "Isn't he darling!" or "Isn't he so cute!" by having enough drive to see I wasn't ever going to survive just on that. I'd been in contact with indifference and stupidity and my own lack of perception. But I'd never really come in contact with true adversity. Luck recognized me.

If Jimmy hadn't been killed, half of me says, "You could have done it anyway. It would have been a hair slower, but it would have happened."



ROBERT WISE WAS THE DIRECTOR OF *SOMEBODY UP THERE
LIKES ME*.

James Dean had agreed to the film. But before the script was done, he was killed in that unfortunate accident. The only other actor we considered was John Cassavetes; I had lunch with him at the MGM commissary and I told him I believed he was too slight, especially stripped down, to be convincing in the role. He was a little pissed off and said any real actor can act anything—including his size.

Paul had been on the lot, had just finished *The Rack*, and the studio recommended I watch some sequences. He was excellent and so it was agreed he'd be the one.

Paul and I agreed that since Rocky was very much alive, and Paul was very much of the same school as me—that you should dig and research as much as you can about a character—that we should spend time in New York with Rocky. We didn't want it to be just a copy of Rocky with any kind of falseness around the edges, but whatever of Rocky Paul could get for himself.

Rocky took us to visit all his old haunts on the Lower East Side, the pigeon keepers on the roofs, his neighborhood candy store. Sometimes Rocky would walk on ahead of us, and Paul would study his gait, and just notice he had rounded heels on his shoes that gave him a certain shift. The way he held his hands in his pockets. His phrasing, his lingo, his cadence, the pattern of speech—Paul brought those out to the coast with him for the shoot.

I think Paul felt secure in the fact that he had met the man he was going to portray and that he'd be able to draw on him, in the physical and internal sense. It gave Paul confidence.



Before making *Somebody Up There Likes Me*, I drove up to the Catskills with Jackie, to one of the big resorts, to observe and spend time with Graziano. He had to cancel at the last minute, but I did meet a guy there, a practicing psychiatrist, whom I spoke with at length before dinner at the bar on my first night. Later that evening, I went down to his room, knocked, and asked him whether I could have his business card, and if I could call

him sometime. He'd just been sitting in his room, drinking brandy by himself and quietly getting loaded.

The doctor was a soft-spoken, burly, bullet-headed, football-necked Freudian in his late fifties from New York, and I wound up entering into therapy with him. Did it help with my situation between Jackie and Joanne? Marginally, it might have been instructive, but in terms of specifics I would have to say no. As much as I must have needed the help, I wasn't in the frame of mind to be helped. Not that I necessarily resisted, but I really didn't have enough information to give him. In fact, it is only in recent years that the information I could give any psychiatrist would be competent.

About three years into our sessions, the doctor got a tumor in his head and died from it not long afterwards. I wanted to do something in his memory. I had once met his wife, a beautiful woman; she and his associates at NYU got together and suggested I endow a chair in psychiatry at the college in his honor; in those days, they told me, that would cost about \$150,000 (nowadays, probably more like a million). Well, when I was doing *Somebody Up There Likes Me*, I made \$12,000 and was already in the 91 percent income-tax bracket. I don't know where they thought I was going to get my hands on the kind of money they wanted. I worried that everyone would think I was very disloyal, so I just fled. I didn't know what to say to anybody.

Around the time we started actually filming the Graziano movie, Jackie and I were not doing very well. I was also drinking up a storm. Which was amazing, because the work on Graziano was really difficult. It was a tough show to do, and the last eight or nine days of production were reserved to shoot the climactic fight scenes in a boxing ring. Graziano actually fought Tony Zale for the championship three times, only winning the last one. Our script decided to dramatize just that final fight; off camera, our stunt guy would be calling out instructions to me and the real Tony Zale, who was playing himself on screen. The problem was Zale would get so pissed off re-creating his loss, he couldn't fake it, doctor it, or pull his punches. I took a terrible swipe from him, cracked a bone in my hand, and went down. The production had to be stopped for maybe four days. The crew finally built

some plastic thing that went over the edge of my knuckles and was taped to the back of my forearm to absorb the shocks.

After my accident, Zale was replaced by our stunt guy for me to “fight” against. By the end of the first day back, we were both wrecks. I mentioned to my agent that I couldn’t believe we had to do this for four or five more days straight.

“Ever heard of Miltown?” he asked. “Take one, and give one to your stunt man, about an hour and a half before you film, then take another every four hours.” We did that and the stunt guy and I suddenly became the palsiest guys in the ring: “Go ahead, hit me harder, harder, hit me!” We got to be real happy fellows all the way until we finished the picture.

When the Graziano was finally ready to open about a year or so later, I got into another fight. My friend from Ohio Jim Martin was visiting, and I decided to take him and his wife out to dinner, driving my brand-new Volkswagen. I’d been connected to the VW dealer through a friend of Rudy Vallee’s, who also suggested a dinner place I should try not too far from our rental in Fresh Meadows.

This seafood restaurant was on a very quiet, narrow street, the kind that customers would park on by driving up on the sidewalk and settling two wheels there. That’s what I did, and there was nothing weird about it. Past midnight, as we walked out of the place, I told Jim that maybe I’d had too much beer: “Why don’t you drive?”—and I flipped him the keys. Jim got in, put the VW into first instead of reverse, and tapped a fireplug. I mean, *literally* tapped it—there was not a mark on my bumper or on the plug. As a point of information, in those days, Volkswagens had about fourteen horsepower and maybe a top speed of sixty miles per hour.

I realized this wasn’t going to work, so I took the keys back from Jim and took the wheel to drive home. I thought I was driving pretty slowly when I heard a siren in back of me. I couldn’t tell what kind of vehicle it was, but to get out of the way I pulled off to the right, apparently through a red light. At which point the squad car pulls up next to me and tells me I both ran a light and hit a fire hydrant.

I made them take me back to the restaurant to look at my bumper and the hydrant up close. And there was not a mark on either.

“So what are you guys complaining about?” I asked the cops.

“You’re coming to the station,” one of them replied.

“On what charge?”

And right then, I apparently took a swing at the cops. Next thing I knew, the cops took me in custody to the Mineola courthouse and I was thrown into the county slammer.

These cops were grandstanding. It was all a setup. They knew arresting me would be a big deal. By the time this happened, I’d been in enough television shows that the cops recognized who I was. It also didn’t hurt that the first name of one of the cops was Rocky—it could make for a good story. The cops also knew something I didn’t: that the courthouse that morning would be surrounded by newspaper photographers because a different case, a kidnapping, was going on and being covered in all the tabloids. Sure enough, in the next day’s papers there were photos of me looking like a criminal being led into jail. It wasn’t like I was trying to escape. I may have been unruly, and it is possible my behavior was a bit boorish—and though I don’t know whether anyone will agree with me, my heart was in the right place.

I was brought before a judge the following day, charged with driving under the influence. The judge asked for my license, looked it over, then handed it right back to me.

“Dismissed,” he ordered. And except for the lousy publicity—though the cop named Rocky got lots of positive tabloid attention—that was the end of that.



ALAN WRIGHT WAS ONE OF PAUL’S CLOSEST FRIENDS IN COLLEGE AND, LATER, IN CLEVELAND; HE WAS A GUEST AT PAUL AND JACKIE’S WEDDING AS WELL AS AT SCOTT NEWMAN’S CHRISTENING.

I think Jackie was riddled with ambition, but she wasn't mature enough to recognize that this handsome young actor she married had the ingredients and the drive to be a big success—and she was either going to have to go along with that and be a wife and mother rather than a showbiz girl, or not. Paul once told me she had taken extensive dancing lessons, but I surmised she had nothing more than local-community-theater talent. She'd often talk all about her experiences at the Woodstock theater.

One time another friend of ours, Jim Rice, and I went to New York to visit Paul. We saw them in Staten Island and Paul and Jackie made a cookout for us on the little barbecue they had on their concrete patio. I could see there were tensions, and it seemed obvious Jackie was frustrated with her own life. That night, we went with Paul to Broadway and saw him in *Picnic*. It was a performance where the understudy, Joanne Woodward, happened to substitute for one of the stars, Janice Rule. Afterward, Paul took us out to a place near and dear to his heart, an all-night kind of place. Some members of the cast joined us, including Joanne.

We really tied one on. Joanne was very reserved. She told me she was from Georgia, but she wasn't especially interested in these two characters from Cleveland who were old pals of Paul's. Still, there was an intimacy in the way she and Paul sat together, but I attributed that closeness to their being in a show together. There was a big jukebox in this joint, and I believe Paul and Joanne danced together once or twice.

Our conversation was not just with Paul so much as with the two of them. I must say, it was almost as if they were husband and wife.

Joanne may have fulfilled a lot of needs Paul had for companionship and professional discussion even as a friend.

He was having fun with Joanne; he was glad to be with her. There was a well-rounded rapport. It was like turning on a light switch.

I didn't know that night there was a big love affair going on and that his marriage was going down the tubes. But I could tell that Paul and Joanne were gaga. They weren't trying to conceal it or show it off, either. That's just the way it was.

You might wonder: how, given the state of disrepair of my marriage to Jackie, could the two of us create a third child?

Stephanie Newman was probably conceived because of a misplaced sense of trying to make things right that you couldn't make right. I always had a sense that things just happened, that you didn't have much control over them.

To the extent that one is capable, or able, to change the course of events, then you do have to accept responsibility, and I don't know how you'd ever allocate that. If I had failed as an actor and made it easier for my children to believe that they could achieve more than I did, what would that have done? It's always *if* Jackie and I had stuck it out, no matter what, what would that have done? *If* I hadn't been a nomad? *If* I hadn't been involved in a business that meant being away from home so much, what would that have done?

Somewhere in all of this is the imponderable of being a human being.

There soon came a point when my family—Jackie, me, and our three kids—really split up. I hadn't gotten a divorce yet, but Jackie and I were now openly separated. And after long negotiations, Jackie agreed to a settlement. I think for the first year, she was guaranteed a certain income, around \$200,000. I earned \$225,000 that year, so I only kept \$25,000 of that. If I had started drinking too much or made three or four bad pictures in a row, I'd have been in a very tough position.

I flew alone to Mexico City from New York to get the final legal documents. I'd never been to Mexico before, and I certainly didn't know

the language. I arrived at night and the first thing I noticed was that all the drivers were crazed, the cars were of questionable sturdiness, and no one paid any attention to stop signs. It was arranged by my lawyers in LA that I would meet a local attorney there that evening, whose junky little office turned out to be the size of a closet but who needed to rubber-stamp all our Spanish paperwork. I was up most of the night trying to track that goddamn lawyer down.

The plan was that after I was done in Mexico City, I'd head to Las Vegas, where Joanne was waiting, and we'd get married at the El Rancho Hotel. Everything was set up, but I still didn't have the final papers for my divorce in hand. Though I did finally connect with the lawyer the next day, I'm honestly still not sure whether Joanne's and my marriage is legally valid, I mean, maybe it'll get thrown out of court someday.

In life, in relationships, the person who is inconstant does not see that as a flaw. He sees himself as someone who has the ability to be fluid, to see both sides of every question.



THE NEWMAN-WOODWARD WEDDING PARTY IN 1958: *LEFT TO RIGHT*, ROBERT CARTER, ELINOR WOODWARD CARTER, JOANNE, PAUL, TERESA NEWMAN, ARTHUR NEWMAN JR., FRANCES WOODWARD, WADE WOODWARD

Was it hurtful to others? I never recognized things from somebody else's point of view. I couldn't see what happened from Scott's, from Susan's, I couldn't see it from Stephanie's. All I could do was see it from my own, which was: "My God, look at these parents who desert their kids. Look at them." I saw myself as somewhere in the middle. A little of bad, a lot of good—and I provided.

But what I did just didn't have any class.

I didn't take them aside and give them comfort by explanation, certainly not in a way that they would understand. Not because I wouldn't do it, but because I didn't really get it.

You can't really say, "Oh, I must be understanding about this" when you haven't been understanding about anything for your whole life.

When you've given everything up to chance, the only thing left to have faith in is luck.

Joanne, in this regard, was no help. She was just as adolescent as I was. Orphans grow up late. At least these two did.

JANICE RULE WAS A MEMBER OF THE ORIGINAL BROADWAY
CAST OF WILLIAM INGE'S *PICNIC*.

I don't know if I was aware of Paul and Joanne. To me, Joanne was a pretty young girl who was at all the parties with a lot of different men for a while.

I was far more aware of Paul and Jackie. They seemed like a perfectly lovely suburban couple. Maybe jujubes were dancing in our heads with sugarplum fairies, but I have the most vivid sense of Paul and Jackie as a family.

Actually, I was not that observant.

JOANNE WOODWARD

I was in fear and awe of Janice Rule. As an understudy, I felt invisible and was hardly ever spoken to. I remember an horrendous evening when we were previewing *Picnic* out of town; a party was given for the whole cast except for the understudies—Tony Eisley, Moe Miller, and me.

KARL MALDEN WAS A MEMBER OF THE ACTORS STUDIO
WHO COSTARRED WITH NEWMAN IN THE BROADWAY STAGE

VERSION OF THE DESPERATE HOURS.

When *On the Waterfront* was being cast, there was a long period when Marlon wasn't going to do it. This was during the McCarthy era, and Marlon felt our director, Elia Kazan, was a squealer. He didn't want to work for a man who had named names.

Marlon and I knew each other well from doing *A Streetcar Named Desire*, and the studio turned to me to try and convince him to change his mind about Kazan. I told him, "Marlon, you're judging who is right and who is wrong... don't try to play God because it's going to hit you." He remained adamantly against doing the picture.

So Kazan phoned and told me that he had to find someone else.

"Will you do me a favor?" he asked. "I think Paul Newman would be good as the boy."

I agreed with Kazan. Newman had a boxer's build and was pretty athletic.

Kazan continued: "I'll tell him to find a scene and pick a girl he wants to play it with. You work with him for a week, and then we'll bring in Sam Spiegel [the producer] to see him."

I agreed to help.

Joanne Woodward was the girl Newman chose.

They picked the park-bench scene and we rehearsed for a week. It was beautiful. That's when I first realized that there was something going on there. I couldn't quite put my finger on it, but I think it was the way they'd come to the rehearsal together and then leave together, too.

Joanne had a kind of innocence, and she was damn good. But my concentration was on Paul, because he's the one we'd have to sell.

We'd improvise a little, and I didn't give him any instructions except to titillate him about Joanne, something very vulgar, because that's what the scene is about—is he or isn't he going to lay her in the bushes? She would like it, yet doesn't know what to do about it, and he, being the kind of guy he is, he's for anything at all, at any time! I wanted to give him that freeness.

Well, Paul would get so excited he couldn't stand still. "Let me do it! Let me try," he said, and the more he did of that, the more I titillated him. Different kinds of sex. Tonight's the night, because she won't be here tomorrow.

I thought, "Gee, this is great, the way he can get himself worked up." There was a childlike excitement about him, a completely emotional thing that comes from the inside. He just goes all out.

That's the way I felt about Paul in his young days. I wasn't the director, I was only helping a friend, but Paul accepted me as the director. He accepted me as someone who could help him. And I admit, I liked that fact. Newman could have said, "Who the hell is Karl Malden? He's not Kazan—Kazan should be doing this himself!" No, what I loved was that he gave of himself completely to what I said.

After about five days of work, Sam Spiegel came and saw it. He said, "Good, fine," and left.

A couple of days later, Marlon agreed to do the part.



ELIA KAZAN DIRECTED *ON THE WATERFRONT* (WITH MARLON BRANDO) AND *SWEET BIRD OF YOUTH* (WITH PAUL NEWMAN). THE FOLLOWING IS AN EXCERPT FROM A LETTER KAZAN WROTE TO BUDD SCHULBERG, SCREENWRITER OF *ON THE WATERFRONT*:

If we don't get Brando, I'm for Paul Newman. This boy will definitely be a film star. I have absolutely no doubt. He's just as good looking as Brando and his masculinity, which is strong, is also more actual. He's not as good an actor as Brando yet, probably will never be. But he's a darn good actor with plenty of power, plenty of insides, plenty of sex.



— VIII —

Popularity can be divided into a couple of factors. There's the aspect that is intrusive and offends the private part of your life—what happens in the *New York Post* and the junk magazines. It's those people out in front of a theater calling attention to the fact you're there when you don't want any attention called. The people who follow you into libraries, into the lobby of your apartment building, fellows with flashbulbs, the people who are rude.

There are people who believe that somehow if they've bought a ticket to your motion picture it gives them voting stock in your corporation. And they don't understand why they can't just come to the back door of your house and say "Get me a job!" or "You're so big and I'm so little, why don't you make me big, too!" These are the people that can only discuss the blue eyes and the externals. Those are the elements of popularity that are disagreeable to me and a constant interference.

But another aspect of popularity, which is terribly important, is how it creates a kind of power that is transferable to business and thus gives the leverage to do the kind of projects you want to do. And as your popularity quotient goes down, so does your ability to exert the kind of pressure you need to make the kind of films you'd like to be a part of.

I would like to get rid of one part of my popularity, but if you get rid of one half, you get rid of the other, too.



LUCILLE NEWMAN

My own very special doctor took care of Tress at the end, and he was helping us get Paul into the hospital secretly. I said, "This country is ridiculous. This man is doing a job that he likes. Why does he have to be pestered so? Why can't he live a normal life? It's only in this country." And the doctor said, "Lucille, I was in Spain and I saw a five- or six-story building with a picture of him on the side. It's not just in this country."

Smiling for the cameras is a smile that doesn't come from anywhere except a command; there's no mirth in it. When Joanne and I have been at Cannes, for example, walking up this flight of stairs with a fifteen-foot-wide red carpet and having that music from *Star Wars* or whatever the hell it is at decibels that fry your eardrums...well, you get a sense of what the kings of England must have felt at their coronations. And then you start to think, "They should do this for me once a day, hustle me in, get the trumpets, cue the cameras and the applause and the band," just to get your confidence back. Between the bathroom and the breakfast room, every day when you come down from your shower, you could start your day with the fucking fanfares and flashbulbs going off. The dichotomy is that it is a dream and a nightmare at the same time.

When Joanne and I went to Paris to shoot a few scenes of *Mr. and Mrs. Bridge* there were photographers at the airport, and Joanne said to me: "Don't be a jerk. Pose for them and then they'll leave us alone." So you agree to stand there and smile for a minute or two, hold your wife's arm, etc. and you tell them, "I'll see you, goodbye." Then you walk to your car and about two-thirds of them follow and do exactly what you thought you were getting away from. They honor nothing, and they even chase the car.

We pull up to the Ritz, and the same bunch of photographers are there. What was the advantage of my posing at the airport? I'm now in an absolute fury and I head into the hotel manager's office and say, "You've got to give us some way to get in and out of here. I need a back door that

we can use in the morning.” Especially because once I actually get away from the Ritz, I can put on a baseball cap and no one will know me; Joanne and I can go wherever we want. By now I’m using foul language with the Ritz staff: “You make those fucking guys leave us alone!”

They finally showed us an old service elevator that had a sort of French-doors-type window that you can get out of that lands you in a backstreet behind the hotel. We were game. So Joanne and I get up the next day, ready to escape, and we noticed there wasn’t a single photographer in sight at the entrance. So after my terrible outburst, I felt like such a schmuck.

One reason I always thought Brando was interesting was that in the world of actors, he initiated an attitude that in no way catered to the hierarchy of the Hollywood studios. The bosses, the gossip columnists, the publicity folks: he was the first who broke away from what everybody had considered a necessity—the interviews, the ass kissing, the “movie etiquette.” Marlon took a stand that these rules did not apply to him, that they were foolish, sappy rules. And he ended up leading the parade of other actors who felt the same way.



MICHAEL BROCKMAN WAS A CLOSE FRIEND OF PAUL’S.
HE WAS A HIGHLY REGARDED RACE CAR DRIVER WHO ALSO
LATER BECAME AN ACTOR AND STUNTMAN.

Once we were having dinner—Paul, Bob Sharp, and his race crew, probably sixteen of us, all sitting there having a great time—when this lady leans over, grabs Paul, turns his head towards hers, and tries to kiss him on the lips. He stood up ready to attack her, and caught himself and sat down. “Jesus. What would *you* do?” he said. It was just like deflating a balloon. It ruined the night for him.



You work what you consider pretty hard at your craft and develop in a slow and painful way, and you're getting to the point where you're just starting to feel kind of good about yourself—and not just the way you look—and then somebody says, “Oh, God, take off your sunglasses so I can see your baby blue eyes!” All the self-esteem you've managed to build up goes right out the window. If I walked up to someone and said, “Let me see your brassiere,” they'd be really offended.

The dark glasses are not *just* because I want to hide myself—it's far more complicated. I really have no tolerance for light, and I've made my eyes worse from wearing them. There's also an accumulation of Budweiser as well as damage from my early days making movies; in those days, the slower film exposures often required an actor to keep looking straight into an arc light. We always had to put ice on our eyes and insert irritating drops to keep them bright and white for the cameras. It isn't something you want to constantly do, especially with light-colored eyes.

I know some people resent that I won't sign autographs or pose for them—or even offer a stock answer besides no. But do you have to manufacture a response to their silliness and repeat that response on every occasion it happens? Doesn't a person run out of patience after four or five times of this?

It would make my life a lot easier if whenever someone stopped me on the street and asked, “Ooh, let me take your picture,” I said okay. But that would draw another twelve people over, and that would draw some more people, and you stand there signing autographs while politely asking them about their mother and father. If I could do that and didn't care, it would be terrific, I'd feel a lot better at the end of the day.

I wish I could, but I can't. But I also wish I could ski. And I wish I could play tennis well. I wish I could do lots of things, but I can't—and that doesn't make me a bad person.



JAMES GOLDSTONE DIRECTED *WINNING*, STARRING PAUL
AND JOANNE.

Paul, Joanne, and I went to a “secret” restaurant near Westport on a Sunday night. They gave us a table in the corner, and some older woman at a nearby table notices Paul and Joanne—as likely everyone else did in this restaurant. All of a sudden, this woman pulls her chair over to our table, places it between the Newmans, and sits down.

Paul looks at her and did one of his wonderful takes, and for an eternity he just stared at her. And then he says: “Lady, you are the fucking rudest person that I’ve fucking ever met in this world. I’m sitting here with my wife and my friend, and you pull your chair over and put it right between me and my wife? What gives you the fucking right?”

The woman quickly retreated.



STEWART STERN

When we’ve been walking down a street, one of the things I’ve often said to Paul is how unfortunate it is that he won’t look back at people who are looking at him. I get a glow by the time we’ve gone two blocks, and find myself smiling simply because of the pleasure in people’s faces at seeing him. And it’s something Paul won’t see because he won’t look.

When I first met Paul in 1954, he really had no sense then of his public self. People were still mistaking him for Marlon Brando, and asking him for Brando’s autograph (which he sometimes signed!). He was more diffident at times, more garrulous at times, less abbreviated.

Over the years, Paul has become more cryptic. In communication, he has gone from being a Rubens to a Giacometti, a distillation, to the fewest possible words. He speaks in fortune cookies, and sometimes the beginning is the same as the end because there's a pause in between where an even more private process happens. Even in language, he stays beyond the moat of privacy.

Here are two stories that illustrate what I'm talking about. I had strongly supported Jimmy Carter's 1976 campaign, and in the early part of his presidency I was appointed one of the US representatives to the UN's disarmament conference.

One afternoon I was visiting at the White House with some acquaintances of mine from the National Security Council. I was walking down a hallway when I literally bumped into the president.

"Why don't you come up with me to the Oval Office?" Carter asked. I followed him upstairs, and let me tell you, what transpired was pretty uncomfortable. I'm not very at ease around people with power, never have been. But while I wanted to know why he'd recently decided not to address the UN himself on this issue, each time I raised the subject, all the president wanted to know was one thing: how movies were made.



PAUL AT THE UNITED NATIONS CONFERENCE ON NUCLEAR
DISARMAMENT, 1978

Flash forward to around 1982. By then, I was deeply involved in car racing, truly loving that it was a world away from the film business and Hollywood.

I had flown out to the track in Brainerd, Minnesota, for a Trans Am race, one of my first professional competitions. It was still a novelty that a movie

actor was racing, so not unexpectedly there were photographers everywhere. As we were all finally just about ready to begin, the track marshals began clearing everybody away from the cars and racers. But just as it was getting down to “Gentlemen, start your engines,” there was one photographer who just kept clicking off shots of me, retreating for a minute, then darting back on the track like a bird.

Now, I don’t want to blow this out of proportion, but this was the period before any race when you like to get rid of all the extraneous distractions and concentrate on what you have to do: thinking through your strategy, how you want to start, what car’s in front of you, what’s its horsepower, and where can you get an advantage—catch them in the first turn, say, sneak in a little late? This is when a driver really wants to center himself, and here’s this photographer sticking his camera almost up my nose, clicking, running off, darting back on, and finally disappearing.

After the race was over and I was done being interviewed and everyone was packing up, I spotted the photographer and said, “I really want to ask you something. Why was it that you wanted to shoot me so badly that you had to keep coming back and irritate me, invade my space, and just do one more thing to make your presence felt?”

“You really want to know?” the photographer answered.

“Yes, I really want to know.”

“Okay,” he said. “Because I thought I might get the last picture of you alive.”



PATTY NEWMAN WAS ARTHUR NEWMAN’S WIFE, PAUL’S
SISTER-IN-LAW.

Tress was near the end, and we’d all gathered at her bedside when the special nurse we hired called to tell us it was almost time. She was in a deep sleep, and after a time there were big

pauses between her breaths. We all rushed to the side of her bed and soon it was clear she was gone.

Joanne called and wanted to speak with Paul. I asked her to hold on a minute.

“What is he doing?”

“If you can believe it,” I told her, “he’s signing a picture for the nurse.”



By the time I began preproduction for *The Long, Hot Summer* near Baton Rouge in 1957, my divorce settlement was essentially finalized. That allowed Joanne and me to openly be together. But since the story of my marital split wouldn’t hit the newspapers for some months, and since the press—in those days, at least—didn’t just appear everywhere you went, we were able to avoid any frenzy.

It had been over four years ago that Joanne and I met backstage at *Picnic*; that we would finally get to work together again in *Long, Hot Summer* meant everything. The picture was loosely based on a William Faulkner story; I played the rakish drifter who goes to work for a rich, powerful family despot (played by Orson Welles). There’s real chemistry between my drifter and Welles’s daughter, played by Joanne. I know people have written that this was the first picture where I displayed sexiness—but if that was so, I attribute it completely to filming with Joanne. Before then, my sexuality was never there.

For the first time, Joanne and I could do what we longed for years to do in public, as well as put on the screen what had already been discovered between us. There was a glue that held us together then, and through the rest of our life together. And that glue was this: anything seemed possible. The good, the bad, and the wonderful. With all other people, *some* things were possible, but not everything. For us, the promise of everything was there from the beginning.

Making that movie was a lusty time together for us. The picture was hard work, a long schedule and shot on location in very hot weather because it was the end of Louisiana's summertime. But on Saturday nights, Joanne and I would drive to New Orleans and stroll into the French Quarter and we were really comfortable. It was a cornucopia of discovery. I was wide-eyed, because I'd never really been anywhere besides New York, Boston, and LA. She introduced me to the world of antiques and antique stores; we even bought ourselves a brass bed down there.

And a dog, too. Early one Sunday morning, we were walking through the Quarter and heard all this yapping in back of us. We turned around and there was this tiny little dog behind us being held by a length of yarn in some guy's hand. He was about the size of my fist.

"Good lord, what is that?" we asked.

"It's a chihuahua."

"Well, he's a fierce little bugger," I said.

"I raise 'em," the guy said.

"Is this little fellow for sale?"

He nodded yes, and I bought him for sixty dollars.

The guy handed me the dog and said, "You'll be able to keep him in your pocket for the rest of his life."

Needless to say, that dog grew up to be the size of a small truck. We called him El Toro.

El Toro was in reality some kind of mongrel, but I adored him. He was a cheeky dog. One of the most endearing things about him was the oft-repeated story of how he never liked my onetime business partner John Foreman. Whenever John came by my house, El Toro would just slink out of the room. And one time, John happened to leave his hat on the bed and El Toro took a crap in it.

What also made the shoot memorable was Orson Welles's presence. He was pretty standoffish and he seemed to feel uneasy around Actors Studio people; besides me, there was also our director, Marty Ritt (with whom I also later made *Hombre*, *Paris Blues*, *The Outrage*, *Hemingway's Adventures of a Young Man*, and *Hud*) and Tony Franciosa.

Orson couldn't understand screen generosity, where one actor allows another player in his scene to deservedly get the best camera shots. Screen generosity was not part of Orson's vocabulary. After a number of retakes on a scene he did with me, Orson asked Marty if he could have a private word with him. They stepped away together, and seemed to be discussing something rather serious. When they came back, we did another take, and afterwards, I asked Marty what was going on.

"Orson thought you were submarining him," he said; it was an actor's way of saying someone was stealing his screen time.

Orson had actually been dragging *his* part of the scene so I'd get less screen time than he would. At the Actors Studio, we believed that what the camera should create is a sense of community among a cast. When Ritt shot the big scene where Franciosa's character crazily keeps digging for a nonexistent buried treasure beside Welles's barn, Tony did it wonderfully; he was powerful, organic, and unpredictable. Orson went over to Marty afterwards and wearily said, "My God, I feel old, like I've been riding a tricycle in a barrel of molasses."

After the movie came out and was a big success, Marty became known in Hollywood as "the man who tamed Orson Welles." True or not, I know Marty helped me during rehearsals. He'd make me get rid of any extraneous shit in my performance. He'd make sure to give you a line, an intention, an active verb, to use in your moment.

Marty was very good with actors, gracious and gentle. He knew that what worked best for the actor was likely what also worked best for the character. He would flare his nostrils, make noises, and ask, "Well, what do you think, kid?" or "Isn't that funny?" Remarkable, too, is that Marty, who was once an all-state football tackle and a heavier guy, was the most graceful person on two feet. He clowning; he was whimsical; he'd do a fake waltz with some imaginary lady. He was like Zero Mostel—he could tiptoe across a floor and hardly cause a breeze.

The problem for me with a man like Marty, and especially later in my career with John Huston, was I thought I had to behave in a certain way to please them. So whatever I presented was artificial, because it wasn't really

a response from my core. And that continues till today, because I'm still not sure about what my core really is. I am no good around people with power. Even as I think of it now, my hands start to perspire.

MARTIN RITT DIRECTED THEATER FOR MANY YEARS IN NEW YORK BECAUSE HE WAS BLACKLISTED FROM TV AND FILM DURING THE ANTICOMMUNIST RED SCARE. BY THE MID-1950S, HE WAS HIRED TO DO MOVIES AND DIRECTED PAUL AND JOANNE IN *THE LONG, HOT SUMMER*.

I believe there are two qualities that genuinely make a star, and neither of them has anything to do with acting: danger and sexuality. Paul, as a man, is a total sexual animal. That's why he is a star. When people see him, they feel it, whether they are aware of it or not.

Of all the women I've known in this town, Joanne is the most complete, a master woman. Onscreen, she doesn't have the sexuality Paul does, but she was a much better actor when we made *Long, Hot Summer*; they were not comparable. Joanne was as good an actress as existed at the time.

Paul knew that, and it was a driving factor in his whole life. He always felt guilty that he had become a big movie star and that Joanne never became quite as big a star as he did.

Only days after the *Long, Hot Summer* wrapped, Joanne and I had our Vegas wedding. We left for a quick honeymoon in London, then returned to take up residence in a rented house in Beverly Hills. We'd end up leasing many different homes in and around LA over the next decade. Jackie had decided to relocate with our kids to the San Fernando Valley, so when I was in California, they were often nearby.

I came home one evening to our new rental, drove up the driveway, and Joanne stepped outside wearing a bandanna and a paint-covered frock; I asked her what was up. She led me inside to a room off the master bedroom. When we'd first moved in, the room was filled with bicycle pumps, brooms, and all sorts of junk that Joanne had now shoved into the garage. Everything had been replaced by some thrift-shop double bed with a new Sealy mattress; next to it was a champagne stand, complete with an ice bucket in some raucous color. Joanne had been in the middle of painting the room.

"I call it the Fuck Hut," she said, proudly.

It was wonderful and had been done with such affection and delight. Even if my kids came over, we'd go in the Fuck Hut several nights a week and just be intimate, noisy, and ribald.

Joanne and I still drive each other crazy in different ways. There is a wonderful kind of balance. Like the arms race. Asymmetrical but equal. She had all of her heavy land-based equipment, and most of mine were submarines. But all of the misdemeanors, the betrayals, the difficulties have kind of evened themselves out and blended themselves over the years.

She was always so vulnerable, and she seemed to have no ego, and yet there is a towering ego there. We had that in common. One moment she would be filled with a sense of worth and the next it would simply shatter, and so when she would go off I would recognize it and hold her blameless, I would understand. Whatever it is, it's wonderfully equal.



JOANNE WOODWARD

I was always amazed that anybody could have liked me. How could they figure out what to like since I could not figure it out myself? That was always the problem. To think that I spent so much of my life feeling as though I was a not very

important appendage. It's so silly when you realize that we put ourselves in those positions, we do it ourselves.

The commercial (and critical) success of *The Long, Hot Summer* didn't play much of a role in my being cast in another tale of the Deep South, the movie version of Tennessee Williams's *Cat on a Hot Tin Roof*. Don Murray, who'd just had a success in the movie of Bill Inge's *Bus Stop*, was considered for the lead; Robert Taylor, Van Johnson, and even Mickey Rooney were talked about, too. Though Dick Brooks, the director, had been greatly impressed by my performance on Broadway in *The Desperate Hours*, the studio executives at MGM had seen neither the play nor even my performance as Rocky Graziano. Still, with Brooks's support, I got hired.

Cat on a Hot Tin Roof began production only a week after *The Long, Hot Summer* hit the movie theaters. I was cast as Brick, Elizabeth Taylor's hard-drinking husband, and it was my job to make my character's refusal to have sex with Elizabeth seem believable—even though in our movie, unlike Tennessee's original play, we were barred from alluding to Brick's gayness as the reason for his marital abstinence.

Life imitated art about ten days after we began filming, when tragedy struck and an inadequate person—me—had to face a distraught woman.

Elizabeth had missed a couple of days on the set because of a virus. The illness also prevented her from accompanying her husband, the producer Mike Todd, on a quick trip to New York, where he was being honored by the Friars Club. Todd took off in his private plane from Burbank and died, along with another passenger and two pilots, when his Lockheed Lodestar crashed in the middle of a stormy night over New Mexico.

Elizabeth's doctor placed her under sedation. Our production was likewise in shock and also in jeopardy. I decided to stop by her home and offer what solace I could.

When I arrived, I was shown up to her boudoir, where I listened to Elizabeth sobbing, “Why him? Why now?” She was highly doped up. Not knowing what else to say, I started to offer her some well-worn clichés about how this was all God’s will.

Elizabeth cut me off, looked up at me, and practically snarled: “Oh, shut up. Get the fuck out of here!”

I should have just said, “I love you and think you’re a terrific lady,” and admitted I was obviously unable to provide answers to the terrible questions she was asking. Instead, I just put my tail between my legs and silently left in a state of disarray. I was inadequate when I got to Elizabeth’s bedroom, but I suppose I didn’t really know that beforehand. My platitudes and discomfort in that situation have chased me through my whole life.



RICHARD BROOKS WAS AN EIGHT-TIME OSCAR NOMINEE WHO ADAPTED AND DIRECTED *CAT ON A HOT TIN ROOF* FOR THE SCREEN.

After the plane crash, Larry Weingarten, our producer, suggested, “Why don’t we close down the show for now? Elizabeth is in practically every scene in the bedroom, and that’s where you’re shooting now.” I argued that if they temporarily stopped, we might as well forget the whole movie, because we’d never get the company back to their current pitch.

“How can you shoot without her?” Weingarten asked.

“I’ll get somebody to walk by very close to the lens wearing Elizabeth’s slip, and if she does come back, we’ll just spot her into the scenes. And if she doesn’t, well, we can still spot her replacement later on.”

So we began filming the bedroom scenes without her, and then, when Elizabeth hadn’t yet returned, I wrote a new scene

just between Paul and Burl Ives (Big Daddy) and I told the producers we had to shoot it then and there. Which we did—and that took another week. By then, I knew I was going to be in trouble.

But on maybe the next afternoon, a young Asian woman pops up on my closed set, walks up to me, and says: “Miss Taylor would like to speak with you. She’s in a car outside the soundstage.” I go to the car. I couldn’t see her, because the windows were dark and there was also a curtain around them. I got inside.

“I’m going crazy,” Elizabeth said. “I stay home. It’s bad in the daytime and it’s worse at night. Mike liked what he saw so far. If it’s all right with you, maybe I ought to come back to work.”

“It’s up to you,” I said. “When would you want to start?”

“Today.”

We walked together onto the stage and into her dressing room.

“One other thing,” she said. “I don’t want to see that producer of ours here. If I see him, I’m going to leave. No newspapers, no Hedda Hopper. I can’t take that now.”

I assured her that only the other actors, the camera, and I would be there for the rest of the shoot.

Elizabeth worked for an hour that first day. The cast was terrific with her. Nobody came over and said “I’m sorry”; they just went about their business and played the scene. They were very careful about her, Paul particularly. I never had to say a word to him. He understood the situation completely, never even looking at her in a way that was too sympathetic. He was caringly professional.

The next day, Elizabeth worked for two or three hours. On the third day back, she stayed the full shift. And from then on, she never missed even an hour.

Cat on a Hot Tin Roof did tremendously at the box office, staying at number one for over a month. It also got me my first Oscar nomination; the movie itself was up for Best Picture while Elizabeth and Dick Brooks also received slots, for Best Actress and Best Director. (Burl Ives was nominated as well—and won—Best Supporting Actor that year, but it was for *Big Country*, not for our movie.)

By now, I'd become something of a movie star, I suppose, and I had the opportunity to go back to Broadway to work under Elia Kazan for his production of a new Tennessee Williams play, *Sweet Bird of Youth*. I'd play Chance Wayne, essentially a gigolo, who's attached himself to an aging, alcoholic actress, the Princess. One of the main prerequisites of Chance is that he is a person of external beauty, he'd gotten by on that, and now that personal beauty is beginning to fade.

Kazan, when I signed, was not a person to me at all, but a symbol of *The Director*. Kazan wanted to get acquainted with me, feel me out, get a sense of what I was like offstage, so we went for a walk in the city. I was quaking in my boots. He told me what he expected from certain sections of the play, especially Chance's soliloquy when he talks about seeing his true-love real girlfriend for the last time. Kazan wanted to create a great sense of personal grief for Chance. Because I felt obligated to tell him the truth (so that he wouldn't expect anything), I interrupted and told him that I was something of an "emotional Republican." Nevertheless, I said, I thought I could do it. I wasn't really worried whether I could deliver for an audience that wasn't as savvy as Kazan, but the test for me was whether I could get it by him. I wondered: how does a person who is anesthetized in real life tap a core of emotion that would be available for someone else to feel?

When we tried it on the stage, Kazan told me, "I want you to treat this soliloquy as an echo, a series of echoes that come back to you and that are so strong you can't control your emotions." As I began working on it, sometimes a trickle of emotion or a tear came, but I never knew when or if that would be there.

I had warned Kazan that sometimes it would hit me and it would be organic, but there'd be occasions that it didn't. Those times, I would stare at a light in the back of the auditorium long enough so it would make me tear up, since I have no light tolerance. Kazan would move around the auditorium, going from seat to seat, to find out which things I was doing seemed real, and which didn't. He wanted to check if he could hear you in the back of the house, and whether the size of what you were doing carried all the way to the last row—and whatever forceful motion you made that was visible in the first row could also be seen in the rear.

So one day we were running through the show and the light at the back of the auditorium went out. I realized Kazan must have wondered, "Is that what he's doing, staring at the light?" and was having his game with me. I was so enraged that I actually wept with frustration. Of course, I realized that fucked me over worse than anything I could have done. Yes, I had been discovered, but then I realized the emotion was now just sitting there waiting for me when I called it—light or no light.

Kazan also worked with me on something that could be called "the Kazan transition." It means that onstage, you don't sit around waiting for one emotional image to pop up, use it, and when it is finished, you just supplant it with a different one. Instead, you start with an image, and in the middle of that first image, you begin transitioning to seeing a second image and then to a third image and so on. Maybe Kazan did this with me because he wanted me to hurry moving from one feeling to the next, to make things more urgent for me, more hysterical and less in control.

What he was up to, on a subtler basis, I'm still not quite certain. I do suspect he wanted to mute or defuse any sort of assurance I could bring to the character of Chance Wayne, because it just would have been wrong for the part. A couple of weeks after we opened *Sweet Bird of Youth*, though, I might have unconsciously done that; Kazan came over to me and said, "You're balancing Chance and the Princess, you've made them characters of equal power. The play doesn't work now. You've fucked it up."

To tell you the truth, I never had a picture inside me of Chance Wayne. What people don't understand is that there's always some deep-seated

aspect of your own personality that you can use—you don't have to go around looking and doing research. You simply tap those facets of yourself and you use them.

I remember being asked whether I ever found myself in a situation like Chance's. Where I needed to constantly scramble to keep a certain woman's opinion of me so positive (especially when my own opinion of myself could be so shitty). The answer is yes: Mommy, Mommy.

Who does one perform for? Who were you trying too hard to please? Mommy, Mommy—that kind of problem. There's half of me that says, "Oh, cut the shit." Because there's always a point where someone becomes master of their own destiny. And I'll be goddamned if I would give anybody the sense that they had much control over the way I behave now.



AN AUTOGRAPHED PHOTO FROM PAUL TO
TRESS

ELIA KAZAN WAS ACCLAIMED AS ONE OF THE MOST
DEMANDING AND INNOVATIVE DIRECTORS OF PLAYS AND FILMS.

When Paul first came up in *Picnic*, he was just a cute, good-
looking boy. *Picnic* was almost like an audition for *Sweet*

Bird, but corrupted—Tennessee Williams’s scenes would provide the contrary, corrupting element.

When we did the play, Paul was a good actor, but not an exceptional actor—in a not exceptional role. He did the part right, but that part didn’t permit him to be excellent or extraordinary. It’s not what you would call a role you fall in love with, but Paul was honest in the part. He was always an honest actor.

Paul was very touching as Chance because he is touching as a man. He’s really a soul. There’s something in him that’s masked but underneath it, there’s a soul that wants to do many things.

I think what’s most extraordinary about Paul is how he developed: what he puts on screen now is really quite a man, very strong. Most people spend their time saying things and doing things they hope will be liked. There’s a lot less of that with Paul today.



RICHARD BROOKS DIRECTED PAUL A SECOND TIME, IN
HIS FILM ADAPTATION OF *SWEET BIRD OF YOUTH* IN 1962.

This was not a natural part for Paul. He isn’t naturally a hustler, and neither was Chance. Look, in the business we’re in, all of us *may be* hustlers, but Paul has too much vanity, ego, and self-respect to hustle a woman by secretly taping her and blackmailing her later.

Paul played it so nervously, so full of a pond skater’s activity. Paul was like a guy selling hot neckties on Forty-Second Street who thinks that any second he’s going to be discovered, so he’d better get rid of them fast.

Look, many a sensitive actor has been disemboweled by the Hollywood system. Monty Clift couldn't function and it destroyed him in the end. This doesn't mean you have to submit to survive, but you need to know when it's time to reorganize, when to pull back in order to attack later.

Paul was like that, a very practical man, even about his own career. I remember years later running into him on a staircase at one of the goddamn studio offices; he was going up, I was going down.

"What are you working in now?" I asked.

"The Towering Inferno."

"Oh. That," I replied.

"Yeah, but I think it's got a chance," Paul explained. "I think it'll break even, maybe more."



—≡ IX ≡—

Joanne gave birth to our first child together, Nell, in 1959 in California. The first time as an adult I remember crying—including when my father died—was when I saw Joanne in the hospital that day, ashen, with a dry mouth and lying on a gurney, headed into an elevator on her way to the delivery room. I was staggered.

When Lissy was born a couple of years later, I had my camera out and took billions of pictures. Joanne came back from the hospital wearing this bellhop hat and a very stylish dress; she looked like sixty or seventy million bucks. We brought Nellie in to meet her new baby sister; the first shot I have is of her leaning over the bassinet with a look of sheer hatred on her face. Next, I took a series of pictures where Joanne held the baby in her arms with Nell sitting next to her—with Nell putting on a gargoyle face. But then something happened; over the next few shots, Nell went from gargoyle to delighted mother-in-law, a grandma with a smile that stretched from one ear to the other. It was an incredible transformation. When I think of those pictures, it reminds me how Joanne handled our babies' introduction into our home with such class and foresight.

When Scott was born to Jackie and me in Shaker Heights a decade before, it was at a difficult time—between my father's death and my departing for Yale. It's all a hodgepodge in my head, muted grays that seemed to leave no mark in my mind; I don't really have any lasting memory of Jackie's pregnancy or her actually giving birth. I do recall driving her to the Cleveland hospital in my family's '37 Packard for Scott's delivery, but I honestly have no recollection of bringing him home.



NELL IMPRESSES JOANNE WITH HER FISHING SKILLS IN
1969

WARREN COWAN, THE COFOUNDER OF THE PR FIRM
ROGERS & COWAN, MANAGED PUBLICITY FOR PAUL AND
JOANNE FOR ALMOST FORTY YEARS.

For so many years Joanne would not go away on location or take a movie unless it was one with Paul. She did very few films after *The Three Faces of Eve*, after they got married, without him. And for many years, I believed that the marriage was working because Joanne was hanging in there. Because her husband was Paul Newman and she was doing everything to make that marriage work. Now I've come to believe that it's just the opposite. Now Paul hangs in there because of Joanne. I just think that he is so in love, and taken with her.

Over the next few years, Joanne and I made a conscious choice about taking the children with us when we went on location to make a film. In fact, for many years when the kids were little, we always just rented places in LA, then finally buying a place in Coldwater Canyon only after about five years together. Joanne and I sat down and counted recently, and came up with a total of twenty-four houses we'd all lived in either on the West Coast or in New York—and that doesn't even include the two houses we've had in Connecticut (sometimes when I look back on my career, the only reason I know I've made so many movies is that I have lived in so many houses). That was a lot of motion for a small family.

We didn't realize that living in so many different places could also have a negative effect on the kids. It may have given them strength in some areas, but they weren't able to maintain a stable group of friends.

When Nell was quite young, we took her around to some schools, and she wanted to go to the Montessori in Santa Monica. So we enrolled her there, and about a week later I decided to drive over to talk with the teachers and see what was going on. When I arrived, she was at recess, so I took a peek into the playground to watch. There were all these kids playing in groups of four or six, and then there was Nellie. She was standing alone up against a fence, pigeon-toed, hands in front of her, pulling on her fingernails like someone waiting to be asked to dance. There was something

so brave and expectant and alert about her, just watching everybody else with such hope. I absolutely broke down and began crying.

With Nell, I know Joanne and I traveled around more than with the other kids. She came to Israel when I made *Exodus*; she was in Paris with us for a shoot immediately afterwards; even in London, too. But by the time Clea, our last child, was born in 1969, we'd decided they should spend their entire school year in California.

EVA MARIE SAINT WAS PAUL'S COSTAR IN THE OTTO
PREMINGER FILM *EXODUS*, FILMED IN ISRAEL IN 1960.

I went to the location with my husband, my two babies, and my mother and father and mother-in-law. Joanne was there with Paul, and they brought little Nell, whom I loved. Nell always had on little white dresses and little white shoes and little white gloves. She was all in white. I was always throwing her up to my Laurette, who was then two: "Look how cute little Nell looks." So much like Joanne! Of course, once Laurette got into an Israeli blue hat and those little blue shorts, we couldn't get them off her.

Paul was not very comfortable. He was frustrated with the way the shoot was going. Preminger would promise script changes, then he'd shoot the scenes the way they'd originally been written.

So much effort was going into those damn crowd scenes, choreographing ships and such. Since it was really a story about relationships, much more time should have been spent working on the intimate scenes, but they were all done in one or two takes. Otto was busy making the picture at a price and had committed himself to United Artists to finish for a certain amount of money—and I think any overages came out of his

pocket. There was so much pressure on him to finish on schedule, he couldn't deal with anything except getting those pages shot on time.

In the big love scene I play with Paul's character, there was something Otto didn't like about the way Paul was holding me or touching me. He decided to get in there and show Paul how to do it! I was really upset and embarrassed. I think Paul just took it, but I thought, "Oh my God, what are we talking about here?"



Did settling down with the children in one spot make everything right? I'm always anxious about admitting to failure. To not being good enough, to not being right. I am faced with the appalling fact that I don't know anything. I have great doubts about things. I have instincts about things even if I can't intellectually support them. And there are a lot of things I don't get about myself, either. But I am certain that nobody can always be responsible for what other people are. You can only be responsible for who *you* are. I'm afraid to get up in front of people. But I simply do it. If other people—one's children, say—don't do it, well, that's what they don't do, that is what they are. I realize, though, that in the area of being, of doing something in the arena, I am able to accomplish what should be the first order of a man—to provide food and clothing for his family.



PAUL WITH DAUGHTER NELL IN
1960

I could have been more consistent with my children. I could have been more understanding. I could have been more patient. I could have not gone away on location. I could have stopped working.

I could have done some things better. I might have done a lot worse.

I was delighted recently when Stephanie told me she remembered when she was little, she'd sometimes come to visit Joanne and me in our house on Long Island Sound. When the kids were tucked in, I'd come around to their beds, lean over, and say, "Oh, what's this? A bag of potatoes?" And I'd pick them up and walk them around like they were sacks over my shoulder. I hadn't remembered doing nice things like that, which were peculiarly mine, peculiarly physical.

DEDE ALLEN WAS A MUCH-CELEBRATED FILM EDITOR,
WHO'D EARNED MULTIPLE OSCAR NOMINATIONS.

I remember Paul cooked. That always impressed me, that they did their own cooking. There were a lot of young children. Nell was the eldest of those three, very shy, very quiet, and I remember Lissy at six, who would sit in her father's lap with her arm around his head. I remember a lot of affection, a lot of tactile feeling.

MICHAEL BROCKMAN

I watch him with the girls now, with Lissy and Clea and Nell, and I remember when I first met them at the race track years ago when they were still little girls, how he seemed to really enjoy and get a great deal out of watching them do what they did and play and be themselves. He's a very loving, caring guy.

I would ultimately feel pained and stupid by not having realized my son, Scott, might not want to be like me and ride in a race car or on a horse. Thinking about it now, it is funny to recall that as a kid, I never really wanted to ride a horse *myself*; I was scared to death of them. Scott was a robust young man; he seemed to enjoy dangerous things and was delighted by horses and ponies. But I never did think to say to him: "Scott, would you *like* to go out on a horse? And it's no big deal if you don't want to do it."

It's the sort of mistake I'd made before. When Stephanie was about seven, Joanne and I threw a Fourth of July party at our Benedict Canyon

home for the casts and crews of the two films we had both just finished shooting, *Hud* (for me) and Bill Inge's *The Stripper* (for her). I decided to try something a little special for all the kids who were there—a professionally performed ghost story. We set up the little cottage we had behind the pool as our stage, and I enlisted Brandon deWilde, who had just played my nephew, Lonnie, in *Hud*, and our old friend the actor Bob Webber to help out. We'd turned down the lights, made the place spooky, and applied some pretty serious makeup to Brandon's and Bob's faces—and quite a bit of ketchup subbing for blood, too. The story I told was something about a dead skier coming back to haunt some friends and foes. And what we planned was that at the right moment in the story, Bob Webber, with blackened teeth, whitened face, and some wig from Joanne, would reach through an open window and grab Brandon and pull him away.

At Bob's cue, the kids were all squealing delightedly, but all of a sudden Stephanie shouted, "I'm really scared! I don't want to see this. I'm scared to death!" We immediately stopped, turned on the lights, and Brandon sat with Steffi and kept repeating, "I'm okay, look at me, I'm okay." It got to her. And I guess I'm dumb enough that I never know when the point is reached between delight and fright.



STEWART STERN

When Paul was directing *Rachel, Rachel* one of the issues was whether to do the scene or not, where little Rachel walks in and sees her father embalming the body of a little boy. Suddenly Paul didn't want to shoot it. He was concerned about Nell (who played the young Rachel) seeing it, and what it might do to her. She was only about eight, an age when you're not really sure how much she knew about death....I remember that he had actually gotten the set up in that cellar when he quit. But we persuaded him to change his mind.

Then he wanted to hang a lot of bicycles and things between where Nell would be and where the actual embalming was happening, whether for the aesthetics of the scene or to try and keep her protected, I don't know.

I don't have a gift for fathering. And then there's the celebrity aspect; being a movie star means you start out with three strikes against you. The conditions are so strange, the adulation, the recognition in restaurants—these are completely unnatural. It isn't like being the owner of a baseball team, where you can take your kids out to the beach and 98 percent of the people don't have any idea who you are. You can go places with your children without anyone paying special attention.

Being a star throws everything out of whack for your kids.

There was a time, long before he died, that I thought the only way I could free Scott to go his own way would be to shoot myself. Then that pressure would be off his chest, and he could go someplace and maybe get rid of the affliction that was me and become a whole person.

He wouldn't have had to compete anymore; the competition would be over.

Because I felt so detached from everything, I never had a sense of my children as people.

It is really just in the last few years that even Joanne finally, slowly, became not a wife, not an actress, not a sex object, but a person to me. And little by little, my kids have started to become people, too.



THE NEWMAN-WOODWARD CLAN IN BEVERLY HILLS, 1965: TOP ROW, LEFT TO RIGHT, NELL, SUSAN, SCOTT; BOTTOM ROW, LEFT TO RIGHT, JOANNE, PAUL, CLEA, LISSY, AND STEPHANIE

I feel like a person who has been doing prison time and is suddenly let out. He realizes he has only five or six or eight years left in his lifetime, and there's no way that'll be enough time to make amends. So he'll look at the mountain that is yet to be climbed and say to himself, "Well, I could've climbed that thirty years ago, or even just tried to attack it, but to try now with this little time and energy left is almost insurmountable."

Nevertheless, something *will* happen. The person will either be so delighted by his newfound freedom or otherwise suspect the damage is so beyond repair that any dent that can be made will be minor. One of those is

going to win out, and it would be arrogant to assume that you know which one it is likely to be.



BY 1970, THE NEWMAN-WOODWARDS HAD RELOCATED TO WESTPORT,
CONNECTICUT: TOP ROW, LEFT TO RIGHT, SCOTT, PAUL, SUSAN; BOTTOM ROW, LEFT TO
RIGHT, LISSY, STEPHANIE, NELL, JOANNE, CLEA

Movies are a percentage business, and I try to allocate everything—success and blame and guilt—and I base how good I feel about myself on those percentage figures. With my children I think about their strengths, their

individuality, their disappointments, their eccentricities—and I wonder how to allocate responsibility for all of that.

I especially wonder about Scott. What was savable, salvageable, what was in some ways the fault of the business I'm in, or of my divorce, and what does Jackie own of that, too? It's so hard to get any finite message. There's always "this, and on the other hand, that." One of the things that first drew me to auto racing was that it is so nice and clean about the results. If you come across the finish line first, you're first.

I never expected that I would be able to provide for my family the way my father did. I figured I would be a street cleaner or a gas-station attendant. What if I had really been a failure as an actor early on and been forced to keep selling encyclopedias or peddle insurance? Would my children be stronger, weaker, more individual? How much do children need to feel that they can surpass their parents? When that parent seems to them as way beyond anything that they accomplish, how does that affect their desire to quit or go on?

Children need plans. They need parents who have some sense and philosophy of what it is to raise children. We had no philosophy. We thought kids simply reached a certain age, they got married, had their own children, raised their children. They did their jobs, were successful or failures, they retired, and they died.

I see my children in terms of how they feel about themselves. I'm often uncertain about how they feel, but I know if they feel good I'll feel good, and if they don't feel good I'll feel bad.

I recognize things now that I didn't know when my kids were young. I know some people talk about the sound of attack in my voice. I was never aware of that, and if you'd told me that twenty years ago I would have told you to go stick it. The people who tell me that don't wish me ill, so I have to listen. I thought I gave off a very benign light.

I have this sense that I repeat my father's attitude; if my children are failing, I become sarcastic with them the same way my father became sarcastic with me. I wish I could catch myself. Joanne talks about the sound of my voice sometimes taking on a cutting kind of humor. It isn't a trait I

would respect or honor in anyone else. And whether I got it from my father or didn't doesn't seem relevant to me. I just wish I didn't do it. I wish someone had defined the word "patience" for me; I was so impatient with myself, it isn't a surprise that I was impatient with everyone else. It's a terrible thing from which you never, ever recover. Was there some move I could have made with Scott? Some way I might have implanted a different set of values or aspirations, or told him he didn't have to be like me? That he didn't have to do macho things, and could just be himself? I wish I'd had that ability to explain that to him, to tell him that. And just to say, "It's okay, that's terrific."

I never figured any of that out until he was in his mid-twenties. I kept thinking he was going through a phase of adolescent bad judgment. It never seemed to go past the point of recovery. I never thought it would be fatal.

The same thing that happened to Scott certainly could have happened to me. That's a constant source of amazement to me.

He was really very much like me; he didn't get it, either. He didn't know how much danger he was in, and by the time he got it, it was too late.

There are people of good conscience who try to do the best they can given the information they have. I think I'm that sort of person. I have my strengths and there are some things I can take pride in. Friends have told me my eyes light up when I talk about my kids. But I wonder: is it genuine tenderness, or simply amazement at the process? It all seems doubly hard when you're an actor, because you make such an investment in other people's lives—the borrowing, the inventing, the stealing.

The one thing I've always admired is excellence. I recognize it in almost anything: plumbers, museum guides, limousine drivers, bank tellers—I delight in seeing it. Maybe we choose those arenas in which we have the best chance for excellence. For me, maybe that's acting, or being somehow connected to the theater, or capitalizing on the way I look, or fooling people. But I certainly didn't know what it was to be excellent as a parent.



SCOTT NEWMAN IN THE EARLY
1960s

In 1978, I was invited back to Kenyon to open their new theater by directing a production of the Pulitzer Prize winner Michael Cristofer's play *C.C. Pyle and the Bunion Derby*, casting some New York actors in the lead parts and utilizing Kenyon students for all the other roles and the stagecraft.

It wasn't as if our production suddenly looked like a potential Broadway show, but everyone did all right and it was a lot of fun.

I got the call from LA late one evening. Scott had died.

For six or seven years before that day, I'd been getting many phone calls, every one of them saying, "It's just around the corner." Something terrible has happened. Something terrible is about to happen. There's been a crash. He's missing. No one can find him. Calls from his psychiatrists. From Susan. It just seemed that nothing was ever going to stop that locomotive. At a certain point, it began to seem like something inevitable. As if after so many close shaves, someday the invitation would be accepted.

You kept waiting for The Call, and when you finally got it, you almost didn't believe it. The voice on the phone—male, female, old, young, professional, unprofessional—and the first words were always "It's about Scott." And you'd be prepared for the worst, and it turned out to be something less than that.

Not this time. It was his doctor, a fellow I'd met with just a few weeks earlier, just before I headed out to Kenyon. He was putting together a whole new program for Scott.

The day after I got The Call, I went to some kind of brunch and didn't say anything to anybody. It wasn't until three days later that I was able to travel back to Los Angeles, and be with my family. I don't really know why, but I realize I did everything I could to try and avoid recognizing that this had happened.

Many are the times I have gotten down on my knees and asked for Scott's forgiveness. I ask for forgiveness for that part of me which provided the impetus for his own destruction. I want to embrace the responsibility for that. What would it have taken to avert that? I'm not certain, but I don't think I could have gone into films and been a movie star. I couldn't have drunk. I couldn't have been a risk taker.

I realize that there is even something grotesque in saying "Forgive me." The energy up there that represents that kid will just give me the finger and say, "Well, what am I supposed to do with that?"

I think that's enough for me to say right now.

JIM MICHAEL, PAUL'S ONETIME DRAMA PROFESSOR AT KENYON, WAS INSTRUMENTAL IN ARRANGING HIS RETURN TO DIRECT *C.C. PYLE* ON CAMPUS.

Paul was scheduled to have lunch with the alumni secretary and his wife as well as a contemporary of Paul's who'd been through the 1949 Kenyon fire with him. That morning, he called me over to the house he was renting and said, "Something terrible has happened to Scott." He didn't specify what, just said, "I've been prepared for it. I always knew something like this could happen. I don't know what I can do."

Well, I never thought of death; I figured it was a drug thing or an accident.

"I've got to go to California, but I don't know just when, though I don't think it'll be for a few days...I don't know what to do about today's lunch."

"Maybe it would be good to keep the lunch date," I said. "Maybe you'll feel better if you just go through with this."

He agreed, and I drove him out to the country house where the alumni secretary lived. It turned out to be a good lunch, a good conversation. Paul was alert and talking about the things people always like to talk with him about. It wasn't until the next morning that I found out what had actually happened.

Within twenty-four hours everyone at Kenyon knew. But Paul stayed on rehearsing *C.C. Pyle* for quite a few more days; he kept up his schedule and ultimately personally thanked the students for their support.

Paul did eventually fly back to LA to see things through, but was soon back here again, picking up where he'd left off on the play. The remark by Paul I keep remembering from

this whole period was this: “I would not want to have been one of my children.” He was perfectly conscious of the strain.

JOHN CONSIDINE IS AN ACTOR WHO APPEARED IN
NUMEROUS TELEVISION PROGRAMS AND FILMS AND WAS
RECRUITED BY PAUL TO APPEAR IN *C.C. PYLE* AT KENYON
COLLEGE.

When we arrived at Kenyon, I made it a habit to go over to Paul’s place each evening. Either we’d drive over to the town of Mount Vernon, where Paul would order turkey with mashed potatoes and gravy, or we’d stay home and Paul would get us some soup, salad, and a couple of bottles of that expensive wine he liked.

He was worried about Scott, and he didn’t know whether he was doing the right things to help him; this new psychologist he had just seen didn’t seem to be doing anything. It was all preying on him.

“Have you ever wondered,” he asked me, “if you could do it all over, would you have children again?”

The evening after we’d done the first read-through of the play, Paul’s phone rang and I quickly knew something terrible had happened, since there was a lot of silence, nothing but a few monosyllabic things like “When?”

Paul hung up and I asked, “Is Scott okay?”

He looked very distracted and then answered, “He’s not going to make it. I don’t think he’s going to make it.”

Finally, after a long silence, Paul said he’d just been told that Scott had died.

We decided to go for a walk. Maybe half a dozen words were said, no tears. I remember wishing that Paul had been

able to cry, to get something out. I put my arm around him. I wanted to hug him.

When it was almost dawn, Paul said something like “I need to have some time.” He seemed okay, so much so that I was stunned. Because I knew he wasn’t okay.

Later that morning there was a calling together at the theater of the play’s cast and company to tell them what had happened and to discuss canceling the show. Paul came later, and announced that he’d decided that the best thing for him was to start our work. I kept watching him, keeping a close eye on him, afraid that he might burst. He never did.

I didn’t know how he could stay, but I didn’t question it. About three days later, he went back to Los Angeles.



JOANNE WOODWARD

I knew there would be photographers and I couldn’t stand that. I think that was one reason I wanted Paul to stay where he was. He was safe there and we knew that nobody in Gambier was going to take advantage of him, and they didn’t. They were wonderful. He couldn’t really make it real for himself until he came home some days later. He went straight to the mortuary and he said it was a totally complete experience. He said he really just had to go and be there with him, and he said, “I suddenly knew him, and was able to weep and look at him and love him.”



JACKIE WITTE

Paul called me and told me what had happened. It was the first time we had spoken in years.

We chose to scatter Scott's ashes. Paul was there, I was there, and Susan was there, as well as a few of Scott's friends.

Did Paul and I come together over Scott's death? I don't think so. What I'm saying is that if both Paul and I had had a much greater understanding of Scott's situation and had worked in concert to help, it would have been a lot better for everybody. But we didn't.

When Scott was about eleven, we were at a friend's house one night and Scott came over to me and said: "I want to show you something, but I don't want you to say anything to Dad. You have to come with me outside." So we went out, and Scott reached into his pocket and pulled out a big .30 caliber armor-piercing bullet.

"Where'd you get that?" I asked.

"I can't tell you, but I wanted to show you. Should I keep it?"

"Do you want to keep it?"

"Yeah, I want to."

I told him it was a dangerous thing to keep, and explained how an accident could happen if it was dropped on a sharp object and hit the firing pin. And though he was afraid of the danger, I could tell he really wanted it. So somehow we got the shell apart, removed the bullet, dumped the powder, and dented the firing pin on a rock—and I gave him back the bullet.

Years later, when he was in terrible trouble in school back east and there was such a dance of death going on between Scott and his father, I wrote him and asked him to please try and communicate what he was feeling and not shut himself off from the people who might help him. And I reminded him about this story. I told him: "You have so much rage in you.

You're so afraid of it. And at the same time you need whatever strength that anger gives you, because that's what the bullet was all about—you were asking someone else to take charge of the rage that let you feel so strong."

A. E. HOTCHNER WAS A NEIGHBOR AND FRIEND OF THE NEWMANS IN CONNECTICUT. A BEST-SELLING BIOGRAPHER AND WRITER, HE CREATED THE NEWMAN'S OWN CHARITABLE FOOD LINE WITH PAUL.

Paul would say, "I'm having trouble with Scott," and then have to fly off to wherever the trouble was. I especially remember that terrible time when Scott was arrested and kicked in the head by a cop in the back of a squad car. Paul, of course, had to go.

It was a tough time for Paul; he was very anxious. We'd talk about the problem. "Gee, I don't understand what can be done, because I can't reach Scott." Then he'd try to get him into a film, distract him with employment, and be deluded into thinking, "Well, Scott is really acting, this is what he wants to do."

On one occasion, we gathered everyone for a party to watch Scott have a guest shot on *Marcus Welby, M.D.* Scott, who was also at the party, played someone dying in a hospital bed. Paul would show him off with great love and affection for his talents, as though Scott had just been nominated for an Academy Award.

When Scott was a boy, Paul had set up trampolines and target-practice gear in the yard. He fished with Scott, did all sorts of stuff. But for Scott, there was always the burden of being Paul Newman's offspring. Trying to be Paul Newman.

The real tragedy was that he couldn't find some endeavors totally different than what his father had done. It would have been a saving grace for both of them.

DR. RHODA BURNHAM WAS A THERAPIST ENGAGED BY
THE NEWMANS TO COUNSEL THEIR CHILDREN.

After Scott's death, Paul never discussed the situation with his girls, so they never really knew how much he grieved. I'm talking about the experience of his death; it was never talked about.

Paul is a very loving and caring father. He has tremendous respect and love for his kids. He will see the humor in Lissy, he'll see the dedication in Clea, and he can identify and relate to Nell's interests, which are similar to his own.

But Paul has had so many pulls on his time and energy, professionally, that it was not a consistent pattern of fathering. Paul would be very involved, very concerned, for several weeks, and then disappear. It wasn't that he was depriving his kids, it's just that there were other pressures. There was no follow-through.

The kids enjoy doing things with Paul on a one-on-one basis. But because of his presence and the reactions of the public, he couldn't take his kids to the zoo or to many of the other things fathers do with their children. When Paul would visit them at school, the girls used to be uptight because of the abnormal reaction all the people around them would have when they found out these were Paul Newman's kids. They've paid a price, and it is something they cannot change.

GEORGE ROY HILL WAS A FILMMAKER AND CLOSE FRIEND OF PAUL'S. HE DIRECTED THREE FILMS WITH NEWMAN: *BUTCH CASSIDY AND THE SUNDANCE KID*, *THE STING*, AND *SLAP SHOT*; HE ALSO DIRECTED SCOTT NEWMAN IN *THE GREAT WALDO PEPPER*.

Scott was a kid who was in over his head. Being the son of a star as famous as Paul and being wonderfully good-looking in your own right put a burden on him that he was just not equipped to carry.

Paul was much more indulgent with Scott than he would have been if their relationship had not been one marred by divorce; Paul always felt a certain amount of guilt, and he made a special place in his mind for Scott. He would tell me about the time he visited Scott at the Valley Forge Academy, where he'd attended boarding school; Scott came over to Paul and hugged him—it meant an enormous amount to him. Scott wasn't capable of faking a moment like that, but I do think he was capable of manipulating his father.

Scott, I think, was very disturbed, but Paul tried everything he could to straighten him out. Paul doesn't stint when he gives: he leaves himself very exposed to rejection, and I think he felt rejected by Scott's manner of life. He once told me he couldn't take it with Scott anymore, that he didn't know what to do, but that he couldn't spend the rest of his life making up to Scott what Scott demanded he make up to him.

PATTY NEWMAN

Scott was trying to get jobs and needed a car; Paul, we understood, was not about to buy him yet another one, especially because Scott by this time was in his mid-twenties.

When Scott explained his predicament to me, I said, “Look, I have an old little sports car which I’d be happy for you to drive for a while if that would help.”

I felt terribly sorry for him and wished there was something more I could do for him besides loan him a car. Scott was a sweet kind of guy, very sensitive, likable, a pleasure to speak with. Scott always spoke to us as if something good was about to happen for him: he was about to find work, or go back to school, or have one of the acting things he was working on come through. He always had a reason for why he was without a job, but he was the eternal optimist, which is not uncommon with alcoholics or people with drug problems.

He’d been driving the car for quite a while when on a Thanksgiving weekend, Paul’s family and my family went up to Santa Barbara, where Paul’s girls were going to compete in a horse show. We decided to have dinner together in Ojai; it turned into a pretty big group. And of course everyone was drinking. Joanne and the girls headed out first so they could rest up for their competition; Paul left with Scott in the sports car, and Arthur and I were right behind them.

Arthur had just commented to me how fast Scott was driving, and how Paul was probably pushing him on, when we rounded a curve just as Scott’s car slid across the road and rolled over. A complete rollover. The car seemed totaled and we were horrified.

I jumped out of our car, stared at the wreck, and must have had an awful expression on my face. Paul jumped at me, the only time he has done such a thing, and said: “What are you worried about? We can get you another car.”

The car, of course, was the last thing I was worried about. He later apologized to me.

Paul wasn't hurt at all, but Scott had to get several stitches around one of his eyes. Arthur went with Paul and Scott to the hospital while I drove back to the hotel. We ended up having to drive Scott back to LA the next day, because now, of course, he again had no car.

Scott told us that he'd resisted going faster because the car's high beams were broken and he didn't want to outrun his headlights on the curvy road. But Paul had urged him on.

There was another aspect to the accident that bothered me but was never talked about. Paul had an elaborate mock-up done of my Opel GT—all banged up and wrecked. He gave it to Scott as a gift. That seemed odd to me; what happened that night was horrible, and it was miraculous that neither Scott nor Paul was really hurt. They could have been gone like that—and the possibility of their deaths was the last thing I would ever have joked about.

When Scott got the mock-up from Paul, though, even he laughed.

JOANNE WOODWARD

The night before I was planning to go to the mortuary to see Scott, I dreamed one of the most vivid dreams I ever had in my life: Clea and her friend Emily, who were little girls in the dream and not the ages they were at that time, were with me. We went up some stairs and into a room where Scott was lying. He sat up and sort of threw his legs over the edge of the coffin and was sitting on the side and we talked. And then I don't know what happened with the girls, they seemed to disappear, and he and I talked, and it was very warm, very loving, and after we'd been talking for a while he began to

glow, and he realized he was glowing, and he said, “I think you’d better go now.” And I said, “But Susan and Lissy want a lock of your hair!” And he said, “All right, you can cut a lock of my hair.” So with a pair of scissors I reached to cut a lock of his hair, and his hair turned into leaves, and I remember cutting it and thinking, “How strange! Now how am I going to put this in a locket, when it’s leaves?” And he lay back down and smiled and waved, and I left, and that was the end of the dream.

I remember I used to tease Scott and say, “You really are from outer space, you don’t belong here.” But I wasn’t really teasing, I always thought that if there is such a thing as a changeling, Scott was one.





CLEA AND JOANNE IN THE EARLY
1970S

During the 1960s Paul Newman made and released over twenty films. He received his first Oscar nomination of the new decade for playing Fast Eddie Felson in *The Hustler*, losing to Maximilian Schell for *Judgment at Nuremberg*, and the next one two years later for *Hud*, losing this time to Sidney Poitier for *Lilies of the Field*. (Melvyn Douglas and Patricia Neal, Newman's costars, each took home an Oscar that night.) In 1967 he was a nominee again for *Cool Hand Luke* (with costar George Kennedy, who received an Oscar for Best Supporting Actor). He closed out the sixties with one of the most commercially successful films ever, *Butch Cassidy and the Sundance Kid*, nominated for Best Picture (but losing to *Midnight Cowboy*). He racked up a lifetime total of ten Oscar nominations, finally winning in 1987 for *The Color of Money*.

He earned a nod for Best Picture in 1968 as the producer of the first film he ever directed, a passion project called *Rachel, Rachel*, which earned a total of four nominations, including Best Actress for its star, Joanne Woodward.

DEDE ALLEN

Paul called me as I was finishing up *Bonnie and Clyde*, and asked to see me about *Rachel, Rachel* (which was then called “A Jest of God”). I was very tired when I read the script; *Bonnie and Clyde* was an exciting but stressful experience. As when one has a child, you say, “Never again!”

There was something about *Rachel, Rachel* that made me very uncomfortable—maybe it dealt with things I was uncomfortable with. I met with Paul in Beverly Hills and I said, “I don’t like this—I don’t think it is the right thing for me to do.”

“That’s precisely why I want you to do it,” he replied. “Joanne does not disagree with you about a lot of this, and that’s why I want you—I want different points of view.” One of Paul’s great talents was to go right for the truth.

Paul said he wanted to direct the film, which was important to get made because it was “right for Joanne.” Audiences, he said, were not getting the benefit of Joanne as an actress, so therefore, even though maybe I shouldn’t direct, I’m going to.

JOHN FOREMAN

Paul thinks Joanne is a special creature endowed with magic that he has to work very hard to come close to. As a result, he has put up with lots of stuff from her over the years.

Directing her in *The Effect of Gamma Rays on Man-in-the-Moon Marigolds*, she was as difficult as I have ever seen a star be in all the years I have been in this business. It was part of her work process, finding that difficult woman. Joanne had a hunch, I have always suspected, that to be considered seriously as an actor, you either had to be prettier than everybody, or better, and she chose better.

DEDE ALLEN

A picture like *Rachel, Rachel* would never have been made by anyone—a movie about a lonely thirty-seven-year-old woman who has never slept with a man? The studio let Paul make the film because they'd get an acting commitment out of him. And they left us alone, which was the greatest blessing that could have happened.

It was a watershed for me as not only one of my favorite films but one of my best work experiences. I feel the whole reason the picture worked was that it was loved into being—nobody was watching over us. The studio couldn't have cared less. They didn't give a shit about this little project. "Here's some film," they said. "Go play."

On the first day of shooting up in Bethel, Connecticut, Paul addressed the whole company: "I'm a virgin. Be gentle with me. I need your help!" Paul was so open, so honest, there was nothing that crew wouldn't do to embrace him.

ESTELLE PARSONS

I'd never rehearsed a film like that, on a marked-out floor, rehearsed a whole film as a play. It was very interesting. It gave the movie a very unusual depth. When we actually got to shoot the movie it didn't really have anything to do with what we rehearsed, but, having done it, the characters had a certain heavy relaxation, a certain depth that was not conscious, that you couldn't act. I thought of how really exquisite it was of Paul to do that, because whether we wanted it or not, we had a certain something that one does not usually see in a film.



SHIRLEY RICH WAS A CELEBRATED CASTING DIRECTOR
FOR MANY BROADWAY SHOWS AND HOLLYWOOD FILMS,
INCLUDING *RACHEL, RACHEL*.

When Paul made choices—maybe it is the actor in him—he would see things in someone. He could always tell the difference between the best and the not-so-good.

Actors remember Paul because he made casting a gentlemanly experience. They didn't have to go through: "What have you done lately?" He always had their pictures and resumes, but whatever happened at the moment of the reading made the determination.

His choices are marvelous—a real sense of what's right and good for what he's working on. He doesn't take weeks to decide—there was never any waste with Paul. And that discipline is true with his own acting, too.



TOM CRUISE

I auditioned for *Harry & Son* mostly because I wanted to meet Paul. I was nervous. Starting out as a young actor, you want people to like you, you want people to like your work, you want to be accepted. *Taps* had come out and I think *Risky Business*. I walked into the office. There's Joanne knitting, and Newman with a chain around his neck with a beer can opener on it. He was wearing an off-white sweater and jeans. He said, "Hey, killer. How's it going?" Very excited to see an actor coming in, very relaxed.

We started doing a scene and he was interested in my point of view and what I came up with and exploring it. I was really impressed. You think someone's one way and all of a sudden you meet him and see he can still be excited just by two actors doing a scene.



WARREN COWAN

My earliest recollection of *Rachel* is that I read the script on an airplane coming to New York and the next day went to meet with Paul at their apartment on Lexington Avenue.

I remember they had transformed the apartment into a production office. There were people working away at two or three desks in the foyer and actresses auditioning in the living room. Well, that very day Joanne had put an ad in *The New York Times* looking for a new nanny, so when the doorbell rang they said, "Are you here for the movie or to apply for the nanny?"



FRANK CORSARO WAS A RENOWNED DIRECTOR OF
OPERA AND THEATER, AND AN ALUMNUS OF THE ACTORS

STUDIO; HE HAD A LEAD ROLE IN *RACHEL, RACHEL*.

In many ways, Paul's best acting performance was as the director of *Rachel, Rachel*. I've never seen so much finesse, his extraordinary sensitivity came through. He was able to coalesce some of his most tender feelings and allow them expression through the film's actors.

As a director, Paul made very specific demands on the cast in areas of feeling and playfulness that very often were missing in his own work as an actor.

DEDE ALLEN

Paul's adoration of Joanne, not only as an actress but as a woman, was so overwhelming that when things were tense I think it was very disturbing to him and therefore the directing experience was harder than it might have been. It must be appalling to direct someone you love and live with when there's tension. Both of them were totally professional, but I do remember Paul's joking about "this directing situation is going to cost our marriage."

STEWART STERN

I remember filming *Rachel* he didn't want to shoot the love scene by the water. He didn't want to see Joanne in that position. His justification was, Let's play it on her face later, as she remembers it.

That night he saw a rehearsal of it and walked away into the woods, and I followed him. He said, "No, no! I'm not

going to do it. It's a matter of taste! It's a matter of the actress!" I pleaded with him to shoot it anyway. I said, "You always have an option in the cutting room to throw it out, but this is not the time to make that kind of decision." He seemed pretty set, and I was almost in tears because I could feel the whole thing going.

DEDE ALLEN

I remember that discussion: I remember fighting very hard to get those love scenes. I felt that they were terribly important—and it's very interesting, because I do not recall, at the editing phase, our ever trying the film with that scene out. It was a great, tastefully shot scene, and I have no recollection of it ever not being in a cut.

ELIA KAZAN

Paul's an excellent director; he's sensitive, tough and strong. *Rachel, Rachel* was honorable, decent, and good. It would be very hard to resist being seduced by Paul. You'd do anything he wanted, which is part of the job of a director. It may even be his biggest talent. Maybe five years from now people will say, "Boy, Newman was a good actor, but when it comes to directing, he's better."

DEDE ALLEN

I was never convinced that Paul really realized how good he was, his talent was, and how almost in the way of someone who'd had years and years of managing groups of people, how well he worked with people. Kazan walks into a room a master psychiatrist in his own way, and knows exactly who you dump on and who you don't, when I'm vulnerable and when to send me roses. Kazan does it very well. I never get that feeling at all with Paul. I don't think there's any conscious manipulation.

SIDNEY LUMET WAS THE DIRECTOR OF *THE VERDICT*.

The reason I'm surprised Paul doesn't direct more is that it seems a great solution for him. If one is afraid of exposing one's vulnerability to the masses, it's clearly easier to confine the exposure to the very intimate circumstances of actors whom you'd get to know well during the process of directing them. It seems to fit in with his talent and fit in with what I've felt about him psychologically.

By the time *Cat on a Hot Tin Roof* was released in 1958, I had already grown incredibly frustrated by Hollywood's studio system. At the time of *Silver Chalice*, I had signed a contract with Warner Bros. that gave them tremendous power over what pictures I could make and how much I would get for them.

JOHN FOREMAN

Warners began to loan him, which really burned his ass because all his great successes were on loan-out, they got about a hundred and fifty thousand dollars for him when he worked at MGM, and by the time he was at Fox, five to six hundred thousand dollars. And he was still getting his two thousand a week salary.

Though Warners had promised me they'd never force me into making a movie I simply didn't want, they lied. Finally I called the studio directly. "Jack Warner," I said, "this is Paul Newman. Go fuck yourself." It took the finesse and nerve of the head of my talent agency, MCA's Lew Wasserman, to figure out a way to calm things down and set me free—sort of. Lew called Jack Warner and suggested I be allowed to buy my way out of their contract—for half a million dollars. The deal was frightening to me.

"Lew, this will make me an indentured servant for the next twenty years!"

"Let me worry about that," he replied.

I was still nervous, but the gamble ultimately paid off. Within a few years, I had paid back the \$500,000 to Warners.

Jack Warner was very much of the "business is business" philosophy and let it be known he had no hard feelings. But not long afterwards, he was in New York and attended one of my performances of *Sweet Bird of Youth*; he asked to come by after the show and offer congratulations. I wouldn't allow him backstage.

I was determined to make my own choices—to decide what projects to do based on whether I really wanted to do them.

ROBERT J. WAGNER PLAYED PAUL'S RIVAL, THE RUTHLESS
COMPETING RACE CAR DRIVER, IN *WINNING*, AND WITH PAUL'S
HELP WAS CAST IN A KEY ROLE IN *HARPER*.

Paul was always rebellious about the studio contract system, about the kind of movies they wanted. He objected to that. He was always looking for more, for the edge, for values that were higher than he was asked to attain.

His thought processes as an actor were so bewildering and exciting. When Paul would think about a part or a character, his interests were so extraordinary, his depth of investigation about life and behavior were always so much more than I would ever think about. I'd never been around someone who works so goddamn hard to get where he goes and to get the strength he's got.

It is probably no coincidence that as I entered the 1960s, my political awareness and activities were increasing.

Perhaps it began with Gore Vidal. We'd met in 1955 when I played the lead in his *The Death of Billy the Kid*. When Joanne and I were on our honeymoon in Europe, Gore and his partner, Howard Austen, had a wonderful celebratory dinner for us; when we settled back in LA afterwards, we actually shared a rented house with them for a time.

We all became close friends, and when we came back east, we'd often stay at Gore's country estate, Edgewater, near Red Hook, New York. Gore held a real salon there, attended by literary types, theater people, and even some military folks. Also, more than a few political figures, as Gore, of course, was very politically astute and active. We'd stay up late and drink formidable amounts of liquor, wine, and beer. It didn't matter whether Gore went to bed at four a.m., he'd be at his typewriter working at nine in the morning. I was always a bit concerned that I was difficult to talk with because I wasn't educated in the same way as Gore and his guests.

Gore, of course, was part of a distinguished family; his grandfather was a US senator, and Gore grew up in Washington, DC. In 1960, Gore received a Democratic nomination for election to Congress, gaining Eleanor

Roosevelt's endorsement for the Hudson Valley House seat long held by Republicans. Joanne and I were impressed by Gore's liberalism, and offered to help. In what was my first political experience, I made many a trip to Gore's upstate New York district to campaign for him. We went door-to-door, and I made speeches on his behalf. Gore ultimately lost the election, but that began my long-term involvement with Democratic candidates, surprising, perhaps, for an "emotional Republican" from Shaker Heights.

About three years later, at the height of the civil rights movement and a burgeoning resistance to Governor George Wallace's rabid racism in the South, Marlon Brando phoned me and asked if I would go down to Gadsden, Alabama, with him to help bring attention to and mediate a confrontation between the Black community and the big white-run steel makers in town. Tensions were high, and there had hardly been any conversations happening between Gadsden's white business class and the Black population.

Besides me, Marlon had also asked Tony Franciosa and Virgil Frye, the boxer and actor, to fly down. So we did, and soon after landing near Birmingham, we realized our vans from the airport were being followed. We were being tracked, and the people chaperoning us made us switch cars for our own security. I don't think there was any real physical danger, but we sure didn't make a lot of friends down there.

While we got together with members of the African-American religious community, at least one business leader and Gadsden's mayor, Lesley Gilliland, refused even to see us. "They are serving no purpose in Gadsden except to create trouble and chaos," the mayor said of our group.

We visited several Black churches, met the parishioners, shook hands, asked for advice on who we should meet and what we should say to help them with their voting rights and employment issues. We were all staying for two or three days at a motel run by one of the local ministers. I was speaking to one of the Black activists who was also based there, and he was telling me about the violent tactics the police and troopers used on the protesters.

"Would you like to see what we get on a regular basis?" he asked me.

I told him I was interested, and he brought over a cattle prod that was used by the cops on Blacks. I said I was willing to see how it felt. And with that, he touched it to the muscle that runs down along my backbone and I jumped about ten feet across the room. It had an incredible jolt, and all I could imagine was what would happen if someone got shocked in their chest or stomach.

I'm not sure of any tangible results that came from our trip, but we did our best to reassure the community that they had support from us and our colleagues. Most important, though, was the national media coverage we received. As a result of the wire photographs and stories, many theater owners in the South decided to pull my films from their screens.

By 1964, I'd been asked by the national Democratic Party to attend its presidential convention in Atlantic City. Though LBJ was enormously popular and had no real competition for the nomination, they wanted me to address the Young Democrats, juice them up for the general election and calm any fears they might be having about LBJ's foreign policy. I was brought into a huge auditorium, with several thousand people there, and my subject was the slow-simmering war in Vietnam. Johnson's position, his very effective position, was that he would contain our involvement in Southeast Asia, while his GOP opponent, Arizona's conservative Senator Barry Goldwater, would escalate the US role. I gladly—and very unfortunately in retrospect—gave my speech supporting his stated plans.

Years later, when the Pentagon Papers came out, it was clear that the decision to escalate the war had already been made by the White House in May 1964. Goldwater, being a member of the Armed Services Committee, would have been conversant with the decision—but could reveal nothing, because it was a matter of national security. So here were two guys with plans to escalate in Vietnam, but with only one admitting he wanted to do just that while the incumbent claimed he had no such intention. Goldwater couldn't get up and say, "Look, on this issue, it's going to be the same no matter who is elected—don't think for a minute that won't be the case!"

I'd always believed that on some minor issues there was chicanery in government, but I'd never really imagined a president of the United States

actively getting up and lying to the people. Actively asking me to put my status and reputation on the line to support someone who had already torpedoed us.

It was a terrible feeling to realize the extent to which we'd all been taken by LBJ. Four years later, during the next national election, I did all I could to try and repair the damage.

HAROLD WILLENS WAS A COFOUNDER OF THE CENTER FOR DEFENSE INFORMATION AND A MAJOR SUPPORTER OF PROGRESSIVE CAUSES, INCLUDING THE ANTIWAR MOVEMENT AND NUCLEAR DISARMAMENT. HE RECRUITED NEWMAN TO DONATE AND PARTICIPATE IN THESE AND OTHER CAUSES.

Paul was then and has always remained someone who made no pretensions about having more knowledge than he did or being more profound than he is. He has always tended to downplay himself. But there was a willingness, even eagerness, to learn, and this has gone on for all the years I've known him.

It wasn't easy finding a candidate who'd take on his own party's incumbent president in a primary. But while many on the Left were urging some well-known antiwar national politicians to challenge LBJ and put a stop to the Vietnam madness, only the relatively obscure Senator Gene McCarthy, Democrat of Minnesota, rose to the moment. When McCarthy first began campaigning as the antiwar candidate against Johnson in early '68, virtually no voters knew who he was. He could literally walk through his hotel lobby in New Hampshire, site of the first battle, and not a single head would turn.

I'd been in New York, cutting my film *Rachel, Rachel*, so I had a relatively large amount of time on my hands. I'd work on the movie three days a week and then spend the rest of my time campaigning for McCarthy in New Hampshire.

When I first volunteered, I'd never met the man. But when we finally had lunch together, I found him to be someone of great political and intellectual charisma. He was incisive, a senator of great integrity. There was a joke going around that if McCarthy was elected, he'd leave diplomatic pouches hanging on the wall while he'd go off in a corner composing poetry. I ended up spending much of the next forty-five or fifty days doing everything I could on the trail to help McCarthy defeat the president.

At the beginning, what I did was pure grassroots stuff—canvassing, speaking in conjunction with others at Rotary and Kiwanis clubs, churches, high schools, even from the back of some flatbeds. McCarthy was often there, and I'd introduce him, but there were more than a couple of times that I'd have to hold the fort because he was running late. I was fairly well prepared, pretty well read on Vietnam, and got better as I went along (like everything else in life). Though we lost New Hampshire, the whole country was shocked by how narrow a victory LBJ had eked out—50 percent to 42 percent.

I went on to Wisconsin to help with McCarthy's run there. After a few days on the hustings, we felt the momentum turning McCarthy's way; one late poll had us up by more than fifteen points. When I landed back in New York shortly before the voting, I turned on my car radio just in time to hear Lyndon Johnson declare, "I shall not seek and I will not accept the nomination of my party for another term as your president."

God, I felt angry: Johnson wouldn't give us the satisfaction of licking him. Bobby Kennedy, of course, decided then to jump into the race, which I felt was not cricket. I stuck with McCarthy.

A couple of months later, while campaigning in Chicago before the Illinois primary, McCarthy had to abruptly bow out of an event and left me alone to the wolves. The appearance was scheduled in a poor Black

neighborhood, and I was on my own in front of a pretty big crowd. With the horror and trauma of Bobby Kennedy's murder just a week earlier, minority voters were now giving McCarthy a second look, and as his surrogate, I was asked about race relations, equal opportunity, and so forth. It all came down to one key question that someone in the crowd shouted out: "What are you going to do for us?"

"Let me be clear," I improvised. "There's going to be nothing for the Black community as long as the Vietnam War is going on. Only if we stop the war will the government have the energy and money to do things about racial equality. But if we stay in Vietnam, you're going to get nothing."

I really didn't know what else to say, but my answer scared the hell out of me. It had just appeared in my mouth while I was standing before the crowd, and it was really exciting to say it out loud.

Oddly enough, the scene I most sharply remember from that campaign came when I got in late one night to one of the midwestern primary states, and the kid who met me at the airport asked if I could boost the morale of the young campaign volunteers who were working their butts off for McCarthy. Even though it was already eleven p.m., I agreed to go over, say hello, clap them on the back and offer something encouraging. When we arrived at the church basement office, there were still about a half dozen people hard at work—and a suspicious odor of marijuana wafting through the air. I thanked everyone, and began to chat with one guy, maybe nineteen, with a beard and big bushy hair.

"Are all of you college kids?" I asked him.

"Yeah," he replied.

"And where were you going to school?"

"Princeton."

"And you gave up a whole semester of Princeton to volunteer in McCarthy's campaign?"

"Yeah, that's what I'm giving up."

"And what do you get out of it?"

"I get to be known as a revolutionary."

"A revolutionary," I said. "What's the benefit of being a revolutionary?"

“Revolutionaries,” he explained, “get laid a lot.”
So much for the joy of democracy.

HAROLD WILLENS

When Paul would spend weekends in New Hampshire in 1968 campaigning for McCarthy, there was a rental agency which made a fancy car available for his use. Paul learned that Richard Nixon was coming to the state to campaign and he was to receive use of this same car.

Paul wrote a note and left it in the car for Nixon: “You’ll find this car very suitable for you. It has a crooked clutch.”

My bottom line take on Paul is that he is the quintessential citizen who pays a high price with much more than money for the things he considers to be important.

He cares about things larger than himself. Macrocosmic problems concern him and evoke a response.

He also has the ability to accept that human enterprise, whether it’s directing a film or trying to save the world from extinction, requires a process, a process that shouldn’t be measured in terms of “Will the ten thousand dollars I contribute bring some specific result by next Monday?”

To my amazement and delight, this guy turned out to be profoundly aware that history is a stream of events that precedes us and lies ahead of us. He understands it is worthwhile doing anything that can point the process in the right direction.

GEORGE ROY HILL AND STEWART STERN

GEORGE ROY HILL: I hate when Paul gets in his political mood, because it's soporific for me. As soon as he talks about Washington and what's going on down there, he can't say the first two words when I click it off, don't pay any attention to it at all, because it's the most boring subject in the world. But he really gets off on it. You know that's something that always interested me about Paul is why he never got into politics.

STEWART STERN: The reason he gives me is that—I think the drinking, the opposition might seize on that.

GH: The drinking?

SS: Yeah. In the past.

GH: Oh, come on! He's full of shit.

SS: The other thing is that—

GH: He never had a problem with drinking.

SS: Well...

GH: I mean, my god, when you think of the luses they have in the Senate and the Congress.

SS: But also, the main overriding thing is that he's not able to show the kind of enthusiasm for things that he has no sincere interest in. He's very, very uncomfortable selling a product, and you have to sell products.



Let me get back to Gore for a moment and a story that started without a shred of politics, but ended up with almost more than we could handle.

By the mid-sixties, Gore and Howard had pretty much moved full-time to Italy. Long-distance relationships can be hard to maintain, so when Gore invited Joanne and me to take a sailing cruise together around Greece, it seemed like a wonderful chance to escape our hectic home lives and be reunited with one of our longtime friends.

Gore had chartered a four-stateroom launch (with crew) and we were to sail from Piraeus in May, always said to be the best month for traveling the Adriatic's Greek islands. If you're headed through places of historical or political significance, there is no one better to travel with than Gore; he's a living encyclopedia, and for an illiterate person like me, it's like having your own twenty-four-hour-a-day guide. Still, things started terribly.

On the day Joanne and I flew into Athens, I lost my passport. All the embassy could do for a temporary replacement was to hand me a slip of paper that identified me (in Greek) as Paul Newman, US Citizen. When we eventually took our bags over to Gore's yacht, we met the captain and first mate—and made some unsettling discoveries. While we'd known the skipper was Greek, we'd been assured his first mate spoke French, so he could communicate with any of us and act as our liaison to the captain. Problem was, this mate actually couldn't speak a word of French; he didn't even know what *potage* meant. I thought, "Well, there's going to be trouble."

Besides our captain's language issues, he also worried us by bumping into everything while leaving the dock. We literally ricocheted off other yachts. Whatever direction we were headed, the captain alertly and aggressively looked the opposite way. (The captain reminded me of myself in a way: wherever there was knowledge or experience or understanding and you had to point yourself in that direction to embrace all that good stuff, I looked in the other direction.)

Within a day of setting out, we also encountered what was said to be the worst May weather in the Adriatic for fifty years. Joanne had laid out one of her Gucci dresses on the top bunk in our stateroom, and the ship's maid had forgotten to tie down the porthole as the weather kicked in; the water gushed right through and got sucked up into the dress, which now looked like a child's bathing suit.

When we pulled into the first island on our itinerary, our captain was unable to dock our boat, because there was another sixty-five-foot launch blocking our way to the marina; he couldn't figure out what to do. Though we all wanted to go into town to explore, the only way to head ashore was

in a tiny three-person dinghy. (We did have a Boston Whaler tethered to our ship, but its motor, of course, conked out.) So a mate rowed two of us in, turned around, and then shuttled the other two of us in to shore. We ate the best fish imaginable, and were finally rowed back the same way we came. But the next morning, with the sea increasingly rough, our captain decided it was too risky to sail on, so we had the mate row us back to land again. We walked all around this wonderful little island, and on our way back to the dock, we stopped and bought some bread, sliced meat, vegetables, and other provisions.

By this time, word must have gotten around that there was an American movie star onboard this launch anchored just three hundred feet from the dock. So as we prepared to reboard our dinghy, fifty or sixty people had gathered at the water's edge, observing us with curiosity. I grabbed our leeks, lettuce, and bread and got into the dinghy while Howard quickly followed, stepping down on the outside gunnel—and flipping over the rowboat. I surfaced to polite applause from the natives, who kept yelling “El comandante!” and “Il capitano!” and “Bravo!” and “Ole!” or whatever. So besides my humiliation, we were also out of bread and leeks. But I must admit, it was hysterical.

When we sailed on the next morning, we again were wallowing in a roiling sea. Joanne was sitting on the deck atop a heavy sea chest—which suddenly broke loose and skidded across the entire boat. Joanne was riding it like a colt and was finally stopped by hitting the gunnel. It was amazing she didn't go overboard.

Joanne turned to me and in her sweetest Southern drawl said: “Get me off this fucking boat!”

We managed to tell the skipper to tack south and at least get the wind at our backs. He took us into the lee of another small island, where we suddenly heard gunshots and saw another vessel speeding our way with an armed crew.

I thought we were being hijacked. Gore was asleep downstairs, and I told Joanne to get down below and lock herself in the bathroom. All I had on was a pair of shorts, no weapons, and when the boat pulled alongside us,

two young kids with submachine guns hopped onboard and pointed their guns at us.

The other boat's skipper then came onboard and demanded everyone's papers. When he got to the handwritten temporary passport I'd received from the American embassy, the skipper looked up at me, then back at the paper, then looked at us all again. He motioned for the gunmen to quickly get off the boat, but explained we needed to follow their vessel for the next three or four hours.

Greece, it turns out, was in the middle of a coup d'état, and our moron captain had sailed us into the lee of the little island where all the political prisoners were being detained. When we followed their vessel to a different port, our captain was led away for questioning. Joanne looked around the harbor and asked a local policeman what was the large boat that just docked at the next quay. "That's the ferry to Athens," he told her.

Joanne packed in four minutes flat. Weeping copiously, she bought a ticket and ran onto the ferry. "I'll see you later, guys" were her parting words.

She flew right back to the US from Athens, and I wasn't far behind.

I've always been impressed by Gore; he even reminds me of myself in some ways—he's a real inner-outer type, different layers of personality for different situations. He could write *Julian*, a great, brilliant book, publish a terrific novel like *Washington, D.C.*—and then the next day he'll do something dumb. Gore had a rather inflated sense of where he stood in the literary world. He has a sense of being truly powerful, but while he is a power, he was never truly powerful.

Over the next few decades, it was more Joanne than me who kept up our friendship with Howard and Gore; they loved her. In fact, when my courtship of Joanne was still secret, there was the occasional gossip-column item that said Joanne and Gore (who, of course, was gay), who occasionally dined or went to the theater together, were a couple.

My mother had somehow become suspicious of them, too. When Joanne invited Tress to the premiere of *Ben-Hur*—which Gore co-wrote—she noticed Joanne and Gore chatting and casually holding hands. A couple of years later, Tress came to visit us in New York when I was on Broadway. We were driving one evening in my Volkswagen, when suddenly my mother said to me: “I know why your wife hates me! It’s because she is having an affair with Gore Vidal.”

I slammed on the brakes.

“Get out of the fucking car.”

There were tears and apologies, but I still dropped her at the corner of Eighteenth Street and Fifth Avenue. Joanne was absolutely aghast that I would throw a sick woman out of my car. Joanne has always wondered why I didn’t just roar with laughter and say, “Mom, honestly, an affair? Such a thing is manifestly impossible.” I didn’t see it that way; she insulted my wife.

My mother was quite a dame. She had an internal drummer and that drummer was not affected by any other rhythms; there was a song going on with her and she stuck to it. If she thought something was going on in a certain way, then that’s the way it was. It didn’t make any difference what actually happened; to her, it wouldn’t change. And I didn’t speak to my mother again for fifteen years.

Was it all because of what she said about Joanne? No, not really, but it was such a relief to use that as an excuse to escape from her. She represented all my leaden luggage, the parts of myself that I didn’t like. That sense of subservience, uncertainty, not knowing where the next attack was coming from or what the reason for it might be.

After that night in Manhattan, it took a decade and a half for my brother, Arthur, to engineer an armistice. He booked her on a flight to LA, picked her up at LAX, and drove her up to our beach house in Malibu. And since she figured this was going to be uncomfortable, she made it uncomfortable for everyone. Not surprising that the first moments of our truce began with an attack on my flank.

“Hello,” she said when she walked in.

“Hi, Mom,” I said, “it’s been a long time.” I kissed her on both cheeks.

“What a wonderful house!” she went on. “Is that the beach out there? You can just sit there and watch the waves come in? Wonderful.”

I told her she was right on all counts.

“Are you working? Is the work good? How terrible it must be to be involved in a rotten industry that settles itself in violence and profanity and sex and gore. Oh, what you could do if you only tried!”

And this was all in the first five minutes.

I don’t know if she had decided to say that in advance, but I’m sure images of Sodom and Gomorrah were running through her mind. She acted oblivious to what was going on around her with her family, her two grown children engineering a rapprochement, struggling to find something affirmative in this meeting. Tress was not about to let that happen.

We’d never see each other again on a regular basis until my mom became quite ill and I’d visit her a few times. It was important for me to show up, though there was never any change of feelings.

When I think about it, I never really spoke to my mother for not just fifteen years, but for fifty years. I was too wary. I didn’t respect her perceptions of things—although I didn’t necessarily respect my own.

We never discussed our rift and she never apologized.



JOANNE WOODWARD

Tress absolutely adored Paul and was probably never comfortable with the fact that he got married, either to Jackie or me. I don’t recall her being affectionate with any of the grandchildren, but the funny thing was, when we finally went to her house, there were all sorts of pictures of us all over the place. That rupture must have been terribly painful for her because it was just at the time of Paul’s greatest success and

he hated the fact that she basked in the limelight. I don't know why. It's so sad. Why shouldn't she?

LUCILLE AND BABETTE NEWMAN

LUCILLE: In all those years that Paul wasn't talking to Tress, he took care of her. He did it through Arthur or more directly in some way. She didn't need financial support.

BABETTE: She always claimed she was a millionaire.

LUCILLE: She was. She was a marvel at stocks. But Paul was still helping. Through Arthur, he was always conscious of what was going on with her every minute, and would try to get her to move to California.

Whenever anyone used to ask me to describe how specific parts I played came into being, I gave the same answer: I simply followed instructions. The screenwriters have a guy leaning against a fence post, being sexy and saying sexy things? It's all from the character on the page and the actor's ability to interpret that character. There's nothing organic about it. If someone writes about a ne'er-do-well who drinks, fights guys, and is really successful with women, with a lot of scalps on his pole, it's not because the actor has these things. Someone wrote about the scalps; only the character has them.



TRESS NEWMAN IN MALIBU, IN AN UNDATED
PHOTO

Newman as a sexual image is something invented and is in the mind of the writer, which I simply interpret. It's like the accountant who goes to work in the morning and doesn't see his job as glamorous. It's possible for an actor to have a job that seems very glamorous to someone on the outside, and even be excited about the machinery he went through to create the part, but the work to the actor is sometimes no more interesting than the interesting parts of accounting. It's all just a process.

WALON GREEN WAS A NOTED SCREENWRITER AND CLOSE
FRIEND OF PAUL'S.

I remember Paul said he always had misgivings about taking on any part, doubts about his ability to find the role, mold it and craft it. Except for Fast Eddie Felson in *The Hustler*. It was the only script in his life where he read the first five pages and knew it was dead right for him. He knew he had to play it and felt it immediately—he was the guy.

WARREN COWAN

Shortly after *The Hustler* had opened, Paul phoned me one night and asked me to meet him for a beer at the Daisy, which was then the hottest see-and-be-seen restaurant in Beverly Hills. When I got there, Paul was in back shooting pool, which he truly enjoyed playing. We met at the bar and after we ordered, some guy came staggering over, a little smashed. “Mr. Newman,” he said, “I saw *The Hustler* three times. And I just watched you play in the other room. And I have to tell you, Mr. Newman, it’s one of the great disappointments in my life. ”

FRANCES WOODWARD WAS JOANNE WOODWARD'S
STEPMOTHER. JOANNE'S FATHER, WADE WOODWARD, WORKED
AS AN EXECUTIVE FOR CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS FOR TWENTY
YEARS.

Just before *The Hustler* was made, we went to Paul and Joanne's Park Avenue apartment, the one that had a pool table in the dining room. Wade was very good at pool, because when you're a book man, all the publisher men would go to the local pool hall and play until it was time to meet with the local board of education.

So Wade and Paul had some Scotch, then dinner, and afterwards played pool for two dollars on the corner. When Wade won Paul's two-dollar bill, Paul would complain, "Dad, that's a dirty thing to do—drink my whiskey, eat my food, and then take my money!" There was a lovely flow between them; Paul was very dear to Wade.

They once took a train together from New York to California. They each had a bottle of Scotch when they left Pennsylvania Station; they drank Wade's Scotch first, then they drank Paul's. And then the conductor found them another bottle somewhere. Joanne, who was on the train with them, got disgusted and went to bed.

The next day, everyone had to change trains in Chicago; Wade and Paul were feeling pretty bad, and Joanne made her daddy go shopping with her while they waited for the connection. Meanwhile, Paul also went out and bought Wade a gift, one of those face masks you freeze to help relieve a hangover. Wade loved it.



PIPER LAURIE WAS NOMINATED FOR AN ACADEMY AWARD
FOR BEST ACTRESS FOR HER ROLE AS PAUL NEWMAN'S DOOMED
LOVER IN *THE HUSTLER*.

Paul always used to say: "What am I doing this for? I don't know why I'm acting. I really want to be a carpenter." I have

no idea whether he was actually good at making things with his hands or not, but this was his regular refrain.

Of course, I had a crush on him at a certain level (even though I was in love with someone else then). It was a crush I could never act on; he was supposedly happily married and Joanne, who I'd met, was carrying their second child. The first time Paul and I shook hands—it was in our rehearsal hall on the first day—I couldn't look at him. I went through that thing that a lot of women go through when they meet Paul. The eyes, those brilliant clear eyes, the beautiful face. There is a kind of openness, some sort of special quality he projects. It took about two weeks, and only then, out of his generosity and naturalness, was I able to deal with him as just another actor.

Paul was also unfazed by our nude scene which happened before people were doing nude scenes. We were supposed to wake up in my bed, and I had it in my head that I was supposed to be naked, and if I wore some sort of contraption to keep myself modest, it would interfere with the work; it would make me feel dishonest. I went to our director, Bob Rossen, and told him I was going to play it with nothing on from the waist up—and, of course, I forewarned Paul so he wouldn't be surprised. Rossen was upset about it. What we finally did was shoot the scene two ways—naked for the European market, and with me wearing a slip for America.

Years later, after moving out of New York, I phoned Paul and Joanne to tell them I was getting married. He said something to me on the phone, and I still don't know whether he was joking. "Enjoy it," he said, "because it may not last."

I remember the words precisely because I didn't know how to take it.

MARTIN RITT FORMED A PRODUCTION COMPANY WITH
PAUL AND DIRECTED *HUD* IN 1962.

When the screenwriters Irving Ravetch and his wife, Harriet Frank, first worked at MGM, Clark Gable had been in several films in which for the first half of the film he was an incredible shitheel and in the second half some girl, or Spencer Tracy, or God, converted him. The Ravetches had the notion that they'd like to take a character like that, a man of unbridled appetites, and carry him through to his logical conclusion. We philosophically all agreed that we should make a serious film about that kind of man rather than one of those silly fucking movies that always used to get made.

When I got their script for *Hud* (which they'd adapted from a Larry McMurtry novel), I loved it. Hud is a man determined to win, even at the expense of everyone else in his life. I knew I had to get an actor so attractive that I could hook the audience regardless. And so I took it to Paul, who had really then just become a star. He was noncommittal. And his agents at MCA took the position "The part's a shitheel; why do you want to use a star for *that*?" In those days, it was considered ridiculous to think that an actor like Paul Newman, just emerging into stardom, would ever play a shitheel.

I liked Paul from our time making *The Long, Hot Summer*, and thought if I went into business with him, I could get *Hud* financed. Without Paul, I wouldn't have gotten it made.

And then I had to fight to get *Paul* to even do the picture.

Paul had flown to Israel to shoot *Exodus* for Otto Preminger, and I literally followed him there. I persisted. He wasn't as sure of the material as I was. I think he may have also had some doubts about me—I was never an "in" director with the intellectuals.

Paul finally agreed, and we ended up making three-picture deals with both Paramount and Columbia—we each would do two pictures out of the three, including at least one together (though we never did make any for Columbia).

We shot *Hud* in Texas in a small town called Claude, and based ourselves near Amarillo (a town where they'd recently been burning books from the local library). But the next thing we knew, all these young girls started pouring into our motel, camping out at Paul's door. It was incredible to watch and it became clear then that that's what it was all about with him. Paul finally just kept his door locked. He's always been a very private man.

When we made *Long, Hot Summer*, Paul wasn't aware of his impact. He still looked at himself as Little Paul Newman from Shaker Heights. After *Hud* opened, Paul became this incredible sex object; it hit him like a ton of bricks. When we took *Hud* to the Venice Film Festival, we were all invited to a big reception. Though I was the director and Paul was the star, it didn't take twenty seconds before we were separated and everyone there, man and woman alike, descended on Paul. It was entirely sexual. I was left alone standing in the corner.

How did Paul come to have that shambling walk, that iconic pose on all the *Hud* posters of him staring straight ahead, one hand on a cocked hip, the other one holding a cigarette? He actually worked all those things out by himself. These were the kind of details that he was always so concerned with in every picture he made. All I had to do was let him find it.



ROBERT WEBBER WAS A VETERAN TELEVISION AND
MOVIE CHARACTER ACTOR WHO MADE FILMS WITH JOANNE
AND PAUL, BOTH OF WHOM HE FIRST BEFRIENDED IN THE EARLY
1950S.

Paul turned *Hud* around so that the audience loved him. He became the God of the piece instead of the devil. Paul was unable then to let an audience dislike him because of his image of himself. Something Marty Ritt taught me: “The moment you get a set image of yourself, you’re finished as an actor, because you’re protecting that image, not playing the character.” One could say, “Well, a director is the person who should shape a performance.” True, but not when the actor is a superstar.



PATRICIA NEAL HAD AN ILLUSTRIOUS HOLLYWOOD
CAREER FOR MORE THAN THREE DECADES; SHE WON THE
OSCAR FOR BEST ACTRESS IN *HUD*.

I think I was at the Actors Studio the first day Lee Strasberg taught; I sat listening to him, looked to my right, and all of a sudden here was this fabulous boy and he was all I could look at. I’d never heard of him, never seen him before, never anything. I could only stare at this beautiful boy with those blue eyes and that great profile. I mean, he was staggering. That was my first impression of Paul Newman: the beauty of the world.

Paul was a very good man to work with; he was busy being that character, Hud, who is a horror. I don’t know if Paul still does that, becoming the character he plays when he works, but he was hysterical during the shooting. In the script, Hud and his young nephew, who was played by Brandon deWilde,

go to town and do things. And Paul's relationship offscreen with Brandon was just like in the film. Now don't take my word for it, but I think I'm right: they'd go out every night, get drunk, take women. Really. He was making it work, and he's a very clever man.

I was riding my exercise bike this morning, just running the channels, and there was *Hombre*, a film I made with Marty Ritt, based on an Elmore Leonard novel, that attempted to depict anti-Indian racism in the Old West. I watched about fifteen minutes on the TV—but I can't look at my work in that picture without disparaging it.

There on the screen is this goddamn movie star with blue eyes playing a half Apache. And I remembered how when we started the film, it just wouldn't come together for me. I went out alone to a reservation in New Mexico, and I hired this Indian bureau agent to show me around. We drove out for breakfast, and on the way we passed a little general store; on the porch was a man from a local tribe with his arms crossed, standing on one foot, with his other heel hooked over the top of the windowsill.

A couple hours later, after we finished our meal with a local family, we headed back and drove past that general store again. The man on the porch hadn't moved an inch, still on one leg, heel still hooked over the ledge. I ended up taking my whole character from that man—the sense that there was no reason for him to move, so he didn't. A sense of surety and no use of motion. Maybe it worked on the screen when *Hombre* first came out, though it certainly didn't do very much for me.

If I was playing that part now, I'd approach it differently. I think I'd make that immovable presence the core of the character, but not in such an obvious way. And I would desperately fight to wear brown contact lenses. The blue eyes just destroyed everything.

We filmed most of *Hombre* in southern Arizona, but while we were there, the winds blew so strong, there were times you could barely walk. We

often couldn't shoot on our mountain-reservation location, and we ended up going forty-two days over schedule. I spent most of my time waiting around, reading about thirty books and taking tennis lessons at a nearby club; there was a pretty good pro there—but just as important, he was an incredible beer drinker.

To break up the routine, I convinced my film-crew driver to let me get behind the wheel of our rented Cadillac. There was this wonderful, undulating gravel road from our actual location back to town. I drove it rather fast, and ended up cruising along many of the back roads. It didn't hurt that the crew driver had installed an ice case filled with beer in the trunk.

The day I flew home, my very even-tempered, gentlemanly driver shook my hand at the airport and said, "Mr. Newman, I'd like to thank you for one thing."

"What's that?"

"Before you got here, my reflexes were set for fifty miles per hour, and now they're set for a hundred and five. And I feel really terrific."

There was a lot of camaraderie on that set. Richard Boone, who played the villain, would race me every day to our cars parked just off the set and try to leave first—not because we were anxious to get out of there, but because whoever left second was literally left in the swirling dust that the first car would kick up and leave behind. So much of it, in fact, that it sometimes took four or five minutes before you could see well enough to drive out. I wasn't going to let that happen; I started to spike Boone's car to the ground, tie it to a hook, even steal his keys. In all the weeks we were on location, he never beat me, not once.

Sean Connery, then at the peak of his 007 fame, came out to visit his wife, Diane Cilento, who was cast as the female lead. We decided to have a dinner for them at the Tack Room, which back then was a very famous restaurant in Tucson. It had these long wooden tables, and they'd put out these plates of terribly hot peppers that would put a flame in your mouth. Even if you bit off just a sliver, it would bring tears to your eyes and clear out your sinuses for a month.

Sean was at one end of the table, I was at the other, when I saw him grab a big handful of these peppers, pop them in his mouth, and start to chew. It all happened so quickly that I was immobilized. I waited for the top of his head to lift off his neck two or three inches, separate from his ears, and for his chair to fall over backwards while he ran for a swimming pool to submerge the fire.

But nothing happened.

Sean just kept speaking normally through this onslaught of heat. And I stared at him with the sort of reverence and admiration that I might reserve for a bullfighter or kamikaze pilot. I'd never been so awed; it was spiritual. I don't remember whether I ever had the chance to tell Sean, but I came to regard him as one of the toughest men on the face of the earth.

STUART ROSENBERG WAS A HIGHLY REGARDED
TELEVISION DIRECTOR WHEN HE PITCHED THE *COOL HAND LUKE*
SCRIPT TO PAUL; IT WOULD BE THE FIRST OF FOUR FEATURES
THEY MADE, THE OTHERS BEING *WUSA*, *POCKET MONEY*, AND *THE*
DROWNING POOL.

Back in 1967, there were basically two movie stars in the world: Steve McQueen and Paul Newman. And I decided Paul would be perfect to play Luke.

I called his agent, arranged a meeting, and next thing I knew, we were talking in Paul's yard on Whittier here in Beverly Hills. I was very impressed because he'd read the script, read the original novel, and his intelligence was very impressive. There was no bullshit. And although I had no real track record as a feature film director, he committed to the film because he liked the character.

We put together a company that was like a kind of Group Theatre. Every one of those kids we cast in the chain gang—

Dennis Hopper, Joe Don Baker, Ralph Waite, Harry Dean Stanton, Wayne Rogers—eventually made it. And Paul was everyone’s favorite. Not a superstar, but a guy in the trenches working. It was a very physical picture; the actors had to get out on the road, cut grass, lay tar.

The way it was written, the other prisoners show their respect for Luke by giving him space and moving to the other side of the barracks when he discovers that his mother has died. Luke was not the sort of character who would make a speech in her honor, but we were worried the audience would feel cheated if he didn’t pay some sort of tribute.

It was never in the script. It came up during a rehearsal. A few days earlier, I’d heard Harry Dean Stanton, with his long, bony face, singing this irreverent song around the campfire one night. Stuart heard it, too. “Get yourself a plastic Jesus,” was the lyric I remembered.

STUART ROSENBERG

The problem was Paul’s not a musician. And he had to quickly learn three things: how to play the chords on the banjo, sing the song, and do the scene. I also wanted it to be the first time on film that people really saw Paul Newman weep. But Paul is such an incredible professional, and on the afternoon we were going to shoot, he invited me into his dressing room and played the song for me. I said to myself, “He’s doing it too well!” I wanted more ragged edges from him.

Just as we were ready to go, I thought I needed to upset Paul a little to get what I wanted. Before he hit the first chord,

I stopped everything and said, “Paul, sorry, we’ve got a copyright problem with the song. You’re going to have to reverse the first and second lines.”

“Oh, Christ, after all this fucking work—goddamn!”

I told the camera operator to start rolling, we hit the clapper, and Paul just began. I let him go on a little but then yelled “Cut!”—though I’d prearranged with the operator to keep going.

“Paul, I think moving things around is really screwing things up, I think maybe you should—” He cut me off and just started to sing. I motioned to him to just keep going. He stopped, started again, and the tears started to come down. It was fucking brilliant.

I know people felt it was very emotional, very moving. But I would have done the whole thing much better in the privacy of my bathroom. I don’t mind standing up and singing in front of people, but if you heard me sing, you wouldn’t ask me to do it. I was really unhappy with the first takes, and I asked Stuart to try a few more.

“No,” he said. “We’ve got it, let’s go.”

I practically begged him. “Jesus Christ, please don’t do that!”

Finally, we maybe tried it three or four more times under terrible pressure of time; it wasn’t getting any better.

I really don’t know about that weeping.

STUART ROSENBERG

For a lot of performers, acting is a way of dealing with some sort of severe problem, mastering personal demons. Paul is an exceedingly inhibited person, and painfully shy. When he’d

walk away from a spot on the soundstage, it was wet. I've never seen anyone perspire so much. He fights all the time, fights all of his nervous qualities. But a strange thing happens when you fight like that and win. There's an intensity that comes out, even in the throwaway moments, because you're working so hard against the barrier for control.

What makes Paul so terribly interesting as an actor is there is always this desperation to win that battle. Whenever I used to talk with him about what sensation he gets from his auto racing, it was never about the breaking loose, the soaring feeling, freedom, any of that. It's the balance between a machine that is on the edge of being out of control and the mastery in controlling it at its extreme.



GEORGE ROY HILL

The sultry, hip-slinging, brooding American male had always been Paul's persona onscreen. But that wasn't Paul. And when he finally had a chance to shed it, he found such joy.

He started out wanting to play Sundance, not Butch. In fact, he was signed to play Sundance; Steve McQueen was going to play Butch. Paul and John Foreman [Paul's producing partner] came over to my house and started talking about the movie. Later that day, Freddie Fields, Paul's agent, called.

"Gee, you made quite an impression on Paul," he said. "Now, who do we get to play Butch?"

"Paul."

There was a long silence on the other end of the phone.

"You've got it wrong," Freddie said. "You mean Sundance."

"No, I mean Butch."

“Did Paul agree to that?”

“Unless I just had the most fucked-up conversation I ever had, I think he agreed to it.”

Paul eventually did agree, but he kept saying how very uncomfortable he was playing “comedy.” He thought he’d only be comfortable in Sundance-type roles—the silent, glowering, sexual male who was quick on the trigger. McQueen, who was a much more dour character than Paul, would’ve been a good Sundance, but he only wanted to play Butch.

Paul was very, very nervous when we started shooting. The very first day, we did the scene where the train was stopped by Paul and Redford’s gang, and Paul was supposed to cajole the Wells Fargo agent out of the mail car before they blew up the safe. Paul called out the character’s name a couple of times and suddenly—I don’t know whether he lost confidence in me or himself or in the script—but Paul was trying to make it funny. I kept telling him he had no responsibility to make it funny, that was up to Bill Goldman, the screenwriter; the screenwriter writes funny situations and if you play it straight, it can strike us as humorous. It’s not a joke, (and Paul tells terrible jokes, they’re really a put-off), and the minute you try for comedy, you’re going to lose it.



PAUL AND STEVE MCQUEEN PLAYING POOL IN THE EARLY
1960s

Once he saw it in rushes—and saw he actually didn't have to make it funny—Paul seemed relieved. And I was relieved, too, because I wasn't going to have to fight with him during the whole course of the picture (though fighting with Paul is kind of fun, anyway). He never said another word about it and played it beautifully.

During the whole shooting, I kept trying to keep the laughs out of it. When we had our first preview in San Francisco, I was actually very upset because the audience laughed so hard. I guess I had done a kind of con job on myself.

LINDA FOREMAN, ACTRESS, AND WIFE OF PAUL'S
BUSINESS PARTNER AT NEWMAN-FOREMAN, JOHN FOREMAN.

John, Paul, Joanne, and I went to see a rough cut of *Butch Cassidy* at Fox. Paul made popcorn, brought some beer, and we all marched into the screening room. George Hill is already there, as are the producers, Dick Zanuck and David Brown.

We're sitting there, hooting, laughing, and popping the tops off beer bottles. At the end of the picture, we turn around and everyone else is gone. John runs down the hallway to find them; they were angry, and one of them says, "When there is a screening, I come to work, I don't come to hear people eat popcorn, laugh, and drink beer."

Well, the next day, Joanne calls Dick Zanuck, who immediately picks up the phone because it's Joanne Woodward. "When my husband and John Foreman make a film," she says, "they can come to a screening and do whatever they want. And if you don't like it, you can go fuck yourself."

Paul thought that was just terrific.



STEWART STERN AND GEORGE ROY HILL

ss: In *Butch*, when you first see Paul on the bicycle saying, "You're mine, you're mine, you're mine"—was that in the script?

GRH: It was in the script, and I remember it very well because that's my voice.

ss: It is?

GRH: Yeah, Paul couldn't do it. "You're mine!" You needed the vibrato in it. Finally we were in dubbing and he said, "Look, I can't do that—I can't do it. Why don't you do it?"



JOHN FOREMAN

Every director Paul had worked with turned down *Butch Cassidy*: Marty Ritt, Stuart Rosenberg, Bobby Wise—everyone. I was desperate. I suggested George Roy Hill, who hadn't gotten another job since he made *Thoroughly Modern Millie* with Julie Andrews a couple years before.

Paul, at first, turned down George; he said George had once treated Joanne badly, firing her off some Kraft cheese TV program two decades ago. Paul had hated him ever since. I told Paul we had to go see him anyway, that I didn't know who else to get.

So it is arranged. We're in New York and we go to George Roy Hill's house in the snow. No taxis anywhere. (This is as compared to a George Roy Hill coming to see the star.) We get there, pick the snow off our coats, and before those coats are even hung up, Paul says to George, "Well, how do you see this picture?"

"It's a love affair between two men," he replies. And Paul and George fall into each other's arms and have loved each other ever since.

Incidentally, 20th Century-Fox, in the person of Dick Zanuck—who now lists *Butch Cassidy and the Sundance Kid* as one of his credits—wanted Warren Beatty to play opposite Paul. Beatty said he wouldn't meet with George Roy Hill until he received a firm offer for the role. And George said he would not meet with Warren Beatty if there *was* a firm offer. No meeting ever occurred.



PAUL ADJUSTS HIS BROTHER ARTHUR'S WIG ON THE SET OF *THE OUTRAGE*
IN 1963

GEORGE ROY HILL

Redford always hated to talk through a scene before shooting. His eyes would roll back in his head, because Paul wanted to discuss everything. Redford's there saying, "Can we do it? Can we just do it?" while Paul's going, "Wait a minute—I've got to get this straight." Then what Paul would do with the scene would have no relationship to what we'd been talking about for the last half hour.

I likened Paul to a Chinese puzzle, the type where there's that one last piece you had to slip in somewhere in its own

mysterious way. I'd just keep talking in the hopes that something would come out of my mouth that he could latch on to. And then he would suddenly say, "Ahh, that's right! That's what I mean," and he'd go play the scene. Of course, there was no connection between what I said and what he did. But it was as if the last piece of the Chinese puzzle just somehow slid into place.

JOHN FOREMAN

I remember Joanne once saying to me: "When you're trying to imagine what's in Paul's head—if you think he's thinking something, he's not always thinking something."

GEORGE ROY HILL

I think there was an opportunity for Redford and Paul to form a close relationship, but it never came about. They did friendly things together, but there's a quality of reserve in both men that has them basically uncomfortable with each other, except in a work situation where they obviously get along very well. They respect each other enormously.

One of the things that irritated Paul about Bob was his being late. Years later, in fact, when we were making *The Sting*, Paul and I sat down with Bob and told him his being late to the set was upsetting all of us. He was on time from that point onwards.

As far as I'm concerned, punctuality is the courtesy of kings.

Back when we were filming *Cat on a Hot Tin Roof*, Elizabeth Taylor was half an hour late to the set; I got terrified that her behavior was going to lead the picture—and my whole career—out the window. As we were sitting there waiting for her, I looked at my watch and announced, “I’ll be back in half an hour.” So I left and it’s really the most important thing I did on that movie—I had plucked up courage enough in a protest of conscience to show that what Liz had done was not professional. You don’t, because you’re a star, keep people just sitting around a table waiting for you to show up. It was like Iraq—you don’t come in and invade a country without having to pay some kind of penalty.

One of the prerequisites for anybody who is going to be friendly with me is that they always have to be dependable.

Redford and I decided we were really going to get some time together. We’d do some fishing, really talk about ourselves, the movie business, whatever. We went out on Bob’s houseboat on Lake Powell, south of Provo, and started exploring.

Now, Powell is a pretty lake with thousands of miles of beautiful coastline and all these endless canyons that branch off the periphery of the lake. We anchored at one of these out-of-the-way coves and then set out in the Boston Whaler we had tethered to catch some dinner. The plan was to hook the fish, cook the fish, have some corn on the cob and beefsteak tomatoes, sit around over a six-pack and shoot the shit.

Well, the fact is we didn’t catch much of anything. We had to sail over to the commissary, buy some fish to cook from them—which was pretty funny. Still, dusk was happening, the sun was starting to set, and it would be just perfect for us. But as we approached the cove where Bob’s houseboat was anchored, we started to hear music. And as we approached, we saw there was another houseboat anchored right next to ours; it was blasting “Raindrops Keep Falling on My Head” from outdoor speakers, just blaring across this idyllic spot. We could see these four or five beatific faces leaning over the gunnel, smiling, just ready to party. They were ready to sing songs for us, bring us comfort and solace, keep the music going until

midnight. These people didn't get it. If we wanted company, we would have docked in the marina.

Redford and I just looked at each other. We thought maybe if we just acted rude or disinterested, they'd simply go away. Well, they didn't. So we had to lift anchor, tie the Whaler back onto the houseboat, and find someplace to hide. We stopped at another cove about forty-five minutes later.

By that time, both Bob and I were in foul moods.



ROBERT ALTMAN

I invited Paul to lunch in Westwood. I sent down and got a six-pack of beer, two-hundred-dollar tins of beluga caviar, a can opener, and a spoon, and I said, "Here's your lunch." He said, "Altman, I don't understand your movie at all but you've sure got class. Let's do it."

Quintet was a fairy tale. What it required was Paul's persona, so the audience could imbue it with its attitudes. And Paul embraced that. He didn't say, "Well, I'd better have a piece of gum to chew" or "I should have a funnier line." He just played that straight cipher and accepted everything I asked of him.

Newman never asked questions that I had to answer. He asked questions that I couldn't answer. He perfectly accepted my nonanswer. I'd say, "I don't know," and he knew I had given him all the information I had. I think Paul believed me, that's all. Some actors are a pain in the ass to work with. They say, "What are you directing the picture for? Aren't you supposed to know?" Paul never did that.

There's an approach to this kind of collaborative art, and Paul—generously and with anticipation—fit right into it. He

just gave himself to it completely.

Unfortunately, the picture didn't work—I don't think it would have worked under any circumstances. It's a very specialized film. A mass audience is not going to sit through it. Princess Grace said to the board at Fox, "How dare you allow my good friend and wonderful actor Paul Newman to be in such an atrocious Robert Altman film?" And Allan Ladd Jr., who had heard a lot of complaints about the film, just jumped up and said "Oh, fuck you," and walked out.

I really liked that film.

Sometimes you don't know who to root for when you're reading a screenplay. In *The Color of Money* maybe the actual progression of the people from point A to B isn't that strong, but I'll tell you these are pretty interesting people, and they use language and images in a different way than I've seen before. That's the hook. That's what's going to keep people interested. So fuck the plot. You hope the audience won't be concerned about what's going to happen they'll be so fascinated by the how of it. That's why *The Glass Menagerie* works, because the emotion of it works, not the story, not the logic, not the people going from one point to another.

As an actor, *The Verdict*, of course was one of the best for me. I never had to ask myself to do anything in that picture, never had to call upon any reserves. It was always right there. I never prepared for anything, never had to go off in a corner, it was there immediately. It was wonderful.

It's just been a slow evolution. I started out as an emotional republican, and now I've turned into someone who's always amazed at how available the emotion is. I have to sit on it more than I have to really work to get at it. It's like an open sore now.

TOM CRUISE PLAYED NEWMAN'S BRASH PROTÉGÉ IN *THE
COLOR OF MONEY*.

The Verdict. I've never seen him work the way he did in *The Verdict*. The low-angle shot on the phone when he'd lost a witness, the vulnerability and the fear, and the trying to control it was so rich.



STEWART STERN

The Verdict was absolutely his essence. When he's working on a scene or even just reading around the coffee table and starts feeling his way into a role and I see one experience after another crowding themselves into his eyes, I don't know how he does it. I don't know how any actor does it, when it really happens that far inside.



ROBERT ALTMAN

I like the exposure that he gave of himself in *The Verdict*. That's what I liked. As an actor, when he does that certain thing, he's very, very good. When he opens up, when he shows you his pink places, that's when you can say, "There's a real soul, a real flesh-and-blood somebody throbbing in there."



—≡ XI ≡—

In 1969 Paul Newman appeared in a film called *Winning* with Joanne Woodward and Robert Wagner. It would ignite a serious passion for auto racing that would last the rest of his life. He became an accomplished driver who won his final race at Lime Rock Park in September of 2007.

I think the IRS has audited me every year since 1972, and the biggest bone of contention has to do with my automobile racing and whether it is a vocation or an avocation. My longtime lawyer, Irving Axelrod (also known as Irving the Ax), had to go down to the IRS on many occasions to argue the case, that it was anything but an avocation for me.

“You don’t understand the psychology of racing,” Irving told them. “Mr. Newman’s career had hit the skids. He was a down-and-outer. And it was determined by his battlefield management plan organization that he needed to improve his image. At which point it was decided, in concert with his management crew, that Mr. Newman should take up auto racing and become one of those macho guys that get behind the wheel and risk their lives. So he did it and it worked.

“Mr. Newman is now on the front page of many newspapers. He has become known as a racer and won four national championships. He was this elderly fellow in a young man’s sport—and got a lot of mileage out of that.”

But this still did not convince the IRS that it was an accurate portrayal. So Irving added one other key piece of evidence.

“You know those big seat belts they use in race cars? Those are actually to keep Mr. Newman from leaving the car, no matter what. Even if he wants

to desperately claw his way out, the reason they strap him in is so he can't escape." And I guess to some extent they finally bought it.

JIM "FITZY" FITZGERALD WAS A CHAMPION AUTO
RACER AND MEMBER OF THE NEWMAN-SHARP RACING TEAM.

I met Paul in 1972 at Road Atlanta. Paul was going to race in a Datsun 510, and I was asked to show him the track. I took him around in a Nissan 240B and we went around and around. He couldn't get enough. "Show me more," he kept saying. "Do it again!" And when we were done he says to me, "Do you have a cooler?"

"Oddly enough, yeah."

"Well, if you have the cooler, I have the beer."

We ended up at the Holiday Inn across from the track, with connecting rooms, and stayed for ten days. We'd come back from the track, open the beers, make some popcorn, and collect some newspapers to keep the smell from getting out from under the door. Finally, Paul said he'd just have to call it a night so he could do some script study.

But wouldn't you know it, it wasn't long before I'd hear a scratching noise on my door. It would be Paul.

"Screw the script study. Let's get on with it!"

So that sort of started the development of our friendship.

The night before one of our races at the Mid-Ohio track, Paul and I had a couple of beers, ate dinner, and went strolling afterwards around our motel. You could tell what kind of mood he was in, because he wanted to walk arm in arm. "You're a pretty lucky guy," Paul said to me. "Everybody likes you."

“Well, I’m not sure about everybody, but I do get along with folks.”

“There are people who wouldn’t mind putting a spear right through me,” Paul said. “Most people don’t like me.”

I told him he was full of shit, but he wouldn’t take it any further. I thought to myself: Is this why Paul isn’t more outgoing? Is this why I never see him let anyone get really close to him? We all go through depressive cycles, I know, thinking the world doesn’t like us, but I wondered, Jesus! Does Paul really feel this way?

I would very often stay at his house in Westport, and spent a lot of time there with his family. I’d kid him about Joanne, about what a lucky mucker he really was.

“She’s not perfect all the time. We’ve had our problems. It hasn’t all been a bed of roses.”

Again, that’s as far as Paul wanted to go.



Since the time I was a kid, getting a straight story has been difficult for me, and it keeps getting increasingly difficult. I’ve been suspicious all my life.

My team was at the 1986 SCCA runoffs in Atlanta, and I think I qualified over Fitzzy by over a second, and I had a twelve- or thirteen-second lead over him for the championship. But coming out of the seven turn, my car just lugged. I started to lose second gear and I couldn’t get it to hold. Fitzzy kept eating my lead. We came out of the five, and he was right on my tail and stayed there, but he didn’t go around me. I knew he had me, but he didn’t pass. Coming down the straightaway, I realized and said to myself: “That fucker has instructions.”

If someone had just said, “Hey, Paul, don’t worry about the win. Fitzzy won’t beat you no matter what happens as long as your car’s still running.” Then I would have said okay, fine. I paid for the team. Since I had

unqualified Fitzzy and outrun him, and this was simply a gear-box failure, I would have said, “Well, I’ll take this. I won’t like it very much, but I understand.”

JIM FITZGERALD

There weren’t instructions. But the understanding on our team is that Paul is our flagship.

Afterwards, some of my folks denied what happened, waffled, and actually told me, “Well, you could have just pulled ahead.” But I said, “No, I couldn’t even shift the fucking car.”

Fitzzy was a top driver, the winningest in SCCA history, a member of my racing team, and one of my dearest friends. And while no one pays much attention to superstition these days, it’s worth noting that the night before his death, Fitzzy ordered a glass of sambuca to go with his after-dinner coffee. When it came to the table, there were four coffee beans floating on top. Problem is, it’s supposed to be bad luck to drink sambuca that contains an even number of coffee beans. It’s like walking under a ladder.

We were in St. Petersburg in 1987 for the final Trans Am SCCA race of the season. At sixty-five, Fitzzy was the oldest racer on the circuit. His mood, the next day, at the time of the race, was festive.

I saw the wreck. It happened on the third lap. He’d backed into a wall. There wasn’t any fire, there wasn’t even the kind of damage that would give a driver a bad headache. He should’ve been able to get out of the car and walk away. So when one of the crew came over to the pit and told us Fitzzy was hurt, that an ambulance was coming, and that we should all get over to the wreck, I had no idea what was going on.

One of our team said to me, “I’m not sure he wasn’t hurt before he hit the wall, because his head seemed down.”

“What do you mean?”

“When I saw him come around that last turn, his head was slumping forward.” Another crew member told me Fitzy wasn’t moving and it wasn’t looking good. He wasn’t alive by the time he reached the hospital.

All that I could figure was that Fitzy must have had a stroke in the instant he came around that last turn. At that point, he became just a passenger in an automobile. Since his body would have already been limp when he hit the wall, he offered no resistance to the crash and broke his neck.

The race, of course, had stopped. There was much discussion about what to do, particularly among my crew. All the drivers sat in their cars waiting for a decision, myself included. When the officials decided to restart, our crew wanted to pull our car off the track.

“I don’t think that’s what Fitzy would have wanted,” I told them. “He’d want me to finish this race.”

You feel a lot of things at a time like that, including mad and angry. You can actually drive very well when you’re angry, as long as you don’t make any mistakes. But when all the racers got ready to get going again, I couldn’t fire up my car. I must have done something stupid, left one fuel pump on when I thought I’d turned everything off, and one of the cylinders must have flooded with gasoline.

The ignominy of not being able to start the car! We tried to give it a push, but it just locked up completely. To the crowd, it must have looked as though I was putting on some kind of act.

Fitzy represented to me all that’s best about racing. He had a fierceness of attack in an automobile that I envied, and he offered the kind of camaraderie that racing should be about. It’s not just all engine and speed, it’s not a business for me, not a career. It takes me away from people in film, takes me outside that fictional experience into something real and quite primitive. And it speaks to whatever competitive feeling I have that I can’t afford as an actor.

Fitzy was the best of all because he broke through my fastidious reserve. He laughed a lot, had a sense of humor and was very open and outgoing. He

was the fun side of racing, and we were buddies well met.

When I won the President's Cup, the highest award SCCA awards to its drivers, I had two important races pretty much back-to-back. In the first one, I started out conservatively, was involved in a shoving accident that I probably bore a lot of responsibility for. Well, it was not a great race. I finished third. I was disgusted with my performance.

But in the next one, I just took off. I was clicking a second a lap on everyone, and no one could catch me. I won by an incredible margin. It was a great race. The trouble is that if you're a racer, you can't just have one great race. That's what separates the great racers from the amateurs. Mario Andretti, who later raced for my team, doesn't have bad races. He may have races where the car doesn't work or a tire goes bad, but there's no such thing when he'll say, "Oh god, I drove badly." The great driver's excellence is always there, can be tapped each and every day. Someone like me has had some pretty good days but also some desperately bad ones.

It's never a matter of getting pissed off or not being cool. The best races that I drive, that a lot of racers drive, are the ones where you spin out early, you lose your position, and you have to go back and meticulously knock the other guys off, one by one. There's nothing to lose at that point, nothing at stake, nothing to protect. It all becomes a lark. Your mind is freed, your muscles are loose. You just don't give a shit.

I should say that I own the best racing team there is in the U.S. Mario is the most prestigious, revered, and legendary of all racers. But while I always thought it would be satisfying to replace driving with owning a team, well, it's just not the same as being in the car yourself.



ROBERT WAGNER

During the filming of *Winning*, Paul and I lived together at the Indianapolis Athletic Club. We were learning race-car

driving together; he loved it, you couldn't keep him out of a car. He'd be driving on the track all day.

Me, I couldn't wait to get out of those cars. I was scared, really frightened, by the goddamn things. I was glad to do it for the film, but wanted no further involvement, ever. Paul was really feeling something, getting something out of it. I thought, "Here's a man whose livelihood is himself and he's putting that at such great risk." He's out there—and he kept pushing it a little bit more each day. I don't know whether it was some sort of leveler for him, a way of dealing with thoughts of death that he never talked about. For these racing guys, it's always "the car" or "the element" or "the fuel" or "the mistake"—they never mention death. Yet in a split second, by someone else's error, a mechanical failure, nothing you have any control over, it can happen.

It seemed like a fucking ridiculous thing to do, but if you said "Don't drive" to Paul, he would have just done more of it. He didn't race because it made him more of a man; it was really just the speed, the risk, and all that. He was able to feel it—and I never got it.



I got into one of our stock cars for some practice laps just as it was starting to rain. As I'm going around, it started to rain harder, and I was sort of not paying attention, and I wasn't easing up the way I always do coming out of a turn. Suddenly I realized, "Boy, it's really coming down now, isn't it?" And as I go into the next turn, I go "Oops!" because the car doesn't do a thing. It doesn't shift direction at all when I steer, not a degree! Next thing I know, I'm looking at a fence. I busted a couple of ribs.



PAUL AND JOANNE IN AN UNDATED
PHOTO

There's a wonderful expression on the track: "What's the most frightening sound a driver can hear when he's racing a car? The sound of his own voice as he says "Oh, shit!"



GEORGE ROY HILL

Paul tries to give himself challenges. He wants to be alive, and the only way to stay alive is by defying death—literally in terms of the racing and figuratively in terms of his profession.

JAMES GOLDSTONE WAS HIRED BY UNIVERSAL IN 1968 TO DIRECT *WINNING*, ABOUT TWO RIVAL INDY 500 DRIVERS; HE LATER DIRECTED PAUL IN *WHEN TIME RAN OUT...*, A BIG-BUDGET DISASTER FILM.

When I was filming the racing shots for *Winning*, I'd put fourteen to eighteen cars on the track along with Paul. All the moves we wanted to do would be laid out in advance, and I would signal Paul with flags—one flag might mean pass the guy on the right, a different flag would mean pass the guy on the left, and so on. It was all well choreographed, but with the exception of a couple of responsible adults, we were working with ding-a-ling kids who drove their cars very fast. And Paul was falling in love with going fast and the personal challenge of coming out ahead.

I needed to get a series of shots of all the cars passing Paul for one segment of the race, so we started with Paul in the first position and all the kids behind him. By the time I got my footage from the camera car, Paul was where the script said he was supposed to be—in last place. So I put up a green flag indicating the shot was done, and Paul immediately put his foot into it. These kids were driving with a big star, and it had been impressed upon them, “We can't kill him—he's an amateur and you're pros.”

But Paul kept going faster, passing each one of those cars, and our safety guy is yelling at me, “I'm gonna put on the light to get them off the track—everyone's driving too fast.” Paul obeyed the stoplight and rolled into the pits in second position—he'd passed fourteen drivers. He had this wonderful sheepish grin on his face. He knew he wasn't

supposed to have done it, but he felt good—just like a little kid.

Maybe he was proving that it wasn't how much you got paid or whether you got an Academy Award, but was about who was in control and who has balls.

And now I will reveal a secret to the world.

After I was finished with the picture and was putting it together, I needed a couple of inserts to go into a montage just of Paul's eyes inside his racing goggles. Though I had very good close-ups of Paul driving at 120 miles per hour, I just had to get forty more seconds of the bridge of his nose and the eyes.

The problem was, Paul couldn't get out to LA from Connecticut right away. But I had an idea—why not use Paul's brother, Arthur, who was working as our production manager, for the shot? I'd gotten to know Arthur well during the shoot. I had him come over to my office and we put Paul's goggles on him. "Yeah, I think we can get away with that; we don't have to wait for Paul."

So we shot his eyes, and they get maybe three cuts in the final sequence. But those are Arthur Newman's eyes in *Winning*, not Paul Newman's famous blue eyes. The brothers don't really look alike, but they have the same eyes. We pulled it off.



MICHAEL BROCKMAN

Before I started acting class, Newman said to me, "You want to do something? Go prepare a scene for me." So I get a copy of *Sweet Bird of Youth*, and practice the monologue where Paul's character talks about his youth.

Not long afterwards, we were packing up after an event at the Orange County International track, when Paul asks me to jump in a race car and he just shoots down the straightaway. We jump out and Paul says, “Do the scene.” So, stiff as a board, I deliver the monologue at the end of the Orange County straightaway.

Paul laughs and says, “Too much Beethoven, and not enough Stravinsky.” I knew Beethoven, but not the other guy, so Paul went on. “You’re all in one key—get some life in it. Do it how you feel. Just be you. Like this!”

And wham, he knocks off fifteen lines of the monologue. He hadn’t done it for twenty years. It was incredible, so real, so believable. And then he stopped and said, “Or, you could try it this way.” And wham, he does a hundred-and-eighty-degree different approach. Then he does three more versions. All standing at the end of this drag strip. I couldn’t believe it, and it still gives me chills thinking about it. It’s the kind of friend he’s been to me.

JOHN FOREMAN

Elizabeth Taylor and Richard Burton were the first two actors to get a million dollars a picture. I was always proud Paul was the third. That’s what I got him for *Winning*.

I was up at the Portland International Speedway when I got a call from John Huston. He had recently directed me in *The Life and Times of Judge Roy Bean*, one of my happiest movie experiences. He was one of maybe half a dozen people I’ve known with whom I wish I’d been more comfortable; I regret it. I could always share things with him in a creative

sense, but I wasn't loose enough or natural enough to be fun for him socially; we'd run out of things to say.

Anyway, I answer the phone in my Portland hotel room, and I'm thrilled to hear John's voice.

"You're racing this weekend? I'm going to come and see you!"

"That'll be wonderful, John, but it's a pretty long trip up here."

"Where are you?" he asked.

"Well, you dialed, don't you know?"

"My girl did that," he replied. "Now, where are you?"

I told him, and he quickly responded, "I'll be right there."

And he hopped on a plane in LA and flew up from California.

John arrived on a Saturday, when I was driving this big Datsun, one with over nine hundred horsepower. He was awestruck by the cars.

He ended up not staying for all of Sunday to see the race itself.

"Take care of yourself, kid," he said. With that, he got on his plane and left.

When Huston invited Joanne and me to stay with him at his manor in Ireland, Clarens House, as we were starting production on *The Mackintosh Man*, I politely declined; we ended up at a little hotel in town that was closer to the set. To be honest, though, I don't like to stay in people's homes, and neither does Joanne.

I don't know how I talked Huston into directing that terrible movie, *The Mackintosh Man*; I guess I was feeling my oats and I thought it would be fun to play an Australian; unfortunately, the story wasn't very good, and Huston never was comfortable with the script. But filming *Judge Roy Bean* with him the year before, in 1972, that was simply special. It was completely original. He let us discover things in rehearsal; he had great faith in the actors. There was a sense of real appeal for me, a different aroma around it, beyond description. An atmosphere. What was the essence of John Huston? When he directed *Roy Bean*, he'd have his director's chair

stuck out in the desert, about a hundred yards from where everybody else was. After he rehearsed the actors, he'd take out one of his cigars, light it, and just sit out there and mull. I always laughed and said I was certain that the seat of John Huston's inspiration was in his cigar.

I don't think Huston ever thought of me as a great actor, but as a good actor; there was such patience. I was actually tongue-tied around him, maybe because he had such a strong aura of expectancy. He was mystical, magical, something undefinable.

We'd put together a great company for *Judge Roy Bean*, lots of interesting people on the set and others who would fly in from LA just to visit John. Each afternoon, about a dozen people might be sitting in John's trailer for lunch, and all of a sudden a lion, unleashed, would stroll in and stretch out across the width of this mobile home. The lion was apparently there to keep the bear company.

Because, of course, we also had a massive bear on the set; it was the same bear that had been on TV playing Gentle Ben. In the film, she dies saving Roy Bean's life, and I cradle her lifeless body. Before that shot, I'd done something stupid. We were shooting a scene where I was supposed to be angry at the bear—and I belted him three or four times. It just happened, really—one of those unconscious moments; it had nothing to do with having guts. The trainer was standing just off camera and he was without voice, speechless. Apparently, the bear's backhand is very real and pulverizing, like a six-hundred-pound heavyweight boxer's. They are so fast, and I'm very lucky.

People have also asked me about the scene where the bad guys get rid of the young Roy Bean by tying him with a rope to a horse, shooting the horse to a run, and then shooting at Roy's dragged body. I wanted to do the stunt myself. Huston and the production crew were both very uncomfortable with me doing it, especially with blanks being fired at the horses—you never really know what they're going to do. But I insisted.

I actually wasn't even in a harness or on a platform. Instead, I was placed on a soft-leather skimboard and was dragged over the rocky terrain by the camera truck. I just raked the ground.

JOHN FOREMAN

I got a call one day from Paul Kohner, John Huston's agent, saying John wanted to come see me. How can I say no? Huston, years before, had moved heaven and earth for Paul to do *The Night of the Iguana*; Paul turned it down; he just didn't want to do that part.

Anyway, the door opens at our production office at Universal, John walks in and drops John Milius's script for *Roy Bean* on my desk. "I love this," he says, "and I want to do this movie."

"I'll talk to Paul."

"Where is he?"

"In Connecticut."

"Good. I'll go see him there."

I call Paul and he immediately lists all the John Huston movies he didn't like. "I don't know if he'd be right for something like this."

"He's coming to see you, Paul."

"Don't you dare tell him to!"

As soon as I hang up, I call Huston and give him Paul's address. When Huston heads east, I phone Paul again and say, "Gird your loins, Huston is on his way."

"I won't be at home. I'm going to lock the gate."

My phone rings that evening. Huston has been in Westport for four hours and he owns Paul's soul; he "got" him, the essential Paul Newman, the real, real, real, honorable, caring Paul.

The last night of filming was two days before Christmas. We were outside of Tucson and it had snowed, so we already lost a day and were really pressed for time. John Huston

decided as part of the final scene, the whole frontier town should burn down. My feeling was that if John Huston wanted to burn down the set, we burn the town!

John had an awful cold when he came out to the set that evening. This was the big shot, one chance only, with everybody pursuing everybody through the flames, with Judge Roy on his horse.

And during the shot, John Huston passed out sitting in the director's chair.

With the cleanest, best communication I ever had with Paul, there was an instant recognition of what was required—Paul went ahead and directed the rest of the scene. No one knew. He did it with the old man passed out, and when the moment came to say “Cut!” John lifted his head up and yelled “Cut!”

We carried him back to his trailer and called an ambulance. When he emerged to head to the hospital, the entire company serenaded him as he was driven away.

Judge Roy Bean never fully caught the public's fancy, but it still made a profit. It wasn't *Butch Cassidy*, which is what Paul would have liked to be in—*Butch Cassidy I, II, III, IV, V*, and so on.

Paul really liked the Roy Bean character, and I think he really liked John's appreciation for his performance. There's something about John that makes you know that if he expresses appreciation, it is a valuable gift.

JOHN HUSTON

The last night on *Roy Bean* was one of my first real contests with emphysema. I'd had a coughing thing that went on and on; I had pneumonia. I was sick. I drank to keep even with it.

I didn't get drunk, but that was the only way I could keep going all that night, that night that it just suddenly hit. It was a bad time.

Paul, of course, is incomparable. I find no flaw, no fault in him, as an actor or as a man. He's a moral and ethical man, superb in every way; I so admire the way he has lived his life.

This is a business where others of his accomplishments cover themselves with the honey of self-importance, as though they'd just come back from the hive. Not Paul. He's never dramatized himself the way others in his league have done. Marlon, whom I admire tremendously, does dramatize himself, perhaps consciously. Paul and Jack Nicholson live on the same street, but they have different addresses.

After we'd finished the film, Huston asked me if I would accept an award on his behalf in New York. So I wrote this little thing, and I was very moved standing in for him; I got terribly choked up as I delivered it.

Somebody apparently recorded it and sent it to Huston. I got a call from him. "I don't know whether I'm more touched by the sound of my own voice," he said, "or by the richness of my writing." I felt it was from the bottom of his heart.

GEORGE ROY HILL

At first, I didn't offer *The Sting* to Paul; I didn't think the part was big enough for him. Paul's role as Henry was quite different when originally written by David Ward. We added a lot and changed it from Henry's being a real slob into a very slick dandy.

The famous card game with Bob Shaw was really just Paul doing things I had seen him do—all I did was remind him and he fell right into it. I think it is one of the best scenes ever done by an actor, anywhere. Paul was gleeful—he'd never had a chance to play that sort of part before, to play his own humor.



WARREN COWAN

I think Paul loved doing *The Sting* even though he worked less in it than in almost any other film he's ever done.



GEORGE ROY HILL

We did have a problem with facial hair. When Paul first tried on the mustache for his character in *The Sting*, he was not happy.

“Look at this ridiculous thing!” he said.

“I love it, Paul. I want it.”

I was going for a very 1920s look, so we also had him part his hair down the middle—Paul had a hell of a time getting used to that. But he did it. And when I told him again he looked great, his answer was a quiet, “Okay, fine.”

He kept saying he thought he looked like that actor from the silent pictures and early talkies, the one with the trademark mustache with each end set into a little curl—Edmund Lowe.

One of the great things about working with Paul is that after a take, you can always say “That’s terrible” to him. He’ll just shrug and laugh—believe me, you can’t do that with every

actor. But Paul has a carapace of indifference, which may be just that—a way of shielding his inner self. But it works with him, and it is a nice relationship to have with an actor.

I don't actually remember Paul ever working with the writers while filming. If he had an issue, he would come to me. I prefer to have the writers on the set every day because there are constant little things that I want their opinions on.

About halfway through our rehearsals, I had a fight with David Ward, who wrote *The Sting* (and won an Oscar for Best Original Screenplay); I asked for some changes, and he didn't give them to me. So I made them myself, and David was very upset. He was also upset about how I was directing the picture—he had envisioned a much more serious film than I was making. I wanted the feel of a period film—using a double image to introduce the characters, turning over a page onscreen to announce new segments. That made David more upset. After the first two days of shooting, the Writers Guild went on strike, and fortunately David couldn't show up anymore.

Ultimately, when the movie was released, David was approached by the press; he was gracious and said the result came out far better than if he had directed the film himself.



The next picture I made with George Hill was *Slap Shot*; it was absolutely magical, totally original, a subject that had never been touched before—hockey, which I loved as a kid. Getting it made, not surprisingly, was an adventure in and of itself.

A couple of years after *The Sting* hit, George sent me a script and called to say, “Read it quickly. We have a preproduction that we have to start on right away—this picture has to go like a rocket.” The biggest issue was our having an actual hockey team as extras and more; it was essential to the

film—we had to catch players out of their season, same with getting the use of some pro hockey rinks for sets.

I read the script right away, and, to everyone's surprise, I said yes—I loved that it was foulmouthed and profane. It was really a new way of attacking an athlete's story—and the side characters, mainly the gang of hockey players, were written wonderfully.

My lawyer, Irving Axelrod, called me about it a week later, saying that he still had not finalized a deal for me. "These guys at Universal are such jerks," he said. "They're putting roadblocks in the way of everything. I think we're at an impasse."

"How can that be?"

"Don't worry, it's just them blustering. We'll settle after the weekend."

A couple of days later, one of George's daughters comes by our house to go horseback riding with Nell. When she's leaving, I tell her, "Say hello to your father for me."

"I can't right now," she replies. "He went down to Palm Springs."

"Well, say hello tomorrow when he comes back."

"I don't think he's coming back."

"What do you mean? We've got to go to work; we're really up against a deadline here."

"Oh, well," she said, "that's off. He got fed up with the *Slap Shot* negotiations. That's why he went down to Palm Springs—so he could just get drunk and excise himself from the project. From his system."

I immediately got in touch with George's assistant, and she wouldn't tell me where he was. He'll call in, she tried to assure me.

"Well, I have a feeling he won't."

I tried back at his office at four p.m. the next day, and—still no contact.

"What's his license plate?" I asked her.

"Oh, I can't tell you that."

So I called the garage at Universal. "Paul Newman here. I have to go down and pick up George Hill's car. I know it's a four-door maroon Mercedes, but I don't remember his plate number and I don't want to make a mistake." The garage attendant politely obliged.

I then called Robert Wagner, who lived down in Palm Springs, and asked him to get me the name of a good private detective. He rang me back a few hours later saying he couldn't find anyone who was trustworthy.

"Hey, this has nothing to do with a woman or some corruption scandal," I told him. "There's just been a little misunderstanding and I've got to find this guy."

Wagner called me again to say he found a PI who used to work in corporate surveillance, Westinghouse or something, and had also once been a detective on the local force. I scheduled a call for eight o'clock that night.

"George is not the kind of guy who'd stay in the center of town," I told the private eye. "And he's very cheap, so he wouldn't be in an expensive place, either—figure something moderately priced on the outskirts." With a thousand hotels and motels in Palm Springs, I figured this could take two days.

The detective called me back at nine that evening. "I got the car," he said.

Next morning, five a.m., I drove down to Palm Springs in my Porsche. I hit the hotel an hour and four minutes later, saw the Mercedes, stormed into the manager's office, and demanded, "What room is George Hill in?" He was so rattled, he told me I just needed to cut across the patio and he'd be right there, in room 12.

Just as I get outside, I see the curtains pull open in room 12, and there's George, his back to me, stretching, with a bottle of Scotch on his table. I tapped on the window, he turned around, opened his patio door, and said to me, "Get out of here."

He'd had it with everyone; they'd all taken a big piece of his pie. "Shit, what am I in this for? There'll be nothing left for you or for me."

The problem was that though George was actually producing *Slap Shot*, there were two additional guys who were also "producers" on the film and had nothing to do with it other than having fronted the option money and gearing up to go to the premieres. They were just on the gravy train. Maybe that's unfair, because without them *Slap Shot* would probably never have gotten done. But we were both still pretty unhappy with the state of play.

George and I went outside, sat on a curbstone, drank some Budweisers, and settled our own deal in no time. “George, what do you want?” I asked him. “I’ll split everything with you.”

“Look, I’m not in it to screw you out of anything,” I went on. “But I’m going to make sure that Universal doesn’t get out there and suck on my bones, either.” We’d make sure that we could create the overall package for the movie; we wouldn’t need anyone else to put it together for us and take another 10 percent from George’s share and off the top of whatever the movie costs to make.

Have I been screwed a lot? Yes. And while I always say the price of not being screwed is eternal vigilance, eternal vigilance is a very time-consuming and detailed business—going through receipts, checking out every little thing. It can actually be less painful to be screwed than to look after things—at least sometimes.

There are some people you meet who you know will never betray you for their own advantage, things are just as they appear to be. There are others who you are 95 percent certain about—that while they won’t usually take advantage of you, they would in a pinch. I could never sort some people out in my head and have never been certain of their allegiances. I’ve never been certain what constitutes loyalty—it is a very hard thing to find out. You grow aware of the people who are anxious to climb up with you and those who are anxious to climb up *on* you.



JOANNE AND STEWART
STERN

Anyway, George and I settled our arrangements, got out of Palm Springs, and had our business guys get right to work on drawing up the contracts.

GEORGE ROY HILL

Paul has a habit of pulling practical jokes, and the one he pulled in Johnstown, Pennsylvania, when we were filming *Slap Shot*, upset me very, very much. I'm not immune to practical jokes, but this was absolutely insane.

There was a guy on our crew, a focus puller, he was right there on the camera all the time. I don't know whether Paul knew it or not, but he had a heart condition.

There was a shot where Paul had to drive his car into a space, park there, then walk into a nearby house. About two or three car lengths around the corner from the house was a garage where we were having all our vehicles in the film serviced. Well, Paul drove up to his mark very fast, put on the brakes, then literally slid into his spot. He came over to me and said, “Listen, I’m worried; the brakes on this car just aren’t very good.”

“Take it easy, Paul, and don’t take any chances. We’ll just do it a couple more times to see if it is safe.”

He agreed, I called “Action!” and Paul came barreling up the road again, faster than before. He went straight through our shot, out of sight and around the corner to where that garage was—when suddenly we heard a tremendous crash. There was dust everywhere, a stray wheel rolled out into the street; I goddamn near died, and our focus puller was so shaken, he began clutching his chest and we had to get him home.

I ran over to investigate and saw and heard our crew members laughing. The whole accident had been a fake, staged. I wanted to fire everyone, including Paul, though I couldn’t do the picture without him.

I was furious and resented terribly that the guys would pull a stunt like this—though I realized that Paul, being who he is, likely talked them into it. I was ready to bring in a whole new crew, but Paul pleaded: “You can’t do that; I can’t be responsible for all these guys losing their jobs. I couldn’t take that, it would just undo me.”

I finally saw his logic and came around. I told him all right, and the moment I said it, Paul cried. He wiped his eyes and said, “Jesus God, tears yet!” In just a moment, he was trying to make a joke out of the whole thing.

I know they all thought it was hilarious and funny, but I don't see the humor in destroying things, ever. And this caused pain, real pain. Paul finally realized it had been a stupid thing to do.

If I wanted to psychoanalyze practical jokes, you could say they are just hidden, though not really well-hidden, hostilities. You don't put people into bad situations where they get anxiety-filled and shocked, where someone nearly has a heart attack. It's just real anger. When Paul and I talked about it later, I made the point to him that this was really his hostility showing, and he's since told me the incident was a turning point; he hasn't staged a practical joke since then. Of course, it is very difficult to think of Paul as a hostile man in any respect. It's just his humor, and frankly, some of Paul's humor is pretty terrible—usually on the raunchy side, too. He does come up with some very funny things, but as Paul himself says, his humor comes right out of the toilet.

Beginning with *Butch*, Paul finally learned to relax. He didn't have to push anymore and that role really eased him into what he was able to become for the remainder of his career—the easygoing actor he was in the very beginning. He settled down and came into a style of his own. Paul's getting to be like Walter Huston, who didn't do a damn thing onscreen, you never saw him act—he just *was*. Paul has some of that quality now—he couldn't make a false move if he tried.



STEWART STERN

One of the engaging things about Paul is his enthusiasm. You know, his discoveries, things he wants you to share. And the

lengths he will go to get you to share them: the size of the black olives that have to go into your drink, or some new invention—like the padded wire crown he made to hold his eyeglasses off of his nose in the sauna.



ROBERT ALTMAN

He threw a great party up here at the end of *Buffalo Bill*. Had two hundred lobsters flown in. Had beer, baseball, go-karts, all the things that he likes to play with. We both tend to have the same kind of extroverted, juvenile behavior in groups. Before we started to eat, he had my favorite hat thrown up in the air and they shot holes in it. He took my good Indian doeskin gloves and had them french-fried and served them to me for lunch. I kinda hated losing the gloves, but I didn't mind losing them as much as I enjoyed the affection that went into the joke.



HAROLD WILLENS

Paul and I were driving to our first board meeting with the Center for the Study of Democratic Institutions in his Volkswagen. He had some wonderful music on—he liked to listen to classical music—and he would turn it down and say, “Listen to this, listen to this!” Then turn it up like an excited little boy. At a certain point he poked me and said, “Watch this.” We were driving on the freeway, and ahead of us was a massive, powerful Cadillac. “Be sure to catch the guy's expression!” he said, and then he gunned it. I thought we were going to take off and fly! He didn't tell me that his VW

had a Porsche engine in it. That's a lasting vision of him, this little boy having fun, roaring with laughter.



MICHAEL BROCKMAN

I remember how late we were to Paul's birthday party at Malibu. Joanne left the go-kart track before we did and she said later that was a mistake, because Paul and Elliot and I were all within a couple of hundredths of a second, trying to beat fast times, so we stayed and stayed while all the party guests were waiting. Paul didn't want to leave until he was the fastest.



—≡ XII ≡—

I t's an interesting challenge, how far you can take the drinking without really self-destructing. In the early 1970s, I think I took it as far as it could go, before realizing I had taken it that far. It was like climbing Mount Everest; at least you can say, "Okay, I've done that—now let's quit and move on to something else."

Alcohol seemed to focus my mind a lot better—when I didn't take it to really extraordinary excess. From reading about Jackson Pollock, it seems he might have been the same way. With people who were otherwise impossible to communicate with, the first four beers would open a window for him—for about twenty minutes. By his seventh beer, he'd really have some profound and interesting things to say about art and about himself. But by then the window would shut and stay shut thereafter.

There was a time when booze unlocked a lot of things I couldn't have done without it. It was the key—but not necessarily the room. It allowed me to explore some things in my head in the privacy of the bathroom or the basement. Things that I otherwise couldn't unleash, and wouldn't have recognized or even seen.

In the early part of my career, when I was doing a lot of television, I'd get a room at the old Emerson Hotel and just lock myself inside with a script. I don't mean I'd go on a four-day drunk. I'd sit there, work on the script, make notes to myself, and around dinnertime I'd have a beer. And then I'd have two more beers, then five beers—though all the time I'd be cutting, editing, and making notes to myself.

Next morning, I'd wake up and 95 percent of the notes I'd made were terrible, I crossed them out so no one could ever see them. They were just

alcoholic garbage. But five percent were physicalizations, mannerisms, pieces of stage business that could be interesting—and they all seemed too eccentric for me to have thought of in a normal state.

Gore Vidal always justified his attachment to alcohol on that basis: creative benefits. And I know there are certain breakthroughs that I was able to accomplish in my head that I could later use onstage. For someone as controlled as I am, to experience the delight, the luxury, of being out of control, not to have an inkling of what's around the next corner and to keep yourself constantly at risk, is simply pleasurable.

There are terrible, bad things that happen with booze, dangerous things. I marvel that I survived them.

TOM CRUISE

Paul constantly hurts himself. He'll torture himself by drinking a case of beer, then sit in the sauna for hours. He laughs about it—what alcohol does to your body and what a sauna does to your body is like constantly pulling yourself from one extreme to the next.

He's a volatile man, and yet he really keeps himself in check, really controls himself. He seems to handle his pain in a certain way and is not as self-destructive as he used to be. He has always reached for stabilizing forces in his life: choosing to be an actor, Joanne, sticking with those things.

ROBERT WEBBER

Paul told me his drinking was like his character Brick's drinking in *Cat on a Hot Tin Roof*. He'd be drinking a certain

amount, then suddenly, *click*, you'd turn off and couldn't remember anymore.

To black out and keep functioning is fascinating. My best friend was a Catholic who didn't live up to the strictures of the church. So he'd go out, black out, do whatever he wanted, and didn't feel guilty because he didn't remember. Does that hold true with Paul? There's definitely a trigger at work: "This is as far as I want to go now. I'm going to turn and I don't want to know what I'm doing."

I remember a time Paul had forsworn hard liquor. "I only drink beer," he'd say. Yeah, but he was drinking a case a day. We were at a party where I kept noticing all the beer was disappearing. I wondered how anyone could drink that much: how long he kept it up, I don't know. He was never an obnoxious drunk. As I said, he would just click off.



MORT SAHL WAS A CONTROVERSIAL POLITICAL SATIRIST
AND STAND-UP COMEDIAN WHO FIRST BEFRIENDED PAUL IN
THE MID-1950S.

How many movies have you seen where Paul Newman comes in in the morning and puts his head into a sink full of ice? I think he's done it in thirty-eight pictures. Dreams die hard.

Paul loved taking those long saunas. We'd go into one, and he'd take a big brandy snifter and fill it full of ice cubes and Scotch. He would tell me about his mother, and he would cry. She used to bait him. If there was anything bad in the newspapers about him—reviews, say—she'd clip and mail them to him just for torture.

Paul could be very morose. “Why can’t people be tolerant?” he’d say. “Maybe it’s impossible to get through the night without three bottles of Scotch. If anybody can get through the night with a *snake*, you should leave them alone—because at least they got through the night.”

Paul used to drink through the night.

I don’t know what it was all about, unless it’s people not being equal to the task. Every actor I’ve ever known thought he was getting a pass. And I’m sure down deep Paul thought he was stealing the money and wondering when it’s all going to catch up with him. People who don’t feel good about themselves will do anything to feel better. Philanthropy is supposed to make them feel better, but it only works a few minutes at a time.

He had so much going for him of course—marriage, stardom; but even with work there were always challenges. In the days when Paul was constantly said to be working in the shadow of Marlon Brando, even after Paul had really emerged, he never won the awards. Steve McQueen bothered him for a time, too; he felt McQueen was the rise of the illiterate in acting. Paul wanted to be seen as an intellectual: “You don’t know how lucky you are,” he’d say to me. “All I get is applause, but you get respect.”





PAUL ENTERTAINS PRINCESS MARGARET ON THE SET OF *TORN CURTAIN* IN 1965
WHILE DIRECTOR ALFRED HITCHCOCK LOOKS ON.

ARTHUR NEWMAN, PAUL'S OLDER BROTHER, WAS A
PRODUCTION MANAGER ON MANY OF HIS FILMS.

Paul was a great admirer of Fredric March. When Freddie was filming *Hombre* with Paul, he said to me: "Arthur, you have to watch Paul on the drinking thing. I have seen more great actors go down the tubes from drinking than from anything else."

Personally, I don't think it affected his work or there was ever a day of bad performance because of the drinking. After a day of shooting, Paul would just go back to his motel room

and drink there, but you never saw him hanging around the local bars getting drunk.

I think Paul's addiction to physical fitness and the sauna may have boiled some of that damned stuff out of his system before it would've finished him. Alcohol kills nerve cells, and the nervous system's cells don't replace themselves. So with Paul, instead of the booze killing off twenty-eight cells, it only killed thirteen.

Look, all human beings are constructed with self-destruct systems. And people run around all their lives trying to push that button and self-destruct. Every time they push the button, it does damage, and it builds up. The damage is minimal at the beginning, but it affects you later and just gets bigger and bigger.

That I was predisposed to addiction or alcohol could have been better for me, it could have been worse. That I could have drunk *more* is a reflection on the fact I couldn't be persuaded to do that. That I could have drunk less is also an indication that I wasn't able to be persuaded to do that. Whatever level I seek is like water seeking its own level. The individual seeks the level at which it will be persuaded to be one thing or the other.

That I didn't reach for a kilo of cocaine is, I suppose, better than if I had reached for it. That I didn't was uniquely me—and obviously, to some other people's discomfort, was uniquely not them. They did, I didn't. Now, there are some people who don't reach for alcohol, don't reach for cocaine, don't reach for anything. Well, that's them. I applaud them. It's also not their mother, or father, or their uncle—it's always a mixture of things that go into someone.

What I know about nature and nurture is that it's divided somehow depending on the individual. But what that individual does to the extent

they were un-nurtured or natured improperly ultimately belongs to them. People have to take responsibility for what they do.

If I had to define “Newman” in the dictionary, I’d say: “One who tries too hard.” An incredible part of me believes you’re a free agent inside of your genetics. And that complaining that “Mommy never kissed me” is a bunch of shit. But somehow I got a pretty shitty opinion of myself that had to come from somewhere.



CHRIS HUNTER, SON OF ACTORS JEFFREY HUNTER AND BARBARA RUSH, WAS A CLOSE FRIEND OF SCOTT NEWMAN’S.

Scott told me about some adventures with his dad. Paul and Scott would go out cruising in that racing machine of Paul’s and get very, very fucked up. Get a lot of beer, get drunk, and go joyriding. One time they crashed through the back of their garage into a refrigerator.

Maybe one of the relationships they had, sort of a kinship, was to get drunk together. You share some sort of alcoholic netherworld experience where you get outrageous—I think he was impressed he had shared that with his dad and had even gone through a wall. (He told me not to tell anyone.)



JOHN FOREMAN

When Paul and Joanne first got the house in Connecticut, Paul and I would sit far into the night and drink steadily. But many times, I’d go off to bed and Paul would just be passed out. Many times as he got drunker, it was nice, but many nights would take a turn and Paul would get exceedingly ugly and bad. He often talked about “the click,” and suddenly all

you'd hear would be "cocksucker" this or "fucking" that. He'd attack the business, everything he had done, all his work, his failures as a husband and as a father, on and on until finally, he'd just be making slurred animal noises. Paul would stay in his leather chair, and I felt it was somehow part of my job as his agent, my obligation, my love, to take the evening to its end. Then he'd pass out. Or call me dirty names or tell me how much he hated me.



PAUL IN THE EARLY
1960s

In the early years of their marriage, Joanne would sit up into the night, too. Eventually, she'd just get out of her chair, go into their bedroom, and close the door. And that was that. She simply couldn't have anything more to do with it.

JOANNE WOODWARD

While Paul was directing *Sometimes a Great Notion* out in Oregon in 1971, he really almost killed himself. One night he fell out of bed. I found him on the floor with his head bleeding, and I came as close as I ever had to saying, "This is it, I just can't stand it." After that film was done, Paul gave up hard liquor.

I used to think the only peace Paul ever found was that peace he used to find in being dead drunk. Now he finds it in racing cars. Peace and grace, the comfort of knowing he has done something well.

The time when I was doing *Sometimes a Great Notion* was a kind of unhinged period for me. I felt unsettled, I was warring with everybody. There were even some difficult times with Joanne. The Newman-Foreman Company was producing the picture, I was starring, and our director, Richard Colla, had to be replaced. I ended up having to direct the film myself—and then the production had to be briefly shut down because I'd had a nasty motorcycle accident near our set in Oregon. I had too much pressure on me from every direction, and I didn't ask for it.

Even with getting bombed, I felt I did a tremendous amount of work on this film. The alcohol helped fuel a sense that you'd accomplished something. Maybe it was a very false sense of accomplishment.

GEORGE ROY HILL

Paul called me and asked if I could come out to the Oregon set and give him a hand. He was floundering. I got into my plane and flew out there, spent maybe a week looking at the footage that had been shot both by Paul and by Colla, did a little work on the script. I think my presence gave him more psychological help than professional, some extra confidence more than anything else.

When I'd first worked with Paul on *Butch Cassidy*, he'd just directed a film, *Rachel, Rachel*—and he'd won the New York Film Critics Award for directing, and got nominated for the Directors Guild prize. Though Paul never said a peep about it, in my mind I had to contend with it. But it was like there was this big sign always behind him with large letters saying: "I just won the director's award!"

He was always enormously grateful I'd come out to Oregon, though to be honest, I think he got more out of it than I gave.

JOHN FOREMAN

We went right from *Sometimes a Great Notion* to start *Judge Roy Bean*. You know what the difference was for Paul? With John Huston directing, Paul didn't have the responsibility of both directing the film and making it succeed. And between those two pictures, Paul, more or less, made a decision to stop drinking.

JOANNE WOODWARD

Drinking used to be the anguish of our lives. Now he drinks less and less. I told him recently: “That tiny glass of wine you’re now drinking is just a pacifier—it’s not that you need it, it’s just you’re afraid to let it go.”



SIDNEY LUMET WAS ONE OF AMERICA’S MOST
CELEBRATED DIRECTORS, BEST KNOWN FOR SUCH FILMS AS ¹²
ANGRY MEN, *SERPICO*, *DOG DAY AFTERNOON*, AND *THE VERDICT*,
STARRING PAUL.

Paul and I were talking about his character’s, Frank Galvin’s, drinking.

“I know about that,” he said. I had the feeling that at one point, Paul had a problem, too, though I never asked further.

We discussed the concept of “playing the denial,” which was one of the acting coach Sanford Meisner’s great insights. How do you play a drunk? As someone who says, “I’m not drunk, I’m sober.” You play the sobriety, put all the effort into being sober. Paul was very concerned with self-pity, because a drunk is, by nature, self-pitying. There was no way Paul was going to be crying in his cups.



JOANNE AND PAUL ON THE SET OF *SOMETIMES A GREAT NOTION* IN
OREGON, 1970

Paul thought up these physicalizations that may be unpleasant but revealed Galvin's problem. The first time we see him he's going to a funeral and spraying his mouth with Binaca; that was Paul's idea, as was Galvin's always putting in eyedrops.

To stay sober, Galvin had to keep moving; stillness means he'd lift a glass—when he's working he has to stay in motion. For Galvin/Paul, you see the resolution in his final address to the jury—he doesn't move at all.

I don't think I ever reached any comfortable emotional moment in any picture until I did *The Verdict*. In fact, I can only remember a couple of moments that really worked in my films.

Lumet gives you the script, you go in on a Monday morning and read it around the table, then you start blocking. It really took me time to button up that character; I'd been behind with those huge long scenes with the judge, with the jury. I went home and really worked on those lines.

SIDNEY LUMET

There was a critical moment in *The Verdict* rehearsals. Paul had subtly let me know that he preferred to work on a character's externals first: What's the voice like? What's the body like? It doesn't matter to me where the acting comes from, I'll work any way an actor wants to work.

We had a run-through at the end of our second week; Paul still had the book in his hands, he had memorized maybe only a third of the script. He gave a very good performance but there was no life to it. After I made some comments to the cast, I sent them home, though I asked Paul to stay on. In so many words I said to him: "What's the matter? It's not working."

"Oh, it's just the lines, Sidney, I'm having so much trouble with the fucking lines. I'll be all right."

"No, Paul. It isn't the lines."

He blinked, sort of, very rapidly, and said, "What do you think the problem is?"

"I think you have to make a decision," I said. "You have to decide how much of *you* you're going to let us see. It's you that's missing, the heartbeat."

Paul didn't say anything. We broke for the weekend. When he came in Monday, he was a different actor. It was all there, and there was very little to work on after that. I think Paul was waiting for someone to make a demand on his talent. He knows what good acting is, and good acting is about self-revelation.

In the summer of 1948, I had my first exposure to drunk performers. And by "drunk," I mean when they were offstage and onstage. I don't know how I made it through.

I was an intern at the Priscilla Beach Theatre in Plymouth, Massachusetts, and I had the honor, as a first-timer there, to stage-manage some productions. The theater was famous for doing a lot of current shows for short runs, often pulling audiences with big-name Hollywood or Broadway stars taking the leads while the interns did the rest. We also took these productions for brief tours elsewhere on Cape Cod.

Diana Barrymore and her third husband, Robert Wilcox, were the draws for the suspense drama *Laura*. Diana Barrymore was the legendary John Barrymore's daughter, and Wilcox was a regular leading man, mainly in B movies. We were set to go on at a theater in Woods Hole, on a very oddly configured stage; when I walked in, I thought we absolutely needed to have some sort of rehearsal before we opened there. So I, apprentice stage manager, called one for four o'clock in the afternoon of opening night. This was unheard-of for an apprentice stage manager. And as soon as Diana and Bob came in at four o'clock and saw the layout, they bolted to the bar across the street and got drunk. And when they returned near our eight o'clock curtain, they were just fractured.

There was a big sofa dominating downstage that was literally ten inches or so from the apron; Diana had to make several crosses in front of it, and the audience kept laughing because it looked like she was just going to fall into the house. They were fumbling their lines, and when one of the other

actors (as per the script) pushed Diana into the sofa, the whole sofa fell backwards, and Diana wasn't wearing any panties; she exposed her entire crotch to the audience. It was a hoot.

After one of the Woods Hole shows, another intern, Charlie North, and I were designated to accompany Bob and Diana back to their company-provided cottage, a drive of about half an hour. Charlie drove, and in the spirit of our passengers we made the drive in only about eighteen minutes, running stop signs and red lights, rolling over curbs, everything. We'd actually bought a case of beer to take back to our dorms nearby; I think we had finished most of it by the time we got there. I guess we figured that if we were going to get hit, we may as well all be rubbery at the moment of impact.

The stars' cottage had a large lantern out front that illuminated the porch and made it highly visible from the female apprentices' dormitory. Just as we were letting off Bob and Diana, they started arguing. As it escalated, Wilcox grabbed the front of her sundress and just pulled it down, yelling, "How do you like that!" Both of them screaming. And you could hear one window after another in the dorm having the decency to slam shut.

For me, things were once again identified by really hard work and really hard partying.

And there's a coda to this....



MEADE ROBERTS

I had gone to Philadelphia to see Paul, who was doing a pre-Broadway tour of *The Desperate Hours*. We went to dinner at the Variety, a private club for show people on the road at the Bellevue-Stratford Hotel. In staggered Diana Barrymore; this was maybe 1955, practically the lowest point of her career—schlepping around the country in a dreadful French farce called *Pajama Tops*. She was an alcoholic, bloated beyond

belief, and she was with her husband, Bob Wilcox, also in the *Pajama Top* play and also an alcoholic.

“There’s Diana Barrymore,” Paul whispered to me. He told me how he’d known her at Cape Cod well enough to say “Good evening, Miss Barrymore.”

“Do you think I should go over and pay my respects?”

“I’m sure she’d like that very much. It’s just seven years since summer stock and you’re the star of *Desperate Hours* and she’s here doing some turkey.”

So Paul got up from the table and walked to her table and said, “Miss Barrymore”—which is all he *could* say before she looked up at him and screamed out, “Marlon! Marlon!” She grabbed Paul, bent him over backwards, and kissed him on the mouth to the point where Wilcox and some other guy had to pull her off. Paul’s face was the color of a beet; I’m sure she never remembered she’d ever met Paul Newman.

He came back to our table and said just one word: “Jesus.”



When I’d gone over to Diana’s table, I saw this little old face on this little old woman who was then not out of her thirties. She was just unrecognizable.

It was the same thing that happened in Beverly Hills not too many years later. I walked into La Scala restaurant, and I heard a voice call “Paul?” I looked around, but it was sort of dark and I couldn’t see very well. And the “Paul?” was repeated and I realized it was coming from someone sitting alone in a booth. I went over and couldn’t recognize this ravaged face with black-circled eyes.

She said, “Paul, it’s me—Pier Angeli,” and I was stunned. Pier was my costar in *The Silver Chalice* (when she was dating Jimmy Dean, who was shooting *East of Eden* on the next soundstage) and in *Somebody Up There Likes Me*. It hadn’t been that long ago. And here was this lady now who’d

once been so attractive, who'd had a modest gift but a great sense of physical style. Her head was the size of a pumpkin, no feature to identify it, even to remind you of what she had once looked like. It was appalling and frightening.

Neither Diana nor Pier lived to age forty. Wilcox made it to forty-five.

One of the reasons I used to get in so much trouble with booze was that I always drank so quickly. I was, after all, the chugalugging champion of the Seventh Fleet.

The way those chugalugging contests worked was the opponents each got a twelve-ounce glass of beer, one guy did a countdown, and you drank the beer. First guy to finish the glass won the round. I don't know where the gift came from, but I was able to do the same thing with whiskey, just down it like beer. And when I finally said, "Geez, I'd better go to bed," so I did, but then something happened. You have to remember that your body has to take the temperature of all the liquid you drink and get it up to blood temperature so it can be absorbed. I'd lie down, and try to sleep, while my body was warming up this ice-cold fluid and I'd actually be getting drunk and drunker as I dozed.

This whole effect was one of the reasons the British never used to get as drunk as we did. They'd drink their beer warm and never put ice in their whiskey.

My whole system, though, was based on catching up with all those ice cubes.

STEWART STERN

There was a certain wonder to it. Paul would get quite sloshed just sitting talking and say, "Well, I'm heading to bed now," and he'd shamle up to his room. And not so long

afterwards, he'd shamble back down in his pajamas and start a whole new conversation. And again Paul would say, "Well, now I'm gonna go to bed." But each time he did that he'd be a bit more sloshed.



I would wake up and not know where I was. And sometimes I would wake up in strange places under strange circumstances. But I don't know if this is the time to talk about that; I mean, it's not exactly going to bounce off the page...



PAUL ESCORTS DAUGHTER CLEA DOWN THE AISLE IN
2004.

—≡ XIII ≡—

I'm in the pool hall at the Hole in the Wall Gang Camp when this little child with wonderful pigtails walks over to me using a walker. One of the counselors says she has to go downstairs, so I pick her up. As I carry her, I realize that both her legs are plastic; I can feel the rivets against my arms. When I get her downstairs, I set her back on her feet and ask, "Are you okay?"

"Yeah," she says, "I'm fine," and she goes off and plays.

I've always questioned my charitable impulses. I don't know how altruistic they really are. Or how generous, or Christian, or anything, really. The only thing I can readily say in my defense is that I do them, and that's better than not doing them.

The reason I'm suspicious of my charity is that I'm not sure what came first, the urge and then the theory or the theory and then the urge. The theory is, of course, having the luck of the draw, living in a democracy, being of the majority color, having an opportunity for education, enjoying the Bill of Rights, the Four Freedoms, and everything else. And that it must be regarded as a privilege that carries the unspoken obligation to hold out your hand to people who have less than you.

But isn't it easy to be hypocritical about this? To say, "The greatest enjoyment I've had is when I've given back to the community even as I've taken from it"? I got it for myself first, so I can afford to be charitable; I'm not going to be materially affected. What will I suffer when I give away ten

million dollars? That won't change the way I live. I won't eat less well. I can still stick a Buick engine in a Volvo.

The easiest thing I can do, frankly, is to give away money. It does not represent the kind of sacrifice that, it seems to me, might enhance the magnificence of the gift. Am I actually a philanthropist, the way so many in the media have come to describe me? As far as I'm concerned, a philanthropist is someone who gives up an entirely comfortable way of life, goes out into the populace, gets his hands dirty, and dedicates himself to whatever keeps them dirty. The grace of that person is formidable.

What's hard to give is time. To offer hands-on relationships to people who are less privileged. That's a big reason I question myself.

I remember, when I was a kid, taking bushel baskets of food and hand-me-downs to my aunt's church at Thanksgiving; we were also given the addresses of poor homes for my mother to drive to and drop things off then, and again at Christmas. There were kids with no shoes. I was appalled by the poverty. It felt like a threat of future pain, and it so immobilized me, I was overwhelmed. I'd been raised in that supersanitary home where anything unsterilized or that had the slightest smell of mustiness or decay was to be devoutly avoided.

I sometimes suspect the root of my charity came from having no civic impulses at all, just inventing them the way I invented everything else. Paul Newman, the inventor of Newman the Football Player, Newman the Actor, Newman the Citizen, Newman the Lover—all of it. You can exercise charity simply from the perception that you lack it and it really is something you should have. You ladle it out of a pot, like soup, but it's nothing you cooked yourself. I'm terribly concerned about the appearance of things, and charitable is a nice thing to be. It's easy to be charitable if it actually doesn't cost you anything; it's not like the people who get out there and take care of people at some cost to their own lives.

My instinct? I'm aware that in some ways it's my nature to deprecate everything I do—deprecate effort, deprecate friendship, until I cannot sort out the truth of things anymore. I weigh things meticulously, trying to be fair about everything—to my motivations, to myself, to everyone else. I set

all this stuff on a scale so it doesn't tip, because the second it looks like it might, I put something on the other side.

STEWART STERN

I used to suffer with the mystery of what Paul thought of me, how he felt about me, because you can do a multiple-choice test about what feelings are going on behind that still face, that silence. But then, when I was sick, I overheard him talking to the doctors about me in intensive care. I realized that underneath the silence is his caring.

GEORGE ROY HILL

If I ever get depressed he's always very supportive and calls and makes sure I get out of the house, and will get me out for dinner or something. He isn't just giving me a phone call and saying, "how are you today?" He's saying, "meet me at Louie's for a drink" and we'll go on and have dinner and then we'll meet Joanne and we'll go to a movie or something like that. He's very active in that way. That's something that's been very important to me. I don't have any other friends that really take that kind of effort and time to support me.

When things come too easily, it seems you're never really aware of the effect they'll have. That a salad dressing that was begun so frivolously

makes \$19 million a year seems ridiculous. If the profits are \$3.5 million—which is probably the highest margin of any food company in the US—well, to give that much away otherwise without being taxed, I’d have to earn \$3.5 million from my own investments and acting jobs. I can’t give away more Newman’s Own profits than the equivalent of 100 percent of what I make. Unless I’m dead, in which case I can give away more than I make.

That the salad-dressing money goes to charity isn’t really that interesting; it goes there because it would have been tacky to do anything else with it. The whole venture started as a lark when two old friends, A. E. Hotchner and I, were having some fun pouring homemade salad dressing into old wine bottles and selling it in tea shops and the like in Connecticut. It just developed a life of its own. The more people said “This isn’t going to work,” the greater my compulsion to make it work, including putting my name and picture on the labels, an act I’d never believe I’d see in my life (certainly not with my blessing).

But to watch it take off like *Six Characters in Search of an Author*—to see this little bottle running around looking for a home, bump into closed doors, then turn around and look for another path till the answer it found was charity, then find a rich uncle who helped it find its own life without asking unexpected favors—allowed me to say “Why not?”

As I said: that the money went to charity is no big surprise. That it can make \$6 million or \$7 million in profit a year but remains absolutely pure and untampered—and that I don’t siphon something off for myself—well, that’s the surprise.

I know a lot of people that have been involved with charities, people who raise a lot of money—they do appearances, they go on TV, whatever, and get paid exorbitant fees for their efforts. People think they do it for nothing? They don’t.

I don’t know why I’m changing. I don’t think it has to do with the imminence of death; I don’t understand the impetus. I think our starting the camps in the mid-eighties had something to do with it, because setting that up was no more calculated than a change was in me. It was simply an idea I

stumbled upon along with the wherewithal to accomplish it. There was a real sense of providence.

Part of the inspiration was definitely the death of my friend Bruce Falconer in 1987. He was an architect in Connecticut, a man with a real sense of life. He had lost a leg in an accident as a kid, but still went out and pursued boating in a way that almost landed him on the Olympic team; I remember him flying to Italy one year for the trials. When his life got cut short by cancer at age fifty-two, I just kept thinking: “What a tragedy!” But then I realized that if what happened to Bruce was a tragedy, what must it be like for eight- or ten- or twelve-year-olds with cancer, who don’t even get the short shot at life Bruce had? And shouldn’t these kids get a crack at having some of the same kind of sense of accomplishment Bruce had? Shouldn’t these kids get cared for, and in a way that gives them that chance?

So I just jumped in. I may have questioned my motives, but not what had to be done. It was an act that developed an emotional life and compassion of its own. I just woke up one morning and said, “Well, that’s what I’m going to do.” Knowing providence would take care of an idea that good, there was no way it wouldn’t get completed. And so it was built. And became a source of great inspiration to a lot of people. And I’m inspired by it, too.

Not that providence would have necessarily changed me, but suddenly you discover you’ve committed \$14 million to a children’s camp and you only have \$7 million on hand. Unless the salad-dressing business suddenly went kaput—the biggest risk I actually had was that I might have to borrow money against my future earnings. And even that jeopardy disappeared when one day a young kid from Saudi Arabia comes to Connecticut and you play Ping-Pong with him.

The kid tells you he happens to have a usually fatal blood disease and that he’s currently living in Washington, D.C. And that he also happens to have connections with the Saudi royal family whose crown prince just happens to be their ambassador to the US and lives in Washington, too. And as a Muslim and a Saudi, the kid happens to have the right to petition the

king himself through the crown prince. Then all of a sudden you're flying back to Connecticut from DC with a check for five million dollars for the camp and a letter that says the money is a gift from the king and the people of Saudi Arabia.

Now who can explain that? Who's going to know how the recognition of the pluck those camp kids have, and how they deal with their lives, simply triggered an unknown and previously unresponsive mechanism in me? A mechanism that opens a door into myself and lets me see what actually might be lurking there. Then you simply change? The answer may just be: "It was time." Suddenly, here I am, an atheist, a nonmetaphysicalist, who finds himself stuck right in the middle of God.

It's weird. It's human. And it's inexplicable.

It wasn't too long ago I met an eight-year-old kid at the camp who wasn't very mobile; his legs and hands were terribly weakened. His own immune system had somehow attacked his body, and now his body was rejecting itself. He was sitting on one of the big rocks near the camp entrance, talking to one of our counselors about God. The kid said he really didn't know much about God, but he did know about the big bang theory, and he understood that there was incredible energy expended in that concept and likened it to an atomic blast. The kid said he understood, though, that you couldn't get more energy out of anything than had been put in to create it.

"Well," the counselor said, "I think I get back more energy from the camp than I put into it."

The eight-year-old looked back at the counselor and said: "Well, you see, maybe that's what God is."

I think about the fact that I have been privileged to stay alive so long that anything I accomplish after this is gravy, and it seems to me that kids who don't even get the beginning of that privilege before it's threatened, they deserve something. Whatever you can do to give them an experience they can treasure, you should, if you have the capacity to, do it. What could be more meaningful?

STEWART STERN

The camp is about a personal drama as any that has ever been played out inside of him. Sometimes people are really congruent with themselves, where the impulse and what comes out of it are exactly in line. That camp is the purest expression of him, it's exactly him. Paul loves that camp and the truth of that connection helps to pull everyone in. It's amazing.

I did quite a lot of asking on behalf of the Hole in the Wall Gang Camp. You go out and do fourteen benefits. You have your picture snapped six thousand times. You host dinners in Boston and Hartford and New Haven and Stamford—you just raise the money. It was worth it. I flew out to St. Louis to see August Busch, who then owned Budweiser. I walked into his conference room and said, "August, I want you to be responsible for the crown jewel of our camp, the mess hall."

"How much do you want?" he replied.

"I need \$866,000. And we'll match it."

"Deal," he said, and I left. It all took about eight minutes.

I wrote Busch a letter afterwards in which I thanked him for being the first corporate donor to give us the kind of support we hoped to get from the business community. His was a lavish gift, I wrote, and I had thought about it a great deal. "In all the years since I was in the Navy, starting at age eighteen," I explained, "I have consumed approximately two hundred thousand cans of Budweiser beer. So, if you really look closely at the figures, your contribution comes to just about a four-dollars-a-bottle rebate. And since you've had use of the money since 1944, it isn't really all that much. Still, I'm grateful."

I guess it hasn't hurt that in most things, money-wise at least, I'm actually a pretty easy touch. There was a time in recent years when I added everything up and it turned out I was responsible for forty-two people. Maybe that doesn't sound like much to an executive at a General Motors, but for someone like me, it really seemed frightening. It wasn't like I could just oversee the manufacture of forty cars and then sell them to earn the investment back. Plus, with the people on my payroll, I'll admit that maybe only half of them were serving a legitimate purpose.

Of course, once you find yourself responsible for so many people, it's very hard to cut them loose. How did I finally reduce the head count? Well, the good Lord cut them loose. Maybe I felt a sort of obligation to help others in order to make my own success bearable to me.

I think there is probably a large element of truth in that. I felt so much of my success was based on appearance and not really on what I did. I felt less reason to be proud of my accomplishments, less deserving, so I felt I had to give it away. I don't feel that way anymore. There is real poignancy for me with the camp and what happens there—and what has been happening at home, what is happening with this memoir project. It isn't there yet, but slowly, my insulation is beginning to break down.

—≡ XIV ≡—



PAUL AT HIS EIGHTIETH-BIRTHDAY PARTY WITH HIS BROTHER, ARTHUR, AND
GRANDSON HENRY

I have a feeling that you start out your life with a certain number and certain kind of people you are friendly with. If you become older and more successful, then you start having more friends for the wrong reasons. On the one hand, I hope I'm not as paranoid as my mother was, though on the other hand, I know there are people who have taken advantage of our acquaintance so that I feel used, and I am always very wary about it.

I wonder what my old age is going to be like, because I really don't have many friends. It's hard to feel lonely in New York, but I do sometimes. When Joanne is out of town, or I've been by myself for longer than I'm

accustomed to, I realize there aren't a lot of people I can count on, and the ones I can count on are few and far between. If I wanted company, I wouldn't know who to call. Most of the people I know well are not around, so I just walk around the house and bump into things. I don't know if I'd have it any other way, because I don't seem anxious to do much about it; so it can't be all bad. Or maybe I'm just too proud to be seen making the effort.



PAUL AND HIS GRANDSONS, HENRY AND PETER, IN
2005

JOANNE WOODWARD

It takes such a long time to grow up and by the time you really get there the people usually you're growing up for are gone.

There are two parts of me out there, the ornament and the orphan. The ornament keeps doing all these things, and the orphan, the core, tries desperately to catch up, to seek an opening so he can raise his hand, speak forcibly, and say: “Let me be part of you again!”

When they do connect, we’ll discover what kind of human being they make together. It’s like the reunification of Germany—will it be a noble country this time, or are all the doubts that the cynical part asks really true?

When the orphan and the ornament become one person, will the question still be “Where is the compassion?” Will the answer be “Holy shit, there isn’t any”?

Will you have struggled through a whole book, a whole life, to find decency underneath the ornament, to see these parts together and ask “Who’s really home?” and have the answer come back: “A serial killer, that’s all.” The completion, the merging—it was hopeless, and all the impressive attributes you were looking to find in the blending of the halves were simply wiped out, your worst fears realized.

Me, I’m still wondering. And I dread the terror of discovering that the emotional anesthetic I’ve lived with will never be able to let the orphan get out front and have a life of its own. I’ve often thought what a terrible liability it would be for someone to become an actor who, like me, is somehow detached and anesthetized.

I’ve always had a sense of being an observer of my own life. Whether that’s been heightened by the Budweisers, I don’t know. I have a sense of watching something, but not of living something. It’s like looking at a photograph that’s out of focus, because the camera was shaken and the head is blurry. In fact, you can almost see three or four separate distinct images, depending on how it’s been vibrating. It’s spacey; I guess I always feel spaced out.



PAUL AND JOANNE, SOMETIME IN THE MID-
2000S

The times I have felt most together, without different parts of me splattered everywhere, are when I'm working. I might be trying to sort something out that's inventive or imaginative or original for my role. Whether I'm working alone or on my feet with people working together in a script, I feel trust, which is not a common experience for me.

Still, for me, acting gave me a sanctuary where I was able to create emotions without being penalized for having them; I could always giggle

and say, “Oh, that’s not me, that’s just the character.” It was so important to me to find a release, even in a fictional way—even if I couldn’t reach those emotions in my real experience.

What shuts down a person? That’s what I want to find out. Isn’t it that a person wants to be anesthetized because he doesn’t want to feel whatever sensation might be available? It isn’t that you don’t care, but that you’re always observing and so detached you can never get inside. The core has never had an opportunity to fly, to discover its own curiosity. It was usurped, outranked by the decoration.

The core never had a chance.

The thing that’s always fascinated me is that you think you emanate a certain color of light. You are convinced that you are a nice guy, or convinced you’re a bad guy, you’re convinced that you’re terribly complicated, whatever it is, the light that people are looking at is not the same light that you think you are emanating. They see something entirely different. To have one thing on one side of the page completely contradict something that’s on the other side of the page is interesting. It’s good theater. It presents a very clear picture that there is no clear picture. There is not a statement, or a series of statements, that simply define a person. The thing that defines a person is, I think, a set of serious contradictions that you get from splashes of color. Out of that, you have a painting. Out of that painting, you find parts that are worth looking at or not worth looking at.

The uncertainties have always been there for me. I’ve always been in pain, always needed help. And one of the reasons I decided to enter therapy (on more than one occasion) was that there were a lot of things that I was painfully unperceptive and irresponsible about. I thought I could learn to perform in a more adult way.

My therapy was about my children, marriage, drinking, acting, politics—anything you can look at. You’d examine every single action you make, and if you think it is either not well thought through or done without a plan or immature, you work to correct it in some way.

I always had the sense I cater to appearances, that I drink too much, that I don’t know how to define myself, so that I can’t define my children, either

—all of these negatives in my life. I’ve always been a private man who needs all these people around me all the time. The damage for me has come when I’ve realized what people were clamoring for was not me. It was characters invented by writers. It was the wit and ability of the authors, the wit and ability of the people who did the exploitation and selling, that had the appeal. What the public was demanding in no way resembled the decoration, let alone the orphan. Do people think that I’m William Faulkner’s Ben Quick? Or Hud? Or Butch Cassidy? Or Frank Galvin in *The Verdict*? Or any of the other parts I’ve played? It’s a shell that’s photographed onscreen, chased by the fans and garnering all the glory. While whoever is really inside me, the core, stays unexplored, uncomfortable, and unknown.

STEWART STERN: Are you angry now, at anything?

PAUL: I think I’m angry at getting old. I’m not going to age gracefully.

I only have a few firm convictions. I don’t believe in a hereafter. I don’t believe in resurrection. I’m not a mystic or a supernaturalist. But I am convinced that this is only a dress rehearsal. And when I die and they put me in that box down into the ground, someone is going to yell, “Cut!” Then a director will say, “Okay, let’s go back to the number-one position, let’s get the cameras back there and shoot that scene all over again.” And my box will open up again and some other life will be continued or pursued. I actually think I’ll die seven or eight times.

It will all turn out to be some kind of joke.



JOANNE IN THE EARLY 1980S. PHOTO BY ALOMA
GRUSKOFF



PAUL,
1976



AFTERWORD

STEWART STERN: Joanne, who do you think understands Paul?

JOANNE WOODWARD NEWMAN: The girls understand him better than he thinks they do.

The interviews in this book took place from 1986 to 1991. Dad was in his early sixties when they started and seemed to want to put it all out there. To hear and be heard by his family and friends with no holds barred. Ultimately, it was a snapshot in time—and for sure a pivotal one of realization and reflection. It wasn't the end of the story, though; in some ways, it was the beginning. He evolved immensely in the last quarter of his life; he became more present and reveled in giving back. It was an incredible gift to our family, and the world benefited from it.

Although he didn't focus on awards, he won a lot of them later in life. After ten nominations, he won an Oscar for *The Color of Money*. He also was given the Jean Hersholt Humanitarian Award (which was probably more important to him), the FDR Freedom from Want Medal (with Mom), as well as the Kennedy Center Honor (with Mom as well). The brilliant film editor Dede Allen said, "I was so shocked that the Academy would give him a lifetime achievement award. They usually seem to do it when they

either expect someone might not be working again or someone to die. He was so graceful the way he handled it. He did it with humor, and yet I sensed an edge to his voice, particularly when he said, ‘I hope my best work is ahead of me.’”

It was. He continued to choose roles that inspired him and delighted in working with Mom again to make *Mr. and Mrs. Bridge*. He did his best to surround himself with wonderful cast members who wanted to spend time rehearsing and enjoying their craft. He had such fun making *Nobody's Fool*, *Road to Perdition*, and especially *CARS* (for his grandchildren). He continued to search for another great script to make with Bob Redford, but they could never find a project to follow *The Sting* and *Butch Cassidy and the Sundance Kid*. That was a big disappointment to both, I believe. Remarkably, after a dare from Mom, and at the ripe old age of seventy-seven (his words, not mine), Dad went back to the stage after a thirty-eight year hiatus. He played the Stage Manager in a production of *Our Town* at the Westport Country Playhouse, our hometown theater. After a short run, the show went straight to Broadway! After seeing Mom go back to her roots many times, it was a treat to see Pop do the same.

Dad also got incredible joy from being behind the wheel of a race car. He was a very competitive person and had finally found a sport he excelled at—some would say, very much so! He began driving while making the film *Winning*, and never stopped. He raced in the Sports Car Club of America (SCCA) as well as professionally and won numerous championships. At the age of seventy, he even finished first at the Rolex 24 Hours of Daytona, landing him in the *Guinness Book of World Records* as the oldest winner of a professionally sanctioned race. He also teamed up with Carl Haas to form Newman-Haas Racing, one of the most successful teams in CART (Championship Auto Racing Teams) and IndyCar history, winning eight championships with Mario and Michael Andretti, Nigel Mansell, and Sebastien Bourdais. He rarely missed a race and loved being at the track to help in any way he could, even just cheering the drivers on. They were his “peeps.” He loved everything about the racing community, and many of the drivers and team owners became his closest friends. He

won his last race at Lime Rock Park, one of his favorite courses, at eighty-two, about a year before he passed away.

Dad had a lot of reasons to consider himself extremely lucky. He talked about that all the time. With the success of his charitable food company (including one of the first dedicated lines of organics), he went full throttle (pardon the pun) into philanthropy. Dad was always generous beyond words. Even his accountant used to say, “Paul is the most financially generous man that I know. He doesn’t discuss why he’s giving—I just see the end result of what he’s done, and it’s done very often anonymously, which to me is the true test of a philanthropist. I’ve never seen anything quite like it.” His obituary in *The Economist* noted he was “the most generous individual, relative to his income, in the twentieth-century history of the United States.” He was also incredibly loyal to his friends and would help beyond what most people would do. I know of a few times he gave up part of his salary to his costars and directors to level the playing field. He strove for fairness in all things.

When visiting an ailing friend in the hospital, Dad met many families with seriously ill children, and he thought this too wasn’t fair, so it came to him—he would create a place where these children could get back to being kids again and, as he said, “raise a little hell.” That idea, over thirty years ago, launched the Hole in the Wall Gang Camp, where kids could escape the fear and isolation of their illness. After realizing no one camp could serve all the children who needed it, he created what is now known as the SeriousFun Children’s Network, which has grown to thirty camps and programs around the world, free to all who participate. That is what he was like: when he saw a problem, he wouldn’t just talk about it, he would do something. In 2005, at eighty, he engaged in another important issue: water. Building on a lifelong commitment to environmental issues, he cofounded Safe Water Network, which collaborates with others to bring safe water to the two billion people around the world who lack this most basic need. He was never idle, forever finding ways to make a difference in people’s lives.

He passed this philosophy along to his family: when you are lucky enough to have a good life, then you should give back. One of my favorite

quotes from Dad is, “I’m not looking for sainthood. I just happen to think that in life we need to be a little like the farmer who puts back into the soil more than he takes out.” There are few people who knew Dad who weren’t inspired by that simple idea. He put it into practice with grace and humility. Ultimately, he saw philanthropy as his greatest legacy.

A final thought...

Dad was certainly one of a kind. What a silly expression, but it’s so true. He never stopped learning or trying to better himself and the world around him. His family, friends, work, and passions are what fed his soul and made him better. He never stopped reaching for that elusive “excellence” he always spoke about—in his acting, his racing, his philanthropy...not to mention the burgers he made on the grill. We were so fortunate to have him in our lives and are doing our best to learn from his successes and failures, as children do. Even now, so many years after he passed, we can still hear him in our heads: all the good advice, the bad jokes, and unwavering encouragement.

It was often a blessing—and sometimes a bit of a curse—to have a father so revered by so many, but in the end, he was surrounded by his family as we said our final goodbyes. It will never be enough, though: there is always so much more to be said, to be argued over, to be understood on both sides, and we miss him terribly every day. He was the glue that held us together. So again, this offering is for all of us—his family, friends, and anyone who takes the time to read this book. The process of putting it together has certainly been an education, and I hope it will help inspire all of us into the future. You can’t ask for more than that.

Clea Newman Soderlund

EDITOR'S NOTE

Paul Newman's first-person memoir is based on the numerous recorded conversations that were taped between him and Stewart Stern in 1986 and 1991.

In adapting this dialogue into this text, careful attention has been paid to accurately reflecting Newman's side of these conversations. Though Paul and Stewart's talks followed no obvious chronology, the material here has been largely restructured in a chronological fashion. While some quotes have been conflated and reorganized for narrative effect, and while some language has been added for the sake of clarity, this account represents an accurate if condensed adaptation of the Newman/Stern transcripts.

Newman left no specific instructions about how he'd eventually want this material to be constructed. Nevertheless, the spirit and tenor of his conversations has been preserved.

INDEX

The page numbers in this index refer to the printed version of the book. Each link will take you to the beginning of the corresponding print page. You may need to scroll forward from that location to find the corresponding reference on your e-reader.

Page numbers in *italics* refer to illustrations.

[A](#) [B](#) [C](#) [D](#) [E](#) [F](#) [G](#) [H](#) [I](#) [J](#) [K](#) [L](#) [M](#) [N](#) [O](#) [P](#) [Q](#) [R](#) [S](#) [T](#) [U](#) [V](#) [W](#) [X](#)
[Y](#) [Z](#)

A

Academy Awards, [144](#), [175–76](#), [202](#), [205](#), [285–86](#); Newman's nominations, [144](#), [175–76](#), [285](#); Newman's win, [285–86](#)

Actor's Cues, [92](#)

Actors Studio, [89](#), [95–99](#), [108](#), [138](#), [205](#)

agents, [92–93](#); movie, [106](#), [184](#); theater, [92–93](#)

Allen, Dede, [156](#), [176](#), [177](#), [181](#), [182](#), [285](#)

Altman, Robert, [220](#), [222](#), [247](#)

Andretti, Mario, [228](#), [286](#)

Andretti, Michael, [286](#)

Andrews, Julie, [215](#)

Angeli, Pier, [265](#)

Anouilh, Jean, *Antigone*, [60–61](#)

anticommunist red scare, [125](#), [139](#)

Antigone, [60–61](#)

anti-Semitism, [32–35](#)

Arizona, [207–8](#)

Athens, [193](#), [195](#)

Austen, Howard, [186](#), [192](#), [194](#), [196](#)

auto racing, [135–36](#), [223–33](#), [247](#), [248](#), [257](#), [286–87](#)

Axelrod, Irving, [223–24](#), [241](#)

B

Baby Want a Kiss, [94](#), [97](#)

Baker, Joe Don, [209](#)

Barrymore, Diana, [262–65](#)

Barrymore, John, [262](#)

Battler, The, [113–15](#)

Beatty, Warren, [216](#)

Beeler, Joe, [50](#)

Beethoven, [90–92](#)

Belfry Players, [72–76](#), [84](#)

Ben-Hur, [196](#)

Benny, Jack, [31](#), [34](#)

Bland, Dorothy, [90](#)

Bonnie and Clyde, [176](#)

Booke, Sorrell, [90–91](#)

Boone, Richard, [207–8](#)

Bourdais, Sebastien, [286](#)

Brady, Tommy, [40](#)

Brando, Marlon, [92](#), [95](#), [125](#), [130](#), [133](#), [186](#), [238](#), [252](#), [264](#); in *On the Waterfront*, [125–27](#)

Broadway, [90–93](#), [96](#); agents, [92–93](#); Newman on, [90–105](#), [110–12](#), [144–49](#), [286](#)

Brockman, Michael, [130](#), [155](#), [233](#), [248](#)

Brooks, Richard, [141–43](#), [144](#), [149](#)

Brown, David, [214](#)

Budweiser, [274](#), [275](#)

Buffalo Bill, [247](#)

Bunker Hill, USS, [47](#)

Burnham, Dr. Rhoda, [170](#)

Burton, Richard, [107](#), [233](#)

Busch, August, [274–75](#)

Butch Cassidy and the Sundance Kid, [61](#), [171](#), [176](#), [212–19](#), [237](#), [246](#),
[258](#), [286](#)

C

C.C. Pyle and the Bunion Derby, [164](#), [165–66](#), [167](#)

Cannes, [129](#)

Cape Cod, [51–52](#), [262–63](#)

CARS, [286](#)

Carter, Elinor Woodward, [123](#)

Carter, Jimmy, [133–35](#)

Carter, Robert, [123](#)

Cassavetes, John, [116](#)

Cat on a Hot Tin Roof, [141–44](#), [183](#), [218](#), [251](#)

CBS, [92](#)

Championship Auto Racing Teams (CART), [286](#)

Charley's Aunt, [59](#), [63](#), [67](#), [71](#)

Chicago, [72](#), [189–90](#)

Cilento, Diane, [208](#)

Cleveland, [3](#), [9–10](#), [11](#), [15](#), [29](#), [34](#), [57](#), [82](#), [83](#), [85](#), [87](#)

Cleveland *Plain Dealer*, [9](#), [56](#), [70](#)

Cleveland Play House, [57](#), [58](#), [69](#)

Cleveland Press, [10](#)

Clift, Montgomery, [92](#), [149](#)

Coe, Fred, [114](#)

Colla, Richard, [258](#)

Color of Money, The, [176](#), [221](#), [285](#)

Columbia, [204](#)

Connery, Sean, [208](#)

Connolly, Bob, [65](#)

Considine, John, [166–67](#)

Cool Hand Luke, [176](#), [209–11](#)

Corsaro, Frank, [95](#), [180](#)

Costigan, James, [94](#)

Cowan, Warren, [152](#), [180](#), [200](#), [239](#)

Cristofer, Michael, *C.C. Pyle and the Bunion Derby*, [164](#)

Cruise, Tom, [179](#), [221](#), [250](#)

Curtis, Tony, [33](#)

Cyrano de Bergerac, [76](#)

D

Dance, Milton, [40–46](#)

Dean, James, [95](#), [108](#), [109](#), [113](#), [265](#); death of, [113](#), [115](#), [116](#); Newman and, [109–9](#), [113–15](#)

Death of Billy the Kid, The, [185](#)

Democratic Party, [185–91](#)

Depression, [8](#), [34](#)

Desperate Hours, The, [111](#), [125](#), [141](#), [264](#)

de Wilde, Brandon, [157](#), [206](#)

Directors Guild, [258](#)

Dog Day Afternoon, [259](#)

Douglas, Kirk, [33](#)

Douglas, Melvyn, [175–76](#)

Downey, Doug, [69](#)

Drowning Pool, The, [209](#)

E

East of Eden, [108](#), [109](#), [265](#)

Economist, The, [287](#)

Effect of Gamma Rays on Man-in-the-Moon Marigolds, [177](#)

Eisley, Tony, [124](#)

Elkind, Henry, [276](#), [277](#), [286](#)

Elkind, Peter, [277](#), [286](#)

El Toro (dog), [137–38](#)

Emmanuelle, [100](#)

Ethan Frome, [76](#)

Exodus, [153–54](#), [204](#)

F

Falconer, Bruce, [272](#)

Faulkner, William, [136](#), [281](#)

FDR Freedom from Want Medal, [285](#)

Fetzco, Jewell, [22](#), [24](#)

Fields, Freddie, [212](#)

Filippi, Pat, [45–46](#), [52](#)

Fitzgerald, F. Scott, *The Great Gatsby*, [21](#)

Fitzgerald, Jim “Fitzy,” [224–28](#)

Foreman, John, [107](#), [138](#), [177](#), [183](#), [212–19](#), [236](#); Newman and, [212–18](#), [233–34](#), [255–59](#)

Foreman, Linda, [214](#)

Foreman, Paul, [212](#)

Forman, Bert, [55](#)

Franciosa, Tony, [138](#), [186](#)

Frank, Harriet, [203](#)

Front Page, The, [59](#)

Frye, Virgil, [186](#)

G

Gable, Clark, [203](#)

Gazzara, Ben, [95](#), [99](#)

Glass Menagerie, The, [84](#), [221](#)

Gloeckler, Joan, [42–43](#)

Goldman, Bill, [213](#)

Goldstone, James, [132](#), [231–32](#)

Goldwater, Barry, [187](#)

Goss, Dick, [21–22](#)

Graziano, Rocky, [115–17](#)

Great Waldo Pepper, The, [171](#)

Greece, [193–95](#)

Green, Walon, [200](#)

Guam, [46–48](#)

Guinness Book of World Records, [286](#)

H

Haas, Carl, [286](#)

Hara, Mary, [111](#)

Harburg, Yip, [92](#)

Harper, [184](#)

Harris, Julie, [95](#)

Harry & Son, [179](#)

Harvard University, [68](#)

Hawaii, [32](#), [36–37](#), [40–47](#), [49](#)

Hearn, Sam, [31](#)

Hemingway, Ernest, [113](#)

Hemingway's Adventures of a Young Man, [138](#)

Hill, George Roy, [61](#), [171](#), [192](#), [212–18](#), [231](#), [239–46](#); Newman and, [212–18](#), [239–46](#), [258](#), [270](#)

Hitchcock, Alfred, [253](#)

Hole in the Wall Gang Camp, [268](#), [272–75](#), [287](#)

Hollywood, [105–9](#), [111](#), [113](#), [130](#), [140](#); anti-Semitism in, [33](#); studio system, [130](#), [183–85](#)

Hombre, [138](#), [206–8](#), [253](#)

Hopper, Dennis, [209](#)

Hopper, Hedda, [144](#)

Hotchner, A. E., [169](#), [271](#)

Hud, [138](#), [157](#), [175](#), [203–6](#)

Hunter, Chris, [255](#)

Hunter, Jeffrey, [255](#)

Hustler, The, [175](#), [200–203](#)

Huston, John, [139](#), [234–38](#), [259](#); Newman and, [234–38](#)

Huston, Walter, [246](#)

I

Indianapolis Athletic Club, [229](#)

IndyCar, [286](#)

Inge, William, [92](#), [99](#), [157](#); *Picnic*, [98](#)

IRS, [223–24](#)

Israel, [153](#)

Ives, Burl, [143](#), [144](#)

J

Jackson, Anne, [60](#), [95](#)

Japan, [43](#), [47–49](#)

Jean Hersholt Humanitarian Award, [285](#)

John Loves Mary, [73](#)

Johnson, Lyndon B., [187](#), [188](#), [189](#)

Johnson, Van, [73](#), [141](#)

Judaism, [4](#), [8](#), [11](#), [12](#), [23](#), [31–35](#), [85](#)

Judgment at Nuremberg, [175](#)

K

Kazan, Elia, [95](#), [108](#), [125–27](#), [144–49](#), [182](#); Newman and, [127](#), [144–49](#), [182](#)

Keeler, Bush, [34](#)

Kelly, Grace, [220](#)

Kennedy, George, [176](#)

Kennedy, Robert, [189](#), [190](#)

Kennedy Center Honor, [285](#)

Kenyon College, [32](#), [50](#), [53–54](#), [54](#), [55–72](#), [164–66](#); Newman's acting career at, [56–60](#), [60](#), [61–72](#)

Kenyon College Revue, [67–70](#), [74](#)

Kenyon Collegian, The, [62](#), [70](#)

Kohner, Paul, [236](#)

L

Ladd, Allan, Jr., [220](#)

Laura, [262](#)

Laurie, Piper, [202–3](#)

Leonard, Elmore, [206](#)

Levy, Ed, [103–4](#)

Liebling, William, [98](#)

Liebling-Wood Agency, [92–93](#), [98](#)

Life and Times of Judge Roy Bean, The, [234–38](#), [259](#)

Life magazine, [70](#)

Lilies of the Field, [176](#)

Logan, Josh, [98–99](#), [105](#)

London, [153](#)

Long Hot Summer, The, [99](#), [136–40](#), [141](#), [203](#), [204](#)

Los Angeles, [105–9](#), [111](#), [140](#), [152](#), [164](#), [197](#), [265](#)

Lowe, Edmund, [240](#)

Lowe, K. Elmo, [57](#)

Lumet, Sidney, [183](#), [259–62](#); Newman and, [259–62](#)

M

Mackintosh Man, The, [234](#)

Maine, [34](#)

Malden, Karl, [111](#), [125–26](#); Newman and, [125–26](#)

Mann, Thomas, *Tonio Kröger*, [95–96](#)

Mansell, Nigel, [286](#)

March, Fredric, [253](#)

March of Time, The, [93](#)

Marcus Welby, M.D., [169–70](#)

Margaret, Princess, [253](#)

Martin, Jim, [35](#), [118–19](#)

Martin, Randy, [51–52](#)

MCA, [92](#), [184](#), [203](#)

McCarthy, Gene, [188–91](#)

McCarthyism, [125](#), [139](#)

McMullan, Frank, [88](#), [89](#), [91](#)

McMurtry, Larry, [203](#)

McQueen, Steve, [209](#), [212](#), [213](#), [252](#)

Meeker, Ralph, [98](#), [105](#)

Meisner, Sanford, [259](#)

Merrick, Jim, [92](#)

Method acting, [95](#)

Mexico, [122](#)

MGM, [106](#), [116](#), [141](#), [183](#), [203](#)

Michael, Jim, [58](#), [59](#), [165](#)

Midnight Cowboy, [176](#)

Milius, John, [236](#)

Miller, Moe, [124](#)

Morris, Maynard, [92–93](#), [105](#), [107](#)

Mostel, Zero, [139](#)

movies, [105–9](#); agents, [106](#), [184](#); Hollywood studio system, [130](#), [183–85](#); Newman's career in, [105–17](#), [125–27](#), [136–49](#), [153–54](#), [175–84](#), [200–222](#), [229–48](#), [257–62](#), [286](#); *see also specific movies*

Mr. and Mrs. Bridge, [129](#), [286](#)

Murray, Don, [141](#)

N

Nagler, Alois, [89](#)

Naval Air Corps, [39–50](#)

NBC, [92](#)

Neal, Patricia, [175–76](#), [205](#); Newman and, [205–6](#)

New Haven, [82–93](#)

Newman, Arthur, Jr., [4–5](#), [5](#), [6–7](#), [7](#), [8](#), [11](#), [18](#), [21](#), [24](#), [29](#), [31](#), [42](#), [78](#), [80](#), [123](#), [172](#), [173](#), [197](#), [198](#), [216](#), [232](#), [253](#), [276](#)

Newman, Arthur, Sr., [3–10](#), [10](#), [11–13](#), [13](#), [14–25](#), [37](#); drinking of, [15–17](#), [68](#); illness and death of, [15](#), [77–81](#), [86](#); as a Jew, [33–34](#); marriage to Tress, [4–8](#), [11–25](#), [33–34](#), [78–81](#); relationship with son Paul, [15–25](#), [33–35](#), [42](#), [68–69](#), [76–81](#), [86](#), [162](#)

Newman, Babette, [16](#), [24](#), [198](#)

Newman, Clea, [153](#), [156](#), [159](#), [160](#), [170](#), [173](#), [175](#), [267](#), [288](#)

Newman, Joanne Woodward, *see* [Woodward, Joanne](#)

Newman, Joe (J. S.), [3](#), [8–10](#), [56](#), [57](#), [79](#), [80](#)

Newman, Lucille, [15](#), [17](#), [24](#), [129](#), [198](#)

Newman, Melissa “Lissy,” [150](#), [156](#), [159](#), [160](#), [170](#); childhood, of, [156](#)

Newman, Nell, [150](#), [151](#), [155](#), [156](#), [159](#), [160](#), [170](#), [241](#); birth of, [150](#);
childhood of, [150–58](#)

Newman, Patty, [136](#), [172–73](#)

Newman, Paul, [5](#), [7](#), [18](#), [28](#), [31](#), [38](#), [41](#), [48](#), [54](#), [60](#), [94](#), [97](#), [101](#),
[114](#), [134](#), [147](#), [155](#), [159](#), [160](#), [213](#), [216](#), [230](#), [253](#), [256](#), [267](#),
[276](#), [277](#), [279](#), [283](#); Academy Award nominations, [144](#), [175–76](#),
[285](#); Academy Award win, [285–86](#); acting style and insights, [59](#), [96–](#)
[97](#), [145–49](#), [198–99](#), [204–5](#), [210–11](#), [217](#), [221](#), [235–36](#), [240](#),
[259–62](#), [280–81](#); at Actors Studio, [89](#), [95–99](#), [108](#), [138](#); affair with
Joanne Woodward, [98–105](#), [111–22](#); auto racing and, [135–36](#), [223–](#)
[33](#), [247](#), [248](#), [257](#), [286–87](#); in Belfry Players, [72–76](#), [84](#); birth of,
[3](#), [12](#); *A Brief Biographical Encomium*, [70–71](#); on Broadway, [90–](#)
[105](#), [110–12](#), [144–49](#), [286](#); in *Butch Cassidy and the Sundance Kid*,
[212–19](#), [246](#); in *Cat on a Hot Tin Roof*, [141–44](#); charity of, [268–75](#),
[287–88](#); childhood of, [3–25](#), [26–35](#), [112](#), [269](#); in college, [30](#), [32](#),
[35](#), [37](#), [50](#), [53–72](#), [82–84](#); color blindness of, [37–38](#); as a cook,
[156](#), [271](#); in *Cool Hand Luke*, [209–11](#); death of, [287](#), [288](#); death of
son Scott, [164–74](#); as a director, [157–58](#), [164–66](#), [176–82](#), [257–59](#);
divorce from Jackie, [122–24](#), [136](#), [171](#); drinking of, [17–18](#), [38](#), [45–](#)
[50](#), [53–55](#), [59](#), [63–66](#), [120](#), [249–67](#), [275](#), [281](#); education of, [19–](#)
[20](#), [26–27](#), [30](#), [32](#), [37](#), [50](#), [53–72](#), [82–93](#); in *Exodus*, [153–54](#); fame

and success of, [107](#), [120](#), [128–36](#), [144](#), [158](#), [166](#), [170](#), [171](#), [194](#), [275](#), [277](#), [281](#); as a father, [18](#), [19](#), [76](#), [83–84](#), [87](#), [97](#), [121](#), [123](#), [150–74](#), [255](#), [267](#), [288](#); first movie, [105–10](#); as a grandfather, [276](#), [277](#), [286](#); in *Hombre*, [206–8](#); in *Hud*, [203–6](#); in *The Hustler*, [200–203](#); Jewish roots of, [4](#), [8](#), [31–35](#), [85](#); in *The Life and Times of Judge Roy Bean*, [234–38](#), [259](#); in *The Long, Hot Summer*, [136–40](#); marriage to Jackie Witte, [74–78](#), [82–87](#), [89–93](#), [96](#), [97](#), [100–105](#), [111–13](#), [117](#), [120–23](#), [150–51](#), [161](#), [168](#); marriage to Joanne Woodward, [51–52](#), [122–24](#), [132](#), [136–40](#), [150–74](#), [177](#), [181](#), [185](#), [193–96](#), [202](#), [214](#), [234](#), [248](#), [257–59](#); million dollar salary, [233](#); movie career of, [105–17](#), [125–27](#), [136–49](#), [153–54](#), [175–84](#), [200–222](#), [229–48](#), [257–62](#), [286](#); in *Mr. and Mrs. Bridge*, [129–30](#), [286](#); in the Navy, [37–51](#), [54](#); in *Our Town*, [286](#); as a philanthropist and humanitarian, [252](#), [268–75](#), [287–88](#); physical appearance of, [26–27](#), [31](#), [50](#), [91](#), [110](#), [131](#), [22](#), [205](#), [232](#), [239–40](#), [275](#); in *Picnic*, [97](#), [98–99](#), [102–5](#), [107](#), [120](#), [148](#); political views of, [133–35](#), [185–92](#), [287–88](#); practical jokes of, [244–46](#); press on, [119](#), [135–36](#), [167](#), [252](#); relationship with his brother, [4–7](#), [21](#), [29](#), [42](#), [232](#), [253–54](#); relationship with his father, [15–25](#), [33–35](#), [42](#), [68–69](#), [76–81](#), [86](#), [162](#); relationship with his mother, [4–6](#), [12–25](#), [29–30](#), [57](#), [77–81](#), [85–86](#), [111](#), [147](#), [196–98](#), [252](#); sauna and, [251–52](#), [254](#); sexuality of, [27–30](#), [65](#), [99–102](#), [126](#), [137](#), [139–40](#), [198–99](#), [204](#); in *The Silver Chalice*, [105–9](#), [110](#), [111](#); in *Slap Shot*, [241–46](#); in *Somebody Up There Likes Me*, [115–17](#); stage career of, [30](#), [33](#), [56–71](#), [72–76](#), [83–105](#), [110–12](#), [144–49](#), [184](#), [262–65](#), [286](#); in *The Sting*, [239–41](#); vs. studio contract system, [183–85](#); in summer-stock theater, [72–76](#); in *Sweet Bird of Youth*, [144–49](#), [233](#); on television, [83](#), [113–15](#), [249–50](#); in therapy, [117](#), [281](#); in *The Verdict*, [221–22](#), [259–62](#), [281](#); virginity lost by, [30](#); wedding to Joanne, [123](#), [140](#); in *Winning*, [229–34](#), [286](#); women and, [27–30](#), [42–43](#), [53–55](#), [65](#), [73–78](#), [98–105](#),

[131](#), [137](#), [202](#), [204–6](#); World War II service, [30](#), [32](#), [36–51](#); at Yale School of Drama, [82–84](#), [86](#), [88–93](#)

Newman, Scott, [18](#), [25](#), [76](#), [156](#), [159](#), [160](#), [161–63](#), [163](#), [164–74](#); acting career of, [169–70](#), [171](#), [172](#); birth of, [82](#), [83–84](#), [87](#), [150–51](#); childhood of, [87–89](#), [93](#), [112](#), [123](#), [150–51](#), [156](#), [161](#), [170](#), [171](#); death of, [164–74](#); relationship with his father, [156](#), [158](#), [161–74](#), [255](#)

Newman, Stephanie, [121](#), [123](#), [159](#), [160](#); childhood of, [155–57](#)

Newman, Susan, [112](#), [123](#), [159](#), [160](#), [168](#)

Newman, Teresa (Tress), [4–8](#), [11–13](#), [13](#), [14–25](#), [31](#), [38](#), [48](#), [123](#), [129](#), [147](#), [199](#); death of, [136](#); marriage to Arthur, [4–8](#), [11–25](#), [33–34](#), [78–81](#); personality of, [12–25](#), [79–80](#), [85–86](#), [196](#); relationship with son Paul, [4–6](#), [12–25](#), [29–30](#), [57](#), [77–81](#), [85–86](#), [111](#), [147](#), [196–98](#), [252](#)

Newman-Foreman Company, [258](#)

Newman-Haas Racing, [286](#)

Newman-Sharp racing team, [224–29](#)

Newman's Laundry, [62](#)

Newman's Own, [169](#), [271–72](#), [287](#); salad dressing, [271–72](#)

Newman-Stern Co., [3](#), [8–11](#), [15](#), [42](#), [53](#), [77–79](#), [81–82](#), [85](#), [86](#)

New Mexico, [206](#)

New Orleans, [137](#)

New York, [60](#), [92–97](#), [116](#), [152](#), [196](#), [201](#)

New York Film Critics Award, [258](#)

New York Post, [128](#)

New York Times, The, [180](#)

Nicholson, Jack, [238](#)

Night of the Iguana, The, [236](#)

Nixon, Anne Knoll, [91](#)

Nixon, Richard, [191](#)

Nobody's Fool, [286](#)

North, Charlie, [263](#)

O

Ohio University, [30](#), [32](#), [37–38](#), [38](#), [53](#)

Olivier, Laurence, [73](#)

O'Neal, Frederick, [115](#)

On the Waterfront, [33](#), [125–27](#)

opera, [12–14](#)

Oregon, [49](#), [50](#), [257](#), [258](#)

Our Town, [286](#)

Outrage, The, [138](#), [216](#)

Oxnard Air Base, [39](#)

P

Page, Geraldine, [95](#)

Palm Springs, [241–44](#)

Paramount Pictures, [204](#)

Paris, [129–30](#), [153](#)

Paris Blues, [138](#)

Park, Arthur, [106](#)

Parsons, Estelle, [178](#)

Pearl Harbor, [36–37](#), [40](#), [42](#), [49](#)

Penn, Arthur, [113](#)

Pentagon Papers, [187](#)

philanthropy, [252](#), [268–75](#), [287–88](#)

Picnic, [97](#), [98–99](#), [102–5](#), [107](#), [120](#), [124](#), [136](#), [148](#)

Pocket Money, [209](#)

Poitier, Sidney, [175](#)

Pollock, Jackson, [249](#)

Preminger, Otto, [153–54](#), [204](#)

press, [128](#), [144](#); on Newman, [119](#), [135–36](#), [167](#), [252](#)

Priscilla Beach Theatre, Plymouth, Massachusetts, [262](#)

Q

Quintet, [220](#)

R

R.U.R., [59](#), [60](#)

race relations, [186–87](#), [190](#), [206](#)

Rachel, Rachel, [157–58](#), [176–82](#), [188](#), [258](#)

Rack, The, [116](#)

radio, [83](#)

Rattray, Dorothy, [63–65](#)

Ravetch, Irving, [203](#)

Redford, Robert, [61](#), [212](#); in *Butch Cassidy and the Sundance Kid*, [212](#), [217–19](#); Newman and, [212](#), [217–19](#), [286](#)

Rice, Jim, [120](#)

Rich, Shirley, [178](#)

Risky Business, [179](#)

Ritt, Martin, [138–40](#), [203–6](#), [215](#); Newman and, [138–40](#), [203–6](#)

Road Atlanta, [224](#)

Road to Perdition, [286](#)

Robe, The, [107](#)

Roberts, Meade, [107](#), [109](#), [264](#)

Rogers, Wayne, [209](#)

Rogers & Cowan, [152](#)

Rolex 24 Hours of Daytona, [286](#)

Rooney, Mickey, [141](#)

Roosevelt, Eleanor, [185](#)

Rosenberg, Stuart, [209–11](#), [215](#); Newman and, [209–11](#)

Rossen, Bob, [202](#)

Rule, Janice, [105](#), [120](#), [124](#)

Rush, Barbara, [255](#)

S

Safe Water Network, [287–88](#)

Sahl, Mort, [251–52](#)

Saint, Eva Marie, [153–54](#)

St. George and the Dragon, [57–58](#)

Saville, Victor, [106](#), [108](#)

Schell, Maximilian, [175](#)

Schreiber, Elsa, [108](#)

Schulberg, Budd, [127](#)

Sea Girt, New Jersey, [111–12](#)

Seattle, [49](#), [50](#)

SeriousFun Children's Network, [287](#)

Serpico, [259](#)

Shaker Heights, Ohio, [3–25](#), [26–35](#), [42](#), [68](#), [82](#)

Shakespeare, William, [58](#), [59](#), [90](#), [91](#); *The Taming of the Shrew*, [50](#), [59–60](#)

Shaw, Bob, [239](#)

Shaw, George Bernard, [59](#), [91](#)

Silver Chalice, The, [105–9](#), [110](#), [111](#), [183](#), [265](#)

Slap Shot, [171](#), [241–46](#)

Smith, C. Ray, [63](#), [67–69](#)

Soderlund, Clea Newman, *see* [Newman, Clea](#)

Somebody Up There Likes Me, [115–17](#), [265](#)

Sometimes a Great Notion, [257–59](#)

Spiegel, Sam, [33](#), [125](#), [126](#)

Sports Car Club of America (SCCA), [225–29](#), [286–87](#)

Stack, Robert, [39](#)

Stanley, Kim, [95](#), [105](#)

Stanton, Harry Dean, [209](#), [210](#)

Stern, Stewart, [16](#), [22](#), [95](#), [100](#), [133](#), [157](#), [181](#), [192](#), [215](#), [222](#), [244](#),
[246](#), [266](#), [270](#), [274](#), [285](#)

Sting, The, [171](#), [218](#), [239–41](#), [286](#)

Strasberg, Lee, [95](#), [205](#)

Streetcar Named Desire, A, [125](#)

Stripper, The, [157](#)

Sweet Bird of Youth (film), [149](#)

Sweet Bird of Youth (play), [127](#), [144–49](#), [184](#), [233](#)

Szell, Joan, [93](#)

T

Taming of the Shrew, The, [50](#), [59–60](#)

Taps, [179](#)

Taylor, Elizabeth, [141–42](#), [233](#); in *Cat on a Hot Tin Roof*, [141–44](#), [218](#);
Newman and, [142–43](#), [218](#)

Taylor, Robert, [141](#)

television, [83](#), [92](#), [105](#); Newman on, [83](#), [113–15](#), [249–50](#)

Texas, [204](#)

theater, [92–93](#); agents, [92–93](#); Newman's career in, [30](#), [33](#), [56–71](#), [72–76](#), [83–105](#), [110–12](#), [144–49](#), [184](#), [262–65](#), [286](#); *see also specific plays*

Three Faces of Eve, The, [152](#)

Todd, Mike, [142](#), [143](#)

Torn Curtain, [253](#)

Towering Inferno, The, [149](#)

Trans Am car racing, [135](#)

12 Angry Men, [259](#)

20th Century-Fox, [113](#), [183](#), [214–16](#)

U

United Artists, [154](#)

United Nations, [133–35](#); Conference on Nuclear Disarmament (1978), [133](#), [134](#)

Universal Pictures, [231](#), [241](#), [242](#), [243](#)

V

Vallee, Rudy, [118](#)

Venice Film Festival, [204](#)

Verdict, The, [183](#), [221–22](#), [259–62](#), [281](#)

Vidal, Gore, [19](#), [185](#), [192–96](#), [250](#); *Julian*, [195](#); *Washington, D.C.*, [195](#)

Vietnam War, [187–89](#), [190](#)

W

Wagner, Robert, [184](#), [223](#), [229](#), [242](#)

Waite, Ralph, [209](#)

Wallace, George, [186](#)

Wallach, Eli, [95](#)

Ward, David, [239](#), [240](#)

Warner Bros., [106](#), [107](#), [108](#), [113](#), [183–84](#)

Wasserman, Lew, [184](#)

Webber, Robert, [157](#), [205](#), [251](#)

Weingarten, Larry, [143](#)

Welch, Connie, [89](#)

Welles, Orson, [136](#), [138–39](#)

Westport, Connecticut, [152](#), [160](#), [225](#), [236–37](#), [255](#), [286](#)

Westport Country Playhouse, [286](#)

When Time Ran Out..., [231](#)

Wilcox, Robert, [262–65](#)

Willens, Harold, [188](#), [191](#), [247](#)

Williams, Tennessee, [92](#); *Cat on a Hot Tin Roof*, [141](#); *Sweet Bird of Youth*, [144–48](#)

Winning, [132](#), [184](#), [223](#), [229–34](#), [286](#)

Winters, Jonathan, [64](#)

Wise, Robert, [115](#), [116](#), [215](#)

Witte, Jackie, [73–74](#), [74](#), [75–78](#), [84](#), [168](#); death of son Scott, [168–69](#); divorce from Newman, [122–24](#), [136](#), [171](#); marriage to Newman, [74–78](#), [82–87](#), [89–93](#), [96](#), [97](#), [100–105](#), [111–12](#), [113](#), [117](#), [120–23](#), [150–51](#), [161](#), [168](#)

Wood, Audrey, [98](#)

Woodstock Players, [76](#)

Woodward, Frances, [123](#), [201](#)

Woodward, Joanne, [57](#), [94](#), [97](#), [98–99](#), [114](#), [120](#), [124](#), [141](#), [151](#), [159](#), [160](#), [167](#), [173](#), [175](#), [198](#), [230](#), [244](#), [278](#), [279](#), [282](#), [285](#); acting career of, [98](#), [124–26](#), [129–30](#), [136–40](#), [151](#), [176–82](#), [223](#), [286](#); affair with Newman, [98–105](#), [111–22](#); in *The Long, Hot Summer*, [136–40](#); marriage to Newman, [51–52](#), [122–24](#), [132](#), [136–40](#), [150–74](#), [177](#), [181](#), [185](#), [193–96](#), [202](#), [214](#), [234](#), [248](#), [257–59](#); as a mother, [150–74](#); in *Mr. and Mrs. Bridge*, [129–30](#), [286](#); Newman's drinking and, [257–59](#); in *Rachel, Rachel*, [176–82](#); sexuality of, [99–102](#), [137](#), [139–40](#); wedding to Newman, [123](#), [140](#)

Woodward, Wade, [123](#), [201](#)

World War I, [10–11](#)

World War II, [6](#), [9](#), [30](#), [32](#), [36–50](#)

Wright, Alan, [120–21](#)

Writers Guild, [240](#)

Wusa, [209](#)

Y

Yale School of Drama, [82–84](#), [86](#), [88–93](#)

Yale University, [38](#), [39](#), [68](#), [82](#)

Yerkes Observatory, [72–73](#)

Yiddish, [31](#)

Young Democrats, [187](#)

Z

Zale, Tony, [118](#)

Zanuck, Dick, [214](#), [216](#)

PHOTOGRAPHIC CREDITS

© Album / Alamy Stock Photo: [1](#)

© Photo by Philippe Halsman © Philippe Halsman Estate 2022: [2](#)

© Newman Family Collection: [3](#), [4](#), [5](#), [6](#), [7](#), [8](#), [9](#), [10](#), [11](#), [12](#), [13](#), [14](#), [15](#),
[16](#), [17](#), [18](#), [19](#), [20](#), [21](#), [22](#), [23](#), [24](#), [25](#), [26](#)

© Newman Family Collection. Photographer Aloma Gruskoff: [27](#)

© Newman Family Collection. Photographer Kas Heppner: [28](#)

© Newman Family Collection. Photographer unknown: [29](#), [30](#), [31](#), [32](#),
[33](#), [34](#), [35](#), [36](#), [37](#), [38](#), [39](#)

© Stewart Stern/Newman Family Collection: [40](#), [41](#), [42](#)

A NOTE ABOUT THE AUTHORS

PAUL NEWMAN was an actor, film director, race car driver, and entrepreneur. A ten-time Oscar nominee, Newman won an Academy Award for Best Actor for *The Color of Money*. He was also the recipient of numerous other awards, including a BAFTA Award, three Golden Globe Awards, a Screen Actors Guild Award, an Emmy Award, the Cecil B. de Mille Award, and the Jean Hersholt Humanitarian Award. His films include *The Hustler*, *Hud*, *Harper*, *Cool Hand Luke*, *Butch Cassidy and the Sundance Kid*, *The Sting*, *The Verdict*, *Mr. and Mrs. Bridge*, *Nobody's Fool*, *Road to Perdition*, and Disney-Pixar's *Cars*, where he was both a consultant on the film and the voice of Doc Hudson. As a race car driver, Newman won several national championships; he is listed in *The Guinness Book of World Records* as the oldest winner of a professionally sanctioned race at seventy years old, finishing first in his class at the Rolex 24 at Daytona Beach. As a political activist and humanitarian, he raised and donated nearly \$1 billion to many charities. Newman had six children and was married to Oscar-winning actress Joanne Woodward for fifty years. He died in 2008 at the age of eighty-three.

STEWART STERN was a screenwriter and a longtime friend of Paul Newman's. He is best known for writing the screenplay for the films *Rebel Without a Cause*, *The Rack*, and *Rachel, Rachel*.

A NOTE ABOUT THE EDITOR/COMPILER

DAVID ROSENTHAL is a former publisher of Simon & Schuster, as well as of Villard Books and the Blue Rider Press, which he founded. He has worked as a journalist, magazine editor, and publishing executive for more than forty years.

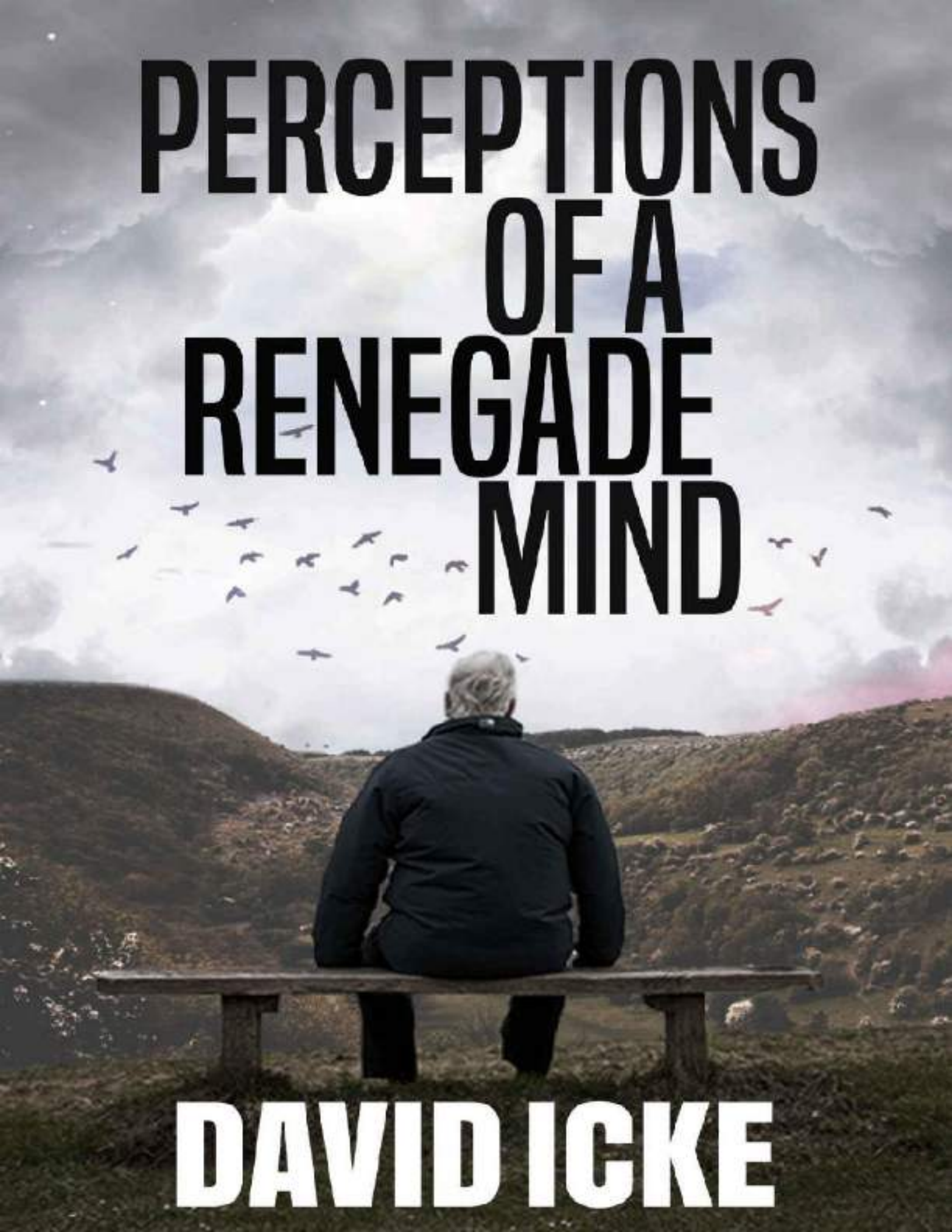


***What's next on
your reading list?***

**Discover your next
great read!**

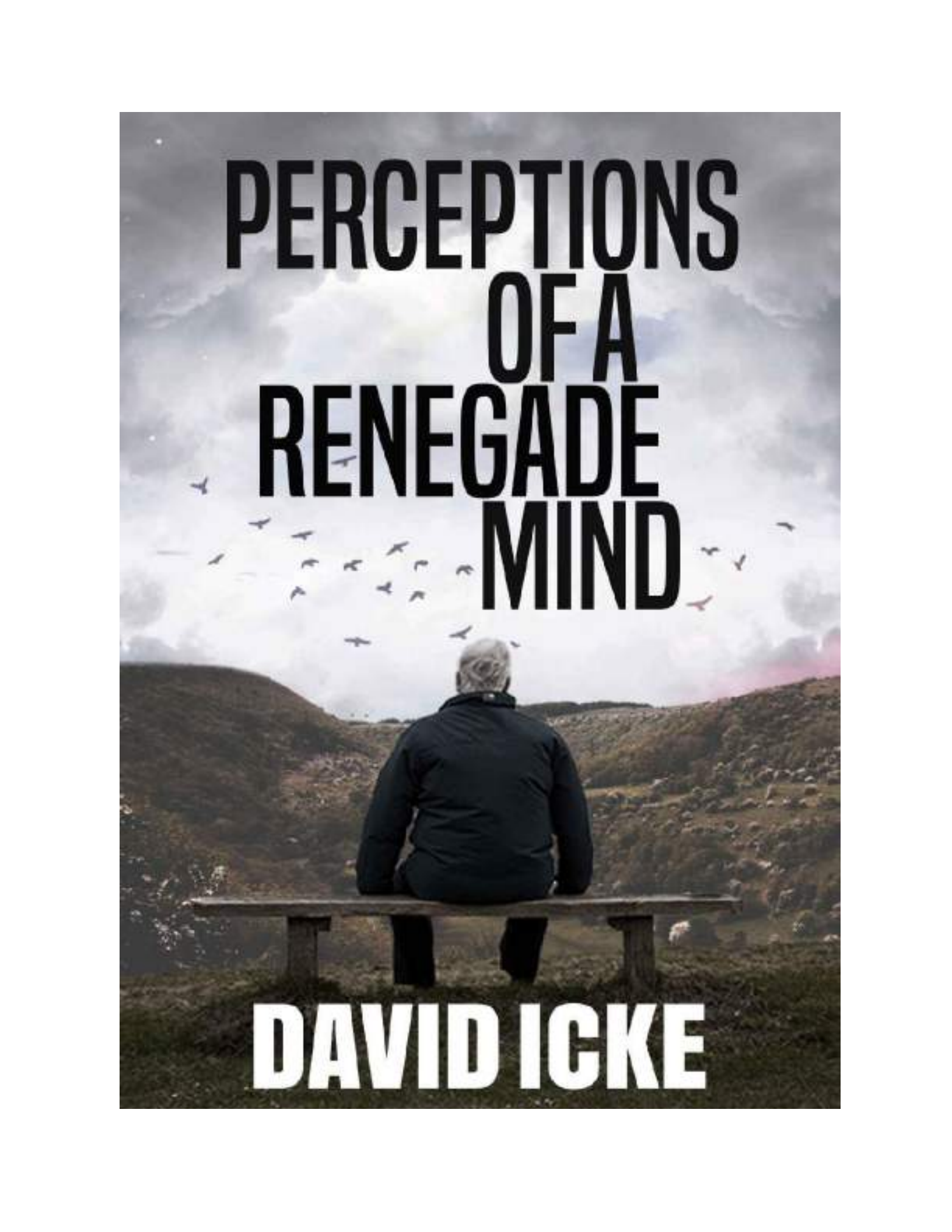
**Get personalized book picks and up-to-date news about this
author.**

Sign up now.

A person with grey hair, seen from behind, is sitting on a wooden bench. They are wearing a dark jacket and looking out over a landscape of rolling hills. The sky is filled with a large flock of birds in flight, and the clouds are dramatic and grey. The overall mood is contemplative and expansive.

PERCEPTIONS OF A RENEGADE MIND

DAVID ICKE



PERCEPTIONS OF A RENEGADE MIND

DAVID ICKE

PERCEPTIONS OF A RENEGADE MIND



ickonic
publishing

First published in July 2021.

ickonic
publishing

**New Enterprise House
St Helens Street
Derby
DE1 3GY
UK**

email: gareth.icke@davidicke.com

Copyright © 2021 David Icke

No part of this book may be reproduced in any form without permission from the Publisher, except for the quotation of brief passages in criticism

Cover Design: Gareth Icke
Book Design: Neil Hague

**British Library Cataloguing-in
Publication Data**

A catalogue record for this book is
available from the British Library

eISBN 978-18384153-1-0

PERCEPTIONS OF A RENEGADE MIND



DAVID ICKE

Dedication:

To Freeeeedom!

ICKONIC

THE ALTERNATIVE

NEW. DIFFERENT. REVOLUTIONARY

**HUNDREDS OF CUTTING EDGE DOCUMENTARIES,
FEATURE FILMS, SERIES & PODCASTS.**

SIGN UP NOW AT ICKONIC.COM

THE LIFE STORY OF DAVID ICKE

RENEGADE

THE FEATURE LENGTH FILM



AVAILABLE NOW AT DAVIDICKE.COM

Renegade:

Adjective

‘Having rejected tradition: Unconventional.’

Merriam-Webster Dictionary

Acquiescence to tyranny is the death of the spirit

You may be 38 years old, as I happen to be. And one day, some great opportunity stands before you and calls you to stand up for some great principle, some great issue, some great cause. And you refuse to do it because you are afraid ... You refuse to do it because you want to live longer ... You're afraid that you will lose your job, or you are afraid that you will be criticised or that you will lose your popularity, or you're afraid that somebody will stab you, or shoot at you or bomb your house; so you refuse to take the stand.

Well, you may go on and live until you are 90, but you're just as dead at 38 as you would be at 90. And the cessation of breathing in your life is but the belated announcement of an earlier death of the spirit.

Martin Luther King

**How the few control the many and always have – the many do
whatever they're told**

'Forward, the Light Brigade!'
Was there a man dismayed?
Not though the soldier knew
Someone had blundered.
Theirs not to make reply,
Theirs not to reason why,
Theirs but to do and die.
Into the valley of Death
Rode the six hundred.

Cannon to right of them,
Cannon to left of them,
Cannon in front of them
Volleyed and thundered;
Stormed at with shot and shell,
Boldly they rode and well,
Into the jaws of Death,
Into the mouth of hell
Rode the six hundred

Alfred Lord Tennyson (1809-1892)

The mist is lifting slowly
I can see the way ahead
And I've left behind the empty streets
That once inspired my life
And the strength of the emotion
Is like thunder in the air
'Cos the promise that we made each other
Haunts me to the end

The secret of your beauty
And the mystery of your soul
I've been searching for in everyone I meet
And the times I've been mistaken
It's impossible to say
And the grass is growing
Underneath our feet

The words that I remember
From my childhood still are true
That there's none so blind
As those who will not see
And to those who lack the courage
And say it's dangerous to try
Well they just don't know
That love eternal will not be denied

I know you're out there somewhere
Somewhere, somewhere
I know you're out there somewhere

Somewhere you can hear my voice
I know I'll find you somehow
Somehow, somehow
I know I'll find you somehow
And somehow I'll return again to you

The Moody Blues

Are you a gutless wonder - or a Renegade Mind?

Monuments put from pen to paper,
Turns me into a gutless wonder,
And if you tolerate this,
Then your children will be next.
Gravity keeps my head down,
Or is it maybe shame ...

Manic Street Preachers

Rise like lions after slumber
In unvanquishable number.
Shake your chains to earth like dew
Which in sleep have fallen on you.
Ye are many – they are few.

Percy Shelley

Contents

CHAPTER 1	'I'm thinking' – Oh, but <i>are</i> you?
CHAPTER 2	Renegade perception
CHAPTER 3	The Pushbacker sting
CHAPTER 4	'Covid': The calculated catastrophe
CHAPTER 5	There <i>is no</i> 'virus'
CHAPTER 6	Sequence of deceit
CHAPTER 7	War on your mind
CHAPTER 8	'Reframing' insanity
CHAPTER 9	We must have it? So what is it?
CHAPTER 10	Human 2.0
CHAPTER 11	Who controls the Cult?
CHAPTER 12	Escaping Wetiko
POSTSCRIPT	
APPENDIX	Cowan-Kaufman-Morell Statement on Virus Isolation
BIBLIOGRAPHY	
INDEX	

CHAPTER ONE

I'm thinking' – Oh, but *are* you?

Think for yourself and let others enjoy the privilege of doing so too
Voltaire

French-born philosopher, mathematician and scientist René Descartes became famous for his statement in Latin in the 17th century which translates into English as: 'I think, therefore I am.'

On the face of it that is true. Thought reflects perception and perception leads to both behaviour and self-identity. In that sense 'we' are what we think. But who or what is doing the thinking and is thinking the only route to perception? Clearly, as we shall see, 'we' are not always the source of 'our' perception, indeed with regard to humanity as a whole this is rarely the case; and thinking is far from the only means of perception. Thought is the village idiot compared with other expressions of consciousness that we all have the potential to access and tap into. This has to be true when we *are* those other expressions of consciousness which are infinite in nature. We have forgotten this, or, more to the point, been manipulated to forget.

These are not just the esoteric musings of the navel. The whole foundation of human control and oppression is control of perception. Once perception is hijacked then so is behaviour which is dictated by perception. Collective perception becomes collective behaviour and collective behaviour is what we call human society. Perception is all and those behind human control know that which is

why perception is the target 24/7 of the psychopathic manipulators that I call the Global Cult. They know that if they dictate perception they will dictate behaviour and collectively dictate the nature of human society. They are further aware that perception is formed from information received and if they control the circulation of information they will to a vast extent direct human behaviour. Censorship of information and opinion has become globally Nazi-like in recent years and never more blatantly than since the illusory 'virus pandemic' was triggered out of China in 2019 and across the world in 2020. Why have billions submitted to house arrest and accepted fascistic societies in a way they would have never believed possible? Those controlling the information spewing from government, mainstream media and Silicon Valley (all controlled by the same Global Cult networks) told them they were in danger from a 'deadly virus' and only by submitting to house arrest and conceding their most basic of freedoms could they and their families be protected. This monumental and provable lie became the *perception* of the billions and therefore the *behaviour* of the billions. In those few words you have the whole structure and modus operandi of human control. Fear is a perception – False Emotion Appearing Real – and fear is the currency of control. In short ... get them by the balls (or give them the impression that you have) and their hearts and minds will follow. Nothing grips the dangly bits and freezes the rear-end more comprehensively than fear.

World number 1

There are two 'worlds' in what appears to be one 'world' and the prime difference between them is knowledge. First we have the mass of human society in which the population is maintained in coldly-calculated ignorance through control of information and the 'education' (indoctrination) system. That's all you really need to control to enslave billions in a perceptual delusion in which what are perceived to be *their* thoughts and opinions are ever-repeated mantras that the system has been downloading all their lives through 'education', media, science, medicine, politics and academia

in which the personnel and advocates are themselves overwhelmingly the perceptual products of the same repetition. Teachers and academics in general are processed by the same programming machine as everyone else, but unlike the great majority they never leave the 'education' program. It gripped them as students and continues to grip them as programmers of subsequent generations of students. The programmed become the programmers – the programmed programmers. The same can largely be said for scientists, doctors and politicians and not least because as the American writer Upton Sinclair said: 'It is difficult to get a man to understand something when his salary depends upon his not understanding it.' If your career and income depend on thinking the way the system demands then you will – bar a few free-minded exceptions – concede your mind to the Perceptual Mainframe that I call the Postage Stamp Consensus. This is a tiny band of perceived knowledge and possibility 'taught' (downloaded) in the schools and universities, pounded out by the mainstream media and on which all government policy is founded. Try thinking, and especially speaking and acting, outside of the 'box' of consensus and see what that does for your career in the Mainstream Everything which bullies, harasses, intimidates and ridicules the population into compliance. Here we have the simple structure which enslaves most of humanity in a perceptual prison cell for an entire lifetime and I'll go deeper into this process shortly. Most of what humanity is taught as fact is nothing more than programmed belief. American science fiction author Frank Herbert was right when he said: 'Belief can be manipulated. Only knowledge is dangerous.' In the 'Covid' age belief is promoted and knowledge is censored. It was always so, but never to the extreme of today.

World number 2

A 'number 2' is slang for 'doing a poo' and how appropriate that is when this other 'world' is doing just that on humanity every minute of every day. World number 2 is a global network of secret societies and semi-secret groups dictating the direction of society via

governments, corporations and authorities of every kind. I have spent more than 30 years uncovering and exposing this network that I call the Global Cult and knowing its agenda is what has made my books so accurate in predicting current and past events. Secret societies are secret for a reason. They want to keep their hoarded knowledge to themselves and their chosen initiates and to hide it from the population which they seek through ignorance to control and subdue. The whole foundation of the division between World 1 and World 2 is *knowledge*. What number 1 knows number 2 must not. Knowledge they have worked so hard to keep secret includes (a) the agenda to enslave humanity in a centrally-controlled global dictatorship, and (b) the nature of reality and life itself. The latter (b) must be suppressed to allow the former (a) to prevail as I shall be explaining. The way the Cult manipulates and interacts with the population can be likened to a spider's web. The 'spider' sits at the centre in the shadows and imposes its will through the web with each strand represented in World number 2 by a secret society, satanic or semi-secret group, and in World number 1 – the world of the seen – by governments, agencies of government, law enforcement, corporations, the banking system, media conglomerates and Silicon Valley (Fig 1 overleaf). The spider and the web connect and coordinate all these organisations to pursue the same global outcome while the population sees them as individual entities working randomly and independently. At the level of the web governments *are* the banking system *are* the corporations *are* the media *are* Silicon Valley *are* the World Health Organization working from their inner cores as one unit. Apparently unconnected countries, corporations, institutions, organisations and people are on the *same team* pursuing the same global outcome. Strands in the web immediately around the spider are the most secretive and exclusive secret societies and their membership is emphatically restricted to the Cult inner-circle emerging through the generations from particular bloodlines for reasons I will come to. At the core of the core you would get them in a single room. That's how many people are dictating the direction of human society and its transformation

through the 'Covid' hoax and other means. As the web expands out from the spider we meet the secret societies that many people will be aware of – the Freemasons, Knights Templar, Knights of Malta, Opus Dei, the inner sanctum of the Jesuit Order, and such like. Note how many are connected to the Church of Rome and there is a reason for that. The Roman Church was established as a revamp, a rebranding, of the relocated 'Church' of Babylon and the Cult imposing global tyranny today can be tracked back to Babylon and Sumer in what is now Iraq.



Figure 1: The global web through which the few control the many. (Image Neil Hague.)

Inner levels of the web operate in the unseen away from the public eye and then we have what I call the cusp organisations located at the point where the hidden meets the seen. They include a series of satellite organisations answering to a secret society founded in London in the late 19th century called the Round Table and among them are the Royal Institute of International Affairs (UK, founded in 1920); Council on Foreign Relations (US, 1921); Bilderberg Group (worldwide, 1954); Trilateral Commission (US/worldwide, 1972); and the Club of Rome (worldwide, 1968) which was created to exploit environmental concerns to justify the centralisation of global power to 'save the planet'. The Club of Rome instigated with others the human-caused climate change hoax which has led to all the 'green

new deals' demanding that very centralisation of control. Cusp organisations, which include endless 'think tanks' all over the world, are designed to coordinate a single global policy between political and business leaders, intelligence personnel, media organisations and anyone who can influence the direction of policy in their own sphere of operation. Major players and regular attenders will know what is happening – or some of it – while others come and go and are kept overwhelmingly in the dark about the big picture. I refer to these cusp groupings as semi-secret in that they can be publicly identified, but what goes on at the inner-core is kept very much 'in house' even from most of their members and participants through a fiercely-imposed system of compartmentalisation. Only let them know what they need to know to serve your interests and no more. The structure of secret societies serves as a perfect example of this principle. Most Freemasons never get higher than the bottom three levels of 'degree' (degree of knowledge) when there are 33 official degrees of the Scottish Rite. Initiates only qualify for the next higher 'compartment' or degree if those at that level choose to allow them. Knowledge can be carefully assigned only to those considered 'safe'. I went to my local Freemason's lodge a few years ago when they were having an 'open day' to show how cuddly they were and when I chatted to some of them I was astonished at how little the rank and file knew even about the most ubiquitous symbols they use. The mushroom technique – keep them in the dark and feed them bullshit – applies to most people in the web as well as the population as a whole. Sub-divisions of the web mirror in theme and structure transnational corporations which have a headquarters somewhere in the world dictating to all their subsidiaries in different countries. Subsidiaries operate in their methodology and branding to the same centrally-dictated plan and policy in pursuit of particular ends. The Cult web functions in the same way. Each country has its own web as a subsidiary of the global one. They consist of networks of secret societies, semi-secret groups and bloodline families and their job is to impose the will of the spider and the global web in their particular country. Subsidiary networks control and manipulate the national political system, finance, corporations, media, medicine, etc. to

ensure that they follow the globally-dictated Cult agenda. These networks were the means through which the 'Covid' hoax could be played out with almost every country responding in the same way.

The 'Yessir' pyramid

Compartmentalisation is the key to understanding how a tiny few can dictate the lives of billions when combined with a top-down sequence of imposition and acquiescence. The inner core of the Cult sits at the peak of the pyramidal hierarchy of human society (Fig 2 overleaf). It imposes its will – its agenda for the world – on the level immediately below which acquiesces to that imposition. This level then imposes the Cult will on the level below them which acquiesces and imposes on the next level. Very quickly we meet levels in the hierarchy that have no idea there even is a Cult, but the sequence of imposition and acquiescence continues down the pyramid in just the same way. 'I don't know why we are doing this but the order came from "on-high" and so we better just do it.' Alfred Lord Tennyson said of the cannon fodder levels in his poem *The Charge of the Light Brigade*: 'Theirs not to reason why; theirs but to do and die.' The next line says that 'into the valley of death rode the six hundred' and they died because they obeyed without question what their perceived 'superiors' told them to do. In the same way the population capitulated to 'Covid'. The whole hierarchical pyramid functions like this to allow the very few to direct the enormous many.

Eventually imposition-acquiescence-imposition-acquiescence comes down to the mass of the population at the foot of the pyramid. If they acquiesce to those levels of the hierarchy imposing on them (governments/law enforcement/doctors/media) a circuit is completed between the population and the handful of super-psychopaths in the Cult inner core at the top of the pyramid.

Without a circuit-breaking refusal to obey, the sequence of imposition and acquiescence allows a staggeringly few people to impose their will upon the entirety of humankind. We are looking at the very sequence that has subjugated billions since the start of 2020. Our freedom has not been taken from us. Humanity has given it

away. Fascists do not impose fascism because there are not enough of them. Fascism is imposed by the population acquiescing to fascism. Put another way allowing their perceptions to be programmed to the extent that leads to the population giving their freedom away by giving their perceptions – their mind – away. If this circuit is not broken by humanity ceasing to cooperate with their own enslavement then nothing can change. For that to happen people have to critically think and see through the lies and window dressing and then summon the backbone to act upon what they see. The Cult spends its days working to stop either happening and its methodology is systematic and highly detailed, but it can be overcome and that is what this book is all about.

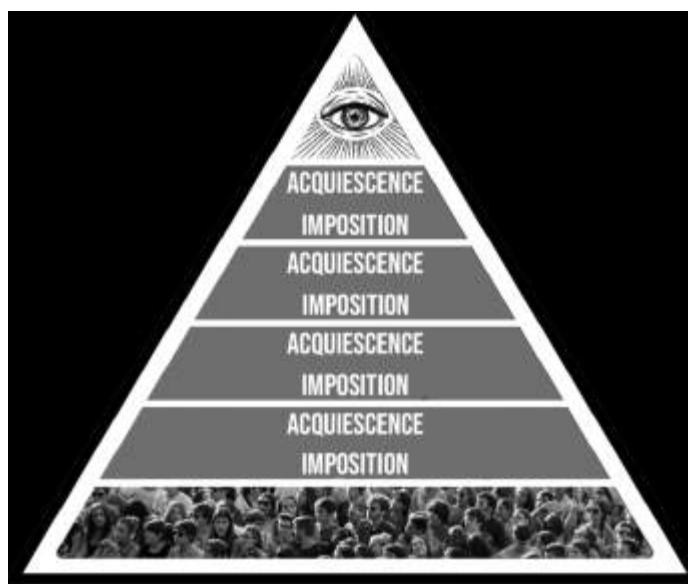


Figure 2: The simple sequence of imposition and compliance that allows a handful of people at the peak of the pyramid to dictate the lives of billions.

The Life Program

Okay, back to world number 1 or the world of the 'masses'. Observe the process of what we call 'life' and it is a perceptual download from cradle to grave. The Cult has created a global structure in which perception can be programmed and the program continually topped-up with what appears to be constant confirmation that the program is indeed true reality. The important word here is 'appears'.

This is the structure, the fly-trap, the Postage Stamp Consensus or Perceptual Mainframe, which represents that incredibly narrow band of perceived possibility delivered by the 'education' system, mainstream media, science and medicine. From the earliest age the download begins with parents who have themselves succumbed to the very programming their children are about to go through. Most parents don't do this out of malevolence and mostly it is quite the opposite. They do what they believe is best for their children and that is what the program has told them is best. Within three or four years comes the major transition from parental programming to full-blown state (Cult) programming in school, college and university where perceptually-programmed teachers and academics pass on their programming to the next generations. Teachers who resist are soon marginalised and their careers ended while children who resist are called a problem child for whom Ritalin may need to be prescribed. A few years after entering the 'world' children are under the control of authority figures representing the state telling them when they have to be there, when they can leave and when they can speak, eat, even go to the toilet. This is calculated preparation for a lifetime of obeying authority in all its forms. Reflex-action fear of authority is instilled by authority from the start. Children soon learn the carrot and stick consequences of obeying or defying authority which is underpinned daily for the rest of their life. Fortunately I daydreamed through this crap and never obeyed authority simply because it told me to. This approach to my alleged 'betters' continues to this day. There can be consequences of pursuing open-minded freedom in a world of closed-minded conformity. I spent a lot of time in school corridors after being ejected from the classroom for not taking some of it seriously and now I spend a lot of time being ejected from Facebook, YouTube and Twitter. But I can tell you that being true to yourself and not compromising your self-respect is far more exhilarating than bowing to authority for authority's sake. You don't have to be a sheep to the shepherd (authority) and the sheep dog (fear of not obeying authority).

The perceptual download continues throughout the formative years in school, college and university while script-reading 'teachers', 'academics' 'scientists', 'doctors' and 'journalists' insist that ongoing generations must be as programmed as they are. Accept the program or you will not pass your 'exams' which confirm your 'degree' of programming. It is tragic to think that many parents pressure their offspring to work hard at school to download the program and qualify for the next stage at college and university. The late, great, American comedian George Carlin said: 'Here's a bumper sticker I'd like to see: We are proud parents of a child who has resisted his teachers' attempts to break his spirit and bend him to the will of his corporate masters.' Well, the best of luck finding many of those, George. Then comes the moment to leave the formal programming years in academia and enter the 'adult' world of work. There you meet others in your chosen or prescribed arena who went through the same Postage Stamp Consensus program before you did. There is therefore overwhelming agreement between almost everyone on the basic foundations of Postage Stamp reality and the rejection, even contempt, of the few who have a mind of their own and are prepared to use it. This has two major effects. Firstly, the consensus confirms to the programmed that their download is really how things are. I mean, everyone knows that, right? Secondly, the arrogance and ignorance of Postage Stamp adherents ensure that anyone questioning the program will have unpleasant consequences for seeking their own truth and not picking their perceptions from the shelf marked: 'Things you must believe without question and if you don't you're a dangerous lunatic conspiracy theorist and a harebrained nutter'.

Every government, agency and corporation is founded on the same Postage Stamp prison cell and you can see why so many people believe the same thing while calling it their own 'opinion'. Fusion of governments and corporations in pursuit of the same agenda was the definition of fascism described by Italian dictator Benito Mussolini. The pressure to conform to perceptual norms downloaded for a lifetime is incessant and infiltrates society right

down to family groups that become censors and condemners of their own 'black sheep' for not, ironically, being sheep. We have seen an explosion of that in the 'Covid' era. Cult-owned global media unleashes its propaganda all day every day in support of the Postage Stamp and targets with abuse and ridicule anyone in the public eye who won't bend their mind to the will of the tyranny. Any response to this is denied (certainly in my case). They don't want to give a platform to expose official lies. Cult-owned-and-created Internet giants like Facebook, Google, YouTube and Twitter delete you for having an unapproved opinion. Facebook boasts that its AI censors delete 97-percent of 'hate speech' before anyone even reports it. Much of that 'hate speech' will simply be an opinion that Facebook and its masters don't want people to see. Such perceptual oppression is widely known as fascism. Even Facebook executive Benny Thomas, a 'CEO Global Planning Lead', said in comments secretly recorded by investigative journalism operation Project Veritas that Facebook is 'too powerful' and should be broken up:

I mean, no king in history has been the ruler of two billion people, but Mark Zuckerberg is ... And he's 36. That's too much for a 36-year-old ... You should not have power over two billion people. I just think that's wrong.

Thomas said Facebook-owned platforms like Instagram, Oculus, and WhatsApp needed to be separate companies. 'It's too much power when they're all one together'. That's the way the Cult likes it, however. We have an executive of a Cult organisation in Benny Thomas that doesn't know there is a Cult such is the compartmentalisation. Thomas said that Facebook and Google 'are no longer companies, they're countries'. Actually they are more powerful than countries on the basis that if you control information you control perception and control human society.

I love my oppressor

Another expression of this psychological trickery is for those who realise they are being pressured into compliance to eventually

convince themselves to believe the official narratives to protect their self-respect from accepting the truth that they have succumbed to meek and subservient compliance. Such people become some of the most vehement defenders of the system. You can see them everywhere screaming abuse at those who prefer to think for themselves and by doing so reminding the compliers of their own capitulation to conformity. 'You are talking dangerous nonsense you Covidiot!!' Are you trying to convince me or yourself? It is a potent form of Stockholm syndrome which is defined as: 'A psychological condition that occurs when a victim of abuse identifies and attaches, or bonds, positively with their abuser.' An example is hostages bonding and even 'falling in love' with their kidnappers. The syndrome has been observed in domestic violence, abused children, concentration camp inmates, prisoners of war and many and various Satanic cults. These are some traits of Stockholm syndrome listed at goodtherapy.org:

- Positive regard towards perpetrators of abuse or captor [see 'Covid'].
- Failure to cooperate with police and other government authorities when it comes to holding perpetrators of abuse or kidnapping accountable [or in the case of 'Covid' cooperating with the police to enforce and defend their captors' demands].
- Little or no effort to escape [see 'Covid'].
- Belief in the goodness of the perpetrators or kidnappers [see 'Covid'].
- Appeasement of captors. This is a manipulative strategy for maintaining one's safety. As victims get rewarded – perhaps with less abuse or even with life itself – their appeasing behaviours are reinforced [see 'Covid'].
- Learned helplessness. This can be akin to 'if you can't beat 'em, join 'em'. As the victims fail to escape the abuse or captivity, they may start giving up and soon realize it's just easier for everyone if they acquiesce all their power to their captors [see 'Covid'].

- Feelings of pity toward the abusers, believing they are actually victims themselves. Because of this, victims may go on a crusade or mission to 'save' [protect] their abuser [see the venom unleashed on those challenging the official 'Covid' narrative].
- Unwillingness to learn to detach from their perpetrators and heal. In essence, victims may tend to be less loyal to themselves than to their abuser [*definitely* see 'Covid'].

Ponder on those traits and compare them with the behaviour of great swathes of the global population who have defended governments and authorities which have spent every minute destroying their lives and livelihoods and those of their children and grandchildren since early 2020 with fascistic lockdowns, house arrest and employment deletion to 'protect' them from a 'deadly virus' that their abusers' perceptually created to bring about this very outcome. We are looking at mass Stockholm syndrome. All those that agree to concede their freedom will believe those perceptions are originating in their own independent 'mind' when in fact by conceding their reality to Stockholm syndrome they have by definition conceded any independence of mind. Listen to the 'opinions' of the acquiescing masses in this 'Covid' era and what gushes forth is the repetition of the official version of everything delivered unprocessed, unfiltered and unquestioned. The whole programming dynamic works this way. I must be free because I'm told that I am and so I think that I am.

You can see what I mean with the chapter theme of 'I'm thinking – Oh, but *are* you?' The great majority are not thinking, let alone for themselves. They are repeating what authority has told them to believe which allows them to be controlled. Weaving through this mentality is the fear that the 'conspiracy theorists' are right and this again explains the often hysterical abuse that ensues when you dare to contest the official narrative of anything. Denial is the mechanism of hiding from yourself what you don't want to be true. Telling people what they want to hear is easy, but it's an infinitely greater challenge to tell them what they would rather not be happening.

One is akin to pushing against an open door while the other is met with vehement resistance no matter what the scale of evidence. I don't want it to be true so I'll convince myself that it's not. Examples are everywhere from the denial that a partner is cheating despite all the signs to the reflex-action rejection of any idea that world events in which country after country act in exactly the same way are centrally coordinated. To accept the latter is to accept that a force of unspeakable evil is working to destroy your life and the lives of your children with nothing too horrific to achieve that end. Who the heck wants that to be true? But if we don't face reality the end is duly achieved and the consequences are far worse and ongoing than breaking through the walls of denial today with the courage to make a stand against tyranny.

Connect the dots – but how?

A crucial aspect of perceptual programming is to portray a world in which everything is random and almost nothing is connected to anything else. Randomness cannot be coordinated by its very nature and once you perceive events as random the idea they could be connected is waved away as the rantings of the tinfoil-hat brigade. You can't plan and coordinate random you idiot! No, you can't, but you can hide the coldly-calculated and long-planned behind the *illusion* of randomness. A foundation manifestation of the Renegade Mind is to scan reality for patterns that connect the apparently random and turn pixels and dots into pictures. This is the way I work and have done so for more than 30 years. You look for similarities in people, modus operandi and desired outcomes and slowly, then ever quicker, the picture forms. For instance: There would seem to be no connection between the 'Covid pandemic' hoax and the human-caused global-warming hoax and yet they are masks (appropriately) on the same face seeking the same outcome. Those pushing the global warming myth through the Club of Rome and other Cult agencies are driving the lies about 'Covid' – Bill Gates is an obvious one, but they are endless. Why would the same people be involved in both when they are clearly not connected? Oh, but they

are. Common themes with personnel are matched by common goals. The 'solutions' to both 'problems' are centralisation of global power to impose the will of the few on the many to 'save' humanity from 'Covid' and save the planet from an 'existential threat' (we need 'zero Covid' and 'zero carbon emissions'). These, in turn, connect with the 'dot' of globalisation which was coined to describe the centralisation of global power in every area of life through incessant political and corporate expansion, trading blocks and superstates like the European Union. If you are the few and you want to control the many you have to centralise power and decision-making. The more you centralise power the more power the few at the centre will have over the many; and the more that power is centralised the more power those at the centre have to centralise even quicker. The momentum of centralisation gets faster and faster which is exactly the process we have witnessed. In this way the hoaxed 'pandemic' and the fakery of human-caused global warming serve the interests of globalisation and the seizure of global power in the hands of the Cult inner-circle which is behind 'Covid', 'climate change' and globalisation. At this point random 'dots' become a clear and obvious picture or pattern.

Klaus Schwab, the classic Bond villain who founded the Cult's Gates-funded World Economic Forum, published a book in 2020, *The Great Reset*, in which he used the 'problem' of 'Covid' to justify a total transformation of human society to 'save' humanity from 'climate change'. Schwab said: 'The pandemic represents a rare but narrow window of opportunity to reflect, reimagine, and reset our world.' What he didn't mention is that the Cult he serves is behind both hoaxes as I show in my book *The Answer*. He and the Cult don't have to reimagine the world. They know precisely what they want and that's why they destroyed human society with 'Covid' to 'build back better' in their grand design. Their job is not to imagine, but to get humanity to imagine and agree with their plans while believing it's all random. It must be pure coincidence that 'The Great Reset' has long been the Cult's code name for the global imposition of fascism and replaced previous code-names of the 'New World

Order' used by Cult frontmen like Father George Bush and the 'New Order of the Ages' which emerged from Freemasonry and much older secret societies. New Order of the Ages appears on the reverse of the Great Seal of the United States as 'Novus ordo seclorum' underneath the Cult symbol used since way back of the pyramid and all seeing-eye (Fig 3). The pyramid is the hierarchy of human control headed by the illuminated eye that symbolises the force behind the Cult which I will expose in later chapters. The term 'Annuit Coeptis' translates as 'He favours our undertaking'. We are told the 'He' is the Christian god, but 'He' is not as I will be explaining.



Figure 3: The all-seeing eye of the Cult 'god' on the Freemason-designed Great Seal of the United States and also on the dollar bill.

Having you on

Two major Cult techniques of perceptual manipulation that relate to all this are what I have called since the 1990s Problem-Reaction-Solution (PRS) and the Totalitarian Tiptoe (TT). They can be uncovered by the inquiring mind with a simple question: Who benefits? The answer usually identifies the perpetrators of a given action or happening through the concept of 'he who most benefits from a crime is the one most likely to have committed it'. The Latin 'Cue bono?' – Who benefits? – is widely attributed to the Roman orator and statesman Marcus Tullius Cicero. No wonder it goes back so far when the concept has been relevant to human behaviour since

history was recorded. Problem-Reaction-Solution is the technique used to manipulate us every day by covertly creating a problem (or the illusion of one) and offering the solution to the problem (or the illusion of one). In the first phase you create the problem and blame someone or something else for why it has happened. This may relate to a financial collapse, terrorist attack, war, global warming or pandemic, anything in fact that will allow you to impose the 'solution' to change society in the way you desire at that time. The 'problem' doesn't have to be real. PRS is manipulation of perception and all you need is the population to believe the problem is real. Human-caused global warming and the 'Covid pandemic' only have to be *perceived* to be real for the population to accept the 'solutions' of authority. I refer to this technique as NO-Problem-Reaction-Solution. Billions did not meekly accept house arrest from early 2020 because there was a real deadly 'Covid pandemic' but because they perceived – believed – that to be the case. The antidote to Problem-Reaction-Solution is to ask who benefits from the proposed solution. Invariably it will be anyone who wants to justify more control through deletion of freedom and centralisation of power and decision-making.

The two world wars were Problem-Reaction-Solutions that transformed and realigned global society. Both were manipulated into being by the Cult as I have detailed in books since the mid-1990s. They dramatically centralised global power, especially World War Two, which led to the United Nations and other global bodies thanks to the overt and covert manipulations of the Rockefeller family and other Cult bloodlines like the Rothschilds. The UN is a stalking horse for full-blown world government that I will come to shortly. The land on which the UN building stands in New York was donated by the Rockefellers and the same Cult family was behind Big Pharma scalpel and drug 'medicine' and the creation of the World Health Organization as part of the UN. They have been stalwarts of the eugenics movement and funded Hitler's race-purity expert' Ernst Rudin. The human-caused global warming hoax has been orchestrated by the Club of Rome through the UN which is

manufacturing both the 'problem' through its Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change and imposing the 'solution' through its Agenda 21 and Agenda 2030 which demand the total centralisation of global power to 'save the world' from a climate hoax the United Nations is itself perpetrating. What a small world the Cult can be seen to be particularly among the inner circles. The bedfellow of Problem-Reaction-Solution is the Totalitarian Tiptoe which became the Totalitarian Sprint in 2020. The technique is fashioned to hide the carefully-coordinated behind the cover of apparently random events. You start the sequence at 'A' and you know you are heading for 'Z'. You don't want people to know that and each step on the journey is presented as a random happening while all the steps strung together lead in the same direction. The speed may have quickened dramatically in recent times, but you can still see the incremental approach of the Tiptoe in the case of 'Covid' as each new imposition takes us deeper into fascism. Tell people they have to do this or that to get back to 'normal', then this and this and this. With each new demand adding to the ones that went before the population's freedom is deleted until it disappears. The spider wraps its web around the flies more comprehensively with each new diktat. I'll highlight this in more detail when I get to the 'Covid' hoax and how it has been pulled off. Another prime example of the Totalitarian Tiptoe is how the Cult-created European Union went from a 'free-trade zone' to a centralised bureaucratic dictatorship through the Tiptoe of incremental centralisation of power until nations became mere administrative units for Cult-owned dark suits in Brussels.

The antidote to ignorance is knowledge which the Cult seeks vehemently to deny us, but despite the systematic censorship to that end the Renegade Mind can overcome this by vociferously seeking out the facts no matter the impediments put in the way. There is also a method of thinking and perceiving – *knowing* – that doesn't even need names, dates, place-type facts to identify the patterns that reveal the story. I'll get to that in the final chapter. All you need to know about the manipulation of human society and to what end is still out there – *at the time of writing* – in the form of books, videos

and websites for those that really want to breach the walls of programmed perception. To access this knowledge requires the abandonment of the mainstream media as a source of information in the awareness that this is owned and controlled by the Cult and therefore promotes mass perceptions that suit the Cult. Mainstream media lies all day, every day. That is its function and very reason for being. Where it does tell the truth, here and there, is only because the truth and the Cult agenda very occasionally coincide. If you look for fact and insight to the BBC, CNN and virtually all the rest of them you are asking to be conned and perceptually programmed.

Know the outcome and you'll see the journey

Events seem random when you have no idea where the world is being taken. Once you do the random becomes the carefully planned. Know the outcome and you'll see the journey is a phrase I have been using for a long time to give context to daily happenings that appear unconnected. Does a problem, or illusion of a problem, trigger a proposed 'solution' that further drives society in the direction of the outcome? Invariably the answer will be yes and the random – *abracadabra* – becomes the clearly coordinated. So what is this outcome that unlocks the door to a massively expanded understanding of daily events? I will summarise its major aspects – the fine detail is in my other books – and those new to this information will see that the world they thought they were living in is a very different place. The foundation of the Cult agenda is the incessant centralisation of power and all such centralisation is ultimately in pursuit of Cult control on a global level. I have described for a long time the planned world structure of top-down dictatorship as the Hunger Games Society. The term obviously comes from the movie series which portrayed a world in which a few living in military-protected hi-tech luxury were the overlords of a population condemned to abject poverty in isolated 'sectors' that were not allowed to interact. 'Covid' lockdowns and travel bans anyone? The 'Hunger Games' pyramid of structural control has the inner circle of the Cult at the top with pretty much the entire

population at the bottom under their control through dependency for survival on the Cult. The whole structure is planned to be protected and enforced by a military-police state ([Fig 4](#)).

Here you have the reason for the global lockdowns of the fake pandemic to coldly destroy independent incomes and livelihoods and make everyone dependent on the 'state' (the Cult that controls the 'states'). I have warned in my books for many years about the plan to introduce a 'guaranteed income' – a barely survivable pittance – designed to impose dependency when employment was destroyed by AI technology and now even more comprehensively at great speed by the 'Covid' scam. Once the pandemic was played and lockdown consequences began to delete independent income the authorities began to talk right on cue about the need for a guaranteed income and a 'Great Reset'. Guaranteed income will be presented as benevolent governments seeking to help a desperate people – desperate as a direct result of actions of the same governments. The truth is that such payments are a trap. You will only get them if you do exactly what the authorities demand including mass vaccination (genetic manipulation). We have seen this theme already in Australia where those dependent on government benefits have them reduced if parents don't agree to have their children vaccinated according to an insane health-destroying government-dictated schedule. Calculated economic collapse applies to governments as well as people. The Cult wants rid of countries through the creation of a world state with countries broken up into regions ruled by a world government and super states like the European Union. Countries must be bankrupted, too, to this end and it's being achieved by the trillions in 'rescue packages' and furlough payments, trillions in lost taxation, and money-no-object spending on 'Covid' including constant all-medium advertising (programming) which has made the media dependent on government for much of its income. The day of reckoning is coming – as planned – for government spending and given that it has been made possible by printing money and not by production/taxation there is inflation on the way that has the

potential to wipe out monetary value. In that case there will be no need for the Cult to steal your money. It just won't be worth anything (see the German Weimar Republic before the Nazis took over). Many have been okay with lockdowns while getting a percentage of their income from so-called furlough payments without having to work. Those payments are dependent, however, on people having at least a theoretical job with a business considered non-essential and ordered to close. As these business go under because they are closed by lockdown after lockdown the furlough stops and it will for everyone eventually. Then what? The 'then what?' is precisely the idea.



Figure 4: The Hunger Games Society structure I have long warned was planned and now the 'Covid' hoax has made it possible. This is the real reason for lockdowns.

Hired hands

Between the Hunger Games Cult elite and the dependent population is planned to be a vicious military-police state (a fusion of the two into one force). This has been in the making for a long time with police looking ever more like the military and carrying weapons to match. The pandemic scam has seen this process accelerate so fast as

lockdown house arrest is brutally enforced by carefully recruited fascist minds and gormless system-servers. The police and military are planned to merge into a centrally-directed world army in a global structure headed by a world government which wouldn't be elected even by the election fixes now in place. The world army is not planned even to be human and instead wars would be fought, primarily against the population, using robot technology controlled by artificial intelligence. I have been warning about this for decades and now militaries around the world are being transformed by this very AI technology. The global regime that I describe is a particular form of fascism known as a technocracy in which decisions are not made by clueless and co-opted politicians but by unelected technocrats – scientists, engineers, technologists and bureaucrats. Cult-owned-and-controlled Silicon Valley giants are examples of technocracy and they already have far more power to direct world events than governments. They are with their censorship *selecting* governments. I know that some are calling the 'Great Reset' a Marxist communist takeover, but fascism and Marxism are different labels for the same tyranny. Tell those who lived in fascist Germany and Stalinist Russia that there was a difference in the way their freedom was deleted and their lives controlled. I could call it a fascist technocracy or a Marxist technocracy and they would be equally accurate. The Hunger Games society with its world government structure would oversee a world army, world central bank and single world cashless currency imposing its will on a microchipped population ([Fig 5](#)). Scan its different elements and see how the illusory pandemic is forcing society in this very direction at great speed. Leaders of 23 countries and the World Health Organization (WHO) backed the idea in March, 2021, of a global treaty for 'international cooperation' in 'health emergencies' and nations should 'come together as a global community for peaceful cooperation that extends beyond this crisis'. Cut the Orwellian bullshit and this means another step towards global government. The plan includes a cashless digital money system that I first warned about in 1993. Right at the start of 'Covid' the deeply corrupt Tedros

Adhanom Ghebreyesus, the crooked and merely gofer 'head' of the World Health Organization, said it was possible to catch the 'virus' by touching cash and it was better to use cashless means. The claim was ridiculous nonsense and like the whole 'Covid' mind-trick it was nothing to do with 'health' and everything to do with pushing every aspect of the Cult agenda. As a result of the Tedros lie the use of cash has plummeted. The Cult script involves a single world digital currency that would eventually be technologically embedded in the body. China is a massive global centre for the Cult and if you watch what is happening there you will know what is planned for everywhere. The Chinese government is developing a digital currency which would allow fines to be deducted immediately via AI for anyone caught on camera breaking its fantastic list of laws and the money is going to be programmable with an expiry date to ensure that no one can accrue wealth except the Cult and its operatives.



Figure 5: The structure of global control the Cult has been working towards for so long and this has been enormously advanced by the 'Covid' illusion.

Serfdom is so smart

The Cult plan is far wider, extreme, and more comprehensive than even most conspiracy researchers appreciate and I will come to the true depths of deceit and control in the chapters 'Who controls the

Cult?’ and ‘Escaping Wetiko’. Even the world that we know is crazy enough. We are being deluged with ever more sophisticated and controlling technology under the heading of ‘smart’. We have smart televisions, smart meters, smart cards, smart cars, smart driving, smart roads, smart pills, smart patches, smart watches, smart skin, smart borders, smart pavements, smart streets, smart cities, smart communities, smart environments, smart growth, smart planet ... smart *everything* around us. Smart technologies and methods of operation are designed to interlock to create a global Smart Grid connecting the entirety of human society including human minds to create a centrally-dictated ‘hive’ mind. ‘Smart cities’ is code for densely-occupied megacities of total surveillance and control through AI. Ever more destructive frequency communication systems like 5G have been rolled out without any official testing for health and psychological effects (colossal). 5G/6G/7G systems are needed to run the Smart Grid and each one becomes more destructive of body and mind. Deleting independent income is crucial to forcing people into these AI-policed prisons by ending private property ownership (except for the Cult elite). The Cult’s Great Reset now openly foresees a global society in which no one will own any possessions and everything will be rented while the Cult would own literally everything under the guise of government and corporations. The aim has been to use the lockdowns to destroy sources of income on a mass scale and when the people are destitute and in unrepayable amounts of debt (problem) Cult assets come forward with the pledge to write-off debt in return for handing over all property and possessions (solution). Everything – literally everything including people – would be connected to the Internet via AI. I was warning years ago about the coming Internet of Things (IoT) in which all devices and technology from your car to your fridge would be plugged into the Internet and controlled by AI. Now we are already there with much more to come. The next stage is the Internet of Everything (IoE) which is planned to include the connection of AI to the human brain and body to replace the human mind with a centrally-controlled AI mind. Instead of perceptions

being manipulated through control of information and censorship those perceptions would come direct from the Cult through AI. What do you think? You think whatever AI decides that you think. In human terms there would be no individual 'think' any longer. Too incredible? The ravings of a lunatic? Not at all. Cult-owned crazies in Silicon Valley have been telling us the plan for years without explaining the real motivation and calculated implications. These include Google executive and 'futurist' Ray Kurzweil who highlights the year 2030 for when this would be underway. He said:

Our thinking ... will be a hybrid of biological and non-biological thinking ... humans will be able to extend their limitations and 'think in the cloud' ... We're going to put gateways to the cloud in our brains ... We're going to gradually merge and enhance ourselves ... In my view, that's the nature of being human – we transcend our limitations.

As the technology becomes vastly superior to what we are then the small proportion that is still human gets smaller and smaller and smaller until it's just utterly negligible.

The sales-pitch of Kurzweil and Cult-owned Silicon Valley is that this would make us 'super-human' when the real aim is to make us post-human and no longer 'human' in the sense that we have come to know. The entire global population would be connected to AI and become the centrally-controlled 'hive-mind' of externally-delivered perceptions. The Smart Grid being installed to impose the Cult's will on the world is being constructed to allow particular locations – even one location – to control the whole global system. From these prime control centres, which absolutely include China and Israel, anything connected to the Internet would be switched on or off and manipulated at will. Energy systems could be cut, communication via the Internet taken down, computer-controlled driverless autonomous vehicles driven off the road, medical devices switched off, the potential is limitless given how much AI and Internet connections now run human society. We have seen nothing yet if we allow this to continue. Autonomous vehicle makers are working with law enforcement to produce cars designed to automatically pull over if they detect a police or emergency vehicle flashing from up to 100 feet away. At a police stop the car would be unlocked and the

window rolled down automatically. Vehicles would only take you where the computer (the state) allowed. The end of petrol vehicles and speed limiters on all new cars in the UK and EU from 2022 are steps leading to electric computerised transport over which ultimately you have no control. The picture is far bigger even than the Cult global network or web and that will become clear when I get to the nature of the 'spider'. There is a connection between all these happenings and the instigation of DNA-manipulating 'vaccines' (which aren't 'vaccines') justified by the 'Covid' hoax. That connection is the unfolding plan to transform the human body from a biological to a synthetic biological state and this is why synthetic biology is such a fast-emerging discipline of mainstream science. 'Covid vaccines' are infusing self-replicating synthetic genetic material into the cells to cumulatively take us on the Totalitarian Tiptoe from Human 1.0 to the synthetic biological Human 2.0 which will be physically and perceptually attached to the Smart Grid to one hundred percent control every thought, perception and deed. Humanity needs to wake up and *fast*.

This is the barest explanation of where the 'outcome' is planned to go but it's enough to see the journey happening all around us. Those new to this information will already see 'Covid' in a whole new context. I will add much more detail as we go along, but for the minutiae evidence see my mega-works, *The Answer*, *The Trigger* and *Everything You Need to Know But Have Never Been Told*.

Now – how does a Renegade Mind see the 'world'?

CHAPTER TWO

Renegade Perception

It is one thing to be clever and another to be wise

George R.R. Martin

A simple definition of the difference between a programmed mind and a Renegade Mind would be that one sees only dots while the other connects them to see the picture. Reading reality with accuracy requires the observer to (a) know the planned outcome and (b) realise that everything, but *everything*, is connected.

The entirety of infinite reality is connected – that's its very nature – and with human society an expression of infinite reality the same must apply. Simple cause and effect is a connection. The effect is triggered by the cause and the effect then becomes the cause of another effect. Nothing happens in isolation because it *can't*. Life in whatever reality is simple choice and consequence. We make choices and these lead to consequences. If we don't like the consequences we can make different choices and get different consequences which lead to other choices and consequences. The choice and the consequence are not only connected they are indivisible. You can't have one without the other as an old song goes. A few cannot control the world unless those being controlled allow that to happen – cause and effect, choice and consequence. Control – who has it and who doesn't – is a two-way process, a symbiotic relationship, involving the controller and controlled. 'They took my freedom away!!' Well, yes, but you also gave it to them. Humanity is

subjected to mass control because humanity has acquiesced to that control. This is all cause and effect and literally a case of give and take. In the same way world events of every kind are connected and the Cult works incessantly to sell the illusion of the random and coincidental to maintain the essential (to them) perception of dots that hide the picture. Renegade Minds know this and constantly scan the world for patterns of connection. This is absolutely pivotal in understanding the happenings in the world and without that perspective clarity is impossible. First you know the planned outcome and then you identify the steps on the journey – the day-by-day apparently random which, when connected in relation to the outcome, no longer appear as individual events, but as the proverbial *chain* of events leading in the same direction. I'll give you some examples:

Political puppet show

We are told to believe that politics is 'adversarial' in that different parties with different beliefs engage in an endless tussle for power. There may have been some truth in that up to a point – and only a point – but today divisions between 'different' parties are rhetorical not ideological. Even the rhetorical is fusing into one-speak as the parties eject any remaining free thinkers while others succumb to the ever-gathering intimidation of anyone with the 'wrong' opinion. The Cult is not a new phenomenon and can be traced back thousands of years as my books have documented. Its intergenerational initiatives have been manipulating events with increasing effect the more that global power has been centralised. In ancient times the Cult secured control through the system of monarchy in which 'special' bloodlines (of which more later) demanded the right to rule as kings and queens simply by birthright and by vanquishing others who claimed the same birthright. There came a time, however, when people had matured enough to see the unfairness of such tyranny and demanded a say in who governed them. Note the word – *governed* them. Not served them – *governed* them, hence government defined as 'the political direction and control exercised over the

actions of the members, citizens, or inhabitants of communities, societies, and states; direction of the affairs of a state, community, etc.' Governments exercise control over rather than serve just like the monarchies before them. Bizarrely there are still countries like the United Kingdom which are ruled by a monarch *and* a government that officially answers to the monarch. The UK head of state and that of Commonwealth countries such as Canada, Australia and New Zealand is 'selected' by who in a *single family* had unprotected sex with whom and in what order. Pinch me it can't be true. Ouch! Shit, it is. The demise of monarchies in most countries offered a potential vacuum in which some form of free and fair society could arise and the Cult had that base covered. Monarchies had served its interests but they couldn't continue in the face of such widespread opposition and, anyway, replacing a 'royal' dictatorship that people could see with a dictatorship 'of the people' hiding behind the concept of 'democracy' presented far greater manipulative possibilities and ways of hiding coordinated tyranny behind the illusion of 'freedom'.

Democracy is quite wrongly defined as government selected by the population. This is not the case at all. It is government selected by *some* of the population (and then only in theory). This 'some' doesn't even have to be the majority as we have seen so often in first-past-the-post elections in which the so-called majority party wins fewer votes than the 'losing' parties combined. Democracy can give total power to a party in government from a minority of the votes cast. It's a sleight of hand to sell tyranny as freedom. Seventy-four million Trump-supporting Americans didn't vote for the 'Democratic' Party of Joe Biden in the distinctly dodgy election in 2020 and yet far from acknowledging the wishes and feelings of that great percentage of American society the Cult-owned Biden government set out from day one to destroy them and their right to a voice and opinion. Empty shell Biden and his Cult handlers said they were doing this to 'protect democracy'. Such is the level of lunacy and sickness to which politics has descended. Connect the dots and relate them to the desired outcome – a world government run by self-appointed technocrats and no longer even elected

politicians. While operating through its political agents in government the Cult is at the same time encouraging public disdain for politicians by putting idiots and incompetents in theoretical power on the road to deleting them. The idea is to instil a public reaction that says of the technocrats: 'Well, they couldn't do any worse than the pathetic politicians.' It's all about controlling perception and Renegade Minds can see through that while programmed minds cannot when they are ignorant of both the planned outcome and the manipulation techniques employed to secure that end. This knowledge can be learned, however, and fast if people choose to get informed.

Politics may at first sight appear very difficult to control from a central point. I mean look at the 'different' parties and how would you be able to oversee them all and their constituent parts? In truth, it's very straightforward because of their structure. We are back to the pyramid of imposition and acquiescence. Organisations are structured in the same way as the system as a whole. Political parties are not open forums of free expression. They are hierarchies. I was a national spokesman for the British Green Party which claimed to be a different kind of politics in which influence and power was devolved; but I can tell you from direct experience – and it's far worse now – that Green parties are run as hierarchies like all the others however much they may try to hide that fact or kid themselves that it's not true. A very few at the top of all political parties are directing policy and personnel. They decide if you are elevated in the party or serve as a government minister and to do that you have to be a yes man or woman. Look at all the maverick political thinkers who never ascended the greasy pole. If you want to progress within the party or reach 'high-office' you need to fall into line and conform. Exceptions to this are rare indeed. Should you want to run for parliament or Congress you have to persuade the local or state level of the party to select you and for that you need to play the game as dictated by the hierarchy. If you secure election and wish to progress within the greater structure you need to go on conforming to what is acceptable to those running the hierarchy

from the peak of the pyramid. Political parties are perceptual gulags and the very fact that there are party 'Whips' appointed to 'whip' politicians into voting the way the hierarchy demands exposes the ridiculous idea that politicians are elected to serve the people they are supposed to represent. Cult operatives and manipulation has long seized control of major parties that have any chance of forming a government and at least most of those that haven't. A new party forms and the Cult goes to work to infiltrate and direct. This has reached such a level today that you see video compilations of 'leaders' of all parties whether Democrats, Republicans, Conservative, Labour and Green parroting the same Cult mantra of 'Build Back Better' and the 'Great Reset' which are straight off the Cult song-sheet to describe the transformation of global society in response to the Cult-instigated hoaxes of the 'Covid pandemic' and human-caused 'climate change'. To see Caroline Lucas, the Green Party MP that I knew when I was in the party in the 1980s, speaking in support of plans proposed by Cult operative Klaus Schwab representing the billionaire global elite is a real head-shaker.

Many parties – one master

The party system is another mind-trick and was instigated to change the nature of the dictatorship by swapping 'royalty' for dark suits that people believed – though now ever less so – represented their interests. Understanding this trick is to realise that a single force (the Cult) controls all parties either directly in terms of the major ones or through manipulation of perception and ideology with others. You don't need to manipulate Green parties to demand your transformation of society in the name of 'climate change' when they are obsessed with the lie that this is essential to 'save the planet'. You just give them a platform and away they go serving your interests while believing they are being environmentally virtuous. America's political structure is a perfect blueprint for how the two or multi-party system is really a one-party state. The Republican Party is controlled from one step back in the shadows by a group made up of billionaires and their gofers known as neoconservatives or Neocons.

I have exposed them in fine detail in my books and they were the driving force behind the policies of the imbecilic presidency of Boy George Bush which included 9/11 (see *The Trigger* for a comprehensive demolition of the official story), the subsequent 'war on terror' (war of terror) and the invasions of Afghanistan and Iraq. The latter was a No-Problem-Reaction-Solution based on claims by Cult operatives, including Bush and British Prime Minister Tony Blair, about Saddam Hussein's 'weapons of mass destruction' which did not exist as war criminals Bush and Blair well knew.



Figure 6: Different front people, different parties – same control system.

The Democratic Party has its own 'Neocon' group controlling from the background which I call the 'Democons' and here's the penny-drop – the Neocons and Democons answer to the same masters one step further back into the shadows (Fig 6). At that level of the Cult the Republican and Democrat parties are controlled by the same people and no matter which is in power the Cult is in power. This is how it works in almost every country and certainly in Britain with Conservative, Labour, Liberal Democrat and Green parties now all on the same page whatever the rhetoric may be in their feeble attempts to appear different. Neocons operated at the time of Bush through a think tank called The Project for the New American Century which in September, 2000, published a document entitled *Rebuilding America's Defenses: Strategies, Forces, and Resources*

For a New Century demanding that America fight ‘multiple, simultaneous major theatre wars’ as a ‘core mission’ to force regime-change in countries including Iraq, Libya and Syria. Neocons arranged for Bush (‘Republican’) and Blair (‘Labour Party’) to front-up the invasion of Iraq and when they departed the Democons orchestrated the targeting of Libya and Syria through Barack Obama (‘Democrat’) and British Prime Minister David Cameron (‘Conservative Party’). We have ‘different’ parties and ‘different’ people, but the same unfolding script. The more the Cult has seized the reigns of parties and personnel the more their policies have transparently pursued the same agenda to the point where the fascist ‘Covid’ impositions of the Conservative junta of Jackboot Johnson in Britain were opposed by the Labour Party because they were not fascist enough. The Labour Party is likened to the US Democrats while the Conservative Party is akin to a British version of the Republicans and on both sides of the Atlantic they all speak the same language and support the direction demanded by the Cult although some more enthusiastically than others. It’s a similar story in country after country because it’s all centrally controlled. Oh, but what about Trump? I’ll come to him shortly. Political ‘choice’ in the ‘party’ system goes like this: You vote for Party A and they get into government. You don’t like what they do so next time you vote for Party B and they get into government. You don’t like what they do when it’s pretty much the same as Party A and why wouldn’t that be with both controlled by the same force? Given that only two, sometimes three, parties have any chance of forming a government to get rid of Party B that you don’t like you have to vote again for Party A which ... you don’t like. This, ladies and gentlemen, is what they call ‘democracy’ which we are told – wrongly – is a term interchangeable with ‘freedom’.

The cult of cults

At this point I need to introduce a major expression of the Global Cult known as Sabbatian-Frankism. Sabbatian is also spelt as Sabbatean. I will summarise here. I have published major exposés

and detailed background in other works. Sabbatian-Frankism combines the names of two frauds posing as 'Jewish' men, Sabbatai Zevi (1626-1676), a rabbi, black magician and occultist who proclaimed he was the Jewish messiah; and Jacob Frank (1726-1791), the Polish 'Jew', black magician and occultist who said he was the reincarnation of 'messiah' Zevi and biblical patriarch Jacob. They worked across two centuries to establish the Sabbatian-Frankist cult that plays a major, indeed central, role in the manipulation of human society by the Global Cult which has its origins much further back in history than Sabbatai Zevi. I should emphasise two points here in response to the shrill voices that will scream 'anti-Semitism': (1) Sabbatian-Frankists are NOT Jewish and only pose as such to hide their cult behind a Jewish façade; and (2) my information about this cult has come from Jewish sources who have long realised that their society and community has been infiltrated and taken over by interloper Sabbatian-Frankists. Infiltration has been the foundation technique of Sabbatian-Frankism from its official origin in the 17th century. Zevi's Sabbatian sect attracted a massive following described as the biggest messianic movement in Jewish history, spreading as far as Africa and Asia, and he promised a return for the Jews to the 'Promised Land' of Israel. Sabbatianism was not Judaism but an inversion of everything that mainstream Judaism stood for. So much so that this sinister cult would have a feast day when Judaism had a fast day and whatever was forbidden in Judaism the Sabbatians were encouraged and even commanded to do. This included incest and what would be today called Satanism. Members were forbidden to marry outside the sect and there was a system of keeping their children ignorant of what they were part of until they were old enough to be trusted not to unknowingly reveal anything to outsiders. The same system is employed to this day by the Global Cult in general which Sabbatian-Frankism has enormously influenced and now largely controls.

Zevi and his Sabbatians suffered a setback with the intervention by the Sultan of the Islamic Ottoman Empire in the Middle East and what is now the Republic of Turkey where Zevi was located. The

Sultan gave him the choice of proving his 'divinity', converting to Islam or facing torture and death. Funnily enough Zevi chose to convert or at least appear to. Some of his supporters were disillusioned and drifted away, but many did not with 300 families also converting – only in theory – to Islam. They continued behind this Islamic smokescreen to follow the goals, rules and rituals of Sabbatianism and became known as 'crypto-Jews' or the 'Dönme' which means 'to turn'. This is rather ironic because they didn't 'turn' and instead hid behind a fake Islamic persona. The process of appearing to be one thing while being very much another would become the calling card of Sabbatianism especially after Zevi's death and the arrival of the Satanist Jacob Frank in the 18th century when the cult became Sabbatian-Frankism and plumbed still new depths of depravity and infiltration which included – still includes – human sacrifice and sex with children. Wherever Sabbatians go paedophilia and Satanism follow and is it really a surprise that Hollywood is so infested with child abuse and Satanism when it was established by Sabbatian-Frankists and is still controlled by them? Hollywood has been one of the prime vehicles for global perceptual programming and manipulation. How many believe the version of 'history' portrayed in movies when it is a travesty and inversion (again) of the truth? Rabbi Marvin Antelman describes Frankism in his book, *To Eliminate the Opiate*, as 'a movement of complete evil' while Jewish professor Gershom Scholem said of Frank in *The Messianic Idea in Judaism*: 'In all his actions [he was] a truly corrupt and degenerate individual ... one of the most frightening phenomena in the whole of Jewish history.' Frank was excommunicated by traditional rabbis, as was Zevi, but Frank was undeterred and enjoyed vital support from the House of Rothschild, the infamous banking dynasty whose inner-core are Sabbatian-Frankists and not Jews. Infiltration of the Roman Church and Vatican was instigated by Frank with many Dönme 'turning' again to convert to Roman Catholicism with a view to hijacking the reins of power. This was the ever-repeating modus operandi and continues to be so. Pose as an advocate of the religion, culture or country that you want to control and then

manipulate your people into the positions of authority and influence largely as advisers, administrators and Svengalis for those that appear to be in power. They did this with Judaism, Christianity (Christian Zionism is part of this), Islam and other religions and nations until Sabbatian-Frankism spanned the world as it does today.

Sabbatian Saudis and the terror network

One expression of the Sabbatian-Frankist Dönme within Islam is the ruling family of Saudi Arabia, the House of Saud, through which came the vile distortion of Islam known as Wahhabism. This is the violent creed followed by terrorist groups like Al-Qaeda and ISIS or Islamic State. Wahhabism is the hand-chopping, head-chopping 'religion' of Saudi Arabia which is used to keep the people in a constant state of fear so the interloper House of Saud can continue to rule. Al-Qaeda and Islamic State were lavishly funded by the House of Saud while being created and directed by the Sabbatian-Frankist network in the United States that operates through the Pentagon, CIA and the government in general of whichever 'party'. The front man for the establishment of Wahhabism in the middle of the 18th century was a Sabbatian-Frankist 'crypto-Jew' posing as Islamic called Muhammad ibn Abd al-Wahhab. His daughter would marry the son of Muhammad bin Saud who established the first Saudi state before his death in 1765 with support from the British Empire. Bin Saud's successors would establish modern Saudi Arabia in league with the British and Americans in 1932 which allowed them to seize control of Islam's major shrines in Mecca and Medina. They have dictated the direction of Sunni Islam ever since while Iran is the major centre of the Shiite version and here we have the source of at least the public conflict between them. The Sabbatian network has used its Wahhabi extremists to carry out Problem-Reaction-Solution terrorist attacks in the name of 'Al-Qaeda' and 'Islamic State' to justify a devastating 'war on terror', ever-increasing surveillance of the population and to terrify people into compliance. Another insight of the Renegade Mind is the streetwise understanding that

just because a country, location or people are attacked doesn't mean that those apparently representing that country, location or people are not behind the attackers. Often they are *orchestrating* the attacks because of the societal changes that can be then justified in the name of 'saving the population from terrorists'.

I show in great detail in *The Trigger* how Sabbatian-Frankists were the real perpetrators of 9/11 and not '19 Arab hijackers' who were blamed for what happened. Observe what was justified in the name of 9/11 alone in terms of Middle East invasions, mass surveillance and control that fulfilled the demands of the Project for the New American Century document published by the Sabbatian Neocons. What appear to be enemies are on the deep inside players on the same Sabbatian team. Israel and Arab 'royal' dictatorships are all ruled by Sabbatians and the recent peace agreements between Israel and Saudi Arabia, the United Arab Emirates (UAE) and others are only making formal what has always been the case behind the scenes. Palestinians who have been subjected to grotesque tyranny since Israel was bombed and terrorised into existence in 1948 have never stood a chance. Sabbatian-Frankists have controlled Israel (so the constant theme of violence and war which Sabbatians love) and they have controlled the Arab countries that Palestinians have looked to for real support that never comes. 'Royal families' of the Arab world in Saudi Arabia, Bahrain, UAE, etc., are all Sabbatians with allegiance to the aims of the cult and not what is best for their Arabic populations. They have stolen the oil and financial resources from their people by false claims to be 'royal dynasties' with a genetic right to rule and by employing vicious militaries to impose their will.

Satanic 'illumination'

The Satanist Jacob Frank formed an alliance in 1773 with two other Sabbatians, Mayer Amschel Rothschild (1744-1812), founder of the Rothschild banking dynasty, and Jesuit-educated fraudulent Jew, Adam Weishaupt, and this led to the formation of the Bavarian Illuminati, firstly under another name, in 1776. The Illuminati would

be the manipulating force behind the French Revolution (1789-1799) and was also involved in the American Revolution (1775-1783) before and after the Illuminati's official creation. Weishaupt would later become (in public) a Protestant Christian in archetypal Sabbatian style. I read that his name can be decoded as Adam-Weishaupt or 'the first man to lead those who know'. He wasn't a leader in the sense that he was a subordinate, but he did lead those below him in a crusade of transforming human society that still continues today. The theme was confirmed as early as 1785 when a horseman courier called Lanz was reported to be struck by lightning and extensive Illuminati documents were found in his saddlebags. They made the link to Weishaupt and detailed the plan for world takeover. Current events with 'Covid' fascism have been in the making for a very long time. Jacob Frank was jailed for 13 years by the Catholic Inquisition after his arrest in 1760 and on his release he headed for Frankfurt, Germany, home city and headquarters of the House of Rothschild where the alliance was struck with Mayer Amschel Rothschild and Weishaupt. Rothschild arranged for Frank to be given the title of Baron and he became a wealthy nobleman with a big following of Jews in Germany, the Austro-Hungarian Empire and other European countries. Most of them would have believed he was on their side.

The name 'Illuminati' came from the Zohar which is a body of works in the Jewish mystical 'bible' called the Kabbalah. 'Zohar' is the foundation of Sabbatian-Frankist belief and in Hebrew 'Zohar' means 'splendour', 'radiance', 'illuminated', and so we have 'Illuminati'. They claim to be the 'Illuminated Ones' from their knowledge systematically hidden from the human population and passed on through generations of carefully-chosen initiates in the global secret society network or Cult. Hidden knowledge includes an awareness of the Cult agenda for the world and the nature of our collective reality that I will explore later. Cult 'illumination' is symbolised by the torch held by the Statue of Liberty which was gifted to New York by French Freemasons in Paris who knew exactly what it represents. 'Liberty' symbolises the goddess worshipped in

Babylon as Queen Semiramis or Ishtar. The significance of this will become clear. Notice again the ubiquitous theme of inversion with the Statue of 'Liberty' really symbolising mass control (Fig 7). A mirror-image statute stands on an island in the River Seine in Paris from where New York Liberty originated (Fig 8). A large replica of the Liberty flame stands on top of the Pont de l'Alma tunnel in Paris where Princess Diana died in a Cult ritual described in *The Biggest Secret*. Lucifer 'the light bringer' is related to all this (and much more as we'll see) and 'Lucifer' is a central figure in Sabbatian-Frankism and its associated Satanism. Sabbatians reject the Jewish Torah, or Pentateuch, the 'five books of Moses' in the Old Testament known as Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, and Deuteronomy which are claimed by Judaism and Christianity to have been dictated by 'God' to Moses on Mount Sinai. Sabbatians say these do not apply to them and they seek to replace them with the Zohar to absorb Judaism and its followers into their inversion which is an expression of a much greater global inversion. They want to delete all religions and force humanity to worship a one-world religion – Sabbatian Satanism that also includes worship of the Earth goddess. Satanic themes are being more and more introduced into mainstream society and while Christianity is currently the foremost target for destruction the others are planned to follow.



Figure 7: The Cult goddess of Babylon disguised as the Statue of Liberty holding the flame of Lucifer the 'light bringer'.



Figure 8: Liberty's mirror image in Paris where the New York version originated.

Marx brothers

Rabbi Marvin Antelman connects the Illuminati to the Jacobins in *To Eliminate the Opiate* and Jacobins were the force behind the French Revolution. He links both to the Bund der Gerechten, or League of the Just, which was the network that inflicted communism/Marxism on the world. Antelman wrote:

The original inner circle of the Bund der Gerechten consisted of born Catholics, Protestants and Jews [Sabbatian-Frankist infiltrators], and those representatives of respective subdivisions formulated schemes for the ultimate destruction of their faiths. The heretical Catholics laid plans which they felt would take a century or more for the ultimate destruction of the church; the apostate Jews for the ultimate destruction of the Jewish religion.

Sabbatian-created communism connects into this anti-religion agenda in that communism does not allow for the free practice of religion. The Sabbatian 'Bund' became the International Communist Party and Communist League and in 1848 'Marxism' was born with the Communist Manifesto of Sabbatian assets Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels. It is absolutely no coincidence that Marxism, just a different name for fascist and other centrally-controlled tyrannies, is being imposed worldwide as a result of the 'Covid' hoax and nor that Marxist/fascist China was the place where the hoax originated. The reason for this will become very clear in the chapter 'Covid: The calculated catastrophe'. The so-called 'Woke' mentality has hijacked

traditional beliefs of the political left and replaced them with far-right make-believe 'social justice' better known as Marxism. Woke will, however, be swallowed by its own perceived 'revolution' which is really the work of billionaires and billionaire corporations feigning being 'Woke'. Marxism is being touted by Wokers as a replacement for 'capitalism' when we don't have 'capitalism'. We have cartelism in which the market is stitched up by the very Cult billionaires and corporations bankrolling Woke. Billionaires love Marxism which keeps the people in servitude while they control from the top. Terminally naïve Wokers think they are 'changing the world' when it's the Cult that is doing the changing and when they have played their vital part and become surplus to requirements they, too, will be targeted. The Illuminati-Jacobins were behind the period known as 'The Terror' in the French Revolution in 1793 and 1794 when Jacobin Maximillian de Robespierre and his Orwellian 'Committee of Public Safety' killed 17,000 'enemies of the Revolution' who had once been 'friends of the Revolution'. Karl Marx (1818-1883), whose Sabbatian creed of Marxism has cost the lives of at least 100 million people, is a hero once again to Wokers who have been systematically kept ignorant of real history by their 'education' programming. As a result they now promote a Sabbatian 'Marxist' abomination destined at some point to consume them. Rabbi Antelman, who spent decades researching the Sabbatian plot, said of the League of the Just and Karl Marx:

Contrary to popular opinion Karl Marx did not originate the Communist Manifesto. He was paid for his services by the League of the Just, which was known in its country of origin, Germany, as the Bund der Geächteten.

Antelman said the text attributed to Marx was the work of other people and Marx 'was only repeating what others already said'. Marx was 'a hired hack – lackey of the wealthy Illuminists'. Marx famously said that religion was the 'opium of the people' (part of the Sabbatian plan to demonise religion) and Antelman called his books, *To Eliminate the Opiate*. Marx was born Jewish, but his family converted to Christianity (Sabbatian modus operandi) and he

attacked Jews, not least in his book, *A World Without Jews*. In doing so he supported the Sabbatian plan to destroy traditional Jewishness and Judaism which we are clearly seeing today with the vindictive targeting of orthodox Jews by the Sabbatian government of Israel over 'Covid' laws. I don't follow any religion and it has done much damage to the world over centuries and acted as a perceptual straightjacket. Renegade Minds, however, are always asking *why* something is being done. It doesn't matter if they agree or disagree with what is happening – *why* is it happening is the question. The 'why?' can be answered with regard to religion in that religions create interacting communities of believers when the Cult wants to dismantle all discourse, unity and interaction (see 'Covid' lockdowns) and the ultimate goal is to delete all religions for a one-world religion of Cult Satanism worshipping their 'god' of which more later. We see the same 'why?' with gun control in America. I don't have guns and don't want them, but why is the Cult seeking to disarm the population at the same time that law enforcement agencies are armed to their molars and why has every tyrant in history sought to disarm people before launching the final takeover? They include Hitler, Stalin, Pol Pot and Mao who followed confiscation with violent seizing of power. You know it's a Cult agenda by the people who immediately race to the microphones to exploit dead people in multiple shootings. Ultra-Zionist Cult lackey Senator Chuck Schumer was straight on the case after ten people were killed in Boulder, Colorado in March, 2121. Simple rule ... if Schumer wants it the Cult wants it and the same with his ultra-Zionist mate the wild-eyed Senator Adam Schiff. At the same time they were calling for the disarmament of Americans, many of whom live a long way from a police response, Schumer, Schiff and the rest of these pampered clowns were sitting on Capitol Hill behind a razor-wired security fence protected by thousands of armed troops in addition to their own armed bodyguards. Mom and pop in an isolated home? They're just potential mass shooters.

Zion Mainframe

Sabbatian-Frankists and most importantly the Rothschilds were behind the creation of 'Zionism', a political movement that demanded a Jewish homeland in Israel as promised by Sabbatai Zevi. The very symbol of Israel comes from the German meaning of the name Rothschild. Dynasty founder Mayer Amschel Rothschild changed the family name from Bauer to Rothschild, or 'Red-Shield' in German, in deference to the six-pointed 'Star of David' hexagram displayed on the family's home in Frankfurt. The symbol later appeared on the flag of Israel after the Rothschilds were centrally involved in its creation. Hexagrams are not a uniquely Jewish symbol and are widely used in occult ('hidden') networks often as a symbol for Saturn (see my other books for why). Neither are Zionism and Jewishness interchangeable. Zionism is a political movement and philosophy and not a 'race' or a people. Many Jews oppose Zionism and many non-Jews, including US President Joe Biden, call themselves Zionists as does Israel-centric Donald Trump. America's support for the Israel government is pretty much a gimme with ultra-Zionist billionaires and corporations providing fantastic and dominant funding for both political parties. Former Congresswoman Cynthia McKinney has told how she was approached immediately she ran for office to 'sign the pledge' to Israel and confirm that she would always vote in that country's best interests. All American politicians are approached in this way. Anyone who refuses will get no support or funding from the enormous and all-powerful Zionist lobby that includes organisations like mega-lobby group AIPAC, the American Israel Public Affairs Committee. Trump's biggest funder was ultra-Zionist casino and media billionaire Sheldon Adelson while major funders of the Democratic Party include ultra-Zionist George Soros and ultra-Zionist financial and media mogul, Haim Saban. Some may reel back at the suggestion that Soros is an Israel-firster (Sabbatian-controlled Israel-firster), but Renegade Minds watch the actions not the words and everywhere Soros donates his billions the Sabbatian agenda benefits. In the spirit of Sabbatian inversion Soros pledged \$1 billion for a new university network to promote 'liberal values and tackle intolerance'. He made the announcement during his annual speech

at the Cult-owned World Economic Forum in Davos, Switzerland, in January, 2020, after his 'harsh criticism' of 'authoritarian rulers' around the world. You can only laugh at such brazen mendacity. How *he* doesn't laugh is the mystery. Translated from the Orwellian 'liberal values and tackle intolerance' means teaching non-white people to hate white people and for white people to loathe themselves for being born white. The reason for that will become clear.

The 'Anti-Semitism' fraud

Zionists support the Jewish homeland in the land of Palestine which has been the Sabbatian-Rothschild goal for so long, but not for the benefit of Jews. Sabbatians and their global Anti-Semitism Industry have skewed public and political opinion to equate opposing the violent extremes of Zionism to be a blanket attack and condemnation of all Jewish people. Sabbatians and their global Anti-Semitism Industry have skewed public and political opinion to equate opposing the violent extremes of Zionism to be a blanket attack and condemnation of all Jewish people. This is nothing more than a Sabbatian protection racket to stop legitimate investigation and exposure of their agendas and activities. The official definition of 'anti-Semitism' has more recently been expanded to include criticism of Zionism – a *political movement* – and this was done to further stop exposure of Sabbatian infiltrators who created Zionism as we know it today in the 19th century. Renegade Minds will talk about these subjects when they know the shit that will come their way. People must decide if they want to know the truth or just cower in the corner in fear of what others will say. Sabbatians have been trying to label me as 'anti-Semitic' since the 1990s as I have uncovered more and more about their background and agendas. Useless, gutless, fraudulent 'journalists' then just repeat the smears without question and on the day I was writing this section a pair of unquestioning repeaters called Ben Quinn and Archie Bland (how appropriate) outright called me an 'anti-Semite' in the establishment propaganda sheet, the London *Guardian*, with no supporting evidence. The

Sabbatian Anti-Semitism Industry said so and who are they to question that? They wouldn't dare. Ironically 'Semitic' refers to a group of languages in the Middle East that are almost entirely Arabic. 'Anti-Semitism' becomes 'anti-Arab' which if the consequences of this misunderstanding were not so grave would be hilarious. Don't bother telling Quinn and Bland. I don't want to confuse them, bless 'em. One reason I am dubbed 'anti-Semitic' is that I wrote in the 1990s that Jewish operatives (Sabbatians) were heavily involved in the Russian Revolution when Sabbatians overthrew the Romanov dynasty. This apparently made me 'anti-Semitic'. Oh, really? Here is a section from *The Trigger*:

British journalist Robert Wilton confirmed these themes in his 1920 book *The Last Days of the Romanovs* when he studied official documents from the Russian government to identify the members of the Bolshevik ruling elite between 1917 and 1919. The Central Committee included 41 Jews among 62 members; the Council of the People's Commissars had 17 Jews out of 22 members; and 458 of the 556 most important Bolshevik positions between 1918 and 1919 were occupied by Jewish people. Only 17 were Russian. Then there were the 23 Jews among the 36 members of the vicious Cheka Soviet secret police established in 1917 who would soon appear all across the country.

Professor Robert Service of Oxford University, an expert on 20th century Russian history, found evidence that ['Jewish'] Leon Trotsky had sought to make sure that Jews were enrolled in the Red Army and were disproportionately represented in the Soviet civil bureaucracy that included the Cheka which performed mass arrests, imprisonment and executions of 'enemies of the people'. A US State Department Decimal File (861.00/5339) dated November 13th, 1918, names [Rothschild banking agent in America] Jacob Schiff and a list of ultra-Zionists as funders of the Russian Revolution leading to claims of a 'Jewish plot', but the key point missed by all is they were not 'Jews' – they were Sabbatian-Frankists.

Britain's Winston Churchill made the same error by mistake or otherwise. He wrote in a 1920 edition of the *Illustrated Sunday Herald* that those behind the Russian revolution were part of a 'worldwide conspiracy for the overthrow of civilisation and for the reconstitution of society on the basis of arrested development, of envious malevolence, and impossible equality' (see 'Woke' today because that has been created by the same network). Churchill said there was no need to exaggerate the part played in the creation of Bolshevism and in the actual bringing about of the Russian

Revolution 'by these international and for the most part atheistical Jews' ['atheistical Jews' = Sabbatians]. Churchill said it is certainly a very great one and probably outweighs all others: 'With the notable exception of Lenin, the majority of the leading figures are Jews.' He went on to describe, knowingly or not, the Sabbatian modus operandi of placing puppet leaders nominally in power while they control from the background:

Moreover, the principal inspiration and driving power comes from the Jewish leaders. Thus Tchitcherin, a pure Russian, is eclipsed by his nominal subordinate, Litvinoff, and the influence of Russians like Bukharin or Lunacharski cannot be compared with the power of Trotsky, or of Zinovieff, the Dictator of the Red Citadel (Petrograd), or of Krassin or Radek – all Jews. In the Soviet institutions the predominance of Jews is even more astonishing. And the prominent, if not indeed the principal, part in the system of terrorism applied by the Extraordinary Commissions for Combatting Counter-Revolution has been taken by Jews, and in some notable cases by Jewesses.

What I said about seriously disproportionate involvement in the Russian Revolution by Jewish 'revolutionaries' (Sabbatians) is provable fact, but truth is no defence against the Sabbatian Anti-Semitism Industry, its repeater parrots like Quinn and Bland, and the now breathtaking network of so-called 'Woke' 'anti-hate' groups with interlocking leaderships and funding which have the role of discrediting and silencing anyone who gets too close to exposing the Sabbatians. We have seen 'truth is no defence' confirmed in legal judgements with the Saskatchewan Human Rights Commission in Canada decreeing this: 'Truthful statements can be presented in a manner that would meet the definition of hate speech, and not all truthful statements must be free from restriction.' Most 'anti-hate' activists, who are themselves consumed by hatred, are too stupid and ignorant of the world to know how they are being used. They are far too far up their own virtue-signalling arses and it's far too dark for them to see anything.

The 'revolution' game

The background and methods of the 'Russian' Revolution are straight from the Sabbatian playbook seen in the French Revolution

and endless others around the world that appear to start as a revolution of the people against tyrannical rule and end up with a regime change to more tyrannical rule overtly or covertly. Wars, terror attacks and regime overthrows follow the Sabbatian cult through history with its agents creating them as Problem-Reaction-Solutions to remove opposition on the road to world domination. Sabbatian dots connect the Rothschilds with the Illuminati, Jacobins of the French Revolution, the 'Bund' or League of the Just, the International Communist Party, Communist League and the Communist Manifesto of Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels that would lead to the Rothschild-funded Russian Revolution. The sequence comes under the heading of 'creative destruction' when you advance to your global goal by continually destroying the status quo to install a new status quo which you then also destroy. The two world wars come to mind. With each new status quo you move closer to your planned outcome. Wars and mass murder are to Sabbatians a collective blood sacrifice ritual. They are obsessed with death for many reasons and one is that death is an inversion of life. Satanists and Sabbatians are obsessed with death and often target churches and churchyards for their rituals. Inversion-obsessed Sabbatians explain the use of inverted symbolism including the *inverted* pentagram and *inverted* cross. The inversion of the cross has been related to targeting Christianity, but the cross was a religious symbol long before Christianity and its inversion is a statement about the Sabbatian mentality and goals more than any single religion.

Sabbatians operating in Germany were behind the rise of the occult-obsessed Nazis and the subsequent Jewish exodus from Germany and Europe to Palestine and the United States after World War Two. The Rothschild dynasty was at the forefront of this both as political manipulators and by funding the operation. Why would Sabbatians help to orchestrate the horrors inflicted on Jews by the Nazis and by Stalin after they organised the Russian Revolution? Sabbatians hate Jews and their religion, that's why. They pose as Jews and secure positions of control within Jewish society and play the 'anti-Semitism' card to protect themselves from exposure

through a global network of organisations answering to the Sabbatian-created-and-controlled globe-spanning intelligence network that involves a stunning web of military-intelligence operatives and operations for a tiny country of just nine million. Among them are Jewish assets who are not Sabbatians but have been convinced by them that what they are doing is for the good of Israel and the Jewish community to protect them from what they have been programmed since childhood to believe is a Jew-hating hostile world. The Jewish community is just a highly convenient cover to hide the true nature of Sabbatians. Anyone getting close to exposing their game is accused by Sabbatian place-people and gofers of 'anti-Semitism' and claiming that all Jews are part of a plot to take over the world. I am not saying that. I am saying that Sabbatians – the *real* Jew-haters – have infiltrated the Jewish community to use them both as a cover and an 'anti-Semitic' defence against exposure. Thus we have the Anti-Semitism Industry targeted researchers in this way and most Jewish people think this is justified and genuine. They don't know that their 'Jewish' leaders and institutions of state, intelligence and military are not controlled by Jews at all, but cultists and stooges of Sabbatian-Frankism. I once added my name to a pro-Jewish freedom petition online and the next time I looked my name was gone and text had been added to the petition blurb to attack me as an 'anti-Semite' such is the scale of perceptual programming.

Moving on America

I tell the story in *The Trigger* and a chapter called 'Atlantic Crossing' how particularly after Israel was established the Sabbatians moved in on the United States and eventually grasped control of government administration, the political system via both Democrats and Republicans, the intelligence community like the CIA and National Security Agency (NSA), the Pentagon and mass media. Through this seriously compartmentalised network Sabbatians and their operatives in Mossad, Israeli Defense Forces (IDF) and US agencies pulled off 9/11 and blamed it on 19 'Al-Qaeda hijackers' dominated by men from, or connected to, Sabbatian-ruled Saudi

Arabia. The '19' were not even on the planes let alone flew those big passenger jets into buildings while being largely incompetent at piloting one-engine light aircraft. 'Hijacker' Hani Hanjour who is said to have flown American Airlines Flight 77 into the Pentagon with a turn and manoeuvre most professional pilots said they would have struggled to do was banned from renting a small plane by instructors at the Freeway Airport in Bowie, Maryland, just *six weeks* earlier on the grounds that he was an incompetent pilot. The Jewish population of the world is just 0.2 percent with even that almost entirely concentrated in Israel (75 percent Jewish) and the United States (around two percent). This two percent and globally 0.2 percent refers to *Jewish* people and not Sabbatian interlopers who are a fraction of that fraction. What a sobering thought when you think of the fantastic influence on world affairs of tiny Israel and that the Project for the New America Century (PNAC) which laid out the blueprint in September, 2000, for America's war on terror and regime change wars in Iraq, Libya and Syria was founded and dominated by Sabbatians known as 'Neocons'. The document conceded that this plan would not be supported politically or publicly without a major attack on American soil and a Problem-Reaction-Solution excuse to send troops to war across the Middle East. Sabbatian Neocons said:

... [The] process of transformation ... [war and regime change] ... is likely to be a long one, absent some catastrophic and catalysing event – like a new Pearl Harbor.

Four months later many of those who produced that document came to power with their inane puppet George Bush from the long-time Sabbatian Bush family. They included Sabbatian Dick Cheney who was officially vice-president, but really de-facto president for the entirety of the 'Bush' government. Nine months after the 'Bush' inauguration came what Bush called at the time 'the Pearl Harbor of the 21st century' and with typical Sabbatian timing and symbolism 2001 was the 60th anniversary of the attack in 1941 by the Japanese Air Force on Pearl Harbor, Hawaii, which allowed President Franklin Delano Roosevelt to take the United States into a Sabbatian-

instigated Second World War that he said in his election campaign that he never would. The evidence is overwhelming that Roosevelt and his military and intelligence networks knew the attack was coming and did nothing to stop it, but they did make sure that America's most essential naval ships were not in Hawaii at the time. Three thousand Americans died in the Pearl Harbor attacks as they did on September 11th. By the 9/11 year of 2001 Sabbatians had widely infiltrated the US government, military and intelligence operations and used their compartmentalised assets to pull off the 'Al-Qaeda' attacks. If you read *The Trigger* it will blow your mind to see the utterly staggering concentration of 'Jewish' operatives (Sabbatian infiltrators) in essential positions of political, security, legal, law enforcement, financial and business power before, during, and after the attacks to make them happen, carry them out, and then cover their tracks – and I do mean *staggering* when you think of that 0.2 percent of the world population and two percent of Americans which are Jewish while Sabbatian infiltrators are a fraction of that. A central foundation of the 9/11 conspiracy was the hijacking of government, military, Air Force and intelligence computer systems in real time through 'back-door' access made possible by Israeli (Sabbatian) 'cyber security' software. Sabbatian-controlled Israel is on the way to rivalling Silicon Valley for domination of cyberspace and is becoming the dominant force in cyber-security which gives them access to entire computer systems and their passcodes across the world. Then add to this that Zionists head (officially) Silicon Valley giants like Google (Larry Page and Sergey Brin), Google-owned YouTube (Susan Wojcicki), Facebook (Mark Zuckerberg and Sheryl Sandberg), and Apple (Chairman Arthur D. Levinson), and that ultra-Zionist hedge fund billionaire Paul Singer has a \$1 billion stake in Twitter which is only nominally headed by 'CEO' pothead Jack Dorsey. As cable news host Tucker Carlson said of Dorsey: 'There used to be debate in the medical community whether dropping a ton of acid had permanent effects and I think that debate has now ended.' Carlson made the comment after Dorsey told a hearing on Capitol Hill (if you cut through his bullshit) that he

believed in free speech so long as he got to decide what you can hear and see. These 'big names' of Silicon Valley are only front men and women for the Global Cult, not least the Sabbatians, who are the true controllers of these corporations. Does anyone still wonder why these same people and companies have been ferociously censoring and banning people (like me) for exposing any aspect of the Cult agenda and especially the truth about the 'Covid' hoax which Sabbatians have orchestrated?

The Jeffrey Epstein paedophile ring was a Sabbatian operation. He was officially 'Jewish' but he was a Sabbatian and women abused by the ring have told me about the high number of 'Jewish' people involved. The Epstein horror has Sabbatian written all over it and matches perfectly their modus operandi and obsession with sex and ritual. Epstein was running a Sabbatian blackmail ring in which famous people with political and other influence were provided with young girls for sex while everything was being filmed and recorded on hidden cameras and microphones at his New York house, Caribbean island and other properties. Epstein survivors have described this surveillance system to me and some have gone public. Once the famous politician or other figure knew he or she was on video they tended to do whatever they were told. Here we go again ...when you've got them by the balls their hearts and minds will follow. Sabbatians use this blackmail technique on a wide scale across the world to entrap politicians and others they need to act as demanded. Epstein's private plane, the infamous 'Lolita Express', had many well-known passengers including Bill Clinton while Bill Gates has flown on an Epstein plane and met with him four years after Epstein had been jailed for paedophilia. They subsequently met many times at Epstein's home in New York according to a witness who was there. Epstein's infamous side-kick was Ghislaine Maxwell, daughter of Mossad agent and ultra-Zionist mega-crooked British businessman, Bob Maxwell, who at one time owned the *Daily Mirror* newspaper. Maxwell was murdered at sea on his boat in 1991 by Sabbatian-controlled Mossad when he became a liability with his

business empire collapsing as a former Mossad operative has confirmed (see *The Trigger*).

Money, money, money, funny money ...

Before I come to the Sabbatian connection with the last three US presidents I will lay out the crucial importance to Sabbatians of controlling banking and finance. Sabbatian Mayer Amschel Rothschild set out to dominate this arena in his family's quest for total global control. What is freedom? It is, in effect, choice. The more choices you have the freer you are and the fewer your choices the more you are enslaved. In the global structure created over centuries by Sabbatians the biggest decider and restrictor of choice is ... money. Across the world if you ask people what they would like to do with their lives and why they are not doing that they will reply 'I don't have the money'. This is the idea. A global elite of multi-billionaires are described as 'greedy' and that is true on one level; but control of money – who has it and who doesn't – is not primarily about greed. It's about control. Sabbatians have seized ever more control of finance and sucked the wealth of the world out of the hands of the population. We talk now, after all, about the 'One-percent' and even then the wealthiest are a lot fewer even than that. This has been made possible by a money scam so outrageous and so vast it could rightly be called the scam of scams founded on creating 'money' out of nothing and 'loaning' that with interest to the population. Money out of nothing is called 'credit'. Sabbatians have asserted control over governments and banking ever more completely through the centuries and secured financial laws that allow banks to lend hugely more than they have on deposit in a confidence trick known as fractional reserve lending. Imagine if you could lend money that doesn't exist and charge the recipient interest for doing so. You would end up in jail. Bankers by contrast end up in mansions, private jets, Malibu and Monaco.

Banks are only required to keep a fraction of their deposits and wealth in their vaults and they are allowed to lend 'money' they don't have called 'credit'. Go into a bank for a loan and if you succeed

the banker will not move any real wealth into your account. They will type into your account the amount of the agreed 'loan' – say £100,000. This is not wealth that really exists; it is non-existent, fresh-air, created-out-of-nothing 'credit' which has never, does not, and will never exist except in theory. Credit is backed by nothing except wind and only has buying power because people think that it has buying power and accept it in return for property, goods and services. I have described this situation as like those cartoon characters you see chasing each other and when they run over the edge of a cliff they keep running forward on fresh air until one of them looks down, realises what's happened, and they all crash into the ravine. The whole foundation of the Sabbatian financial system is to stop people looking down except for periodic moments when they want to crash the system (as in 2008 and 2020 ongoing) and reap the rewards from all the property, businesses and wealth their borrowers had signed over as 'collateral' in return for a 'loan' of fresh air. Most people think that money is somehow created by governments when it comes into existence from the start as a debt through banks 'lending' illusory money called credit. Yes, the very currency of exchange is a *debt* from day one issued as an interest-bearing loan. Why don't governments create money interest-free and lend it to their people interest-free? Governments are controlled by Sabbatians and the financial system is controlled by Sabbatians for whom interest-free money would be a nightmare come true. Sabbatians underpin their financial domination through their global network of central banks, including the privately-owned US Federal Reserve and Britain's Bank of England, and this is orchestrated by a privately-owned central bank coordination body called the Bank for International Settlements in Basle, Switzerland, created by the usual suspects including the Rockefellers and Rothschilds. Central bank chiefs don't answer to governments or the people. They answer to the Bank for International Settlements or, in other words, the Global Cult which is dominated today by Sabbatians.

Built-in disaster

There are so many constituent scams within the overall banking scam. When you take out a loan of thin-air credit only the amount of that loan is theoretically brought into circulation to add to the amount in circulation; but you are paying back the principle plus interest. The additional interest is not created and this means that with every 'loan' there is a shortfall in the money in circulation between what is borrowed and what has to be paid back. There is never even close to enough money in circulation to repay all outstanding public and private debt including interest. Coldly weaved in the very fabric of the system is the certainty that some will lose their homes, businesses and possessions to the banking 'lender'. This is less obvious in times of 'boom' when the amount of money in circulation (and the debt) is expanding through more people wanting and getting loans. When a downturn comes and the money supply contracts it becomes painfully obvious that there is not enough money to service all debt and interest. This is less obvious in times of 'boom' when the amount of money in circulation (and the debt) is expanding through more people wanting and getting loans. When a downturn comes and the money supply contracts and it becomes painfully obvious – as in 2008 and currently – that there is not enough money to service all debt and interest. Sabbatian banksters have been leading the human population through a calculated series of booms (more debt incurred) and busts (when the debt can't be repaid and the banks get the debtor's tangible wealth in exchange for non-existent 'credit'). With each 'bust' Sabbatian bankers have absorbed more of the world's tangible wealth and we end up with the One-percent. Governments are in bankruptcy levels of debt to the same system and are therefore owned by a system they do not control. The Federal Reserve, 'America's central bank', is privately-owned and American presidents only nominally appoint its chairman or woman to maintain the illusion that it's an arm of government. It's not. The 'Fed' is a cartel of private banks which handed billions to its associates and friends after the crash of 2008 and has been Sabbatian-controlled since it was manipulated into being in 1913 through the covert trickery of Rothschild banking agents Jacob Schiff and Paul

Warburg, and the Sabbatian Rockefeller family. Somehow from a Jewish population of two-percent and globally 0.2 percent (Sabbatian interlopers remember are far smaller) ultra-Zionists headed the Federal Reserve for 31 years between 1987 and 2018 in the form of Alan Greenspan, Bernard Bernanke and Janet Yellen (now Biden's Treasury Secretary) with Yellen's deputy chairman a Israeli-American dual citizen and ultra-Zionist Stanley Fischer, a former governor of the Bank of Israel. Ultra-Zionist Fed chiefs spanned the presidencies of Ronald Reagan ('Republican'), Father George Bush ('Republican'), Bill Clinton ('Democrat'), Boy George Bush ('Republican') and Barack Obama ('Democrat'). We should really add the pre-Greenspan chairman, Paul Adolph Volcker, 'appointed' by Jimmy Carter ('Democrat') who ran the Fed between 1979 and 1987 during the Carter and Reagan administrations before Greenspan took over. Volcker was a long-time associate and business partner of the Rothschilds. No matter what the 'party' officially in power the United States economy was directed by the same force. Here are members of the Obama, Trump and Biden administrations and see if you can make out a common theme.

Barack Obama ('Democrat')

Ultra-Zionists Robert Rubin, Larry Summers, and Timothy Geithner ran the US Treasury in the Clinton administration and two of them reappeared with Obama. Ultra-Zionist Fed chairman Alan Greenspan had manipulated the crash of 2008 through deregulation and jumped ship just before the disaster to make way for ultra-Zionist Bernard Bernanke to hand out trillions to Sabbatian 'too big to fail' banks and businesses, including the ubiquitous ultra-Zionist Goldman Sachs which has an ongoing staff revolving door operation between itself and major financial positions in government worldwide. Obama inherited the fallout of the crash when he took office in January, 2009, and fortunately he had the support of his ultra-Zionist White House Chief of Staff Rahm Emmanuel, son of a terrorist who helped to bomb Israel into being in 1948, and his ultra-Zionist senior adviser David Axelrod, chief strategist in Obama's two

successful presidential campaigns. Emmanuel, later mayor of Chicago and former senior fundraiser and strategist for Bill Clinton, is an example of the Sabbatian policy after Israel was established of migrating insider families to America so their children would be born American citizens. 'Obama' chose this financial team throughout his administration to respond to the Sabbatian-instigated crisis:

Timothy Geithner (ultra-Zionist) Treasury Secretary; Jacob J. Lew, Treasury Secretary; Larry Summers (ultra-Zionist), director of the White House National Economic Council; Paul Adolph Volcker (Rothschild business partner), chairman of the Economic Recovery Advisory Board; Peter Orszag (ultra-Zionist), director of the Office of Management and Budget overseeing all government spending; Penny Pritzker (ultra-Zionist), Commerce Secretary; Jared Bernstein (ultra-Zionist), chief economist and economic policy adviser to Vice President Joe Biden; Mary Schapiro (ultra-Zionist), chair of the Securities and Exchange Commission (SEC); Gary Gensler (ultra-Zionist), chairman of the Commodity Futures Trading Commission (CFTC); Sheila Bair (ultra-Zionist), chair of the Federal Deposit Insurance Corporation (FDIC); Karen Mills (ultra-Zionist), head of the Small Business Administration (SBA); Kenneth Feinberg (ultra-Zionist), Special Master for Executive [bail-out] Compensation. Feinberg would be appointed to oversee compensation (with strings) to 9/11 victims and families in a campaign to stop them having their day in court to question the official story. At the same time ultra-Zionist Bernard Bernanke was chairman of the Federal Reserve and these are only some of the ultra-Zionists with allegiance to Sabbatian-controlled Israel in the Obama government. Obama's biggest corporate donor was ultra-Zionist Goldman Sachs which had employed many in his administration.

Donald Trump ('Republican')

Trump claimed to be an outsider (he wasn't) who had come to 'drain the swamp'. He embarked on this goal by immediately appointing ultra-Zionist Steve Mnuchin, a Goldman Sachs employee for 17

years, as his Treasury Secretary. Others included Gary Cohn (ultra-Zionist), chief operating officer of Goldman Sachs, his first Director of the National Economic Council and chief economic adviser, who was later replaced by Larry Kudlow (ultra-Zionist). Trump's senior adviser throughout his four years in the White House was his sinister son-in-law Jared Kushner, a life-long friend of Israel Prime Minister Benjamin Netanyahu. Kushner is the son of a convicted crook who was pardoned by Trump in his last days in office. Other ultra-Zionists in the Trump administration included: Stephen Miller, Senior Policy Adviser; Avrahm Berkowitz, Deputy Adviser to Trump and his Senior Adviser Jared Kushner; Ivanka Trump, Adviser to the President, who converted to Judaism when she married Jared Kushner; David Friedman, Trump lawyer and Ambassador to Israel; Jason Greenblatt, Trump Organization executive vice president and chief legal officer, who was made Special Representative for International Negotiations and the Israeli-Palestinian Conflict; Rod Rosenstein, Deputy Attorney General; Elliot Abrams, Special Representative for Venezuela, then Iran; John Eisenberg, National Security Council Legal Adviser and Deputy Council to the President for National Security Affairs; Anne Neuberger, Deputy National Manager, National Security Agency; Ezra Cohen-Watnick, Acting Under Secretary of Defense for Intelligence; Elan Carr, Special Envoy to monitor and combat anti-Semitism; Len Khodorkovsky, Deputy Special Envoy to monitor and combat anti-Semitism; Reed Cordish, Assistant to the President, Intragovernmental and Technology Initiatives. Trump Vice President Mike Pence and Secretary of State Mike Pompeo, both Christian Zionists, were also vehement supporters of Israel and its goals and ambitions.

Donald 'free-speech believer' Trump pardoned a number of financial and violent criminals while ignoring calls to pardon Julian Assange and Edward Snowden whose crimes are revealing highly relevant information about government manipulation and corruption and the widespread illegal surveillance of the American people by US 'security' agencies. It's so good to know that Trump is on the side of freedom and justice and not mega-criminals with

allegiance to Sabbatian-controlled Israel. These included a pardon for Israeli spy Jonathan Pollard who was jailed for life in 1987 under the Espionage Act. Aviem Sella, the Mossad agent who recruited Pollard, was also pardoned by Trump while Assange sat in jail and Snowden remained in exile in Russia. Sella had 'fled' (was helped to escape) to Israel in 1987 and was never extradited despite being charged under the Espionage Act. A Trump White House statement said that Sella's clemency had been 'supported by Benjamin Netanyahu, Ron Dermer, Israel's US Ambassador, David Friedman, US Ambassador to Israel and Miriam Adelson, wife of leading Trump donor Sheldon Adelson who died shortly before. Other friends of Jared Kushner were pardoned along with Sholom Weiss who was believed to be serving the longest-ever white-collar prison sentence of more than 800 years in 2000. The sentence was commuted of Ponzi-schemer Eliyahu Weinstein who defrauded Jews and others out of \$200 million. I did mention that Assange and Snowden were ignored, right? Trump gave Sabbatians almost everything they asked for in military and political support, moving the US Embassy from Tel Aviv to Jerusalem with its critical symbolic and literal implications for Palestinian statehood, and the 'deal of the Century' designed by Jared Kushner and David Friedman which gave the Sabbatian Israeli government the green light to substantially expand its already widespread program of building illegal Jewish-only settlements in the occupied land of the West Bank. This made a two-state 'solution' impossible by seizing all the land of a potential Palestinian homeland and that had been the plan since 1948 and then 1967 when the Arab-controlled Gaza Strip, West Bank, Sinai Peninsula and Syrian Golan Heights were occupied by Israel. All the talks about talks and road maps and delays have been buying time until the West Bank was physically occupied by Israeli real estate. Trump would have to be a monumentally ill-informed idiot not to see that this was the plan he was helping to complete. The Trump administration was in so many ways the Kushner administration which means the Netanyahu administration which means the Sabbatian administration. I understand why many opposing Cult fascism in all its forms gravitated to Trump, but he

was a crucial part of the Sabbatian plan and I will deal with this in the next chapter.

Joe Biden ('Democrat')

A barely cognitive Joe Biden took over the presidency in January, 2021, along with his fellow empty shell, Vice-President Kamala Harris, as the latest Sabbatian gofers to enter the White House. Names on the door may have changed and the 'party' – the force behind them remained the same as Zionists were appointed to a stream of pivotal areas relating to Sabbatian plans and policy. They included: Janet Yellen, Treasury Secretary, former head of the Federal Reserve, and still another ultra-Zionist running the US Treasury after Mnuchin (Trump), Lew and Geithner (Obama), and Summers and Rubin (Clinton); Anthony Blinken, Secretary of State; Wendy Sherman, Deputy Secretary of State (so that's 'Biden's' Sabbatian foreign policy sorted); Jeff Zients, White House coronavirus coordinator; Rochelle Walensky, head of the Centers for Disease Control; Rachel Levine, transgender deputy health secretary (that's 'Covid' hoax policy under control); Merrick Garland, Attorney General; Alejandro Mayorkas, Secretary of Homeland Security; Cass Sunstein, Homeland Security with responsibility for new immigration laws; Avril Haines, Director of National Intelligence; Anne Neuberger, National Security Agency cybersecurity director (note, cybersecurity); David Cohen, CIA Deputy Director; Ronald Klain, Biden's Chief of Staff (see Rahm Emanuel); Eric Lander, a 'leading geneticist', Office of Science and Technology Policy director (see Smart Grid, synthetic biology agenda); Jessica Rosenworcel, acting head of the Federal Communications Commission (FCC) which controls Smart Grid technology policy and electromagnetic communication systems including 5G. How can it be that so many pivotal positions are held by two-percent of the American population and 0.2 percent of the world population administration after administration no matter who is the president and what is the party? It's a coincidence? Of course it's not and this is why Sabbatians have built their colossal global web of interlocking 'anti-

hate' hate groups to condemn anyone who asks these glaring questions as an 'anti-Semite'. The way that Jewish people horrifically abused in Sabbatian-backed Nazi Germany are exploited to this end is stomach-turning and disgusting beyond words.

Political fusion

Sabbatian manipulation has reversed the roles of Republicans and Democrats and the same has happened in Britain with the Conservative and Labour Parties. Republicans and Conservatives were always labelled the 'right' and Democrats and Labour the 'left', but look at the policy positions now and the Democrat-Labour 'left' has moved further to the 'right' than Republicans and Conservatives under the banner of 'Woke', the Cult-created far-right tyranny. Where once the Democrat-Labour 'left' defended free speech and human rights they now seek to delete them and as I said earlier despite the 'Covid' fascism of the Jackboot Johnson Conservative government in the UK the Labour Party of leader Keir Starmer demanded even more extreme measures. The Labour Party has been very publicly absorbed by Sabbatians after a political and media onslaught against the previous leader, the weak and inept Jeremy Corbyn, over made-up allegations of 'anti-Semitism' both by him and his party. The plan was clear with this 'anti-Semite' propaganda and what was required in response was a swift and decisive 'fuck off' from Corbyn and a statement to expose the Anti-Semitism Industry (Sabbatian) attempt to silence Labour criticism of the Israeli government (Sabbatians) and purge the party of all dissent against the extremes of ultra-Zionism (Sabbatians). Instead Corbyn and his party fell to their knees and appeased the abusers which, by definition, is impossible. Appeasing one demand leads only to a new demand to be appeased until takeover is complete. Like I say – 'fuck off' would have been a much more effective policy and I have used it myself with great effect over the years when Sabbatians are on my case which is most of the time. I consider that fact a great compliment, by the way. The outcome of the Labour Party capitulation is that we now have a Sabbatian-controlled

Conservative Party 'opposed' by a Sabbatian-controlled Labour Party in a one-party Sabbatian state that hurtles towards the extremes of tyranny (the Sabbatian cult agenda). In America the situation is the same. Labour's Keir Starmer spends his days on his knees with his tongue out pointing to Tel Aviv, or I guess now Jerusalem, while Boris Johnson has an 'anti-Semitism czar' in the form of former Labour MP John Mann who keeps Starmer company on his prayer mat.

Sabbatian influence can be seen in Jewish members of the Labour Party who have been ejected for criticism of Israel including those from families that suffered in Nazi Germany. Sabbatians despise real Jewish people and target them even more harshly because it is so much more difficult to dub them 'anti-Semitic' although in their desperation they do try.

CHAPTER THREE

The Pushbacker sting

*Until you realize how easy it is for your mind to be manipulated, you
remain the puppet of someone else's game*

Evita Ochel

I will use the presidencies of Trump and Biden to show how the manipulation of the one-party state plays out behind the illusion of political choice across the world. No two presidencies could – on the face of it – be more different and apparently at odds in terms of direction and policy.

A Renegade Mind sees beyond the obvious and focuses on outcomes and consequences and not image, words and waffle. The Cult embarked on a campaign to divide America between those who blindly support its agenda (the mentality known as 'Woke') and those who are pushing back on where the Cult and its Sabbatians want to go. This presents infinite possibilities for dividing and ruling the population by setting them at war with each other and allows a perceptual ring fence of demonisation to encircle the Pushbackers in a modern version of the Little Big Horn in 1876 when American cavalry led by Lieutenant Colonel George Custer were drawn into a trap, surrounded and killed by Native American tribes defending their land of thousands of years from being seized by the government. In this modern version the roles are reversed and it's those defending themselves from the Sabbatian government who are surrounded and the government that's seeking to destroy them. This trap was set years ago and to explain how we must return to 2016

and the emergence of Donald Trump as a candidate to be President of the United States. He set out to overcome the best part of 20 other candidates in the Republican Party before and during the primaries and was not considered by many in those early stages to have a prayer of living in the White House. The Republican Party was said to have great reservations about Trump and yet somehow he won the nomination. When you know how American politics works – politics in general – there is no way that Trump could have become the party's candidate unless the Sabbatian-controlled 'Neocons' that run the Republican Party wanted that to happen. We saw the proof in emails and documents made public by WikiLeaks that the Democratic Party hierarchy, or Democons, systematically undermined the campaign of Bernie Sanders to make sure that Sabbatian gofer Hillary Clinton won the nomination to be their presidential candidate. If the Democons could do that then the Neocons in the Republican Party could have derailed Trump in the same way. But they didn't and at that stage I began to conclude that Trump could well be the one chosen to be president. If that was the case the 'why' was pretty clear to see – the goal of dividing America between Cult agenda-supporting Wokers and Pushbackers who gravitated to Trump because he was telling them what they wanted to hear. His constituency of support had been increasingly ignored and voiceless for decades and profoundly through the eight years of Sabbatian puppet Barack Obama. Now here was someone speaking their language of pulling back from the incessant globalisation of political and economic power, the exporting of American jobs to China and elsewhere by 'American' (Sabbatian) corporations, the deletion of free speech, and the mass immigration policies that had further devastated job opportunities for the urban working class of all races and the once American heartlands of the Midwest.

Beware the forked tongue

Those people collectively sighed with relief that at last a political leader was apparently on their side, but another trait of the Renegade Mind is that you look even harder at people telling you

what you want to hear than those who are telling you otherwise. Obviously as I said earlier people wish what they want to hear to be true and genuine and they are much more likely to believe that than someone saying what they don't want to hear and don't want to be true. Sales people are taught to be skilled in eliciting by calculated questioning what their customers want to hear and repeating that back to them as their own opinion to get their targets to like and trust them. Assets of the Cult are also sales people in the sense of selling perception. To read Cult manipulation you have to play the long and expanded game and not fall for the Vaudeville show of party politics. Both American parties are vehicles for the Cult and they exploit them in different ways depending on what the agenda requires at that moment. Trump and the Republicans were used to be the focus of dividing America and isolating Pushbackers to open the way for a Biden presidency to become the most extreme in American history by advancing the full-blown Woke (Cult) agenda with the aim of destroying and silencing Pushbackers now labelled Nazi Trump supporters and white supremacists.

Sabbatians wanted Trump in office for the reasons described by ultra-Zionist Saul Alinsky (1909-1972) who was promoting the Woke philosophy through 'community organising' long before anyone had heard of it. In those days it still went by its traditional name of Marxism. The reason for the manipulated Trump phenomenon was laid out in Alinsky's 1971 book, *Rules for Radicals*, which was his blueprint for overthrowing democratic and other regimes and replacing them with Sabbatian Marxism. Not surprisingly his to-do list was evident in the Sabbatian French and Russian 'Revolutions' and that in China which will become very relevant in the next chapter about the 'Covid' hoax. Among Alinsky's followers have been the deeply corrupt Barack Obama, House Speaker Nancy Pelosi and Hillary Clinton who described him as a 'hero'. All three are Sabbatian stooges with Pelosi personifying the arrogant corrupt idiocy that so widely fronts up for the Cult inner core. Predictably as a Sabbatian advocate of the 'light-bringer' Alinsky features Lucifer on the dedication page of his book as the original radical who gained

his own kingdom ('Earth' as we shall see). One of Alinsky's golden radical rules was to pick an individual and focus all attention, hatred and blame on them and not to target faceless bureaucracies and corporations. *Rules for Radicals* is really a Sabbatian handbook with its contents repeatedly employed all over the world for centuries and why wouldn't Sabbatians bring to power their designer-villain to be used as the individual on which all attention, hatred and blame was bestowed? This is what they did and the only question for me is how much Trump knew that and how much he was manipulated. A bit of both, I suspect. This was Alinsky's Trump technique from a man who died in 1972. The technique has spanned history:

Pick the target, freeze it, personalize it, polarize it. Don't try to attack abstract corporations or bureaucracies. Identify a responsible individual. Ignore attempts to shift or spread the blame.

From the moment Trump came to illusory power everything was about him. It wasn't about Republican policy or opinion, but all about Trump. Everything he did was presented in negative, derogatory and abusive terms by the Sabbatian-dominated media led by Cult operations such as CNN, MSNBC, *The New York Times* and the Jeff Bezos-owned *Washington Post* – 'Pick the target, freeze it, personalize it, polarize it.' Trump was turned into a demon to be vilified by those who hated him and a demi-god loved by those who worshipped him. This, in turn, had his supporters, too, presented as equally demonic in preparation for the punchline later down the line when Biden was about to take office. It was here's a Trump, there's a Trump, everywhere a Trump, Trump. Virtually every news story or happening was filtered through the lens of 'The Donald'. You loved him or hated him and which one you chose was said to define you as Satan's spawn or a paragon of virtue. Even supporting some Trump policies or statements and not others was enough for an assault on your character. No shades of grey were or are allowed. Everything is black and white (literally and figuratively). A Californian I knew had her head utterly scrambled by her hatred for Trump while telling people they should love each other. She was so totally consumed by

Trump Derangement Syndrome as it became to be known that this glaring contradiction would never have occurred to her. By definition anyone who criticised Trump or praised his opponents was a hero and this lady described Joe Biden as 'a kind, honest gentleman' when he's a provable liar, mega-crook and vicious piece of work to boot. Sabbatians had indeed divided America using Trump as the fall-guy and all along the clock was ticking on the consequences for his supporters.

In hock to his masters

Trump gave Sabbatians via Israel almost everything they wanted in his four years. Ask and you shall receive was the dynamic between himself and Benjamin Netanyahu orchestrated by Trump's ultra-Zionist son-in-law Jared Kushner, his ultra-Zionist Ambassador to Israel, David Friedman, and ultra-Zionist 'Israel adviser', Jason Greenblatt. The last two were central to the running and protecting from collapse of his business empire, the Trump Organisation, and colossal business failures made him forever beholding to Sabbatian networks that bailed him out. By the start of the 1990s Trump owed \$4 billion to banks that he couldn't pay and almost \$1 billion of that was down to him personally and not his companies. This mega-disaster was the result of building two new casinos in Atlantic City and buying the enormous Taj Mahal operation which led to crippling debt payments. He had borrowed fantastic sums from 72 banks with major Sabbatian connections and although the scale of debt should have had him living in a tent alongside the highway they never foreclosed. A plan was devised to lift Trump from the mire by BT Securities Corporation and Rothschild Inc. and the case was handled by Wilber Ross who had worked for the Rothschilds for 27 years. Ross would be named US Commerce Secretary after Trump's election. Another crucial figure in saving Trump was ultra-Zionist 'investor' Carl Icahn who bought the Taj Mahal casino. Icahn was made special economic adviser on financial regulation in the Trump administration. He didn't stay long but still managed to find time to make a tidy sum of a reported \$31.3 million when he sold his

holdings affected by the price of steel three days before Trump imposed a 235 percent tariff on steel imports. What amazing bits of luck these people have. Trump and Sabbatian operatives have long had a close association and his mentor and legal adviser from the early 1970s until 1986 was the dark and genetically corrupt ultra-Zionist Roy Cohn who was chief counsel to Senator Joseph McCarthy's 'communist' witch-hunt in the 1950s. *Esquire* magazine published an article about Cohn with the headline 'Don't mess with Roy Cohn'. He was described as the most feared lawyer in New York and 'a ruthless master of dirty tricks ... [with] ... more than one Mafia Don on speed dial'. Cohn's influence, contacts, support and protection made Trump a front man for Sabbatians in New York with their connections to one of Cohn's many criminal employers, the 'Russian' Sabbatian Mafia. Israel-centric media mogul Rupert Murdoch was introduced to Trump by Cohn and they started a long friendship. Cohn died in 1986 weeks after being disbarred for unethical conduct by the Appellate Division of the New York State Supreme Court. The wheels of justice do indeed run slow given the length of Cohn's crooked career.

QAnon-sense

We are asked to believe that Donald Trump with his fundamental connections to Sabbatian networks and operatives has been leading the fight to stop the Sabbatian agenda for the fascistic control of America and the world. Sure he has. A man entrapped during his years in the White House by Sabbatian operatives and whose biggest financial donor was casino billionaire Sheldon Adelson who was Sabbatian to his DNA?? Oh, do come on. Trump has been used to divide America and isolate Pushbackers on the Cult agenda under the heading of 'Trump supporters', 'insurrectionists' and 'white supremacists'. The US Intelligence/Mossad Psyop or psychological operation known as QAnon emerged during the Trump years as a central pillar in the Sabbatian campaign to lead Pushbackers into the trap set by those that wished to destroy them. I knew from the start that QAnon was a scam because I had seen the same scenario many

times before over 30 years under different names and I had written about one in particular in the books. 'Not again' was my reaction when QAnon came to the fore. The same script is pulled out every few years and a new name added to the letterhead. The story always takes the same form: 'Insiders' or 'the good guys' in the government-intelligence-military 'Deep State' apparatus were going to instigate mass arrests of the 'bad guys' which would include the Rockefellers, Rothschilds, Barack Obama, Hillary Clinton, George Soros, etc., etc. Dates are given for when the 'good guys' are going to move in, but the dates pass without incident and new dates are given which pass without incident. The central message to Pushbackers in each case is that they don't have to do anything because there is 'a plan' and it is all going to be sorted by the 'good guys' on the inside. 'Trust the plan' was a QAnon mantra when the only plan was to misdirect Pushbackers into putting their trust in a Psyop they believed to be real. Beware, beware, those who tell you what you want to hear and always check it out. Right up to Biden's inauguration QAnon was still claiming that 'the Storm' was coming and Trump would stay on as president when Biden and his cronies were arrested and jailed. It was never going to happen and of course it didn't, but what did happen as a result provided that punchline to the Sabbatian Trump/QAnon Psyop.

On January 6th, 2021, a very big crowd of Trump supporters gathered in the National Mall in Washington DC down from the Capitol Building to protest at what they believed to be widespread corruption and vote fraud that stopped Trump being re-elected for a second term as president in November, 2020. I say as someone that does not support Trump or Biden that the evidence is clear that major vote-fixing went on to favour Biden, a man with cognitive problems so advanced he can often hardly string a sentence together without reading the words written for him on the Teleprompter. Glaring ballot discrepancies included serious questions about electronic voting machines that make vote rigging a comparative cinch and hundreds of thousands of paper votes that suddenly appeared during already advanced vote counts and virtually all of

them for Biden. Early Trump leads in crucial swing states suddenly began to close and disappear. The pandemic hoax was used as the excuse to issue almost limitless numbers of mail-in ballots with no checks to establish that the recipients were still alive or lived at that address. They were sent to streams of people who had not even asked for them. Private organisations were employed to gather these ballots and who knows what they did with them before they turned up at the counts. The American election system has been manipulated over decades to become a sick joke with more holes than a Swiss cheese for the express purpose of dictating the results. Then there was the criminal manipulation of information by Sabbatian tech giants like Facebook, Twitter and Google-owned YouTube which deleted pro-Trump, anti-Biden accounts and posts while everything in support of Biden was left alone. Sabbatians wanted Biden to win because after the dividing of America it was time for full-on Woke and every aspect of the Cult agenda to be unleashed.

Hunter gatherer

Extreme Silicon Valley bias included blocking information by the *New York Post* exposing a Biden scandal that should have ended his bid for president in the final weeks of the campaign. Hunter Biden, his monumentally corrupt son, is reported to have sent a laptop to be repaired at a local store and failed to return for it. Time passed until the laptop became the property of the store for non-payment of the bill. When the owner saw what was on the hard drive he gave a copy to the FBI who did nothing even though it confirmed widespread corruption in which the Joe Biden family were using his political position, especially when he was vice president to Obama, to make multiple millions in countries around the world and most notably Ukraine and China. Hunter Biden's one-time business partner Tony Bobulinski went public when the story broke in the *New York Post* to confirm the corruption he saw and that Joe Biden not only knew what was going on he also profited from the spoils. Millions were handed over by a Chinese company with close

connections – like all major businesses in China – to the Chinese communist party of President Xi Jinping. Joe Biden even boasted at a meeting of the Cult's World Economic Forum that as vice president he had ordered the government of Ukraine to fire a prosecutor. What he didn't mention was that the same man just happened to be investigating an energy company which was part of Hunter Biden's corrupt portfolio. The company was paying him big bucks for no other reason than the influence his father had. Overnight Biden's presidential campaign should have been over given that he had lied publicly about not knowing what his son was doing. Instead almost the entire Sabbatian-owned mainstream media and Sabbatian-owned Silicon Valley suppressed circulation of the story. This alone went a mighty way to rigging the election of 2020. Cult assets like Mark Zuckerberg at Facebook also spent hundreds of millions to be used in support of Biden and vote 'administration'.

The Cult had used Trump as the focus to divide America and was now desperate to bring in moronic, pliable, corrupt Biden to complete the double-whammy. No way were they going to let little things like the will of the people thwart their plan. Silicon Valley widely censored claims that the election was rigged because it *was* rigged. For the same reason anyone claiming it was rigged was denounced as a 'white supremacist' including the pathetically few Republican politicians willing to say so. Right across the media where the claim was mentioned it was described as a 'false claim' even though these excuses for 'journalists' would have done no research into the subject whatsoever. Trump won seven million more votes than any sitting president had ever achieved while somehow a cognitively-challenged soon to be 78-year-old who was hidden away from the public for most of the campaign managed to win more votes than any presidential candidate in history. It makes no sense. You only had to see election rallies for both candidates to witness the enthusiasm for Trump and the apathy for Biden. Tens of thousands would attend Trump events while Biden was speaking in empty car parks with often only television crews attending and framing their shots to hide the fact that no one was there. It was pathetic to see

footage come to light of Biden standing at a podium making speeches only to TV crews and party fixers while reading the words written for him on massive Teleprompter screens. So, yes, those protestors on January 6th had a point about election rigging, but some were about to walk into a trap laid for them in Washington by the Cult Deep State and its QAnon Psyop. This was the Capitol Hill riot ludicrously dubbed an 'insurrection'.

The spider and the fly

Renegade Minds know there are not two 'sides' in politics, only one side, the Cult, working through all 'sides'. It's a stage show, a puppet show, to direct the perceptions of the population into focusing on diversions like parties and candidates while missing the puppeteers with their hands holding all the strings. The Capitol Hill 'insurrection' brings us back to the Little Big Horn. Having created two distinct opposing groupings – Woke and Pushbackers – the trap was about to be sprung. Pushbackers were to be encircled and isolated by associating them all in the public mind with Trump and then labelling Trump as some sort of Confederate leader. I knew immediately that the Capitol riot was a set-up because of two things. One was how easy the rioters got into the building with virtually no credible resistance and secondly I could see – as with the 'Covid' hoax in the West at the start of 2020 – how the Cult could exploit the situation to move its agenda forward with great speed. My experience of Cult techniques and activities over more than 30 years has showed me that while they do exploit situations they haven't themselves created this never happens with events of fundamental agenda significance. Every time major events giving cultists the excuse to rapidly advance their plan you find they are manipulated into being for the specific reason of providing that excuse – Problem-Reaction-Solution. Only a tiny minority of the huge crowd of Washington protestors sought to gain entry to the Capitol by smashing windows and breaching doors. That didn't matter. The whole crowd and all Pushbackers, even if they did not support Trump, were going to be lumped together as dangerous

insurrectionists and conspiracy theorists. The latter term came into widespread use through a CIA memo in the 1960s aimed at discrediting those questioning the nonsensical official story of the Kennedy assassination and it subsequently became widely employed by the media. It's still being used by inept 'journalists' with no idea of its origin to discredit anyone questioning anything that authority claims to be true. When you are perpetrating a conspiracy you need to discredit the very word itself even though the dictionary definition of conspiracy is merely 'the activity of secretly planning with other people to do something bad or illegal' and 'a general agreement to keep silent about a subject for the purpose of keeping it secret'. On that basis there are conspiracies almost wherever you look. For obvious reasons the Cult and its lapdog media have to claim there are no conspiracies even though the word appears in state laws as with conspiracy to defraud, to murder, and to corrupt public morals.

Agent provocateurs are widely used by the Cult Deep State to manipulate genuine people into acting in ways that suit the desired outcome. By genuine in this case I mean protestors genuinely supporting Trump and claims that the election was stolen. In among them, however, were agents of the state wearing the garb of Trump supporters and QAnon to pump-prime the Capital riot which some genuine Trump supporters naively fell for. I described the situation as 'Come into my parlour said the spider to the fly'. Leaflets appeared through the Woke paramilitary arm Antifa, the anti-fascist fascists, calling on supporters to turn up in Washington looking like Trump supporters even though they hated him. Some of those arrested for breaching the Capitol Building were sourced to Antifa and its stable mate Black Lives Matter. Both organisations are funded by Cult billionaires and corporations. One man charged for the riot was according to his lawyer a former FBI agent who had held top secret security clearance for 40 years. Attorney Thomas Plofchan said of his client, 66-year-old Thomas Edward Caldwell:

He has held a Top Secret Security Clearance since 1979 and has undergone multiple Special Background Investigations in support of his clearances. After retiring from the Navy, he

worked as a section chief for the Federal Bureau of Investigation from 2009-2010 as a GS-12 [mid-level employee].

He also formed and operated a consulting firm performing work, often classified, for U.S government customers including the US. Drug Enforcement Agency, Department of Housing and Urban Development, the US Coast Guard, and the US Army Personnel Command.

A judge later released Caldwell pending trial in the absence of evidence about a conspiracy or that he tried to force his way into the building. *The New York Post* reported a 'law enforcement source' as saying that 'at least two known Antifa members were spotted' on camera among Trump supporters during the riot while one of the rioters arrested was John Earle Sullivan, a seriously extreme Black Lives Matter Trump-hater from Utah who was previously arrested and charged in July, 2020, over a BLM-Antifa riot in which drivers were threatened and one was shot. Sullivan is the founder of Utah-based Insurgence USA which is an affiliate of the Cult-created-and-funded Black Lives Matter movement. Footage appeared and was then deleted by Twitter of Trump supporters calling out Antifa infiltrators and a group was filmed changing into pro-Trump clothing before the riot. Security at the building was *pathetic* – as planned. Colonel Leroy Fletcher Prouty, a man with long experience in covert operations working with the US security apparatus, once described the tell-tale sign to identify who is involved in an assassination. He said:

No one has to direct an assassination – it happens. The active role is played secretly by permitting it to happen. This is the greatest single clue. Who has the power to call off or reduce the usual security precautions?

This principle applies to many other situations and certainly to the Capitol riot of January 6th, 2021.

The sting

With such a big and potentially angry crowd known to be gathering near the Capitol the security apparatus would have had a major police detail to defend the building with National Guard troops on

standby given the strength of feeling among people arriving from all over America encouraged by the QAnon Psyop and statements by Donald Trump. Instead Capitol Police 'security' was flimsy, weak, and easily breached. The same number of officers was deployed as on a regular day and that is a blatant red flag. They were not staffed or equipped for a possible riot that had been an obvious possibility in the circumstances. No protective and effective fencing worth the name was put in place and there were no contingency plans. The whole thing was basically a case of standing aside and waving people in. Once inside police mostly backed off apart from one Capitol police officer who ridiculously shot dead unarmed Air Force veteran protestor Ashli Babbitt without a warning as she climbed through a broken window. The 'investigation' refused to name or charge the officer after what must surely be considered a murder in the circumstances. They just lifted a carpet and swept. The story was endlessly repeated about five people dying in the 'armed insurrection' when there was no report of rioters using weapons. Apart from Babbitt the other four died from a heart attack, strokes and apparently a drug overdose. Capitol police officer Brian Sicknick was reported to have died after being bludgeoned with a fire extinguisher when he was alive after the riot was over and died later of what the Washington Medical Examiner's Office said was a stroke. Sicknick had no external injuries. The lies were delivered like rapid fire. There was a narrative to build with incessant repetition of the lie until the lie became the accepted 'everybody knows that' truth. The 'Big Lie' technique of Nazi Propaganda Minister Joseph Goebbels is constantly used by the Cult which was behind the Nazis and is today behind the 'Covid' and 'climate change' hoaxes. Goebbels said:

If you tell a lie big enough and keep repeating it, people will eventually come to believe it. The lie can be maintained only for such time as the State can shield the people from the political, economic and/or military consequences of the lie. It thus becomes vitally important for the State to use all of its powers to repress dissent, for the truth is the mortal enemy of the lie, and thus by extension, the truth is the greatest enemy of the State.

Most protestors had a free run of the Capitol Building. This allowed pictures to be taken of rioters in iconic parts of the building including the Senate chamber which could be used as propaganda images against all Pushbackers. One Congresswoman described the scene as 'the worst kind of non-security anybody could ever imagine'. Well, the first part was true, but someone obviously did imagine it and made sure it happened. Some photographs most widely circulated featured people wearing QAnon symbols and now the Psyop would be used to dub all QAnon followers with the ubiquitous fit-all label of 'white supremacist' and 'insurrectionists'. When a Muslim extremist called Noah Green drove his car at two police officers at the Capitol Building killing one in April, 2021, there was no such political and media hysteria. They were just disappointed he wasn't white.

The witch-hunt

Government prosecutor Michael Sherwin, an aggressive, dark-eyed, professional Rottweiler led the 'investigation' and to call it over the top would be to understate reality a thousand fold. Hundreds were tracked down and arrested for the crime of having the wrong political views and people were jailed who had done nothing more than walk in the building, committed no violence or damage to property, took a few pictures and left. They were labelled a 'threat to the Republic' while Biden sat in the White House signing executive orders written for him that were dismantling 'the Republic'. Even when judges ruled that a mother and son should not be in jail the government kept them there. Some of those arrested have been badly beaten by prison guards in Washington and lawyers for one man said he suffered a fractured skull and was made blind in one eye. Meanwhile a woman is shot dead for no reason by a Capitol Police officer and we are not allowed to know who he is never mind what has happened to him although that will be *nothing*. The Cult's QAnon/Trump sting to identify and isolate Pushbackers and then target them on the road to crushing and deleting them was a resounding success. You would have thought the Russians had

invaded the building at gunpoint and lined up senators for a firing squad to see the political and media reaction. Congresswoman Alexandria Ocasio-Cortez is a child in a woman's body, a terrible-tuos, me, me, me, Woker narcissist of such proportions that words have no meaning. She said she thought she was going to die when 'insurrectionists' banged on her office door. It turned out she wasn't even in the Capitol Building when the riot was happening and the 'banging' was a Capitol Police officer. She referred to herself as a 'survivor' which is an insult to all those true survivors of violent and sexual abuse while she lives her pampered and privileged life talking drivel for a living. Her Woke colleague and fellow mega-narcissist Rashida Tlaib broke down describing the devastating effect on her, too, of *not being* in the building when the rioters were there. Ocasio-Cortez and Tlaib are members of a fully-Woke group of Congresswomen known as 'The Squad' along with Ilhan Omar and Ayanna Pressley. The Squad from what I can see can be identified by its vehement anti-white racism, anti-white men agenda, and, as always in these cases, the absence of brain cells on active duty.

The usual suspects were on the riot case immediately in the form of Democrat ultra-Zionist senators and operatives Chuck Schumer and Adam Schiff demanding that Trump be impeached for 'his part in the insurrection'. The same pair of prats had led the failed impeachment of Trump over the invented 'Russia collusion' nonsense which claimed Russia had helped Trump win the 2016 election. I didn't realise that Tel Aviv had been relocated just outside Moscow. I must find an up-to-date map. The Russia hoax was a Sabbatian operation to keep Trump occupied and impotent and to stop any rapport with Russia which the Cult wants to retain as a perceptual enemy to be pulled out at will. Puppet Biden began attacking Russia when he came to office as the Cult seeks more upheaval, division and war across the world. A two-year stage show 'Russia collusion inquiry' headed by the not-very-bright former 9/11 FBI chief Robert Mueller, with support from 19 lawyers, 40 FBI agents plus intelligence analysts, forensic accountants and other

staff, devoured tens of millions of dollars and found no evidence of Russia collusion which a ten-year-old could have told them on day one. Now the same moronic Schumer and Schiff wanted a second impeachment of Trump over the Capitol 'insurrection' (riot) which the arrested development of Schumer called another 'Pearl Harbor' while others compared it with 9/11 in which 3,000 died and, in the case of CNN, with the Rwandan genocide in the 1990s in which an estimated 500,000 to 600,000 were murdered, between 250, 000 and 500,000 women were raped, and populations of whole towns were hacked to death with machetes. To make those comparisons purely for Cult political reasons is beyond insulting to those that suffered and lost their lives and confirms yet again the callous inhumanity that we are dealing with. Schumer is a monumental idiot and so is Schiff, but they serve the Cult agenda and do whatever they're told so they get looked after. Talking of idiots – another inane man who spanned the Russia and Capitol impeachment attempts was Senator Eric Swalwell who had the nerve to accuse Trump of collusion with the Russians while sleeping with a Chinese spy called Christine Fang or 'Fang Fang' which is straight out of a Bond film no doubt starring Klaus Schwab as the bloke living on a secret island and controlling laser weapons positioned in space and pointing at world capitals. Fang Fang plays the part of Bond's infiltrator girlfriend which I'm sure she would enjoy rather more than sharing a bed with the brainless Swalwell, lying back and thinking of China. The FBI eventually warned Swalwell about Fang Fang which gave her time to escape back to the Chinese dictatorship. How very thoughtful of them. The second Trump impeachment also failed and hardly surprising when an impeachment is supposed to remove a sitting president and by the time it happened Trump was no longer president. These people are running your country America, well, officially anyway. Terrifying isn't it?

Outcomes tell the story - always

The outcome of all this – and it's the *outcome* on which Renegade Minds focus, not the words – was that a vicious, hysterical and

obviously pre-planned assault was launched on Pushbackers to censor, silence and discredit them and even targeted their right to earn a living. They have since been condemned as 'domestic terrorists' that need to be treated like Al-Qaeda and Islamic State. 'Domestic terrorists' is a label the Cult has been trying to make stick since the period of the Oklahoma bombing in 1995 which was blamed on 'far-right domestic terrorists'. If you read *The Trigger* you will see that the bombing was clearly a Problem-Reaction-Solution carried out by the Deep State during a Bill Clinton administration so corrupt that no dictionary definition of the term would even nearly suffice. Nearly 30, 000 troops were deployed from all over America to the empty streets of Washington for Biden's inauguration. Ten thousand of them stayed on with the pretext of protecting the capital from insurrectionists when it was more psychological programming to normalise the use of the military in domestic law enforcement in support of the Cult plan for a police-military state. Biden's fascist administration began a purge of 'wrong-thinkers' in the military which means anyone that is not on board with Woke. The Capitol Building was surrounded by a fence with razor wire and the Land of the Free was further symbolically and literally dismantled. The circle was completed with the installation of Biden and the exploitation of the QAnon Psyop.

America had never been so divided since the civil war of the 19th century, Pushbackers were isolated and dubbed terrorists and now, as was always going to happen, the Cult immediately set about deleting what little was left of freedom and transforming American society through a swish of the hand of the most controlled 'president' in American history leading (officially at least) the most extreme regime since the country was declared an independent state on July 4th, 1776. Biden issued undebated, dictatorial executive orders almost by the hour in his opening days in office across the whole spectrum of the Cult wish-list including diluting controls on the border with Mexico allowing thousands of migrants to illegally enter the United States to transform the demographics of America and import an election-changing number of perceived Democrat

voters. Then there were Biden deportation amnesties for the already illegally resident (estimated to be as high as 20 or even 30 million). A bill before Congress awarded American citizenship to anyone who could prove they had worked in agriculture for just 180 days in the previous two years as 'Big Ag' secured its slave labour long-term. There were the plans to add new states to the union such as Puerto Rico and making Washington DC a state. They are all parts of a plan to ensure that the Cult-owned Woke Democrats would be permanently in power.

Border – what border?

I have exposed in detail in other books how mass immigration into the United States and Europe is the work of Cult networks fuelled by the tens of billions spent to this and other ends by George Soros and his global Open Society (open borders) Foundations. The impact can be seen in America alone where the population has increased by *100 million* in little more than 30 years mostly through immigration. I wrote in *The Answer* that the plan was to have so many people crossing the southern border that the numbers become unstoppable and we are now there under Cult-owned Biden. El Salvador in Central America puts the scale of what is happening into context. A third of the population now lives in the United States, much of it illegally, and many more are on the way. The methodology is to crush Central and South American countries economically and spread violence through machete-wielding psychopathic gangs like MS-13 based in El Salvador and now operating in many American cities. Biden-imposed lax security at the southern border means that it is all but open. He said before his 'election' that he wanted to see a surge towards the border if he became president and that was the green light for people to do just that after election day to create the human disaster that followed for both America and the migrants. When that surge came the imbecilic Alexandria Ocasio-Cortez said it wasn't a 'surge' because they are 'children, not insurgents' and the term 'surge' (used by Biden) was a claim of 'white supremacists'.

This disingenuous lady may one day enter the realm of the most basic intelligence, but it won't be any time soon.

Sabbatians and the Cult are in the process of destroying America by importing violent people and gangs in among the genuine to terrorise American cities and by overwhelming services that cannot cope with the sheer volume of new arrivals. Something similar is happening in Europe as Western society in general is targeted for demographic and cultural transformation and upheaval. The plan demands violence and crime to create an environment of intimidation, fear and division and Soros has been funding the election of district attorneys across America who then stop prosecuting many crimes, reduce sentences for violent crimes and free as many violent criminals as they can. Sabbatians are creating the chaos from which order – their order – can respond in a classic Problem-Reaction-Solution. A Freemasonic moto says 'Ordo Ab Chao' (Order out of Chaos) and this is why the Cult is constantly creating chaos to impose a new 'order'. Here you have the reason the Cult is constantly creating chaos. The 'Covid' hoax can be seen with those entering the United States by plane being forced to take a 'Covid' test while migrants flooding through southern border processing facilities do not. Nothing is put in the way of mass migration and if that means ignoring the government's own 'Covid' rules then so be it. They know it's all bullshit anyway. Any pushback on this is denounced as 'racist' by Wokers and Sabbatian fronts like the ultra-Zionist Anti-Defamation League headed by the appalling Jonathan Greenblatt which at the same time argues that Israel should not give citizenship and voting rights to more Palestinian Arabs or the 'Jewish population' (in truth the Sabbatian network) will lose control of the country.

Society-changing numbers

Biden's masters have declared that countries like El Salvador are so dangerous that their people must be allowed into the United States for humanitarian reasons when there are fewer murders in large parts of many Central American countries than in US cities like

Baltimore. That is not to say Central America cannot be a dangerous place and Cult-controlled American governments have been making it so since way back, along with the dismantling of economies, in a long-term plan to drive people north into the United States. Parts of Central America are very dangerous, but in other areas the story is being greatly exaggerated to justify relaxing immigration criteria. Migrants are being offered free healthcare and education in the United States as another incentive to head for the border and there is no requirement to be financially independent before you can enter to prevent the resources of America being drained. You can't blame migrants for seeking what they believe will be a better life, but they are being played by the Cult for dark and nefarious ends. The numbers since Biden took office are huge. In February, 2021, more than 100,000 people were known to have tried to enter the US illegally through the southern border (it was 34,000 in the same month in 2020) and in March it was 170,000 – a 418 percent increase on March, 2020. These numbers are only known people, not the ones who get in unseen. The true figure for migrants illegally crossing the border in a single month was estimated by one congressman at 250,000 and that number will only rise under Biden's current policy. Gangs of murdering drug-running thugs that control the Mexican side of the border demand money – thousands of dollars – to let migrants cross the Rio Grande into America. At the same time gun battles are breaking out on the border several times a week between rival Mexican drug gangs (which now operate globally) who are equipped with sophisticated military-grade weapons, grenades and armoured vehicles. While the Capitol Building was being 'protected' from a non-existent 'threat' by thousands of troops, and others were still deployed at the time in the Cult Neocon war in Afghanistan, the southern border of America was left to its fate. This is not incompetence, it is cold calculation.

By March, 2021, there were 17,000 unaccompanied children held at border facilities and many of them are ensnared by people traffickers for paedophile rings and raped on their journey north to America. This is not conjecture – this is fact. Many of those designated

children are in reality teenage boys or older. Meanwhile Wokers posture their self-purity for encouraging poor and tragic people to come to America and face this nightmare both on the journey and at the border with the disgusting figure of House Speaker Nancy Pelosi giving disingenuous speeches about caring for migrants. The woman's evil. Wokers condemned Trump for having children in cages at the border (so did Obama, *Shhhh*), but now they are sleeping on the floor without access to a shower with one border facility 729 percent over capacity. The Biden insanity even proposed flying migrants from the southern border to the northern border with Canada for 'processing'. The whole shambles is being overseen by ultra-Zionist Secretary of Homeland Security, the moronic liar Alejandro Mayorkas, who banned news cameras at border facilities to stop Americans seeing what was happening. Mayorkas said there was not a ban on news crews; it was just that they were not allowed to film. Alongside him at Homeland Security is another ultra-Zionist Cass Sunstein appointed by Biden to oversee new immigration laws. Sunstein despises conspiracy researchers to the point where he suggests they should be banned or *taxed* for having such views. The man is not bonkers or anything. He's perfectly well-adjusted, but adjusted to what is the question. Criticise what is happening and you are a 'white supremacist' when earlier non-white immigrants also oppose the numbers which effect their lives and opportunities. Black people in poor areas are particularly damaged by uncontrolled immigration and the increased competition for work opportunities with those who will work for less. They are also losing voting power as Hispanics become more dominant in former black areas. It's a downward spiral for them while the billionaires behind the policy drone on about how much they care about black people and 'racism'. None of this is about compassion for migrants or black people – that's just wind and air. Migrants are instead being mercilessly exploited to transform America while the countries they leave are losing their future and the same is true in Europe. Mass immigration may now be the work of Woke Democrats, but it can be traced back to the 1986 Immigration Reform and Control Act (it

wasn't) signed into law by Republican hero President Ronald Reagan which gave amnesty to millions living in the United States illegally and other incentives for people to head for the southern border. Here we have the one-party state at work again.

Save me syndrome

Almost every aspect of what I have been exposing as the Cult agenda was on display in even the first days of 'Biden' with silencing of Pushbackers at the forefront of everything. A Renegade Mind will view the Trump years and QAnon in a very different light to their supporters and advocates as the dots are connected. The QAnon/Trump Psyop has given the Cult all it was looking for. We may not know how much, or little, that Trump realised he was being used, but that's a side issue. This pincer movement produced the desired outcome of dividing America and having Pushbackers isolated. To turn this around we have to look at new routes to empowerment which do not include handing our power to other people and groups through what I will call the 'Save Me Syndrome' – 'I want someone else to do it so that I don't have to'. We have seen this at work throughout human history and the QAnon/Trump Psyop is only the latest incarnation alongside all the others. Religion is an obvious expression of this when people look to a 'god' or priest to save them or tell them how to be saved and then there are 'save me' politicians like Trump. Politics is a diversion and not a 'saviour'. It is a means to block positive change, not make it possible.

Save Me Syndrome always comes with the same repeating theme of handing your power to whom or what you believe will save you while your real 'saviour' stares back from the mirror every morning. Renegade Minds are constantly vigilant in this regard and always asking the question 'What can I do?' rather than 'What can someone else do for me?' Gandhi was right when he said: 'You must be the change you want to see in the world.' We are indeed the people we have been waiting for. We are presented with a constant raft of reasons to concede that power to others and forget where the real power is. Humanity has the numbers and the Cult does not. It has to

use diversion and division to target the unstoppable power that comes from unity. Religions, governments, politicians, corporations, media, QAnon, are all different manifestations of this power-diversion and dilution. Refusing to give your power to governments and instead handing it to Trump and QAnon is not to take a new direction, but merely to recycle the old one with new names on the posters. I will explore this phenomenon as we proceed and how to break the cycles and recycles that got us here through the mists of repeating perception and so repeating history.

For now we shall turn to the most potent example in the entire human story of the consequences that follow when you give your power away. I am talking, of course, of the 'Covid' hoax.

CHAPTER FOUR

'Covid': Calculated catastrophe

Facts are threatening to those invested in fraud
DaShanne Stokes

We can easily unravel the real reason for the 'Covid pandemic' hoax by employing the Renegade Mind methodology that I have outlined this far. We'll start by comparing the long-planned Cult outcome with the 'Covid pandemic' outcome. Know the outcome and you'll see the journey.

I have highlighted the plan for the Hunger Games Society which has been in my books for so many years with the very few controlling the very many through ongoing dependency. To create this dependency it is essential to destroy independent livelihoods, businesses and employment to make the population reliant on the state (the Cult) for even the basics of life through a guaranteed pittance income. While independence of income remained these Cult ambitions would be thwarted. With this knowledge it was easy to see where the 'pandemic' hoax was going once talk of 'lockdowns' began and the closing of all but perceived 'essential' businesses to 'save' us from an alleged 'deadly virus'. Cult corporations like Amazon and Walmart were naturally considered 'essential' while mom and pop shops and stores had their doors closed by fascist decree. As a result with every new lockdown and new regulation more small and medium, even large businesses not owned by the Cult, went to the wall while Cult giants and their frontmen and women grew financially fatter by the second. Mom and pop were

denied an income and the right to earn a living and the wealth of people like Jeff Bezos (Amazon), Mark Zuckerberg (Facebook) and Sergei Brin and Larry Page (Google/Alphabet) have reached record levels. The Cult was increasing its own power through further dramatic concentrations of wealth while the competition was being destroyed and brought into a state of dependency. Lockdowns have been instigated to secure that very end and were never anything to do with health. My brother Paul spent 45 years building up a bus repair business, but lockdowns meant buses were running at a fraction of normal levels for months on end. Similar stories can be told in their hundreds of millions worldwide. Efforts of a lifetime coldly destroyed by Cult multi-billionaires and their lackeys in government and law enforcement who continued to earn their living from the taxation of the people while denying the right of the same people to earn theirs. How different it would have been if those making and enforcing these decisions had to face the same financial hardships of those they affected, but they never do.

Gates of Hell

Behind it all in the full knowledge of what he is doing and why is the psychopathic figure of Cult operative Bill Gates. His puppet Tedros at the World Health Organization declared 'Covid' a pandemic in March, 2020. The WHO had changed the definition of a 'pandemic' in 2009 just a month before declaring the 'swine flu pandemic' which would not have been so under the previous definition. The same applies to 'Covid'. The definition had included... 'an infection by an infectious agent, occurring simultaneously in different countries, with a significant mortality rate relative to the proportion of the population infected'. The new definition removed the need for 'significant mortality'. The 'pandemic' has been fraudulent even down to the definition, but Gates demanded economy-destroying lockdowns, school closures, social distancing, mandatory masks, a 'vaccination' for every man, woman and child on the planet and severe consequences and restrictions for those that refused. Who gave him this power? The

Cult did which he serves like a little boy in short trousers doing what his daddy tells him. He and his psychopathic missus even smiled when they said that much worse was to come (what they knew was planned to come). Gates responded in the matter-of-fact way of all psychopaths to a question about the effect on the world economy of what he was doing:

Well, it won't go to zero but it will shrink. Global GDP is probably going to take the biggest hit ever [Gates was smiling as he said this] ... in my lifetime this will be the greatest economic hit. But you don't have a choice. People act as if you have a choice. People don't feel like going to the stadium when they might get infected ... People are deeply affected by seeing these stats, by knowing they could be part of the transmission chain, old people, their parents and grandparents, could be affected by this, and so you don't get to say ignore what is going on here.

There will be the ability to open up, particularly in rich countries, if things are done well over the next few months, but for the world at large normalcy only returns when we have largely vaccinated the entire population.

The man has no compassion or empathy. How could he when he's a psychopath like all Cult players? My own view is that even beyond that he is very seriously mentally ill. Look in his eyes and you can see this along with his crazy flailing arms. You don't do what he has done to the world population since the start of 2020 unless you are mentally ill and at the most extreme end of psychopathic. You especially don't do it when to you know, as we shall see, that cases and deaths from 'Covid' are fakery and a product of monumental figure massaging. 'These stats' that Gates referred to are based on a 'test' that's not testing for the 'virus' as he has known all along. He made his fortune with big Cult support as an infamously ruthless software salesman and now buys global control of 'health' (death) policy without the population he affects having any say. It's a breathtaking outrage. Gates talked about people being deeply affected by fear of 'Covid' when that was because of *him* and his global network lying to them minute-by-minute supported by a lying media that he seriously influences and funds to the tune of hundreds of millions. He's handed big sums to media operations including the BBC, NBC, Al Jazeera, Univision, *PBS NewsHour*,

ProPublica, National Journal, The Guardian, The Financial Times, The Atlantic, Texas Tribune, USA Today publisher Gannett, Washington Monthly, Le Monde, Center for Investigative Reporting, Pulitzer Center on Crisis Reporting, National Press Foundation, International Center for Journalists, Solutions Journalism Network, the Poynter Institute for Media Studies, and many more. Gates is everywhere in the 'Covid' hoax and the man must go to prison – or a mental facility – for the rest of his life and his money distributed to those he has taken such enormous psychopathic pleasure in crushing.

The Muscle

The Hunger Games global structure demands a police-military state – a fusion of the two into one force – which viciously imposes the will of the Cult on the population and protects the Cult from public rebellion. In that regard, too, the 'Covid' hoax just keeps on giving. Often unlawful, ridiculous and contradictory 'Covid' rules and regulations have been policed across the world by moronic automatons and psychopaths made faceless by face-nappy masks and acting like the Nazi SS and fascist blackshirts and brownshirts of Hitler and Mussolini. The smallest departure from the rules decreed by the psychos in government and their clueless gofers were jumped upon by the face-nappy fascists. Brutality against public protestors soon became commonplace even on girls, women and old people as the brave men with the batons – the Face-Nappies as I call them – broke up peaceful protests and handed out fines like confetti to people who couldn't earn a living let alone pay hundreds of pounds for what was once an accepted human right. Robot Face-Nappies of Nottingham police in the English East Midlands fined one group £11,000 for attending a child's birthday party. For decades I charted the transformation of law enforcement as genuine, decent officers were replaced with psychopaths and the brain dead who would happily and brutally do whatever their masters told them. Now they were let loose on the public and I would emphasise the point that none of this just happened. The step-by-step change in the dynamic between police and public was orchestrated from the shadows by

those who knew where this was all going and the same with the perceptual reframing of those in all levels of authority and official administration through 'training courses' by organisations such as Common Purpose which was created in the late 1980s and given a massive boost in Blair era Britain until it became a global phenomenon. Supposed public 'servants' began to view the population as the enemy and the same was true of the police. This was the start of the explosion of behaviour manipulation organisations and networks preparing for the all-war on the human psyche unleashed with the dawn of 2020. I will go into more detail about this later in the book because it is a core part of what is happening.

Police desecrated beauty spots to deter people gathering and arrested women for walking in the countryside alone 'too far' from their homes. We had arrogant, clueless sergeants in the Isle of Wight police where I live posting on Facebook what they insisted the population must do or else. A schoolmaster sergeant called Radford looked young enough for me to ask if his mother knew he was out, but he was posting what he *expected* people to do while a Sergeant Wilkinson boasted about fining lads for meeting in a McDonald's car park where they went to get a lockdown takeaway. Wilkinson added that he had even cancelled their order. What a pair of prats these people are and yet they have increasingly become the norm among Jackboot Johnson's Yellowshirts once known as the British police. This was the theme all over the world with police savagery common during lockdown protests in the United States, the Netherlands, and the fascist state of Victoria in Australia under its tyrannical and again moronic premier Daniel Andrews. Amazing how tyrannical and moronic tend to work as a team and the same combination could be seen across America as arrogant, narcissistic Woke governors and mayors such as Gavin Newsom (California), Andrew Cuomo (New York), Gretchen Whitmer (Michigan), Lori Lightfoot (Chicago) and Eric Garcetti (Los Angeles) did their Nazi and Stalin impressions with the full support of the compliant brutality of their enforcers in uniform as they arrested small business owners defying

fascist shutdown orders and took them to jail in ankle shackles and handcuffs. This happened to bistro owner Marlena Pavlos-Hackney in Gretchen Whitmer's fascist state of Michigan when police arrived to enforce an order by a state-owned judge for 'putting the community at risk' at a time when other states like Texas were dropping restrictions and migrants were pouring across the southern border without any 'Covid' questions at all. I'm sure there are many officers appalled by what they are ordered to do, but not nearly enough of them. If they were truly appalled they would not do it. As the months passed every opportunity was taken to have the military involved to make their presence on the streets ever more familiar and 'normal' for the longer-term goal of police-military fusion.

Another crucial element to the Hunger Games enforcement network has been encouraging the public to report neighbours and others for 'breaking the lockdown rules'. The group faced with £11,000 in fines at the child's birthday party would have been dobbed-in by a neighbour with a brain the size of a pea. The technique was most famously employed by the Stasi secret police in communist East Germany who had public informants placed throughout the population. A police chief in the UK says his force doesn't need to carry out 'Covid' patrols when they are flooded with so many calls from the public reporting other people for visiting the beach. Dorset police chief James Vaughan said people were so enthusiastic about snitching on their fellow humans they were now operating as an auxiliary arm of the police: 'We are still getting around 400 reports a week from the public, so we will respond to reports ... We won't need to be doing hotspot patrols because people are very quick to pick the phone up and tell us.' Vaughan didn't say that this is a pillar of all tyrannies of whatever complexion and the means to hugely extend the reach of enforcement while spreading distrust among the people and making them wary of doing anything that might get them reported. Those narcissistic Isle of Wight sergeants Radford and Wilkinson never fail to add a link to their Facebook posts where the public can inform on their fellow slaves.

Neither would be self-aware enough to realise they were imitating the Stasi which they might well never have heard of. Government psychologists that I will expose later laid out a policy to turn communities against each other in the same way.

A coincidence? Yep, and I can knit fog

I knew from the start of the alleged pandemic that this was a Cult operation. It presented limitless potential to rapidly advance the Cult agenda and exploit manipulated fear to demand that every man, woman and child on the planet was 'vaccinated' in a process never used on humans before which infuses self-replicating *synthetic* material into human cells. Remember the plan to transform the human body from a biological to a synthetic biological state. I'll deal with the 'vaccine' (that's not actually a vaccine) when I focus on the genetic agenda. Enough to say here that mass global 'vaccination' justified by this 'new virus' set alarms ringing after 30 years of tracking these people and their methods. The 'Covid' hoax officially beginning in China was also a big red flag for reasons I will be explaining. The agenda potential was so enormous that I could dismiss any idea that the 'virus' appeared naturally. Major happenings with major agenda implications never occur without Cult involvement in making them happen. My questions were twofold in early 2020 as the media began its campaign to induce global fear and hysteria: Was this alleged infectious agent released on purpose by the Cult or did it even exist at all? I then did what I always do in these situations. I sat, observed and waited to see where the evidence and information would take me. By March and early April synchronicity was strongly – and ever more so since then – pointing me in the direction of *there is no 'virus'*. I went public on that with derision even from swathes of the alternative media that voiced a scenario that the Chinese government released the 'virus' in league with Deep State elements in the United States from a top-level bio-lab in Wuhan where the 'virus' is said to have first appeared. I looked at that possibility, but I didn't buy it for several reasons. Deaths from the 'virus' did not in any way match what they

would have been with a 'deadly bioweapon' and it is much more effective if you sell the *illusion* of an infectious agent rather than having a real one unless you can control through injection who has it and who doesn't. Otherwise you lose control of events. A made-up 'virus' gives you a blank sheet of paper on which you can make it do whatever you like and have any symptoms or mutant 'variants' you choose to add while a real infectious agent would limit you to what it actually does. A phantom disease allows you to have endless ludicrous 'studies' on the 'Covid' dollar to widen the perceived impact by inventing ever more 'at risk' groups including one study which said those who walk slowly may be almost four times more likely to die from the 'virus'. People are in psychiatric wards for less.

A real 'deadly bioweapon' can take out people in the hierarchy that are not part of the Cult, but essential to its operation. Obviously they don't want that. Releasing a real disease means you immediately lose control of it. Releasing an illusory one means you don't. Again it's vital that people are extra careful when dealing with what they want to hear. A bioweapon unleashed from a Chinese laboratory in collusion with the American Deep State may fit a conspiracy narrative, but is it true? Would it not be far more effective to use the excuse of a 'virus' to justify the real bioweapon – the 'vaccine'? That way your disease agent does not have to be transmitted and arrives directly through a syringe. I saw a French virologist Luc Montagnier quoted in the alternative media as saying he had discovered that the alleged 'new' severe acute respiratory syndrome coronavirus , or SARS-CoV-2, was made artificially and included elements of the human immunodeficiency 'virus' (HIV) and a parasite that causes malaria. SARS-CoV-2 is alleged to trigger an alleged illness called Covid-19. I remembered Montagnier's name from my research years before into claims that an HIV 'retrovirus' causes AIDs – claims that were demolished by Berkeley virologist Peter Duesberg who showed that no one had ever proved that HIV causes acquired immunodeficiency syndrome or AIDS. Claims that become accepted as fact, publicly and medically, with no proof whatsoever are an ever-recurring story that profoundly applies to

‘Covid’. Nevertheless, despite the lack of proof, Montagnier’s team at the Pasteur Institute in Paris had a long dispute with American researcher Robert Gallo over which of them discovered and isolated the HIV ‘virus’ and with *no evidence* found it to cause AIDS. You will see later that there is also no evidence that any ‘virus’ causes any disease or that there is even such a thing as a ‘virus’ in the way it is said to exist. The claim to have ‘isolated’ the HIV ‘virus’ will be presented in its real context as we come to the shocking story – and it is a story – of SARS-CoV-2 and so will Montagnier’s assertion that he identified the full SARS-CoV-2 genome.

Hoax in the making

We can pick up the ‘Covid’ story in 2010 and the publication by the Rockefeller Foundation of a document called ‘Scenarios for the Future of Technology and International Development’. The inner circle of the Rockefeller family has been serving the Cult since John D. Rockefeller (1839-1937) made his fortune with Standard Oil. It is less well known that the same Rockefeller – the Bill Gates of his day – was responsible for establishing what is now referred to as ‘Big Pharma’, the global network of pharmaceutical companies that make outrageous profits dispensing scalpel and drug ‘medicine’ and are obsessed with pumping vaccines in ever-increasing number into as many human arms and backsides as possible. John D. Rockefeller was the driving force behind the creation of the ‘education’ system in the United States and elsewhere specifically designed to program the perceptions of generations thereafter. The Rockefeller family donated exceptionally valuable land in New York for the United Nations building and were central in establishing the World Health Organization in 1948 as an agency of the UN which was created from the start as a Trojan horse and stalking horse for world government. Now enter Bill Gates. His family and the Rockefellers have long been extremely close and I have seen genealogy which claims that if you go back far enough the two families fuse into the same bloodline. Gates has said that the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation was inspired by the Rockefeller Foundation and why not

when both are serving the same Cult? Major tax-exempt foundations are overwhelmingly criminal enterprises in which Cult assets fund the Cult agenda in the guise of 'philanthropy' while avoiding tax in the process. Cult operatives can become mega-rich in their role of front men and women for the psychopaths at the inner core and they, too, have to be psychopaths to knowingly serve such evil. Part of the deal is that a big percentage of the wealth gleaned from representing the Cult has to be spent advancing the ambitions of the Cult and hence you have the Rockefeller Foundation, Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation (and *so* many more) and people like George Soros with his global Open Society Foundations spending their billions in pursuit of global Cult control. Gates is a global public face of the Cult with his interventions in world affairs including Big Tech influence; a central role in the 'Covid' and 'vaccine' scam; promotion of the climate change shakedown; manipulation of education; geoengineering of the skies; and his food-control agenda as the biggest owner of farmland in America, his GMO promotion and through other means. As one writer said: 'Gates monopolizes or wields disproportionate influence over the tech industry, global health and vaccines, agriculture and food policy (including biopiracy and fake food), weather modification and other climate technologies, surveillance, education and media.' The almost limitless wealth secured through Microsoft and other not-allowed-to-fail ventures (including vaccines) has been ploughed into a long, long list of Cult projects designed to enslave the entire human race. Gates and the Rockefellers have been working as one unit with the Rockefeller-established World Health Organization leading global 'Covid' policy controlled by Gates through his mouth-piece Tedros. Gates became the WHO's biggest funder when Trump announced that the American government would cease its donations, but Biden immediately said he would restore the money when he took office in January, 2021. The Gates Foundation (the Cult) owns through limitless funding the world health system and the major players across the globe in the 'Covid' hoax.

Okay, with that background we return to that Rockefeller Foundation document of 2010 headed 'Scenarios for the Future of Technology and International Development' and its 'imaginary' epidemic of a virulent and deadly influenza strain which infected 20 percent of the global population and killed eight million in seven months. The Rockefeller scenario was that the epidemic destroyed economies, closed shops, offices and other businesses and led to governments imposing fierce rules and restrictions that included mandatory wearing of face masks and body-temperature checks to enter communal spaces like railway stations and supermarkets. The document predicted that even after the height of the Rockefeller-envisaged epidemic the authoritarian rule would continue to deal with further pandemics, transnational terrorism, environmental crises and rising poverty. Now you may think that the Rockefellers are our modern-day seers or alternatively, and rather more likely, that they well knew what was planned a few years further on. Fascism had to be imposed, you see, to 'protect citizens from risk and exposure'. The Rockefeller scenario document said:

During the pandemic, national leaders around the world flexed their authority and imposed airtight rules and restrictions, from the mandatory wearing of face masks to body-temperature checks at the entries to communal spaces like train stations and supermarkets. Even after the pandemic faded, this more authoritarian control and oversight of citizens and their activities stuck and even intensified. In order to protect themselves from the spread of increasingly global problems – from pandemics and transnational terrorism to environmental crises and rising poverty – leaders around the world took a firmer grip on power.

At first, the notion of a more controlled world gained wide acceptance and approval. Citizens willingly gave up some of their sovereignty – and their privacy – to more paternalistic states in exchange for greater safety and stability. Citizens were more tolerant, and even eager, for top-down direction and oversight, and national leaders had more latitude to impose order in the ways they saw fit.

In developed countries, this heightened oversight took many forms: biometric IDs for all citizens, for example, and tighter regulation of key industries whose stability was deemed vital to national interests. In many developed countries, enforced cooperation with a suite of new regulations and agreements slowly but steadily restored both order and, importantly, economic growth.

There we have the prophetic Rockefellers in 2010 and three years later came their paper for the Global Health Summit in Beijing, China, when government representatives, the private sector, international organisations and groups met to discuss the next 100 years of 'global health'. The Rockefeller Foundation-funded paper was called 'Dreaming the Future of Health for the Next 100 Years and more prophecy ensued as it described a dystopian future: 'The abundance of data, digitally tracking and linking people may mean the 'death of privacy' and may replace physical interaction with transient, virtual connection, generating isolation and raising questions of how values are shaped in virtual networks.' Next in the 'Covid' hoax preparation sequence came a 'table top' simulation in 2018 for another 'imaginary' pandemic of a disease called Clade X which was said to kill 900 million people. The exercise was organised by the Gates-funded Johns Hopkins University's Center for Health Security in the United States and this is the very same university that has been compiling the disgustingly and systematically erroneous global figures for 'Covid' cases and deaths. Similar Johns Hopkins health crisis scenarios have included the Dark Winter exercise in 2001 and Atlantic Storm in 2005.

Nostradamus 201

For sheer predictive genius look no further prophecy-watchers than the Bill Gates-funded Event 201 held only six weeks before the 'coronavirus pandemic' is supposed to have broken out in China and Event 201 was based on a scenario of a global 'coronavirus pandemic'. Melinda Gates, the great man's missus, told the BBC that he had 'prepared for years' for a coronavirus pandemic which told us what we already knew. Nostradamugates had predicted in a TED talk in 2015 that a pandemic was coming that would kill a lot of people and demolish the world economy. My god, the man is a machine – possibly even literally. Now here he was only weeks before the real thing funding just such a simulated scenario and involving his friends and associates at Johns Hopkins, the World Economic Forum Cult-front of Klaus Schwab, the United Nations,

Johnson & Johnson, major banks, and officials from China and the Centers for Disease Control in the United States. What synchronicity – Johns Hopkins would go on to compile the fraudulent ‘Covid’ figures, the World Economic Forum and Schwab would push the ‘Great Reset’ in response to ‘Covid’, the Centers for Disease Control would be at the forefront of ‘Covid’ policy in the United States, Johnson & Johnson would produce a ‘Covid vaccine’, and everything would officially start just weeks later in China. Spooky, eh? They were even accurate in creating a simulation of a ‘virus’ pandemic because the ‘real thing’ would also be a simulation. Event 201 was not an exercise preparing for something that might happen; it was a rehearsal for what those in control knew was *going* to happen and very shortly. Hours of this simulation were posted on the Internet and the various themes and responses mirrored what would soon be imposed to transform human society. News stories were inserted and what they said would be commonplace a few weeks later with still more prophecy perfection. Much discussion focused on the need to deal with misinformation and the ‘anti-vax movement’ which is exactly what happened when the ‘virus’ arrived – was said to have arrived – in the West.

Cult-owned social media banned criticism and exposure of the official ‘virus’ narrative and when I said there *was* no ‘virus’ in early April, 2020, I was banned by one platform after another including YouTube, Facebook and later Twitter. The mainstream broadcast media in Britain was in effect banned from interviewing me by the Tony-Blair-created government broadcasting censor Ofcom headed by career government bureaucrat Melanie Dawes who was appointed just as the ‘virus’ hoax was about to play out in January, 2020. At the same time the Ickonic media platform was using Vimeo, another ultra-Zionist-owned operation, while our own player was being created and they deleted in an instant hundreds of videos, documentaries, series and shows to confirm their unbelievable vindictiveness. We had copies, of course, and they had to be restored one by one when our player was ready. These people have no class. Sabbatian Facebook promised free advertisements for the Gates-

controlled World Health Organization narrative while deleting ‘false claims and conspiracy theories’ to stop ‘misinformation’ about the alleged coronavirus. All these responses could be seen just a short while earlier in the scenarios of Event 201. Extreme censorship was absolutely crucial for the Cult because the official story was so ridiculous and unsupportable by the evidence that it could never survive open debate and the free-flow of information and opinion. If you can’t win a debate then don’t have one is the Cult’s approach throughout history. Facebook’s little boy front man – front boy – Mark Zuckerberg equated ‘credible and accurate information’ with official sources and exposing their lies with ‘misinformation’.

Silencing those that can see

The censorship dynamic of Event 201 is now the norm with an army of narrative-supporting ‘fact-checker’ organisations whose entire reason for being is to tell the public that official narratives are true and those exposing them are lying. One of the most appalling of these ‘fact-checkers’ is called NewsGuard founded by ultra-Zionist Americans Gordon Crovitz and Steven Brill. Crovitz is a former publisher of *The Wall Street Journal*, former Executive Vice President of Dow Jones, a member of the Council on Foreign Relations (CFR), and on the board of the American Association of Rhodes Scholars. The CFR and Rhodes Scholarships, named after Rothschild agent Cecil Rhodes who plundered the gold and diamonds of South Africa for his masters and the Cult, have featured widely in my books. NewsGuard don’t seem to like me for some reason – I really can’t think why – and they have done all they can to have me censored and discredited which is, to quote an old British politician, like being savaged by a dead sheep. They are, however, like all in the censorship network, very well connected and funded by organisations themselves funded by, or connected to, Bill Gates. As you would expect with anything associated with Gates NewsGuard has an offshoot called HealthGuard which ‘fights online health care hoaxes’. How very kind. Somehow the NewsGuard European Managing Director Anna-Sophie Harling, a remarkably young-

looking woman with no broadcasting experience and little hands-on work in journalism, has somehow secured a position on the 'Content Board' of UK government broadcast censor Ofcom. An executive of an organisation seeking to discredit dissidents of the official narratives is making decisions for the government broadcast 'regulator' about content?? Another appalling 'fact-checker' is Full Fact funded by George Soros and global censors Google and Facebook.

It's amazing how many activists in the 'fact-checking', 'anti-hate', arena turn up in government-related positions – people like UK Labour Party activist Imran Ahmed who heads the Center for Countering Digital Hate founded by people like Morgan McSweeney, now chief of staff to the Labour Party's hapless and useless 'leader' Keir Starmer. Digital Hate – which is what it really is – uses the American spelling of Center to betray its connection to a transatlantic network of similar organisations which in 2020 shapeshifted from attacking people for 'hate' to attacking them for questioning the 'Covid' hoax and the dangers of the 'Covid vaccine'. It's just a coincidence, you understand. This is one of Imran Ahmed's hysterical statements: 'I would go beyond calling anti-vaxxers conspiracy theorists to say they are an extremist group that pose a national security risk.' No one could ever accuse this prat of understatement and he's including in that those parents who are now against vaccines after their children were damaged for life or killed by them. He's such a nice man. Ahmed does the rounds of the Woke media getting soft-ball questions from spineless 'journalists' who never ask what right he has to campaign to destroy the freedom of speech of others while he demands it for himself. There also seems to be an overrepresentation in Ofcom of people connected to the narrative-worshipping BBC. This incredible global network of narrative-support was super-vital when the 'Covid' hoax was played in the light of the mega-whopper lies that have to be defended from the spotlight cast by the most basic intelligence.

Setting the scene

The Cult plays the long game and proceeds step-by-step ensuring that everything is in place before major cards are played and they don't come any bigger than the 'Covid' hoax. The psychopaths can't handle events where the outcome isn't certain and as little as possible – preferably nothing – is left to chance. Politicians, government and medical officials who would follow direction were brought to illusory power in advance by the Cult web whether on the national stage or others like state governors and mayors of America. For decades the dynamic between officialdom, law enforcement and the public was changed from one of service to one of control and dictatorship. Behaviour manipulation networks established within government were waiting to impose the coming 'Covid' rules and regulations specifically designed to subdue and rewire the psyche of the people in the guise of protecting health. These included in the UK the Behavioural Insights Team part-owned by the British government Cabinet Office; the Scientific Pandemic Insights Group on Behaviours (SPI-B); and a whole web of intelligence and military groups seeking to direct the conversation on social media and control the narrative. Among them are the cyberwarfare (on the people) 77th Brigade of the British military which is also coordinated through the Cabinet Office as civilian and military leadership continues to combine in what they call the Fusion Doctrine. The 77th Brigade is a British equivalent of the infamous Israeli (Sabbatian) military cyberwarfare and Internet manipulation operation Unit 8200 which I expose at length in *The Trigger*. Also carefully in place were the medical and science advisers to government – many on the payroll past or present of Bill Gates – and a whole alternative structure of unelected government stood by to take control when elected parliaments were effectively closed down once the 'Covid' card was slammed on the table. The structure I have described here and so much more was installed in every major country through the Cult networks. The top-down control hierarchy looks like this: The Cult – Cult-owned Gates – the World Health Organization and Tedros – Gates-funded or controlled chief medical officers and science 'advisers' (dictators) in each country –

political 'leaders' – law enforcement – The People. Through this simple global communication and enforcement structure the policy of the Cult could be imposed on virtually the entire human population so long as they acquiesced to the fascism. With everything in place it was time for the button to be pressed in late 2019/early 2020.

These were the prime goals the Cult had to secure for its will to prevail:

- 1) Locking down economies, closing all but designated 'essential' businesses (Cult-owned corporations were 'essential'), and putting the population under house arrest was an imperative to destroy independent income and employment and ensure dependency on the Cult-controlled state in the Hunger Games Society. Lockdowns had to be established as the global blueprint from the start to respond to the 'virus' and followed by pretty much the entire world.
- 2) The global population had to be terrified into believing in a deadly 'virus' that didn't actually exist so they would unquestioningly obey authority in the belief that authority must know how best to protect them and their families. Software salesman Gates would suddenly morph into the world's health expert and be promoted as such by the Cult-owned media.
- 3) A method of testing that wasn't testing for the 'virus', but was only claimed to be, had to be in place to provide the illusion of 'cases' and subsequent 'deaths' that had a very different cause to the 'Covid-19' that would be scribbled on the death certificate.
- 4) Because there was no 'virus' and the great majority testing positive with a test not testing for the 'virus' would have no symptoms of anything the lie had to be sold that people without symptoms (without the 'virus') could still pass it on to others. This was crucial to justify for the first time quarantining – house arresting – healthy people. Without this the economy-destroying lockdown of *everybody* could not have been credibly sold.
- 5) The 'saviour' had to be seen as a vaccine which beyond evil drug companies were working like angels of mercy to develop as quickly as possible, with all corners cut, to save the day. The public must absolutely not know that the 'vaccine' had nothing to do with a 'virus' or that the contents were ready and waiting with a very different motive long before the 'Covid' card was even lifted from the pack.

I said in March, 2020, that the 'vaccine' would have been created way ahead of the 'Covid' hoax which justified its use and the following December an article in the New York *Intelligencer* magazine said the Moderna 'vaccine' had been 'designed' by

January, 2020. This was 'before China had even acknowledged that the disease could be transmitted from human to human, more than a week before the first confirmed coronavirus case in the United States'. The article said that by the time the first American death was announced a month later 'the vaccine had already been manufactured and shipped to the National Institutes of Health for the beginning of its Phase I clinical trial'. The 'vaccine' was actually 'designed' long before that although even with this timescale you would expect the article to ask how on earth it could have been done that quickly. Instead it asked why the 'vaccine' had not been rolled out then and not months later. Journalism in the mainstream is truly dead. I am going to detail in the next chapter why the 'virus' has never existed and how a hoax on that scale was possible, but first the foundation on which the Big Lie of 'Covid' was built.

The test that doesn't test

Fraudulent 'testing' is the bottom line of the whole 'Covid' hoax and was the means by which a 'virus' that did not exist *appeared* to exist. They could only achieve this magic trick by using a test not testing for the 'virus'. To use a test that *was* testing for the 'virus' would mean that every test would come back negative given there was no 'virus'. They chose to exploit something called the RT-PCR test invented by American biochemist Kary Mullis in the 1980s who said publicly that his PCR test ... *cannot detect infectious disease*. Yes, the 'test' used worldwide to detect infectious 'Covid' to produce all the illusory 'cases' and 'deaths' compiled by Johns Hopkins and others *cannot detect infectious disease*. This fact came from the mouth of the man who invented PCR and was awarded the Nobel Prize in Chemistry in 1993 for doing so. Sadly, and incredibly conveniently for the Cult, Mullis died in August, 2019, at the age of 74 just before his test would be fraudulently used to unleash fascism on the world. He was said to have died from pneumonia which was an irony in itself. A few months later he would have had 'Covid-19' on his death certificate. I say the timing of his death was convenient because had he lived Mullis, a brilliant, honest and decent man, would have been

vociferously speaking out against the use of his test to detect 'Covid' when it was never designed, or able, to do that. I know that to be true given that Mullis made the same point when his test was used to 'detect' – not detect – HIV. He had been seriously critical of the Gallo/Montagnier claim to have isolated the HIV 'virus' and shown it to cause AIDS for which Mullis said there was no evidence. AIDS is actually not a disease but a series of diseases from which people die all the time. When they die from those *same diseases* after a positive 'test' for HIV then AIDS goes on their death certificate. I think I've heard that before somewhere. Countries instigated a policy with 'Covid' that anyone who tested positive with a test not testing for the 'virus' and died of any other cause within 28 days and even longer 'Covid-19' had to go on the death certificate. Cases have come from the test that can't test for infectious disease and the deaths are those who have died of *anything* after testing positive with a test not testing for the 'virus'. I'll have much more later about the death certificate scandal.

Mullis was deeply dismissive of the now US 'Covid' star Anthony Fauci who he said was a liar who didn't know anything about anything – 'and I would say that to his face – nothing.' He said of Fauci: 'The man thinks he can take a blood sample, put it in an electron microscope and if it's got a virus in there you'll know it – he doesn't understand electron microscopy and he doesn't understand medicine and shouldn't be in a position like he's in.' That position, terrifyingly, has made him the decider of 'Covid' fascism policy on behalf of the Cult in his role as director since 1984 of the National Institute of Allergy and Infectious Diseases (NIAID) while his record of being wrong is laughable; but being wrong, so long as it's the *right kind* of wrong, is why the Cult loves him. He'll say anything the Cult tells him to say. Fauci was made Chief Medical Adviser to the President immediately Biden took office. Biden was installed in the White House by Cult manipulation and one of his first decisions was to elevate Fauci to a position of even more control. This is a coincidence? Yes, and I identify as a flamenco dancer called Lola. How does such an incompetent criminal like Fauci remain in that

pivotal position in American health since *the 1980s*? When you serve the Cult it looks after you until you are surplus to requirements. Kary Mullis said prophetically of Fauci and his like: 'Those guys have an agenda and it's not an agenda we would like them to have ... they make their own rules, they change them when they want to, and Tony Fauci does not mind going on television in front of the people who pay his salary and lie directly into the camera.' Fauci has done that almost daily since the 'Covid' hoax began. Lying is in Fauci's DNA. To make the situation crystal clear about the PCR test this is a direct quote from its inventor Kary Mullis:

It [the PCR test] doesn't tell you that you're sick and doesn't tell you that the thing you ended up with was really going to hurt you ...'

Ask yourself why governments and medical systems the world over have been using this very test to decide who is 'infected' with the SARS-CoV-2 'virus' and the alleged disease it allegedly causes, 'Covid-19'. The answer to that question will tell you what has been going on. By the way, here's a little show-stopper – the 'new' SARS-CoV-2 'virus' was 'identified' as such right from the start using ... *the PCR test not testing for the 'virus'*. If you are new to this and find that shocking then stick around. I have hardly started yet. Even worse, other 'tests', like the 'Lateral Flow Device' (LFD), are considered so useless that they have to be *confirmed* by the PCR test! Leaked emails written by Ben Dyson, adviser to UK 'Health' Secretary Matt Hancock, said they were 'dangerously unreliable'. Dyson, executive director of strategy at the Department of Health, wrote: 'As of today, someone who gets a positive LFD result in (say) London has at best a 25 per cent chance of it being a true positive, but if it is a self-reported test potentially as low as 10 per cent (on an optimistic assumption about specificity) or as low as 2 per cent (on a more pessimistic assumption).' These are the 'tests' that schoolchildren and the public are being urged to have twice a week or more and have to isolate if they get a positive. Each fake positive goes in the statistics as a 'case' no matter how ludicrously inaccurate and the

'cases' drive lockdown, masks and the pressure to 'vaccinate'. The government said in response to the email leak that the 'tests' were accurate which confirmed yet again what shocking bloody liars they are. The real false positive rate is *100 percent* as we'll see. In another 'you couldn't make it up' the UK government agreed to pay £2.8 billion to California's Innova Medical Group to supply the irrelevant lateral flow tests. The company's primary test-making centre is in China. Innova Medical Group, established in March, 2020, is owned by Pasaca Capital Inc, chaired by Chinese-American millionaire Charles Huang who was born in Wuhan.

How it works – and how it doesn't

The RT-PCR test, known by its full title of Polymerase chain reaction, is used across the world to make millions, even billions, of copies of a DNA/RNA genetic information sample. The process is called 'amplification' and means that a tiny sample of genetic material is amplified to bring out the detailed content. I stress that it is not testing for an infectious disease. It is simply amplifying a sample of genetic material. In the words of Kary Mullis: 'PCR is ... just a process that's used to make a whole lot of something out of something.' To emphasise the point companies that make the PCR tests circulated around the world to 'test' for 'Covid' warn on the box that it can't be used to detect 'Covid' or infectious disease and is for research purposes only. It's okay, rest for a minute and you'll be fine. This is the test that produces the 'cases' and 'deaths' that have been used to destroy human society. All those global and national medical and scientific 'experts' demanding this destruction to 'save us' *KNOW* that the test is not testing for the 'virus' and the cases and deaths they claim to be real are an almost unimaginable fraud. Every one of them and so many others including politicians and psychopaths like Gates and Tedros must be brought before Nuremburg-type trials and jailed for the rest of their lives. The more the genetic sample is amplified by PCR the more elements of that material become sensitive to the test and by that I don't mean sensitive for a 'virus' but for elements of the genetic material which

is *naturally* in the body or relates to remnants of old conditions of various kinds lying dormant and causing no disease. Once the amplification of the PCR reaches a certain level *everyone* will test positive. So much of the material has been made sensitive to the test that everyone will have some part of it in their body. Even lying criminals like Fauci have said that once PCR amplifications pass 35 cycles everything will be a false positive that cannot be trusted for the reasons I have described. I say, like many proper doctors and scientists, that 100 percent of the 'positives' are false, but let's just go with Fauci for a moment.

He says that any amplification over 35 cycles will produce false positives and yet the US Centers for Disease Control (CDC) and Food and Drug Administration (FDA) have recommended up to 40 *cycles* and the National Health Service (NHS) in Britain admitted in an internal document for staff that it was using 45 *cycles* of amplification. A long list of other countries has been doing the same and at least one 'testing' laboratory has been using 50 *cycles*. Have you ever heard a doctor, medical 'expert' or the media ask what level of amplification has been used to claim a 'positive'. The 'test' comes back 'positive' and so you have the 'virus', end of story. Now we can see how the government in Tanzania could send off samples from a goat and a pawpaw fruit under human names and both came back positive for 'Covid-19'. Tanzania president John Magufuli mocked the 'Covid' hysteria, the PCR test and masks and refused to import the DNA-manipulating 'vaccine'. The Cult hated him and an article sponsored by the Bill Gates Foundation appeared in the London *Guardian* in February, 2021, headed 'It's time for Africa to rein in Tanzania's anti-vaxxer president'. Well, 'reined in' he shortly was. Magufuli appeared in good health, but then, in March, 2021, he was dead at 61 from 'heart failure'. He was replaced by Samia Hassan Suhulu who is connected to Klaus Schwab's World Economic Forum and she immediately reversed Magufuli's 'Covid' policy. A sample of cola tested positive for 'Covid' with the PCR test in Germany while American actress and singer-songwriter Erykah Badu tested positive in one nostril and negative in the other. Footballer Ronaldo called

the PCR test 'bullshit' after testing positive three times and being forced to quarantine and miss matches when there was nothing wrong with him. The mantra from Tedros at the World Health Organization and national governments (same thing) has been test, test, test. They know that the more tests they can generate the more fake 'cases' they have which go on to become 'deaths' in ways I am coming to. The UK government has its Operation Moonshot planned to test multiple millions every day in workplaces and schools with free tests for everyone to use twice a week at home in line with the Cult plan from the start to make testing part of life. A government advertisement for an 'Interim Head of Asymptomatic Testing Communication' said the job included responsibility for delivering a 'communications strategy' (propaganda) 'to support the expansion of asymptomatic testing that *'normalises testing as part of everyday life'*'. More tests means more fake 'cases', 'deaths' and fascism. I have heard of, and from, many people who booked a test, couldn't turn up, and yet got a positive result through the post for a test they'd never even had. The whole thing is crazy, but for the Cult there's method in the madness. Controlling and manipulating the level of amplification of the test means the authorities can control whenever they want the number of apparent 'cases' and 'deaths'. If they want to justify more fascist lockdown and destruction of livelihoods they keep the amplification high. If they want to give the illusion that lockdowns and the 'vaccine' are working then they lower the amplification and 'cases' and 'deaths' will appear to fall. In January, 2021, the Cult-owned World Health Organization suddenly warned laboratories about over-amplification of the test and to lower the threshold. Suddenly headlines began appearing such as: 'Why ARE "Covid" cases plummeting?' This was just when the vaccine rollout was underway and I had predicted months before they would make cases appear to fall through amplification tampering when the 'vaccine' came. These people are so predictable.

Cow vaccines?

The question must be asked of what is on the test swabs being poked far up the nose of the population to the base of the brain? A nasal swab punctured one woman's brain and caused it to leak fluid. Most of these procedures are being done by people with little training or medical knowledge. Dr Lorraine Day, former orthopaedic trauma surgeon and Chief of Orthopaedic Surgery at San Francisco General Hospital, says the tests are really a '*vaccine*'. Cows have long been vaccinated this way. She points out that masks have to cover the nose and the mouth where it is claimed the '*virus*' exists in saliva. Why then don't they take saliva from the mouth as they do with a DNA test instead of pushing a long swab up the nose towards the brain? The ethmoid bone separates the nasal cavity from the brain and within that bone is the cribriform plate. Dr Day says that when the swab is pushed up against this plate and twisted the procedure is '*depositing things back there*'. She claims that among these '*things*' are nanoparticles that can enter the brain. Researchers have noted that a team at the Gates-funded Johns Hopkins have designed tiny, star-shaped micro-devices that can latch onto intestinal mucosa and release drugs into the body. Mucosa is the thin skin that covers the inside surface of parts of the body such as *the nose* and mouth and produces mucus to protect them. The Johns Hopkins micro-devices are called '*theragrippers*' and were '*inspired*' by a parasitic worm that digs its sharp teeth into a host's intestines. Nasal swabs are also coated in the sterilisation agent ethylene oxide. The US National Cancer Institute posts this explanation on its website:

At room temperature, ethylene oxide is a flammable colorless gas with a sweet odor. It is used primarily to produce other chemicals, including antifreeze. In smaller amounts, ethylene oxide is used as a pesticide and a sterilizing agent. The ability of ethylene oxide to damage DNA makes it an effective sterilizing agent but also accounts for its cancer-causing activity.

The Institute mentions lymphoma and leukaemia as cancers most frequently reported to be associated with occupational exposure to ethylene oxide along with stomach and breast cancers. How does anyone think this is going to work out with the constant testing

regime being inflicted on adults and children at home and at school that will accumulate in the body anything that's on the swab?

Doctors know best

It is vital for people to realise that 'hero' doctors 'know' only what the Big Pharma-dominated medical authorities tell them to 'know' and if they refuse to 'know' what they are told to 'know' they are out the door. They are mostly not physicians or healers, but repeaters of the official narrative – or else. I have seen alleged professional doctors on British television make shocking statements that we are supposed to take seriously. One called 'Dr' Amir Khan, who is actually telling patients how to respond to illness, said that men could take the birth pill to 'help slow down the effects of Covid-19'. In March, 2021, another ridiculous 'Covid study' by an American doctor proposed injecting men with the female sex hormone progesterone as a 'Covid' treatment. British doctor Nighat Arif told the BBC that face coverings were now going to be part of ongoing normal. Yes, the vaccine protects you, she said (evidence?) ... but the way to deal with viruses in the community was always going to come down to hand washing, face covering and keeping a physical distance. That's not what we were told before the 'vaccine' was circulating. Arif said she couldn't imagine ever again going on the underground or in a lift without a mask. I was just thanking my good luck that she was not my doctor when she said – in March, 2021 – that if 'we are *behaving* and we are doing all the right things' she thought we could 'have our nearest and dearest around us at home ... around *Christmas* and *New Year*! Her patronising delivery was the usual school teacher talking to six-year-olds as she repeated every government talking point and probably believed them all. If we have learned anything from the 'Covid' experience surely it must be that humanity's perception of doctors needs a fundamental rethink. NHS 'doctor' Sara Kayat told her television audience that the 'Covid vaccine' would '100 percent prevent hospitalisation and death'. Not even Big Pharma claimed that. We have to stop taking 'experts' at their word without question when so many of them are

clueless and only repeating the party line on which their careers depend. That is not to say there are not brilliant doctors – there are and I have spoken to many of them since all this began – but you won't see them in the mainstream media or quoted by the psychopaths and yes-people in government.

Remember the name – Christian Drosten

German virologist Christian Drosten, Director of Charité Institute of Virology in Berlin, became a national star after the pandemic hoax began. He was feted on television and advised the German government on 'Covid' policy. Most importantly to the wider world Drosten led a group that produced the 'Covid' testing protocol for the PCR test. What a remarkable feat given the PCR cannot test for infectious disease and even more so when you think that Drosten said that his method of testing for SARS-CoV-2 was developed 'without having virus material available'. *He developed a test for a 'virus' that he didn't have and had never seen.* Let that sink in as you survey the global devastation that came from what he did. The whole catastrophe of Drosten's 'test' was based on the alleged genetic sequence published by Chinese scientists on the Internet. We will see in the next chapter that this alleged 'genetic sequence' has never been produced by China or anyone and cannot be when there *is no* SARS-CoV-2. Drosten, however, doesn't seem to let little details like that get in the way. He was the lead author with Victor Corman from the same Charité Hospital of the paper 'Detection of 2019 novel coronavirus (2019-nCoV) by real-time PCR' published in a magazine called *Eurosurveillance*. This became known as the Corman-Drosten paper. In November, 2020, with human society devastated by the effects of the Corman-Drosten test baloney, the protocol was publicly challenged by 22 international scientists and independent researchers from Europe, the United States, and Japan. Among them were senior molecular geneticists, biochemists, immunologists, and microbiologists. They produced a document headed 'External peer review of the RTPCR test to detect SARS-Cov-2 Reveals 10 Major Flaws At The Molecular and Methodological Level: Consequences

For False-Positive Results'. The flaws in the Corman-Drosten test included the following:

- The test is non-specific because of erroneous design
- Results are enormously variable
- The test is unable to discriminate between the whole 'virus' and viral fragments
- It doesn't have positive or negative controls
- The test lacks a standard operating procedure
- It is unsupported by proper peer view

The scientists said the PCR 'Covid' testing protocol was not founded on science and they demanded the Corman-Drosten paper be retracted by *Eurosurveillance*. They said all present and previous Covid deaths, cases, and 'infection rates' should be subject to a massive retroactive inquiry. Lockdowns and travel restrictions should be reviewed and relaxed and those diagnosed through PCR to have 'Covid-19' should not be forced to isolate. Dr Kevin Corbett, a health researcher and nurse educator with a long academic career producing a stream of peer-reviewed publications at many UK universities, made the same point about the PCR test debacle. He said of the scientists' conclusions: 'Every scientific rationale for the development of that test has been totally destroyed by this paper. It's like Hiroshima/Nagasaki to the Covid test.' He said that China hadn't given them an isolated 'virus' when Drosten developed the test. Instead they had developed the test from *a sequence in a gene bank*.' Put another way ... *they made it up!* The scientists were supported in this contention by a Portuguese appeals court which ruled in November, 2020, that PCR tests are unreliable and it is unlawful to quarantine people based solely on a PCR test. The point about China not providing an isolated virus must be true when the 'virus' has never been isolated to this day and the consequences of that will become clear. Drosten and company produced this useless 'protocol' right on cue in January, 2020, just as the 'virus' was said to

be moving westward and it somehow managed to successfully pass a peer-review in 24 hours. In other words there was no peer-review for a test that would be used to decide who had 'Covid' and who didn't across the world. The Cult-created, Gates-controlled World Health Organization immediately recommended all its nearly 200 member countries to use the Drosten PCR protocol to detect 'cases' and 'deaths'. The sting was underway and it continues to this day.

So who is this Christian Drosten that produced the means through which death, destruction and economic catastrophe would be justified? His education background, including his doctoral thesis, would appear to be somewhat shrouded in mystery and his track record is dire as with another essential player in the 'Covid' hoax, the Gates-funded Professor Neil Ferguson at the Gates-funded Imperial College in London of whom more shortly. Drosten predicted in 2003 that the alleged original SARS 'virus' (SARS-1) was an epidemic that could have serious effects on economies and an effective vaccine would take at least two years to produce. Drosten's answer to every alleged 'outbreak' is a vaccine which you won't be shocked to know. What followed were just 774 official deaths worldwide and none in Germany where there were only nine cases. That is even if you believe there ever was a SARS 'virus' when the evidence is zilch and I will expand on this in the next chapter. Drosten claims to be co-discoverer of 'SARS-1' and developed a test for it in 2003. He was screaming warnings about 'swine flu' in 2009 and how it was a widespread infection far more severe than any dangers from a vaccine could be and people should get vaccinated. It would be helpful for Drosten's vocal chords if he simply recorded the words 'the virus is deadly and you need to get vaccinated' and copies could be handed out whenever the latest made-up threat comes along. Drosten's swine flu epidemic never happened, but Big Pharma didn't mind with governments spending hundreds of millions on vaccines that hardly anyone bothered to use and many who did wished they hadn't. A study in 2010 revealed that the risk of dying from swine flu, or H1N1, was no higher than that of the annual seasonal flu which is what at least most of 'it' really was as in

the case of 'Covid-19'. A media investigation into Drosten asked how with such a record of inaccuracy he could be *the* government adviser on these issues. The answer to that question is the same with Drosten, Ferguson and Fauci – they keep on giving the authorities the 'conclusions' and 'advice' they want to hear. Drosten certainly produced the goods for them in January, 2020, with his PCR protocol garbage and provided the foundation of what German internal medicine specialist Dr Claus Köhnlein, co-author of *Virus Mania*, called the 'test pandemic'. The 22 scientists in the *Eurosurveillance* challenge called out conflicts of interest within the Drosten 'protocol' group and with good reason. Olfert Landt, a regular co-author of Drosten 'studies', owns the biotech company TIB Molbiol Syntheselabor GmbH in Berlin which manufactures and sells the tests that Drosten and his mates come up with. They have done this with SARS, Enterotoxigenic E. coli (ETEC), MERS, Zika 'virus', yellow fever, and now 'Covid'. Landt told the *Berliner Zeitung* newspaper:

The testing, design and development came from the Charité [Drosten and Corman]. We simply implemented it immediately in the form of a kit. And if we don't have the virus, which originally only existed in Wuhan, we can make a synthetic gene to simulate the genome of the virus. That's what we did very quickly.

This is more confirmation that the Drosten test was designed without access to the 'virus' and only a synthetic simulation which is what SARS-CoV-2 really is – a computer-generated synthetic fiction. It's quite an enterprise they have going here. A Drosten team decides what the test for something should be and Landt's biotech company flogs it to governments and medical systems across the world. His company must have made an absolute fortune since the 'Covid' hoax began. Dr Reiner Fuellmich, a prominent German consumer protection trial lawyer in Germany and California, is on Drosten's case and that of Tedros at the World Health Organization for crimes against humanity with a class-action lawsuit being prepared in the United States and other legal action in Germany.

Why China?

Scamming the world with a 'virus' that doesn't exist would seem impossible on the face of it, but not if you have control of the relatively few people that make policy decisions and the great majority of the global media. Remember it's not about changing 'real' reality it's about controlling *perception* of reality. You don't have to make something happen you only have to make people *believe* that it's happening. Renegade Minds understand this and are therefore much harder to swindle. 'Covid-19' is not a 'real' 'virus'. It's a mind virus, like a computer virus, which has infected the minds, not the bodies, of billions. It all started, publically at least, in China and that alone is of central significance. The Cult was behind the revolution led by its asset Mao Zedong, or Chairman Mao, which established the People's Republic of China on October 1st, 1949. It should have been called The Cult's Republic of China, but the name had to reflect the recurring illusion that vicious dictatorships are run by and for the people (see all the 'Democratic Republics' controlled by tyrants). In the same way we have the 'Biden' Democratic Republic of America officially ruled by a puppet tyrant (at least temporarily) on behalf of Cult tyrants. The creation of Mao's merciless communist/fascist dictatorship was part of a frenzy of activity by the Cult at the conclusion of World War Two which, like the First World War, it had instigated through its assets in Germany, Britain, France, the United States and elsewhere. Israel was formed in 1948; the Soviet Union expanded its 'Iron Curtain' control, influence and military power with the Warsaw Pact communist alliance in 1955; the United Nations was formed in 1945 as a Cult precursor to world government; and a long list of world bodies would be established including the World Health Organization (1948), World Trade Organization (1948 under another name until 1995), International Monetary Fund (1945) and World Bank (1944). Human society was redrawn and hugely centralised in the global Problem-Reaction-Solution that was World War Two. All these changes were significant. Israel would become the headquarters of the Sabbatians

and the revolution in China would prepare the ground and control system for the events of 2019/2020.

Renegade Minds know there are no borders except for public consumption. The Cult is a seamless, borderless global entity and to understand the game we need to put aside labels like borders, nations, countries, communism, fascism and democracy. These delude the population into believing that countries are ruled within their borders by a government of whatever shade when these are mere agencies of a global power. America's illusion of democracy and China's communism/fascism are subsidiaries – vehicles – for the same agenda. We may hear about conflict and competition between America and China and on the lower levels that will be true; but at the Cult level they are branches of the same company in the way of the McDonald's example I gave earlier. I have tracked in the books over the years support by US governments of both parties for Chinese Communist Party infiltration of American society through allowing the sale of land, even military facilities, and the acquisition of American business and university influence. All this is underpinned by the infamous stealing of intellectual property and technological know-how. Cult-owned Silicon Valley corporations waive their fraudulent 'morality' to do business with human-rights-free China; Cult-controlled Disney has become China's PR department; and China in effect owns 'American' sports such as basketball which depends for much of its income on Chinese audiences. As a result any sports player, coach or official speaking out against China's horrific human rights record is immediately condemned or fired by the China-worshipping National Basketball Association. One of the first acts of China-controlled Biden was to issue an executive order telling federal agencies to stop making references to the 'virus' by the 'geographic location of its origin'. Long-time Congressman Jerry Nadler warned that criticising China, America's biggest rival, leads to hate crimes against Asian people in the United States. So shut up you bigot. China is fast closing in on Israel as a country that must not be criticised which is apt, really, given that Sabbatians control them both. The two countries have

developed close economic, military, technological and strategic ties which include involvement in China's 'Silk Road' transport and economic initiative to connect China with Europe. Israel was the first country in the Middle East to recognise the establishment of Mao's tyranny in 1950 months after it was established.

Project Wuhan – the 'Covid' Psyop

I emphasise again that the Cult plays the long game and what is happening to the world today is the result of centuries of calculated manipulation following a script to take control step-by-step of every aspect of human society. I will discuss later the common force behind all this that has spanned those centuries and thousands of years if the truth be told. Instigating the Mao revolution in China in 1949 with a 2020 'pandemic' in mind is not only how they work – the 71 years between them is really quite short by the Cult's standards of manipulation preparation. The reason for the Cult's Chinese revolution was to create a fiercely-controlled environment within which an extreme structure for human control could be incubated to eventually be unleashed across the world. We have seen this happen since the 'pandemic' emerged from China with the Chinese control-structure founded on AI technology and tyrannical enforcement sweep across the West. Until the moment when the Cult went for broke in the West and put its fascism on public display Western governments had to pay some lip-service to freedom and democracy to not alert too many people to the tyranny-in-the-making. Freedoms were more subtly eroded and power centralised with covert government structures put in place waiting for the arrival of 2020 when that smokescreen of 'freedom' could be dispensed with. The West was not able to move towards tyranny before 2020 anything like as fast as China which was created as a tyranny and had no limits on how fast it could construct the Cult's blueprint for global control. When the time came to impose that structure on the world it was the same Cult-owned Chinese communist/fascist government that provided the excuse – the 'Covid pandemic'. It was absolutely crucial to the Cult plan for the Chinese response to the 'pandemic' –

draconian lockdowns of the entire population – to become the blueprint that Western countries would follow to destroy the livelihoods and freedom of their people. This is why the Cult-owned, Gates-owned, WHO Director-General Tedros said early on:

The Chinese government is to be congratulated for the extraordinary measures it has taken to contain the outbreak. China is actually setting a new standard for outbreak response and it is not an exaggeration.

Forbes magazine said of China: ‘... those measures protected untold millions from getting the disease’. The Rockefeller Foundation ‘epidemic scenario’ document in 2010 said ‘prophetically’:

However, a few countries did fare better – China in particular. The Chinese government’s quick imposition and enforcement of mandatory quarantine for all citizens, as well as its instant and near-hermetic sealing off of all borders, saved millions of lives, stopping the spread of the virus far earlier than in other countries and enabling a swifter post-pandemic recovery.

Once again – *spooky*.

The first official story was the ‘bat theory’ or rather the bat diversion. The source of the ‘virus outbreak’ we were told was a ‘wet market’ in Wuhan where bats and other animals are bought and eaten in horrifically unhygienic conditions. Then another story emerged through the alternative media that the ‘virus’ had been released on purpose or by accident from a BSL-4 (biosafety level 4) laboratory in Wuhan not far from the wet market. The lab was reported to create and work with lethal concoctions and bioweapons. Biosafety level 4 is the highest in the World Health Organization system of safety and containment. Renegade Minds are aware of what I call designer manipulation. The ideal for the Cult is for people to buy its prime narrative which in the opening salvos of the ‘pandemic’ was the wet market story. It knows, however, that there is now a considerable worldwide alternative media of researchers sceptical of anything governments say and they are often given a version of events in a form they can perceive as credible while misdirecting them from the real truth. In this case let them

think that the conspiracy involved is a 'bioweapon virus' released from the Wuhan lab to keep them from the real conspiracy – *there is no 'virus'*. The WHO's current position on the source of the outbreak at the time of writing appears to be: 'We haven't got a clue, mate.' This is a good position to maintain mystery and bewilderment. The inner circle will know where the 'virus' came from – *nowhere*. The bottom line was to ensure the public believed there *was* a 'virus' and it didn't much matter if they thought it was natural or had been released from a lab. The belief that there was a 'deadly virus' was all that was needed to trigger global panic and fear. The population was terrified into handing their power to authority and doing what they were told. They had to or they were 'all gonna die'.

In March, 2020, information began to come my way from real doctors and scientists and my own additional research which had my intuition screaming: 'Yes, that's it! *There is no virus.*' The 'bioweapon' was not the 'virus'; it was the '*vaccine*' already being talked about that would be the bioweapon. My conclusion was further enhanced by happenings in Wuhan. The 'virus' was said to be sweeping the city and news footage circulated of people collapsing in the street (which they've never done in the West with the same 'virus'). The Chinese government was building 'new hospitals' in a matter of ten days to 'cope with demand' such was the virulent nature of the 'virus'. Yet in what seemed like no time the 'new hospitals' closed – even if they even opened – and China declared itself 'virus-free'. It was back to business as usual. This was more propaganda to promote the Chinese draconian lockdowns in the West as the way to 'beat the virus'. Trouble was that we subsequently had lockdown after lockdown, but never business as usual. As the people of the West and most of the rest of the world were caught in an ever-worsening spiral of lockdown, social distancing, masks, isolated old people, families forced apart, and livelihood destruction, it was party-time in Wuhan. Pictures emerged of thousands of people enjoying pool parties and concerts. It made no sense until you realised there never was a 'virus' and the

whole thing was a Cult set-up to transform human society out of one of its major global strongholds – China.

How is it possible to deceive virtually the entire world population into believing there is a deadly virus when there is not even a 'virus' let alone a deadly one? It's nothing like as difficult as you would think and that's clearly true because it happened.

Postscript: See end of book Postscript for more on the 'Wuhan lab virus release' story which the authorities and media were pushing heavily in the summer of 2021 to divert attention from the truth that the 'Covid virus' is pure invention.

CHAPTER FIVE

There is no 'virus'

You can fool some of the people all of the time, and all of the people some of the time, but you cannot fool all of the people all of the time
Abraham Lincoln

The greatest form of mind control is repetition. The more you repeat the same mantra of alleged 'facts' the more will accept them to be true. It becomes an 'everyone knows that, mate'. If you can also censor any other version or alternative to your alleged 'facts' you are pretty much home and cooking.

By the start of 2020 the Cult owned the global mainstream media almost in its entirety to spew out its 'Covid' propaganda and ignore or discredit any other information and view. Cult-owned social media platforms in Cult-owned Silicon Valley were poised and ready to unleash a campaign of ferocious censorship to obliterate all but the official narrative. To complete the circle many demands for censorship by Silicon Valley were led by the mainstream media as 'journalists' became full-out enforcers for the Cult both as propagandists and censors. Part of this has been the influx of young people straight out of university who have become 'journalists' in significant positions. They have no experience and a headful of programmed perceptions from their years at school and university at a time when today's young are the most perceptually-targeted generations in known human history given the insidious impact of technology. They enter the media perceptually prepared and ready to repeat the narratives of the system that programmed them to

repeat its narratives. The BBC has a truly pathetic 'specialist disinformation reporter' called Marianna Spring who fits this bill perfectly. She is clueless about the world, how it works and what is really going on. Her role is to discredit anyone doing the job that a proper journalist would do and system-serving hacks like Spring wouldn't dare to do or even see the need to do. They are too busy licking the arse of authority which can never be wrong and, in the case of the BBC propaganda programme, *Panorama*, contacting payments systems such as PayPal to have a donations page taken down for a film company making documentaries questioning vaccines. Even the BBC soap opera *EastEnders* included a disgracefully biased scene in which an inarticulate white working class woman was made to look foolish for questioning the 'vaccine' while a well-spoken black man and Asian woman promoted the government narrative. It ticked every BBC box and the fact that the black and minority community was resisting the 'vaccine' had nothing to do with the way the scene was written. The BBC has become a disgusting tyrannical propaganda and censorship operation that should be defunded and disbanded and a free media take its place with a brief to stop censorship instead of demanding it. A BBC 'interview' with Gates goes something like: 'Mr Gates, sir, if I can call you sir, would you like to tell our audience why you are such a great man, a wonderful humanitarian philanthropist, and why you should absolutely be allowed as a software salesman to decide health policy for approaching eight billion people? Thank you, sir, please sir.' Propaganda programming has been incessant and merciless and when all you hear is the same story from the media, repeated by those around you who have only heard the same story, is it any wonder that people on a grand scale believe absolute mendacious garbage to be true? You are about to see, too, why this level of information control is necessary when the official 'Covid' narrative is so nonsensical and unsupportable by the evidence.

Structure of Deceit

The pyramid structure through which the 'Covid' hoax has been manifested is very simple and has to be to work. As few people as possible have to be involved with full knowledge of what they are doing – and why – or the real story would get out. At the top of the pyramid are the inner core of the Cult which controls Bill Gates who, in turn, controls the World Health Organization through his pivotal funding and his puppet Director-General mouthpiece, Tedros. Before he was appointed Tedros was chair of the Gates-founded Global Fund to 'fight against AIDS, tuberculosis and malaria', a board member of the Gates-funded 'vaccine alliance' GAVI, and on the board of another Gates-funded organisation. Gates owns him and picked him for a specific reason – Tedros is a crook and worse. 'Dr' Tedros (he's not a medical doctor, the first WHO chief not to be) was a member of the tyrannical Marxist government of Ethiopia for decades with all its human rights abuses. He has faced allegations of corruption and misappropriation of funds and was exposed three times for covering up cholera epidemics while Ethiopia's health minister. Tedros appointed the mass-murdering genocidal Zimbabwe dictator Robert Mugabe as a WHO goodwill ambassador for public health which, as with Tedros, is like appointing a psychopath to run a peace and love campaign. The move was so ridiculous that he had to drop Mugabe in the face of widespread condemnation. American economist David Steinman, a Nobel peace prize nominee, lodged a complaint with the International Criminal Court in The Hague over alleged genocide by Tedros when he was Ethiopia's foreign minister. Steinman says Tedros was a 'crucial decision maker' who directed the actions of Ethiopia's security forces from 2013 to 2015 and one of three officials in charge when those security services embarked on the 'killing' and 'torturing' of Ethiopians. You can see where Tedros is coming from and it's sobering to think that he has been the vehicle for Gates and the Cult to direct the global response to 'Covid'. Think about that. A psychopathic Cult dictates to psychopath Gates who dictates to psychopath Tedros who dictates how countries of the world must respond to a 'Covid virus' never scientifically shown to exist. At the same time psychopathic Cult-owned Silicon Valley information

giants like Google, YouTube, Facebook and Twitter announced very early on that they would give the Cult/Gates/Tedros/WHO version of the narrative free advertising and censor those who challenged their intelligence-insulting, mendacious story.

The next layer in the global 'medical' structure below the Cult, Gates and Tedros are the chief medical officers and science 'advisers' in each of the WHO member countries which means virtually all of them. Medical officers and arbiters of science (they're not) then take the WHO policy and recommended responses and impose them on their country's population while the political 'leaders' say they are deciding policy (they're clearly not) by 'following the science' on the advice of the 'experts' – the same medical officers and science 'advisers' (dictators). In this way with the rarest of exceptions the entire world followed the same policy of lockdown, people distancing, masks and 'vaccines' dictated by the psychopathic Cult, psychopathic Gates and psychopathic Tedros who we are supposed to believe give a damn about the health of the world population they are seeking to enslave. That, amazingly, is all there is to it in terms of crucial decision-making. Medical staff in each country then follow like sheep the dictates of the shepherds at the top of the national medical hierarchies – chief medical officers and science 'advisers' who themselves follow like sheep the shepherds of the World Health Organization and the Cult. Shepherds at the national level often have major funding and other connections to Gates and his Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation which carefully hands out money like confetti at a wedding to control the entire global medical system from the WHO down.

Follow the money

Christopher Whitty, Chief Medical Adviser to the UK Government at the centre of 'virus' policy, a senior adviser to the government's Scientific Advisory Group for Emergencies (SAGE), and Executive Board member of the World Health Organization, was gifted a grant of \$40 million by the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation for malaria research in Africa. The BBC described the unelected Whitty as 'the

official who will probably have the greatest impact on our everyday lives of any individual policymaker in modern times' and so it turned out. What Gates and Tedros have said Whitty has done like his equivalents around the world. Patrick Vallance, co-chair of SAGE and the government's Chief Scientific Adviser, is a former executive of Big Pharma giant GlaxoSmithKline with its fundamental financial and business connections to Bill Gates. In September, 2020, it was revealed that Vallance owned a deferred bonus of shares in GlaxoSmithKline worth £600,000 while the company was 'developing' a 'Covid vaccine'. Move along now – nothing to see here – what could possibly be wrong with that? Imperial College in London, a major player in 'Covid' policy in Britain and elsewhere with its 'Covid-19' Response Team, is funded by Gates and has big connections to China while the now infamous Professor Neil Ferguson, the useless 'computer modeller' at Imperial College is also funded by Gates. Ferguson delivered the dramatically inaccurate excuse for the first lockdowns (much more in the next chapter). The Institute for Health Metrics and Evaluation (IHME) in the United States, another source of outrageously false 'Covid' computer models to justify lockdowns, is bankrolled by Gates who is a vehement promotor of lockdowns. America's version of Whitty and Vallance, the again now infamous Anthony Fauci, has connections to 'Covid vaccine' maker Moderna as does Bill Gates through funding from the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation. Fauci is director of the National Institute of Allergy and Infectious Diseases (NIAID), a major recipient of Gates money, and they are very close. Deborah Birx who was appointed White House Coronavirus Response Coordinator in February, 2020, is yet another with ties to Gates. Everywhere you look at the different elements around the world behind the coordination and decision making of the 'Covid' hoax there is Bill Gates and his money. They include the World Health Organization; Centers for Disease Control (CDC) in the United States; National Institutes of Health (NIH) of Anthony Fauci; Imperial College and Neil Ferguson; the London School of Hygiene where Chris Whitty worked; Regulatory agencies like the UK Medicines & Healthcare products Regulatory Agency (MHRA)

which gave emergency approval for 'Covid vaccines'; Wellcome Trust; GAVI, the Vaccine Alliance; the Coalition for Epidemic Preparedness Innovations (CEPI); Johns Hopkins University which has compiled the false 'Covid' figures; and the World Economic Forum. A [Nationalfile.com](https://www.nationalfile.com) article said:

Gates has a lot of pull in the medical world, he has a multi-million dollar relationship with Dr. Fauci, and Fauci originally took the Gates line supporting vaccines and casting doubt on [the drug hydroxychloroquine]. Coronavirus response team member Dr. Deborah Birx, appointed by former president Obama to serve as United States Global AIDS Coordinator, also sits on the board of a group that has received billions from Gates' foundation, and Birx reportedly used a disputed Bill Gates-funded model for the White House's Coronavirus effort. Gates is a big proponent for a population lockdown scenario for the Coronavirus outbreak.

Another funder of Moderna is the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA), the technology-development arm of the Pentagon and one of the most sinister organisations on earth. DARPA had a major role with the CIA covert technology-funding operation In-Q-Tel in the development of Google and social media which is now at the centre of global censorship. Fauci and Gates are extremely close and openly admit to talking regularly about 'Covid' policy, but then why wouldn't Gates have a seat at every national 'Covid' table after his Foundation committed \$1.75 billion to the 'fight against Covid-19'. When passed through our Orwellian Translation Unit this means that he has bought and paid for the Cult-driven 'Covid' response worldwide. Research the major 'Covid' response personnel in your own country and you will find the same Gates funding and other connections again and again. Medical and science chiefs following World Health Organization 'policy' sit atop a medical hierarchy in their country of administrators, doctors and nursing staff. These 'subordinates' are told they must work and behave in accordance with the policy delivered from the 'top' of the national 'health' pyramid which is largely the policy delivered by the WHO which is the policy delivered by Gates and the Cult. The whole 'Covid' narrative has been imposed on medical staff by a climate of fear although great numbers don't even need that to comply. They do so through breathtaking levels of ignorance and

include doctors who go through life simply repeating what Big Pharma and their hierarchical masters tell them to say and believe. No wonder Big Pharma 'medicine' is one of the biggest killers on Planet Earth.

The same top-down system of intimidation operates with regard to the Cult Big Pharma cartel which also dictates policy through national and global medical systems in this way. The Cult and Big Pharma agendas are the same because the former controls and owns the latter. 'Health' administrators, doctors, and nursing staff are told to support and parrot the dictated policy or they will face consequences which can include being fired. How sad it's been to see medical staff meekly repeating and imposing Cult policy without question and most of those who can see through the deceit are only willing to speak anonymously off the record. They know what will happen if their identity is known. This has left the courageous few to expose the lies about the 'virus', face masks, overwhelmed hospitals that aren't, and the dangers of the 'vaccine' that isn't a vaccine. When these medical professionals and scientists, some renowned in their field, have taken to the Internet to expose the truth their articles, comments and videos have been deleted by Cult-owned Facebook, Twitter and YouTube. What a real head-shaker to see YouTube videos with leading world scientists and highly qualified medical specialists with an added link underneath to the notorious Cult propaganda website *Wikipedia* to find the 'facts' about the same subject.

HIV – the 'Covid' trial-run

I'll give you an example of the consequences for health and truth that come from censorship and unquestioning belief in official narratives. The story was told by PCR inventor Kary Mullis in his book *Dancing Naked in the Mind Field*. He said that in 1984 he accepted as just another scientific fact that Luc Montagnier of France's Pasteur Institute and Robert Gallo of America's National Institutes of Health had independently discovered that a 'retrovirus' dubbed HIV (human immunodeficiency virus) caused AIDS. They

were, after all, Mullis writes, specialists in retroviruses. This is how the medical and science pyramids work. Something is announced or *assumed* and then becomes an everybody-knows-that purely through repetition of the assumption as if it is fact. Complete crap becomes accepted truth with no supporting evidence and only repetition of the crap. This is how a 'virus' that doesn't exist became the 'virus' that changed the world. The HIV-AIDS fairy story became a multi-billion pound industry and the media poured out propaganda terrifying the world about the deadly HIV 'virus' that caused the lethal AIDS. By then Mullis was working at a lab in Santa Monica, California, to detect retroviruses with his PCR test in blood donations received by the Red Cross. In doing so he asked a virologist where he could find a reference for HIV being the cause of AIDS. 'You don't need a reference,' the virologist said ... '*Everybody knows it.*' Mullis said he wanted to quote a reference in the report he was doing and he said he felt a little funny about not knowing the source of such an important discovery when everyone else seemed to. The virologist suggested he cite a report by the Centers for Disease Control and Prevention (CDC) on morbidity and mortality. Mullis read the report, but it only said that an organism had been identified and did not say how. The report did not identify the original scientific work. Physicians, however, *assumed* (key recurring theme) that if the CDC was convinced that HIV caused AIDS then proof must exist. Mullis continues:

I did computer searches. Neither Montagnier, Gallo, nor anyone else had published papers describing experiments which led to the conclusion that HIV probably caused AIDS. I read the papers in *Science* for which they had become well known as AIDS doctors, but all they had said there was that they had found evidence of a past infection by something which was probably HIV in some AIDS patients.

They found antibodies. Antibodies to viruses had always been considered evidence of past disease, not present disease. Antibodies signaled that the virus had been defeated. The patient had saved himself. There was no indication in these papers that this virus caused a disease. They didn't show that everybody with the antibodies had the disease. In fact they found some healthy people with antibodies.

Mullis asked why their work had been published if Montagnier and Gallo hadn't really found this evidence, and why had they been fighting so hard to get credit for the discovery? He says he was hesitant to write 'HIV is the probable cause of AIDS' until he found published evidence to support that. 'Tens of thousands of scientists and researchers were spending billions of dollars a year doing research based on this idea,' Mullis writes. 'The reason had to be there somewhere; otherwise these people would not have allowed their research to settle into one narrow channel of investigation.' He said he lectured about PCR at numerous meetings where people were always talking about HIV and he asked them how they knew that HIV was the cause of AIDS:

Everyone said something. Everyone had the answer at home, in the office, in some drawer. They all knew, and they would send me the papers as soon as they got back. But I never got any papers. Nobody ever sent me the news about how AIDS was caused by HIV.

Eventually Mullis was able to ask Montagnier himself about the reference proof when he lectured in San Diego at the grand opening of the University of California AIDS Research Center. Mullis says this was the last time he would ask his question without showing anger. Montagnier said he should reference the CDC report. 'I read it', Mullis said, and it didn't answer the question. 'If Montagnier didn't know the answer who the hell did?' Then one night Mullis was driving when an interview came on National Public Radio with Peter Duesberg, a prominent virologist at Berkeley and a California Scientist of the Year. Mullis says he finally understood why he could not find references that connected HIV to AIDS – *there weren't any!* No one had ever proved that HIV causes AIDS even though it had spawned a multi-billion pound global industry and the media was repeating this as fact every day in their articles and broadcasts terrifying the shit out of people about AIDS and giving the impression that a positive test for HIV (see 'Covid') was a death sentence. Duesberg was a threat to the AIDS gravy train and the agenda that underpinned it. He was therefore abused and castigated after he told the Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences

there was no good evidence implicating the new 'virus'. Editors rejected his manuscripts and his research funds were deleted. Mullis points out that the CDC has defined AIDS as one of more than 30 diseases *if accompanied* by a positive result on a test that detects antibodies to HIV; but those same diseases are not defined as AIDS cases when antibodies are not detected:

If an HIV-positive woman develops uterine cancer, for example, she is considered to have AIDS. If she is not HIV positive, she simply has uterine cancer. An HIV-positive man with tuberculosis has AIDS; if he tests negative he simply has tuberculosis. If he lives in Kenya or Colombia, where the test for HIV antibodies is too expensive, he is simply presumed to have the antibodies and therefore AIDS, and therefore he can be treated in the World Health Organization's clinic. It's the only medical help available in some places. And it's free, because the countries that support WHO are worried about AIDS.

Mullis accuses the CDC of continually adding new diseases (see ever more 'Covid symptoms') to the grand AIDS definition and of virtually doctoring the books to make it appear as if the disease continued to spread. He cites how in 1993 the CDC enormously broadened its AIDS definition and county health authorities were delighted because they received \$2,500 per year from the Federal government for every reported AIDS case. Ladies and gentlemen, I have just described, via Kary Mullis, the 'Covid pandemic' of 2020 and beyond. Every element is the same and it's been pulled off in the same way by the same networks.

The 'Covid virus' exists? Okay – prove it. Er ... still waiting

What Kary Mullis described with regard to 'HIV' has been repeated with 'Covid'. A claim is made that a new, or 'novel', infection has been found and the entire medical system of the world repeats that as fact exactly as they did with HIV and AIDS. No one in the mainstream asks rather relevant questions such as 'How do you know?' and 'Where is your proof?' The SARS-Cov-2 'virus' and the 'Covid-19 disease' became an overnight 'everybody-knows-that'. The origin could be debated and mulled over, but what you could not suggest was that 'SARS-Cov-2' didn't exist. That would be

ridiculous. 'Everybody knows' the 'virus' exists. Well, I didn't for one along with American proper doctors like Andrew Kaufman and Tom Cowan and long-time American proper journalist Jon Rappaport. We dared to pursue the obvious and simple question: 'Where's the evidence?' The overwhelming majority in medicine, journalism and the general public did not think to ask that. After all, *everyone knew* there was a new 'virus'. Everyone was saying so and I heard it on the BBC. Some would eventually argue that the 'deadly virus' was nothing like as deadly as claimed, but few would venture into the realms of its very existence. Had they done so they would have found that the evidence for that claim had gone AWOL as with HIV causes AIDS. In fact, not even that. For something to go AWOL it has to exist in the first place and scientific proof for a 'SARS-Cov-2' can be filed under nothing, nowhere and zilch.

Dr Andrew Kaufman is a board-certified forensic psychiatrist in New York State, a Doctor of Medicine and former Assistant Professor and Medical Director of Psychiatry at SUNY Upstate Medical University, and Medical Instructor of Hematology and Oncology at the Medical School of South Carolina. He also studied biology at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (MIT) and trained in Psychiatry at Duke University. Kaufman is retired from allopathic medicine, but remains a consultant and educator on natural healing. I saw a video of his very early on in the 'Covid' hoax in which he questioned claims about the 'virus' in the absence of any supporting evidence and with plenty pointing the other way. I did everything I could to circulate his work which I felt was asking the pivotal questions that needed an answer. I can recommend an excellent pull-together interview he did with the website The Last Vagabond entitled *Dr Andrew Kaufman: Virus Isolation, Terrain Theory and Covid-19* and his website is andrewkaufmanmd.com. Kaufman is not only a forensic psychiatrist; he is forensic in all that he does. He always reads original scientific papers, experiments and studies instead of second-third-fourth-hand reports about the 'virus' in the media which are repeating the repeated repetition of the narrative. When he did so with the original Chinese 'virus' papers Kaufman

realised that there was no evidence of a 'SARS-Cov-2'. They had never – from the start – shown it to exist and every repeat of this claim worldwide was based on the accepted existence of proof that was nowhere to be found – see Kary Mullis and HIV. Here we go again.

Let's postulate

Kaufman discovered that the Chinese authorities immediately concluded that the cause of an illness that broke out among about 200 initial patients in Wuhan was a 'new virus' when there were no grounds to make that conclusion. The alleged 'virus' was not isolated from other genetic material in their samples and then shown through a system known as Koch's postulates to be the causative agent of the illness. The world was told that the SARS-Cov-2 'virus' caused a disease they called 'Covid-19' which had 'flu-like' symptoms and could lead to respiratory problems and pneumonia. If it wasn't so tragic it would almost be funny. *'Flu-like' symptoms? Pneumonia? Respiratory disease?* What in *CHINA* and particularly in *Wuhan*, one of the most polluted cities in the world with a resulting epidemic of respiratory disease?? Three hundred thousand people get pneumonia in China every year and there are nearly a billion cases worldwide of 'flu-like symptoms'. These have a whole range of causes – including pollution in Wuhan – but no other possibility was credibly considered in late 2019 when the world was told there was a new and deadly 'virus'. The global prevalence of pneumonia and 'flu-like systems' gave the Cult networks unlimited potential to re-diagnose these other causes as the mythical 'Covid-19' and that is what they did from the very start. Kaufman revealed how Chinese medical and science authorities (all subordinates to the Cult-owned communist government) took genetic material from the lungs of only a few of the first patients. The material contained their own cells, bacteria, fungi and other microorganisms living in their bodies. The only way you could prove the existence of the 'virus' and its responsibility for the alleged 'Covid-19' was to isolate the virus from all the other material – a process also known as 'purification' – and

then follow the postulates sequence developed in the late 19th century by German physician and bacteriologist Robert Koch which became the 'gold standard' for connecting an alleged causation agent to a disease:

1. The microorganism (bacteria, fungus, virus, etc.) must be present in every case of the disease and all patients must have the same symptoms. It must also *not be present in healthy individuals*.
2. The microorganism must be isolated from the host with the disease. If the microorganism is a bacteria or fungus it must be grown in a pure culture. If it is a virus, it must be purified (i.e. containing no other material except the virus particles) from a clinical sample.
3. The specific disease, with all of its characteristics, must be reproduced when the infectious agent (the purified virus or a pure culture of bacteria or fungi) is inoculated into a healthy, susceptible host.
4. The microorganism must be recoverable from the experimentally infected host as in step 2.

Not one of these criteria has been met in the case of 'SARS-Cov-2' and 'Covid-19'. Not ONE. EVER. Robert Koch refers to bacteria and not viruses. What are called 'viral particles' are so minute (hence masks are useless by any definition) that they could only be seen after the invention of the electron microscope in the 1930s and can still only be observed through that means. American bacteriologist and virologist Thomas Milton Rivers, the so-called 'Father of Modern Virology' who was very significantly director of the Rockefeller Institute for Medical Research in the 1930s, developed a less stringent version of Koch's postulates to identify 'virus' causation known as 'Rivers criteria'. 'Covid' did not pass that process either. Some even doubt whether any 'virus' can be isolated from other particles containing genetic material in the Koch method. Freedom of Information requests in many countries asking for scientific proof that the 'Covid virus' has been purified and isolated and shown to exist have all come back with a 'we don't have that' and when this happened with a request to the UK Department of Health they added this comment:

However, outside of the scope of the [Freedom of Information Act] and on a discretionary basis, the following information has been advised to us, which may be of interest. Most infectious diseases are caused by viruses, bacteria or fungi. Some bacteria or fungi have the capacity to grow on their own in isolation, for example in colonies on a petri dish. Viruses are different in that they are what we call 'obligate pathogens' – that is, they cannot survive or reproduce without infecting a host ...

... For some diseases, it is possible to establish causation between a microorganism and a disease by isolating the pathogen from a patient, growing it in pure culture and reintroducing it to a healthy organism. These are known as 'Koch's postulates' and were developed in 1882. However, as our understanding of disease and different disease-causing agents has advanced, these are no longer the method for determining causation [Andrew Kaufman asks why in that case are there two published articles falsely claiming to satisfy Koch's postulates].

It has long been known that viral diseases cannot be identified in this way as viruses cannot be grown in 'pure culture'. When a patient is tested for a viral illness, this is normally done by looking for the presence of antigens, or viral genetic code in a host with molecular biology techniques [Kaufman asks how you could know the origin of these chemicals without having a pure culture for comparison].

For the record 'antigens' are defined so:

Invading microorganisms have antigens on their surface that the human body can recognise as being foreign – meaning not belonging to it. When the body recognises a foreign antigen, lymphocytes (white blood cells) produce antibodies, which are complementary in shape to the antigen.

Notwithstanding that this is open to question in relation to 'SARS-Cov-2' the presence of 'antibodies' can have many causes and they are found in people that are perfectly well. Kary Mullis said: 'Antibodies ... had always been considered evidence of past disease, not present disease.'

'Covid' really is a *computer* 'virus'

Where the UK Department of Health statement says 'viruses' are now 'diagnosed' through a 'viral genetic code in a host with molecular biology techniques', they mean ... *the PCR test* which its inventor said cannot test for infectious disease. They have no credible method of connecting a 'virus' to a disease and we will see that there is no scientific proof that any 'virus' causes any disease or there is any such thing as a 'virus' in the way that it is described. Tenacious Canadian researcher Christine Massey and her team made

some 40 Freedom of Information requests to national public health agencies in different countries asking for proof that SARS-CoV-2 has been isolated and not one of them could supply that information. Massey said of her request in Canada: 'Freedom of Information reveals Public Health Agency of Canada has no record of 'SARS-COV-2' isolation performed by anyone, anywhere, ever.' If you accept the comment from the UK Department of Health it's because they can't isolate a 'virus'. Even so many 'science' papers claimed to have isolated the 'Covid virus' until they were questioned and had to admit they hadn't. A reply from the Robert Koch Institute in Germany was typical: 'I am not aware of a paper which purified isolated SARS-CoV-2.' So what the hell was Christian Drosten and his gang using to design the 'Covid' testing protocol that has produced all the illusory Covid' cases and 'Covid' deaths when the head of the Chinese version of the CDC admitted there was a problem right from the start in that the 'virus' had never been isolated/purified? Breathe deeply: What they are calling 'Covid' is actually created by a *computer program* i.e. *they made it up* – er, that's it. They took lung fluid, with many sources of genetic material, from one single person alleged to be infected with Covid-19 by a PCR test which they *claimed*, without clear evidence, contained a 'virus'. They used several computer programs to create a model of a theoretical virus genome sequence from more than fifty-six million small sequences of RNA, each of an unknown source, assembling them like a puzzle with no known solution. The computer filled in the gaps with sequences from bits in the gene bank to make it look like a bat SARS-like coronavirus! A wave of the magic wand and poof, an *in silico* (computer-generated) genome, a scientific fantasy, was created. UK health researcher Dr Kevin Corbett made the same point with this analogy:

... It's like giving you a few bones and saying that's your fish. It could be any fish. Not even a skeleton. Here's a few fragments of bones. That's your fish ... It's all from gene bank and the bits of the virus sequence that weren't there they made up.

They synthetically created them to fill in the blanks. That's what genetics is; it's a code. So it's ABBCCDDDD and you're missing some what you think is EEE so you put it in. It's all

synthetic. You just manufacture the bits that are missing. This is the end result of the geneticization of virology. This is basically a computer virus.

Further confirmation came in an email exchange between British citizen journalist Frances Leader and the government's Medicines & Healthcare Products Regulatory Agency (the Gates-funded MHRA) which gave emergency permission for untested 'Covid vaccines' to be used. The agency admitted that the 'vaccine' is not based on an isolated 'virus', but comes from a *computer-generated model*. Frances Leader was naturally banned from Cult-owned fascist Twitter for making this exchange public. The process of creating computer-generated alleged 'viruses' is called 'in silico' or 'in silicon' – computer chips – and the term 'in silico' is believed to originate with biological experiments using only a computer in 1989. 'Vaccines' involved with 'Covid' are also produced 'in silico' or by computer not a natural process. If the original 'virus' is nothing more than a made-up computer model how can there be 'new variants' of something that never existed in the first place? They are not new 'variants'; they are new *computer models* only minutely different to the original program and designed to further terrify the population into having the 'vaccine' and submitting to fascism. You want a 'new variant'? Click, click, enter – there you go. Tell the medical profession that you have discovered a 'South African variant', 'UK variants' or a 'Brazilian variant' and in the usual HIV-causes-AIDS manner they will unquestioningly repeat it with no evidence whatsoever to support these claims. They will go on television and warn about the dangers of 'new variants' while doing nothing more than repeating what they have been told to be true and knowing that any deviation from that would be career suicide. Big-time insiders will know it's a hoax, but much of the medical community is clueless about the way they are being played and themselves play the public without even being aware they are doing so. What an interesting 'coincidence' that AstraZeneca and Oxford University were conducting 'Covid vaccine trials' in the three countries – the UK, South Africa and Brazil – where the first three 'variants' were claimed to have 'broken out'.

Here's your 'virus' – it's a unicorn

Dr Andrew Kaufman presented a brilliant analysis describing how the 'virus' was imagined into fake existence when he dissected an article published by *Nature* and written by 19 authors detailing *alleged* 'sequencing of a complete viral genome' of the 'new SARS-CoV-2 virus'. This computer-modelled *in silico* genome was used as a template for all subsequent genome sequencing experiments that resulted in the so-called variants which he said now number more than 6,000. The fake genome was constructed from more than 56 million individual short strands of RNA. Those little pieces were assembled into longer pieces by finding areas of overlapping sequences. The computer programs created over two million possible combinations from which the authors simply chose the longest one. They then compared this to a 'bat virus' and the computer 'alignment' rearranged the sequence and filled in the gaps! They called this computer-generated abomination the 'complete genome'. Dr Tom Cowan, a fellow medical author and collaborator with Kaufman, said such computer-generation constitutes scientific fraud and he makes this superb analogy:

Here is an equivalency: A group of researchers claim to have found a unicorn because they found a piece of a hoof, a hair from a tail, and a snippet of a horn. They then add that information into a computer and program it to re-create the unicorn, and they then claim this computer re-creation is the real unicorn. Of course, they had never actually seen a unicorn so could not possibly have examined its genetic makeup to compare their samples with the actual unicorn's hair, hooves and horn.

The researchers claim they decided which is the real genome of SARS-CoV-2 by 'consensus', sort of like a vote. Again, different computer programs will come up with different versions of the imaginary 'unicorn', so they come together as a group and decide which is the real imaginary unicorn.

This is how the 'virus' that has transformed the world was brought into fraudulent 'existence'. Extraordinary, yes, but as the Nazis said the bigger the lie the more will believe it. Cowan, however, wasn't finished and he went on to identify what he called the real blockbuster in the paper. He quotes this section from a paper written

by virologists and published by the CDC and then explains what it means:

Therefore, we examined the capacity of SARS-CoV-2 to infect and replicate in several common primate and human cell lines, including human adenocarcinoma cells (A549), human liver cells (HUH 7.0), and human embryonic kidney cells (HEK-293T). In addition to Vero E6 and Vero CCL81 cells. ... Each cell line was inoculated at high multiplicity of infection and examined 24h post-infection.

No CPE was observed in any of the cell lines except in Vero cells, which grew to greater than 10 to the 7th power at 24 h post-infection. In contrast, HUH 7.0 and 293T showed only modest viral replication, and A549 cells were incompatible with SARS CoV-2 infection.

Cowan explains that when virologists attempt to prove infection they have three possible 'hosts' or models on which they can test. The first was humans. Exposure to humans was generally not done for ethical reasons and has never been done with SARS-CoV-2 or any coronavirus. The second possible host was animals. Cowan said that forgetting for a moment that they never actually use purified virus when exposing animals they do use solutions that they *claim* contain the virus. Exposure to animals has been done with SARS-CoV-2 in an experiment involving mice and this is what they found: *None of the wild (normal) mice got sick*. In a group of genetically-modified mice, a statistically insignificant number lost weight and had slightly bristled fur, but they experienced nothing like the illness called 'Covid-19'. Cowan said the third method – the one they mostly rely on – is to inoculate solutions they *say* contain the virus onto a variety of tissue cultures. This process had never been shown to kill tissue *unless* the sample material was starved of nutrients and poisoned as *part of the process*. Yes, incredibly, in tissue experiments designed to show the 'virus' is responsible for killing the tissue they starve the tissue of nutrients and add toxic drugs including antibiotics and they do not have control studies to see if it's the starvation and poisoning that is degrading the tissue rather than the 'virus' they allege to be in there somewhere. You want me to pinch you? Yep, I understand. Tom Cowan said this about the whole nonsensical farce as he explains what that quote from the CDC paper really means:

The shocking thing about the above quote is that using their own methods, the virologists found that solutions containing SARS-CoV-2 – even in high amounts – were NOT, I repeat NOT, infective to any of the three human tissue cultures they tested. In plain English, this means they proved, on their terms, that this ‘new coronavirus’ is not infectious to human beings. It is ONLY infective to monkey kidney cells, and only then when you add two potent drugs (gentamicin and amphotericin), known to be toxic to kidneys, to the mix.

My friends, read this again and again. These virologists, published by the CDC, performed a clear proof, on their terms, showing that the SARS-CoV-2 virus is harmless to human beings. That is the only possible conclusion, but, unfortunately, this result is not even mentioned in their conclusion. They simply say they can provide virus stocks cultured only on monkey Vero cells, thanks for coming.

Cowan concluded: ‘If people really understood how this “science” was done, I would hope they would storm the gates and demand honesty, transparency and truth.’ Dr Michael Yeadon, former Vice President and Chief Scientific Adviser at drug giant Pfizer has been a vocal critic of the ‘Covid vaccine’ and its potential for multiple harm. He said in an interview in April, 2021, that ‘not one [vaccine] has the virus. He was asked why vaccines normally using a ‘dead’ version of a disease to activate the immune system were not used for ‘Covid’ and instead we had the synthetic methods of the ‘mRNA Covid vaccine’. Yeadon said that to do the former ‘you’d have to have some of [the virus] wouldn’t you?’ He added: ‘No-one’s got any – seriously.’ Yeadon said that surely they couldn’t have fooled the whole world for a year without having a virus, ‘but oddly enough ask around – no one’s got it’. He didn’t know why with all the ‘great labs’ around the world that the virus had not been isolated – ‘Maybe they’ve been too busy running bad PCR tests and vaccines that people don’t need.’ What is today called ‘science’ is not ‘science’ at all. Science is no longer what is, but whatever people can be manipulated to *believe* that it is. Real science has been hijacked by the Cult to dispense and produce the ‘expert scientists’ and contentions that suit the agenda of the Cult. How big-time this has happened with the ‘Covid’ hoax which is entirely based on fake science delivered by fake ‘scientists’ and fake ‘doctors’. The human-caused climate change hoax is also entirely based on fake science delivered by fake ‘scientists’ and fake ‘climate experts’. In both cases real

scientists, climate experts and doctors have their views suppressed and deleted by the Cult-owned science establishment, media and Silicon Valley. This is the 'science' that politicians claim to be 'following' and a common denominator of 'Covid' and climate are Cult psychopaths Bill Gates and his mate Klaus Schwab at the Gates-funded World Economic Forum. But, don't worry, it's all just a coincidence and absolutely nothing to worry about. Zzzzzzzzz.

What is a 'virus' REALLY?

Dr Tom Cowan is one of many contesting the very existence of viruses let alone that they cause disease. This is understandable when there is no scientific evidence for a disease-causing 'virus'. German virologist Dr Stefan Lanka won a landmark case in 2017 in the German Supreme Court over his contention that there is no such thing as a measles virus. He had offered a big prize for anyone who could prove there is and Lanka won his case when someone sought to claim the money. There is currently a prize of more than 225,000 euros on offer from an Isolate Truth Fund for anyone who can prove the isolation of SARS-CoV-2 and its genetic substance. Lanka wrote in an article headed 'The Misconception Called Virus' that scientists think a 'virus' is causing tissue to become diseased and degraded when in fact it is the *processes they are using* which do that – not a 'virus'. Lanka has done an important job in making this point clear as Cowan did in his analysis of the CDC paper. Lanka says that all claims about viruses as disease-causing pathogens are wrong and based on 'easily recognisable, understandable and verifiable misinterpretations.' Scientists believed they were working with 'viruses' in their laboratories when they were really working with 'typical particles of specific dying tissues or cells ...' Lanka said that the tissue decaying process claimed to be caused by a 'virus' still happens when no alleged 'virus' is involved. It's the *process* that does the damage and not a 'virus'. The genetic sample is deprived of nutrients, removed from its energy supply through removal from the body and then doused in toxic antibiotics to remove any bacteria. He confirms again that establishment scientists do not (pinch me)

conduct control experiments to see if this is the case and if they did they would see the claims that 'viruses' are doing the damage is nonsense. He adds that during the measles 'virus' court case he commissioned an independent laboratory to perform just such a control experiment and the result was that the tissues and cells died in the exact same way as with alleged 'infected' material. This is supported by a gathering number of scientists, doctors and researchers who reject what is called 'germ theory' or the belief in the body being infected by contagious sources emitted by other people. Researchers Dawn Lester and David Parker take the same stance in their highly-detailed and sourced book *What Really Makes You Ill – Why everything you thought you knew about disease is wrong* which was recommended to me by a number of medical professionals genuinely seeking the truth. Lester and Parker say there is no provable scientific evidence to show that a 'virus' can be transmitted between people or people and animals or animals and people:

The definition also claims that viruses are the cause of many diseases, as if this has been definitively proven. But this is not the case; there is no original scientific evidence that definitively demonstrates that any virus is the cause of any disease. The burden of proof for any theory lies with those who proposed it; but none of the existing documents provides 'proof' that supports the claim that 'viruses' are pathogens.

Dr Tom Cowan employs one of his clever analogies to describe the process by which a 'virus' is named as the culprit for a disease when what is called a 'virus' is only material released by cells detoxing themselves from infiltration by chemical or radiation poisoning. The tidal wave of technologically-generated radiation in the 'smart' modern world plus all the toxic food and drink are causing this to happen more than ever. Deluded 'scientists' misread this as a gathering impact of what they wrongly label 'viruses'.

Paper can infect houses

Cowan said in an article for davidicke.com – with his tongue only mildly in his cheek – that he believed he had made a tremendous

discovery that may revolutionise science. He had discovered that small bits of paper are alive, 'well alive-ish', can 'infect' houses, and then reproduce themselves inside the house. The result was that this explosion of growth in the paper inside the house causes the house to explode, blowing it to smithereens. His evidence for this new theory is that in the past months he had carefully examined many of the houses in his neighbourhood and found almost no scraps of paper on the lawns and surrounds of the house. There was an occasional stray label, but nothing more. Then he would return to these same houses a week or so later and with a few, not all of them, particularly the old and decrepit ones, he found to his shock and surprise they were littered with stray bits of paper. He knew then that the paper had infected these houses, made copies of itself, and blew up the house. A young boy on a bicycle at one of the sites told him he had seen a demolition crew using dynamite to explode the house the previous week, but Cowan dismissed this as the idle thoughts of silly boys because 'I was on to something big'. He was on to how 'scientists' mistake genetic material in the detoxifying process for something they call a 'virus'. Cowan said of his house and paper story:

If this sounds crazy to you, it's because it should. This scenario is obviously nuts. But consider this admittedly embellished, for effect, current viral theory that all scientists, medical doctors and virologists currently believe.

He takes the example of the 'novel SARS-Cov2' virus to prove the point. First they take someone with an undefined illness called 'Covid-19' and don't even attempt to find any virus in their sputum. Never mind the scientists still describe how this 'virus', which they have not located attaches to a cell receptor, injects its genetic material, in 'Covid's' case, RNA, into the cell. The RNA once inserted exploits the cell to reproduce itself and makes 'thousands, nay millions, of copies of itself ... Then it emerges victorious to claim its next victim':

If you were to look in the scientific literature for proof, actual scientific proof, that uniform SARS-CoV2 viruses have been properly isolated from the sputum of a sick person, that actual spike proteins could be seen protruding from the virus (which has not been found), you would find that such evidence doesn't exist.

If you go looking in the published scientific literature for actual pictures, proof, that these spike proteins or any viral proteins are ever attached to any receptor embedded in any cell membrane, you would also find that no such evidence exists. If you were to look for a video or documented evidence of the intact virus injecting its genetic material into the body of the cell, reproducing itself and then emerging victorious by budding off the cell membrane, you would find that no such evidence exists.

The closest thing you would find is electron micrograph pictures of cellular particles, possibly attached to cell debris, both of which to be seen were stained by heavy metals, a process that completely distorts their architecture within the living organism. This is like finding bits of paper stuck to the blown-up bricks, thereby proving the paper emerged by taking pieces of the bricks on its way out.

The Enders baloney

Cowan describes the 'Covid' story as being just as make-believe as his paper story and he charts back this fantasy to a Nobel Prize winner called John Enders (1897-1985), an American biomedical scientist who has been dubbed 'The Father of Modern Vaccines'. Enders is claimed to have 'discovered' the process of the viral culture which 'proved' that a 'virus' caused measles. Cowan explains how Enders did this 'by using the EXACT same procedure that has been followed by every virologist to find and characterize every new virus since 1954'. Enders took throat swabs from children with measles and immersed them in 2ml of milk. Penicillin (100u/ml) and the antibiotic streptomycin (50,g/ml) were added and the whole mix was centrifuged – rotated at high speed to separate large cellular debris from small particles and molecules as with milk and cream, for example. Cowan says that if the aim is to find little particles of genetic material ('viruses') in the snot from children with measles it would seem that the last thing you would do is mix the snot with other material – milk –that also has genetic material. 'How are you ever going to know whether whatever you found came from the snot or the milk?' He points out that streptomycin is a 'nephrotoxic' or poisonous-to-the-kidney drug. You will see the relevance of that

shortly. Cowan says that it gets worse, much worse, when Enders describes the culture medium upon which the virus 'grows': 'The culture medium consisted of bovine amniotic fluid (90%), beef embryo extract (5%), horse serum (5%), antibiotics and phenol red as an indicator of cell metabolism.' Cowan asks incredulously: 'Did he just say that the culture medium also contained fluids and tissues that are themselves rich sources of genetic material?' The genetic cocktail, or 'medium', is inoculated onto tissue and cells from rhesus monkey *kidney* tissue. This is where the importance of streptomycin comes in and currently-used antimicrobials and other drugs that are *poisonous to kidneys* and used in ALL modern viral cultures (e.g. gentamicin, streptomycin, and amphotericin). Cowan asks: 'How are you ever going to know from this witch's brew where any genetic material comes from as we now have five different sources of rich genetic material in our mix?' Remember, he says, that all genetic material, whether from monkey kidney tissues, bovine serum, milk, etc., is made from the exact same components. The same central question returns: 'How are you possibly going to know that it was the virus that killed the kidney tissue and not the toxic antibiotic and starvation rations on which you are growing the tissue?' John Enders answered the question himself – *you can't*:

A second agent was obtained from an uninoculated culture of monkey kidney cells. The cytopathic changes [death of the cells] it induced in the unstained preparations could not be distinguished with confidence from the viruses isolated from measles.

The death of the cells ('cytopathic changes') happened in exactly the same manner, whether they inoculated the kidney tissue with the measles snot or not, Cowan says. 'This is evidence that the destruction of the tissue, the very proof of viral causation of illness, was not caused by anything in the snot because they saw the same destructive effect when the snot was not even used ... the cytopathic, i.e., cell-killing, changes come from the process of the culture itself, not from any virus in any snot, period.' Enders quotes in his 1957 paper a virologist called Ruckle as reporting similar findings 'and in addition has isolated an agent from monkey kidney tissue that is so

far indistinguishable from human measles virus'. In other words, Cowan says, these particles called 'measles viruses' are simply and clearly breakdown products of the starved and poisoned tissue. For measles 'virus' see all 'viruses' including the so-called 'Covid virus'. Enders, the 'Father of Modern Vaccines', also said:

There is a potential risk in employing cultures of primate cells for the production of vaccines composed of attenuated virus, since the presence of other agents possibly latent in primate tissues cannot be definitely excluded by any known method.

Cowan further quotes from a paper published in the journal *Viruses* in May, 2020, while the 'Covid pandemic' was well underway in the media if not in reality. 'EVs' here refers to particles of genetic debris from our own tissues, such as exosomes of which more in a moment: 'The remarkable resemblance between EVs and viruses has caused quite a few problems in the studies focused on the analysis of EVs released during viral infections.' Later the paper adds that to date a reliable method that can actually guarantee a complete separation (of EVs from viruses) DOES NOT EXIST. This was published at a time when a fairy tale 'virus' was claimed in total certainty to be causing a fairy tale 'viral disease' called 'Covid-19' – a fairy tale that was already well on the way to transforming human society in the image that the Cult has worked to achieve for so long. Cowan concludes his article:

To summarize, there is no scientific evidence that pathogenic viruses exist. What we think of as 'viruses' are simply the normal breakdown products of dead and dying tissues and cells. When we are well, we make fewer of these particles; when we are starved, poisoned, suffocated by wearing masks, or afraid, we make more.

There is no engineered virus circulating and making people sick. People in laboratories all over the world are making genetically modified products to make people sick. These are called vaccines. There is no virome, no 'ecosystem' of viruses, viruses are not 8%, 50% or 100 % of our genetic material. These are all simply erroneous ideas based on the misconception called a virus.

What is 'Covid'? Load of bollocks

The background described here by Cowan and Lanka was emphasised in the first video presentation that I saw by Dr Andrew Kaufman when he asked whether the 'Covid virus' was in truth a natural defence mechanism of the body called 'exosomes'. These are released by cells when in states of toxicity – see the same themes returning over and over. They are released ever more profusely as chemical and radiation toxicity increases and think of the potential effect therefore of 5G alone as its destructive frequencies infest the human energetic information field with a gathering pace (5G went online in Wuhan in 2019 as the 'virus' emerged). I'll have more about this later. Exosomes transmit a warning to the rest of the body that 'Houston, we have a problem'. Kaufman presented images of exosomes and compared them with 'Covid' under an electron microscope and the similarity was remarkable. They both attach to the same cell receptors (*claimed* in the case of 'Covid'), contain the same genetic material in the form of RNA or ribonucleic acid, and both are found in 'viral cell cultures' with damaged or dying cells. James Hildreth MD, President and Chief Executive Officer of the Meharry Medical College at Johns Hopkins, said: 'The virus is fully an exosome in every sense of the word.' Kaufman's conclusion was that there is no 'virus': 'This entire pandemic is a completely manufactured crisis ... there is no evidence of anyone dying from [this] illness.' Dr Tom Cowan and Sally Fallon Morell, authors of *The Contagion Myth*, published a statement with Dr Kaufman in February, 2021, explaining why the 'virus' does not exist and you can read it that in full in the Appendix.

'Virus' theory can be traced to the 'cell theory' in 1858 of German physician Rudolf Virchow (1821-1920) who contended that disease originates from a single cell infiltrated by a 'virus'. Dr Stefan Lanka said that findings and insights with respect to the structure, function and central importance of tissues in the creation of life, which were already known in 1858, comprehensively refute the cell theory. Virchow ignored them. We have seen the part later played by John Enders in the 1950s and Lanka notes that infection theories were only established as a global dogma through the policies and

eugenics of the Third Reich in Nazi Germany (creation of the same Sabbatian cult behind the 'Covid' hoax). Lanka said: 'Before 1933, scientists dared to contradict this theory; after 1933, these critical scientists were silenced'. Dr Tom Cowan's view is that ill-health is caused by too much of something, too little of something, or toxification from chemicals and radiation – not contagion. We must also highlight as a major source of the 'virus' theology a man still called the 'Father of Modern Virology' – Thomas Milton Rivers (1888-1962). There is no way given the Cult's long game policy that it was a coincidence for the 'Father of Modern Virology' to be director of the Rockefeller Institute for Medical Research from 1937 to 1956 when he is credited with making the Rockefeller Institute a leader in 'viral research'. Cult Rockefellerers were the force behind the creation of Big Pharma 'medicine', established the World Health Organisation in 1948, and have long and close associations with the Gates family that now runs the WHO during the pandemic hoax through mega-rich Cult gofer and psychopath Bill Gates.

Only a Renegade Mind can see through all this bullshit by asking the questions that need to be answered, not taking 'no' or prevarication for an answer, and certainly not hiding from the truth in fear of speaking it. Renegade Minds have always changed the world for the better and they will change this one no matter how bleak it may currently appear to be.

CHAPTER SIX

Sequence of deceit

If you tell the truth, you don't have to remember anything
Mark Twain

Against the background that I have laid out this far the sequence that took us from an invented 'virus' in Cult-owned China in late 2019 to the fascist transformation of human society can be seen and understood in a whole new context.

We were told that a deadly disease had broken out in Wuhan and the world media began its campaign (coordinated by behavioural psychologists as we shall see) to terrify the population into unquestioning compliance. We were shown images of Chinese people collapsing in the street which never happened in the West with what was supposed to be the same condition. In the earliest days when alleged cases and deaths were few the fear register was hysterical in many areas of the media and this would expand into the common media narrative across the world. The real story was rather different, but we were never told that. The Chinese government, one of the Cult's biggest centres of global operation, said they had discovered a new illness with flu-like and pneumonia-type symptoms in a city with such toxic air that it is overwhelmed with flu-like symptoms, pneumonia and respiratory disease. Chinese scientists said it was a new – 'novel' – coronavirus which they called Sars-Cov-2 and that it caused a disease they labelled 'Covid-19'. There was no evidence for this and the 'virus' has never to this day been isolated, purified and its genetic code established from that. It

was from the beginning a computer-generated fiction. Stories of Chinese whistleblowers saying the number of deaths was being suppressed or that the 'new disease' was related to the Wuhan bio-lab misdirected mainstream and alternative media into cul-de-sacs to obscure the real truth – there was no 'virus'.

Chinese scientists took genetic material from the lung fluid of just a few people and said they had found a 'new' disease when this material had a wide range of content. There was no evidence for a 'virus' for the very reasons explained in the last two chapters. The 'virus' has never been shown to (a) exist and (b) cause any disease. People were diagnosed on symptoms that are so widespread in Wuhan and polluted China and with a PCR test that can't detect infectious disease. On this farce the whole global scam was sold to the rest of the world which would also diagnose respiratory disease as 'Covid-19' from symptoms alone or with a PCR test not testing for a 'virus'. Flu miraculously disappeared *worldwide* in 2020 and into 2021 as it was redesignated 'Covid-19'. It was really the same old flu with its 'flu-like' symptoms attributed to 'flu-like' 'Covid-19'. At the same time with very few exceptions the Chinese response of draconian lockdown and fascism was the chosen weapon to respond across the West as recommended by the Cult-owned Tedros at the Cult-owned World Health Organization run by the Cult-owned Gates. All was going according to plan. Chinese scientists – everything in China is controlled by the Cult-owned government – compared their contaminated RNA lung-fluid material with other RNA sequences and said it appeared to be just under 80 percent identical to the SARS-CoV-1 'virus' claimed to be the cause of the SARS (severe acute respiratory syndrome) 'outbreak' in 2003. They decreed that because of this the 'new virus' had to be related and they called it SARS-CoV-2. There are some serious problems with this assumption and *assumption* was all it was. Most 'factual' science turns out to be assumptions repeated into everyone-knows-that. A match of under 80-percent is meaningless. Dr Kaufman makes the point that there's a 96 percent genetic correlation between humans and chimpanzees, but 'no one would say our genetic material is part

of the chimpanzee family'. Yet the Chinese authorities were claiming that a much lower percentage, less than 80 percent, proved the existence of a new 'coronavirus'. For goodness sake human DNA is 60 percent similar to a *banana*.

You are feeling sleepy

The entire 'Covid' hoax is a global Psyop, a psychological operation to program the human mind into believing and fearing a complete fantasy. A crucial aspect of this was what *appeared* to happen in Italy. It was all very well streaming out daily images of an alleged catastrophe in Wuhan, but to the Western mind it was still on the other side of the world in a very different culture and setting. A reaction of 'this could happen to me and my family' was still nothing like as intense enough for the mind-doctors. The Cult needed a Western example to push people over that edge and it chose Italy, one of its major global locations going back to the Roman Empire. An Italian 'Covid' crisis was manufactured in a particular area called Lombardy which just happens to be notorious for its toxic air and therefore respiratory disease. Wuhan, China, *déjà vu*. An hysterical media told horror stories of Italians dying from 'Covid' in their droves and how Lombardy hospitals were being overrun by a tidal wave of desperately ill people needing treatment after being struck down by the 'deadly virus'. Here was the psychological turning point the Cult had planned. Wow, if this is happening in Italy, the Western mind concluded, this indeed could happen to me and my family. Another point is that Italian authorities responded by following the Chinese blueprint so vehemently recommended by the Cult-owned World Health Organization. They imposed fascistic lockdowns on the whole country viciously policed with the help of surveillance drones sweeping through the streets seeking out anyone who escaped from mass house arrest. Livelihoods were destroyed and psychology unravelled in the way we have witnessed since in all lockdown countries. Crucial to the plan was that Italy responded in this way to set the precedent of suspending freedom and imposing fascism in a 'Western liberal democracy'. I emphasised in an

animated video explanation on davidicke.com posted in the summer of 2020 how important it was to the Cult to expand the Chinese lockdown model across the West. Without this, and the bare-faced lie that non-symptomatic people could still transmit a 'disease' they didn't have, there was no way locking down the whole population, sick and not sick, could be pulled off. At just the right time and with no evidence Cult operatives and gofers claimed that people without symptoms could pass on the 'disease'. In the name of protecting the 'vulnerable' like elderly people, who lockdowns would kill by the tens of thousands, we had for the first time healthy people told to isolate as well as the sick. The great majority of people who tested positive had no symptoms because there was nothing wrong with them. It was just a trick made possible by a test not testing for the 'virus'.

Months after my animated video the Gates-funded Professor Neil Ferguson at the Gates-funded Imperial College confirmed that I was right. He didn't say it in those terms, naturally, but he did say it. Ferguson will enter the story shortly for his outrageously crazy 'computer models' that led to Britain, the United States and many other countries following the Chinese and now Italian methods of response. Put another way, following the Cult script. Ferguson said that SAGE, the UK government's scientific advisory group which has controlled 'Covid' policy from the start, wanted to follow the Chinese lockdown model (while they all continued to work and be paid), but they wondered if they could possibly, in Ferguson's words, 'get away with it in Europe'. 'Get away with it'? Who the hell do these moronic, arrogant people think they are? This appalling man Ferguson said that once Italy went into national lockdown they realised they, too, could mimic China:

It's a communist one-party state, we said. We couldn't get away with it in Europe, we thought ... and then Italy did it. And we realised we could. Behind this garbage from Ferguson is a simple fact: Doing the same as China in every country was the plan from the start and Ferguson's 'models' would play a central role in achieving that. It's just a coincidence, of course, and absolutely nothing to worry your little head about.

Oops, sorry, our mistake

Once the Italian segment of the Psyop had done the job it was designed to do a very different story emerged. Italian authorities revealed that 99 percent of those who had 'died from Covid-19' in Italy had one, two, three, or more 'co-morbidities' or illnesses and health problems that could have ended their life. The US Centers for Disease Control and Prevention (CDC) published a figure of 94 percent for Americans dying of 'Covid' while having other serious medical conditions – on average two to three (some five or six) other potential causes of death. In terms of death from an unproven 'virus' I say it is 100 percent. The other one percent in Italy and six percent in the US would presumably have died from 'Covid's' flu-like symptoms with a range of other possible causes in conjunction with a test not testing for the 'virus'. Fox News reported that even more startling figures had emerged in one US county in which 410 of 422 deaths attributed to 'Covid-19' had other potentially deadly health conditions. The Italian National Health Institute said later that the average age of people dying with a 'Covid-19' diagnosis in Italy was about 81. Ninety percent were over 70 with ten percent over 90. In terms of other reasons to die some 80 percent had two or more chronic diseases with half having three or more including cardiovascular problems, diabetes, respiratory problems and cancer. Why is the phantom 'Covid-19' said to kill overwhelmingly old people and hardly affect the young? Old people continually die of many causes and especially respiratory disease which you can re-diagnose 'Covid-19' while young people die in tiny numbers by comparison and rarely of respiratory disease. Old people 'die of Covid' because they die of other things that can be redesignated 'Covid' and it really is that simple.

Flu has flown

The blueprint was in place. Get your illusory 'cases' from a test not testing for the 'virus' and redesignate other causes of death as 'Covid-19'. You have an instant 'pandemic' from something that is nothing more than a computer-generated fiction. With near-on a

billion people having 'flu-like' symptoms every year the potential was limitless and we can see why flu quickly and apparently miraculously disappeared *worldwide* by being diagnosed 'Covid-19'. The painfully bloody obvious was explained away by the childlike media in headlines like this in the UK '*Independent*': 'Not a single case of flu detected by Public Health England this year as Covid restrictions suppress virus'. I kid you not. The masking, social distancing and house arrest that did not make the 'Covid virus' disappear somehow did so with the 'flu virus'. Even worse the article, by a bloke called Samuel Lovett, suggested that maybe the masking, sanitising and other 'Covid' measures should continue to keep the flu away. With a ridiculousness that disturbs your breathing (it's 'Covid-19') the said Lovett wrote: 'With widespread social distancing and mask-wearing measures in place throughout the UK, the usual routes of transmission for influenza have been blocked.' He had absolutely no evidence to support that statement, but look at the consequences of him acknowledging the obvious. With flu not disappearing at all and only being relabelled 'Covid-19' he would have to contemplate that 'Covid' was a hoax on a scale that is hard to imagine. You need guts and commitment to truth to even go there and that's clearly something Samuel Lovett does not have in abundance. He would never have got it through the editors anyway.

Tens of thousands die in the United States alone every winter from flu including many with pneumonia complications. CDC figures record *45 million* Americans diagnosed with flu in 2017-2018 of which 61,000 died and some reports claim 80,000. Where was the same hysteria then that we have seen with 'Covid-19'? Some 250,000 Americans are admitted to hospital with pneumonia every year with about 50,000 cases proving fatal. About 65 million suffer respiratory disease every year and three million deaths makes this the third biggest cause of death worldwide. You only have to redesignate a portion of all these people 'Covid-19' and you have an instant global pandemic or the *appearance* of one. Why would doctors do this? They are told to do this and all but a few dare not refuse those who must be obeyed. Doctors in general are not researching their own

knowledge and instead take it direct and unquestioned from the authorities that own them and their careers. The authorities say they must now diagnose these symptoms 'Covid-19' and not flu, or whatever, and they do it. Dark suits say put 'Covid-19' on death certificates no matter what the cause of death and the doctors do it. Renegade Minds don't fall for the illusion that doctors and medical staff are all highly-intelligent, highly-principled, seekers of medical truth. *Some are*, but not the majority. They are repeaters, gofers, and yes sir, no sir, purveyors of what the system demands they purvey. The 'Covid' con is not merely confined to diseases of the lungs. Instructions to doctors to put 'Covid-19' on death certificates for anyone dying of *anything* within 28 days (or much more) of a positive test not testing for the 'virus' opened the floodgates. The term dying *with* 'Covid' and not *of* 'Covid' was coined to cover the truth. Whether it was a *with* or an *of* they were all added to the death numbers attributed to the 'deadly virus' compiled by national governments and globally by the Gates-funded Johns Hopkins operation in the United States that was so involved in those 'pandemic' simulations. Fraudulent deaths were added to the ever-growing list of fraudulent 'cases' from false positives from a false test. No wonder Professor Walter Ricciardi, scientific advisor to the Italian minister of health, said after the Lombardy hysteria had done its job that 'Covid' death rates were due to Italy having the second oldest population in the world and to *how hospitals record deaths*:

The way in which we code deaths in our country is very generous in the sense that all the people who die in hospitals with the coronavirus are deemed to be dying of the coronavirus. On re-evaluation by the National Institute of Health, only 12 per cent of death certificates have shown a direct causality from coronavirus, while 88 per cent of patients who have died have at least one pre-morbidity – many had two or three.

This is extraordinary enough when you consider the propaganda campaign to use Italy to terrify the world, but how can they even say twelve percent were genuine when the 'virus' has not been shown to exist, its 'code' is a computer program, and diagnosis comes from a test not testing for it? As in China, and soon the world, 'Covid-19' in

Italy was a redesignation of diagnosis. Lies and corruption were to become the real 'pandemic' fuelled by a pathetically-compliant medical system taking its orders from the tiny few at the top of their national hierarchy who answered to the World Health Organization which answers to Gates and the Cult. Doctors were told – ordered – to diagnose a particular set of symptoms 'Covid-19' and put that on the death certificate for any cause of death if the patient had tested positive with a test not testing for the virus or had 'Covid' symptoms like the flu. The United States even introduced big financial incentives to manipulate the figures with hospitals receiving £4,600 from the Medicare system for diagnosing someone with regular pneumonia, \$13,000 if they made the diagnosis from the same symptoms 'Covid-19' pneumonia, and \$39,000 if they put a 'Covid' diagnosed patient on a ventilator that would almost certainly kill them. A few – painfully and pathetically few – medical whistleblowers revealed (before Cult-owned YouTube deleted their videos) that they had been instructed to 'let the patient crash' and put them straight on a ventilator instead of going through a series of far less intrusive and dangerous methods as they would have done before the pandemic hoax began and the financial incentives kicked in. We are talking cold-blooded murder given that ventilators are so damaging to respiratory systems they are usually the last step before heaven awaits. Renegade Minds never fall for the belief that people in white coats are all angels of mercy and cannot be full-on psychopaths. I have explained in detail in *The Answer* how what I am describing here played out across the world coordinated by the World Health Organization through the medical hierarchies in almost every country.

Medical scientist calls it

Information about the non-existence of the 'virus' began to emerge for me in late March, 2020, and mushroomed after that. I was sent an email by Sir Julian Rose, a writer, researcher, and organic farming promotor, from a medical scientist friend of his in the United States. Even at that early stage in March the scientist was able to explain

how the 'Covid' hoax was being manipulated. He said there were no reliable tests for a specific 'Covid-19 virus' and nor were there any reliable agencies or media outlets for reporting numbers of actual 'Covid-19' cases. We have seen in the long period since then that he was absolutely right. 'Every action and reaction to Covid-19 is based on totally flawed data and we simply cannot make accurate assessments,' he said. Most people diagnosed with 'Covid-19' were showing nothing more than cold and flu-like symptoms 'because most coronavirus strains *are* nothing more than cold/flu-like symptoms'. We had farcical situations like an 84-year-old German man testing positive for 'Covid-19' and his nursing home ordered to quarantine only for him to be found to have a common cold. The scientist described back then why PCR tests and what he called the 'Mickey Mouse test kits' were useless for what they were claimed to be identifying. 'The idea these kits can isolate a specific virus like Covid-19 is nonsense,' he said. Significantly, he pointed out that 'if you want to create a totally false panic about a totally false pandemic – pick a coronavirus'. This is exactly what the Cult-owned Gates, World Economic Forum and Johns Hopkins University did with their Event 201 'simulation' followed by their real-life simulation called the 'pandemic'. The scientist said that all you had to do was select the sickest of people with respiratory-type diseases in a single location – 'say Wuhan' – and administer PCR tests to them. You can then claim that anyone showing 'viral sequences' similar to a coronavirus 'which will inevitably be quite a few' is suffering from a 'new' disease:

Since you already selected the sickest flu cases a fairly high proportion of your sample will go on to die. You can then say this 'new' virus has a CFR [case fatality rate] higher than the flu and use this to infuse more concern and do more tests which will of course produce more 'cases', which expands the testing, which produces yet more 'cases' and so on and so on. Before long you have your 'pandemic', and all you have done is use a simple test kit trick to convert the worst flu and pneumonia cases into something new that doesn't ACTUALLY EXIST [my emphasis].

He said that you then 'just run the same scam in other countries' and make sure to keep the fear message running high 'so that people

will feel panicky and less able to think critically'. The only problem to overcome was the fact *there is no* actual new deadly pathogen and only regular sick people. This meant that deaths from the 'new deadly pathogen' were going to be way too low for a real new deadly virus pandemic, but he said this could be overcome in the following ways – all of which would go on to happen:

1. You can claim this is just the beginning and more deaths are imminent [you underpin this with fantasy 'computer projections']. Use this as an excuse to quarantine everyone and then claim the quarantine prevented the expected millions of dead.
2. You can [say that people] 'minimizing' the dangers are irresponsible and bully them into not talking about numbers.
3. You can talk crap about made up numbers hoping to blind people with pseudoscience.
4. You can start testing well people (who, of course, will also likely have shreds of coronavirus [RNA] in them) and thus inflate your 'case figures' with 'asymptomatic carriers' (you will of course have to spin that to sound deadly even though any virologist knows the more symptom-less cases you have the less deadly is your pathogen).

The scientist said that if you take these simple steps 'you can have your own entirely manufactured pandemic up and running in weeks'. His analysis made so early in the hoax was brilliantly prophetic of what would actually unfold. Pulling all the information together in these recent chapters we have this is simple 1, 2, 3, of how you can delude virtually the entire human population into believing in a 'virus' that doesn't exist:

- A 'Covid case' is someone who tests positive with a test not testing for the 'virus'.
- A 'Covid death' is someone who dies of *any cause* within 28 days (or much longer) of testing positive with a test not testing for the 'virus'.
- Asymptomatic means there is nothing wrong with you, but they claim you can pass on what you don't have to justify locking

down (quarantining) healthy people in totality.

The foundations of the hoax are that simple. A study involving ten million people in Wuhan, published in November, 2020, demolished the whole lie about those without symptoms passing on the 'virus'. They found '300 asymptomatic cases' and traced their contacts to find that not one of them was detected with the 'virus'.

'Asymptomatic' patients and their contacts were isolated for no less than two weeks and nothing changed. I know it's all crap, but if you are going to claim that those without symptoms can transmit 'the virus' then you must produce evidence for that and they never have. Even World Health Organization official Dr Maria Van Kerkhove, head of the emerging diseases and zoonosis unit, said as early as June, 2020, that she doubted the validity of asymptomatic transmission. She said that 'from the data we have, it still seems to be rare that an asymptomatic person actually transmits onward to a secondary individual' and by 'rare' she meant that she couldn't cite any case of asymptomatic transmission.

The Ferguson factor

The problem for the Cult as it headed into March, 2020, when the script had lockdown due to start, was that despite all the manipulation of the case and death figures they still did not have enough people alleged to have died from 'Covid' to justify mass house arrest. This was overcome in the way the scientist described: 'You can claim this is just the beginning and more deaths are imminent ... Use this as an excuse to quarantine everyone and then claim the quarantine prevented the expected millions of dead.' Enter one Professor Neil Ferguson, the Gates-funded 'epidemiologist' at the Gates-funded Imperial College in London. Ferguson is Britain's Christian Drosten in that he has a dire record of predicting health outcomes, but is still called upon to advise government on the next health outcome when another 'crisis' comes along. This may seem to be a strange and ridiculous thing to do. Why would you keep turning for policy guidance to people who have a history of being

monumentally wrong? Ah, but it makes sense from the Cult point of view. These 'experts' keep on producing predictions that suit the Cult agenda for societal transformation and so it was with Neil Ferguson as he revealed his horrific (and clearly insane) computer model predictions that allowed lockdowns to be imposed in Britain, the United States and many other countries. Ferguson does not have even an A-level in biology and would appear to have no formal training in computer modelling, medicine or epidemiology, according to Derek Winton, an MSc in Computational Intelligence. He wrote an article somewhat aghast at what Ferguson did which included taking no account of respiratory disease 'seasonality' which means it is far worse in the winter months. Who would have thought that respiratory disease could be worse in the winter? Well, certainly not Ferguson.

The massively China-connected Imperial College and its bizarre professor provided the excuse for the long-incubated Chinese model of human control to travel westward at lightning speed. Imperial College confirms on its website that it collaborates with the Chinese Research Institute; publishes more than 600 research papers every year with Chinese research institutions; has 225 Chinese staff; 2,600 Chinese students – the biggest international group; 7,000 former students living in China which is the largest group outside the UK; and was selected for a tour by China's President Xi Jinping during his state visit to the UK in 2015. The college takes major donations from China and describes itself as the UK's number one university collaborator with Chinese research institutions. The China communist/fascist government did not appear phased by the woeful predictions of Ferguson and Imperial when during the lockdown that Ferguson induced the college signed a five-year collaboration deal with China tech giant Huawei that will have Huawei's indoor 5G network equipment installed at the college's West London tech campus along with an 'AI cloud platform'. The deal includes Chinese sponsorship of Imperial's Venture Catalyst entrepreneurship competition. Imperial is an example of the enormous influence the Chinese government has within British and North American

universities and research centres – and further afield. Up to 200 academics from more than a dozen UK universities are being investigated on suspicion of ‘unintentionally’ helping the Chinese government build weapons of mass destruction by ‘transferring world-leading research in advanced military technology such as aircraft, missile designs and cyberweapons’. Similar scandals have broken in the United States, but it’s all a coincidence. Imperial College serves the agenda in many other ways including the promotion of every aspect of the United Nations Agenda 21/2030 (the Great Reset) and produced computer models to show that human-caused ‘climate change’ is happening when in the real world it isn’t. Imperial College is driving the climate agenda as it drives the ‘Covid’ agenda (both Cult hoaxes) while Patrick Vallance, the UK government’s Chief Scientific Adviser on ‘Covid’, was named Chief Scientific Adviser to the UN ‘climate change’ conference known as COP26 hosted by the government in Glasgow, Scotland. ‘Covid’ and ‘climate’ are fundamentally connected.

Professor Woeful

From Imperial’s bosom came Neil Ferguson still advising government despite his previous disasters and it was announced early on that he and other key people like UK Chief Medical Adviser Chris Whitty had caught the ‘virus’ as the propaganda story was being sold. Somehow they managed to survive and we had Prime Minister Boris Johnson admitted to hospital with what was said to be a severe version of the ‘virus’ in this same period. His whole policy and demeanour changed when he returned to Downing Street. It’s a small world with these government advisors – especially in their communal connections to Gates – and Ferguson had partnered with Whitty to write a paper called ‘Infectious disease: Tough choices to reduce Ebola transmission’ which involved another scare-story that didn’t happen. Ferguson’s ‘models’ predicted that up to 150,000 could die from ‘mad cow disease’, or BSE, and its version in sheep if it was transmitted to humans. BSE was not transmitted and instead triggered by an organophosphate pesticide used to treat a pest on

cows. Fewer than 200 deaths followed from the human form. Models by Ferguson and his fellow incompetents led to the unnecessary culling of millions of pigs, cattle and sheep in the foot and mouth outbreak in 2001 which destroyed the lives and livelihoods of farmers and their families who had often spent decades building their herds and flocks. Vast numbers of these animals did not have foot and mouth and had no contact with the infection. Another 'expert' behind the cull was Professor Roy Anderson, a computer modeller at Imperial College specialising in the epidemiology of *human*, not animal, disease. Anderson has served on the Bill and Melinda Gates Grand Challenges in Global Health advisory board and chairs another Gates-funded organisation. Gates is everywhere.

In a precursor to the 'Covid' script Ferguson backed closing schools 'for prolonged periods' over the swine flu 'pandemic' in 2009 and said it would affect a third of the world population if it continued to spread at the speed he claimed to be happening. His mates at Imperial College said much the same and a news report said: 'One of the authors, the epidemiologist and disease modeller Neil Ferguson, who sits on the World Health Organisation's emergency committee for the outbreak, said the virus had "full pandemic potential".' Professor Liam Donaldson, the Chris Whitty of his day as Chief Medical Officer, said the worst case could see 30 percent of the British people infected by swine flu with 65,000 dying. Ferguson and Donaldson were indeed proved correct when at the end of the year the number of deaths attributed to swine flu was 392. The term 'expert' is rather liberally applied unfortunately, not least to complete idiots. Swine flu 'projections' were great for GlaxoSmithKline (GSK) as millions rolled in for its Pandemrix influenza vaccine which led to brain damage with children most affected. The British government (taxpayers) paid out more than £60 million in compensation after GSK was given immunity from prosecution. Yet another 'Covid' déjà vu. Swine flu was supposed to have broken out in Mexico, but Dr Wolfgang Wodarg, a German doctor, former member of parliament and critic of the 'Covid' hoax, observed 'the spread of swine flu' in Mexico City at the time. He

said: 'What we experienced in Mexico City was a very mild flu which did not kill more than usual – which killed even fewer people than usual.' Hyping the fear against all the facts is not unique to 'Covid' and has happened many times before. Ferguson is reported to have over-estimated the projected death toll of bird flu (H5N1) by some three million-fold, but bird flu vaccine makers again made a killing from the scare. This is some of the background to the Neil Ferguson who produced the perfectly-timed computer models in early 2020 predicting that half a million people would die in Britain without draconian lockdown and 2.2 million in the United States. Politicians panicked, people panicked, and lockdowns of alleged short duration were instigated to 'flatten the curve' of cases gleaned from a test not testing for the 'virus'. I said at the time that the public could forget the 'short duration' bit. This was an agenda to destroy the livelihoods of the population and force them into mass control through dependency and there was going to be nothing 'short' about it. American researcher Daniel Horowitz described the consequences of the 'models' spewed out by Gates-funded Ferguson and Imperial College:

What led our government and the governments of many other countries into panic was a single Imperial College of UK study, funded by global warming activists, that predicted 2.2 million deaths if we didn't lock down the country. In addition, the reported 8-9% death rate in Italy scared us into thinking there was some other mutation of this virus that they got, which might have come here.

Together with the fact that we were finally testing and had the ability to actually report new cases, we thought we were headed for a death spiral. But again ... we can't flatten a curve if we don't know when the curve started.

How about it *never* started?

Giving them what they want

An investigation by German news outlet *Welt Am Sonntag* (*World on Sunday*) revealed how in March, 2020, the German government gathered together 'leading scientists from several research institutes and universities' and 'together, they were to produce a [modelling]

paper that would serve as legitimization for further tough political measures'. The Cult agenda was justified by computer modelling not based on evidence or reality; it was specifically constructed to justify the Cult demand for lockdowns all over the world to destroy the independent livelihoods of the global population. All these modellers and everyone responsible for the 'Covid' hoax have a date with a trial like those in Nuremberg after World War Two when Nazis faced the consequences of their war crimes. These corrupt-beyond-belief 'modellers' wrote the paper according to government instructions and it said that if lockdown measures were lifted then up to one million Germans would die from 'Covid-19' adding that some would die 'agonizingly at home, gasping for breath' unable to be treated by hospitals that couldn't cope. All lies. No matter – it gave the Cult all that it wanted. What did long-time government 'modeller' Neil Ferguson say? If the UK and the United States didn't lockdown half a million would die in Britain and 2.2 million Americans. Anyone see a theme here? 'Modellers' are such a crucial part of the lockdown strategy that we should look into their background and follow the money. Researcher Rosemary Frei produced an excellent article headlined 'The Modelling-paper Mafiosi'. She highlights a guy called John Edmunds, a British epidemiologist, and professor in the Faculty of Epidemiology and Population Health at the London School of Hygiene & Tropical Medicine. He studied at Imperial College. Edmunds is a member of government 'Covid' advisory bodies which have been dictating policy, the New and Emerging Respiratory Virus Threats Advisory Group (NERVTAG) and the Scientific Advisory Group for Emergencies (SAGE).

Ferguson, another member of NERVTAG and SAGE, led the way with the original 'virus' and Edmunds has followed in the 'variant' stage and especially the so-called UK or Kent variant known as the 'Variant of Concern' (VOC) B.1.1.7. He said in a co-written report for the Centre for Mathematical modelling of Infectious Diseases at the London School of Hygiene and Tropical Medicine, with input from the Centre's 'Covid-19' Working Group, that there was 'a realistic

possibility that VOC B.1.1.7 is associated with an increased risk of death compared to non-VOC viruses'. Fear, fear, fear, get the vaccine, fear, fear, fear, get the vaccine. Rosemary Frei reveals that almost all the paper's authors and members of the modelling centre's 'Covid-19' Working Group receive funding from the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation and/or the associated Gates-funded Wellcome Trust. The paper was published by e-journal *Medrx* ^{xiv} which only publishes papers not peer-reviewed and the journal was established by an organisation headed by Facebook's Mark Zuckerberg and his missus. What a small world it is. Frei discovered that Edmunds is on the Scientific Advisory Board of the Coalition for Epidemic Preparedness Innovations (CEPI) which was established by the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation, Klaus Schwab's Davos World Economic Forum and Big Pharma giant Wellcome. CEPI was 'launched in Davos [in 2017] to develop vaccines to stop future epidemics', according to its website. 'Our mission is to accelerate the development of vaccines against emerging infectious diseases and enable equitable access to these vaccines for people during outbreaks.' What kind people they are. Rosemary Frei reveals that Public Health England (PHE) director Susan Hopkins is an author of her organisation's non-peer-reviewed reports on 'new variants'. Hopkins is a professor of infectious diseases at London's Imperial College which is gifted tens of millions of dollars a year by the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation. Gates-funded modelling disaster Neil Ferguson also co-authors Public Health England reports and he spoke in December, 2020, about the potential danger of the B.1.1.7. 'UK variant' promoted by Gates-funded modeller John Edmunds. When I come to the 'Covid vaccines' the 'new variants' will be shown for what they are – bollocks.

Connections, connections

All these people and modellers are lockdown-obsessed or, put another way, they demand what the Cult demands. Edmunds said in January, 2021, that to ease lockdowns too soon would be a disaster and they had to 'vaccinate much, much, much more widely than the

elderly'. Rosemary Frei highlights that Edmunds is married to Jeanne Pimenta who is described in a LinkedIn profile as director of epidemiology at GlaxoSmithKline (GSK) and she held shares in the company. Patrick Vallance, co-chair of SAGE and the government's Chief Scientific Adviser, is a former executive of GSK and has a deferred bonus of shares in the company worth £600,000. GSK has serious business connections with Bill Gates and is collaborating with mRNA-'vaccine' company CureVac to make 'vaccines' for the new variants that Edmunds is talking about. GSK is planning a 'Covid vaccine' with drug giant Sanofi. Puppets Prime Minister Boris Johnson announced in the spring of 2021 that up to 60 million vaccine doses were to be made at the GSK facility at Barnard Castle in the English North East. Barnard Castle, with a population of just 6,000, was famously visited in breach of lockdown rules in April, 2020, by Johnson aide Dominic Cummings who said that he drove there 'to test his eyesight' before driving back to London. Cummings would be better advised to test his integrity – not that it would take long. The GSK facility had nothing to do with his visit then although I'm sure Patrick Vallance would have been happy to arrange an introduction and some tea and biscuits. Ruthless psychopath Gates has made yet another fortune from vaccines in collaboration with Big Pharma companies and gushes at the phenomenal profits to be made from vaccines – more than a 20-to-1 return as he told one interviewer. Gates also tweeted in December, 2019, with the foreknowledge of what was coming: 'What's next for our foundation? I'm particularly excited about what the next year could mean for one of the best buys in global health: vaccines.'

Modeller John Edmunds is a big promotor of vaccines as all these people appear to be. He's the dean of the London School of Hygiene & Tropical Medicine's Faculty of Epidemiology and Population Health which is primarily funded by the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation and the Gates-established and funded GAVI vaccine alliance which is the Gates vehicle to vaccinate the world. The organisation Doctors Without Borders has described GAVI as being 'aimed more at supporting drug-industry desires to promote new

products than at finding the most efficient and sustainable means for fighting the diseases of poverty'. But then that's why the psychopath Gates created it. John Edmunds said in a video that the London School of Hygiene & Tropical Medicine is involved in every aspect of vaccine development including large-scale clinical trials. He contends that mathematical modelling can show that vaccines protect individuals and society. That's on the basis of shit in and shit out, I take it. Edmunds serves on the UK Vaccine Network as does Ferguson and the government's foremost 'Covid' adviser, the grim-faced, dark-eyed Chris Whitty. The Vaccine Network says it works 'to support the government to identify and shortlist targeted investment opportunities for the most promising vaccines and vaccine technologies that will help combat infectious diseases with epidemic potential, and to address structural issues related to the UK's broader vaccine infrastructure'. Ferguson is acting Director of the Imperial College Vaccine Impact Modelling Consortium which has funding from the Bill and Melina Gates Foundation and the Gates-created GAVI 'vaccine alliance'. Anyone wonder why these characters see vaccines as the answer to every problem? Ferguson is wildly enthusiastic in his support for GAVI's campaign to vaccinate children en masse in poor countries. You would expect someone like Gates who has constantly talked about the need to reduce the population to want to fund vaccines to keep more people alive. I'm sure that's why he does it. The John Edmunds London School of Hygiene & Tropical Medicine (LSHTM) has a Vaccines Manufacturing Innovation Centre which develops, tests and commercialises vaccines. Rosemary Frei writes:

The vaccines centre also performs affiliated activities like combating 'vaccine hesitancy'. The latter includes the Vaccine Confidence Project. The project's stated purpose is, among other things, 'to provide analysis and guidance for early response and engagement with the public to ensure sustained confidence in vaccines and immunisation'. The Vaccine Confidence Project's director is LSHTM professor Heidi Larson. For more than a decade she's been researching how to combat vaccine hesitancy.

How the bloody hell can blokes like John Edmunds and Neil Ferguson with those connections and financial ties model 'virus' case

and death projections for the government and especially in a way that gives their paymasters like Gates exactly what they want? It's insane, but this is what you find throughout the world.

'Covid' is not dangerous, oops, wait, yes it is

Only days before Ferguson's nightmare scenario made Jackboot Johnson take Britain into a China-style lockdown to save us from a deadly 'virus' the UK government website gov.uk was reporting something very different to Ferguson on a page of official government guidance for 'high consequence infectious diseases (HCID)'. It said this about 'Covid-19':

As of 19 March 2020, COVID-19 is no longer considered to be a high consequence infectious diseases (HCID) in the UK [my emphasis]. The 4 nations public health HCID group made an interim recommendation in January 2020 to classify COVID-19 as an HCID. This was based on consideration of the UK HCID criteria about the virus and the disease with information available during the early stages of the outbreak.

Now that more is known about COVID-19, the public health bodies in the UK have reviewed the most up to date information about COVID-19 against the UK HCID criteria. They have determined that several features have now changed; in particular, more information is available about mortality rates (low overall), and there is now greater clinical awareness and a specific and sensitive laboratory test, the availability of which continues to increase. The Advisory Committee on Dangerous Pathogens (ACDP) is also of the opinion that COVID-19 should no longer be classified as an HCID.

Soon after the government had been exposed for downgrading the risk they upgraded it again and everyone was back to singing from the same Cult hymn book. Ferguson and his fellow Gates clones indicated that lockdowns and restrictions would have to continue until a Gates-funded vaccine was developed. Gates said the same because Ferguson and his like were repeating the Gates script which is the Cult script. 'Flatten the curve' became an ongoing nightmare of continuing lockdowns with periods in between of severe restrictions in pursuit of destroying independent incomes and had nothing to do with protecting health about which the Cult gives not a shit. Why wouldn't Ferguson be pushing a vaccine 'solution' when he's owned by vaccine-obsessive Gates who makes a fortune from them and

when Ferguson heads the Vaccine Impact Modelling Consortium at Imperial College funded by the Gates Foundation and GAVI, the 'vaccine alliance', created by Gates as his personal vaccine promotion operation? To compound the human catastrophe that Ferguson's 'models' did so much to create he was later exposed for breaking his own lockdown rules by having sexual liaisons with his married girlfriend Antonia Staats at his home while she was living at another location with her husband and children. Staats was a 'climate' activist and senior campaigner at the Soros-funded Avaaz which I wouldn't trust to tell me that grass is green. Ferguson had to resign as a government advisor over this hypocrisy in May, 2020, but after a period of quiet he was back being quoted by the ridiculous media on the need for more lockdowns and a vaccine rollout. Other government-advising 'scientists' from Imperial College held the fort in his absence and said lockdown could be indefinite until a vaccine was found. The Cult script was being sung by the payrolled choir. I said there was no intention of going back to 'normal' when the 'vaccine' came because the 'vaccine' is part of a very different agenda that I will discuss in Human 2.0. Why would the Cult want to let the world go back to normal when destroying that normal forever was the whole point of what was happening? House arrest, closing businesses and schools through lockdown, (un)social distancing and masks all followed the Ferguson fantasy models. Again as I predicted (these people are so predictable) when the 'vaccine' arrived we were told that house arrest, lockdown, (un)social distancing and masks would still have to continue. I will deal with the masks in the next chapter because they are of fundamental importance.

Where's the 'pandemic'?

Any mildly in-depth assessment of the figures revealed what was really going on. Cult-funded and controlled organisations still have genuine people working within them such is the number involved. So it is with Genevieve Briand, assistant program director of the Applied Economics master's degree program at Johns Hopkins

University. She analysed the impact that 'Covid-19' had on deaths from *all* causes in the United States using official data from the CDC for the period from early February to early September, 2020. She found that allegedly 'Covid' *related*-deaths exceeded those from heart disease which she found strange with heart disease always the biggest cause of fatalities. Her research became even more significant when she noted the sudden decline in 2020 of *all* non-'Covid' deaths: 'This trend is completely contrary to the pattern observed in all previous years ... the total decrease in deaths by other causes almost exactly equals the increase in deaths by Covid-19.' This was such a game, set and match in terms of what was happening that Johns Hopkins University deleted the article on the grounds that it 'was being used to support false and dangerous inaccuracies about the impact of the pandemic'. No – because it exposed the scam from official CDC figures and this was confirmed when those figures were published in January, 2021. Here we can see the effect of people dying from heart attacks, cancer, road accidents and gunshot wounds – *anything* – having 'Covid-19' on the death certificate along with those diagnosed from 'symptoms' who had even not tested positive with a test not testing for the 'virus'. I am not kidding with the gunshot wounds, by the way. Brenda Bock, coroner in Grand County, Colorado, revealed that two gunshot victims tested positive for the 'virus' within the previous 30 days and were therefore classified as 'Covid deaths'. Bock said: 'These two people had tested positive for Covid, but that's not what killed them. A gunshot wound is what killed them.' She said she had not even finished her investigation when the state listed the gunshot victims as deaths due to the 'virus'. The death and case figures for 'Covid-19' are an absolute joke and yet they are repeated like parrots by the media, politicians and alleged medical 'experts'. The official Cult narrative is the only show in town.

Genevieve Briand found that deaths from all causes were not exceptional in 2020 compared with previous years and a Spanish magazine published figures that said the same about Spain which was a 'Covid' propaganda hotspot at one point. *Discovery Salud*, a

health and medicine magazine, quoted government figures which showed how 17,000 *fewer* people died in Spain in 2020 than in 2019 and more than 26,000 fewer than in 2018. The age-standardised mortality rate for England and Wales when age distribution is taken into account was significantly lower in 2020 than the 1970s, 80s and 90s, and was only the ninth highest since 2000. Where is the 'pandemic'?

Post mortems and autopsies virtually disappeared for 'Covid' deaths amid claims that 'virus-infected' bodily fluids posed a risk to those carrying out the autopsy. This was rejected by renowned German pathologist and forensic doctor Klaus Püschel who said that he and his staff had by then done 150 autopsies on 'Covid' patients with no problems at all. He said they were needed to know why some 'Covid' patients suffered blood clots and not severe respiratory infections. The 'virus' is, after all, called SARS or 'severe acute respiratory syndrome'. I highlighted in the spring of 2020 this phenomenon and quoted New York intensive care doctor Cameron Kyle-Sidell who posted a soon deleted YouTube video to say that they had been told to prepare to treat an infectious disease called 'Covid-19', but that was not what they were dealing with. Instead he likened the lung condition of the most severely ill patients to what you would expect with cabin depressurisation in a plane at 30,000 feet or someone dropped on the top of Everest without oxygen or acclimatisation. I have never said this is not happening to a small minority of alleged 'Covid' patients – I am saying this is not caused by a phantom 'contagious virus'. Indeed Kyle-Sidell said that 'Covid-19' was not the disease they were told was coming their way. 'We are operating under a medical paradigm that is untrue,' he said, and he believed they were treating the wrong disease: 'These people are being slowly starved of oxygen.' Patients would take off their oxygen masks in a state of fear and stress and while they were blue in the face on the brink of death. They did not look like patients dying of pneumonia. You can see why they don't want autopsies when their virus doesn't exist and there is another condition in some people that they don't wish to be uncovered. I should add here that

the 5G system of millimetre waves was being rapidly introduced around the world in 2020 and even more so now as they fire 5G at the Earth from satellites. At 60 gigahertz within the 5G range that frequency interacts with the oxygen molecule and stops people breathing in sufficient oxygen to be absorbed into the bloodstream. They are installing 5G in schools and hospitals. The world is not mad or anything. 5G can cause major changes to the lungs and blood as I detail in *The Answer* and these consequences are labelled 'Covid-19', the alleged symptoms of which can be caused by 5G and other electromagnetic frequencies as cells respond to radiation poisoning.

The 'Covid death' scam

Dr Scott Jensen, a Minnesota state senator and medical doctor, exposed 'Covid' Medicare payment incentives to hospitals and death certificate manipulation. He said he was sent a seven-page document by the US Department of Health 'coaching' him on how to fill out death certificates which had never happened before. The document said that he didn't need to have a laboratory test for 'Covid-19' to put that on the death certificate and that shocked him when death certificates are supposed to be about facts. Jensen described how doctors had been 'encouraged, if not pressured' to make a diagnosis of 'Covid-19' if they thought it was probable or '*presumed*'. No positive test was necessary – not that this would have mattered anyway. He said doctors were told to diagnose 'Covid' by symptoms when these were the same as colds, allergies, other respiratory problems, and certainly with influenza which 'disappeared' in the 'Covid' era. A common sniffle was enough to get the dreaded verdict. Ontario authorities decreed that a single care home resident with *one* symptom from a long list must lead to the isolation of the entire home. Other courageous doctors like Jensen made the same point about death figure manipulation and how deaths by other causes were falling while 'Covid-19 deaths' were rising at the same rate due to re-diagnosis. Their videos rarely survive long on YouTube with its Cult-supporting algorithms courtesy of CEO Susan Wojcicki and her bosses at Google. Figure-tampering was so glaring

and ubiquitous that even officials were letting it slip or outright saying it. UK chief scientific adviser Patrick Vallance said on one occasion that 'Covid' on the death certificate doesn't mean 'Covid' was the cause of death (so why the hell is it there?) and we had the rare sight of a BBC reporter telling the truth when she said: 'Someone could be successfully treated for Covid, in say April, discharged, and then in June, get run over by a bus and die ... That person would still be counted as a Covid death in England.' Yet the BBC and the rest of the world media went on repeating the case and death figures as if they were real. Illinois Public Health Director Dr Ngozi Ezike revealed the deceit while her bosses must have been clenching their buttocks:

If you were in a hospice and given a few weeks to live and you were then found to have Covid that would be counted as a Covid death. [There might be] a clear alternate cause, but it is still listed as a Covid death. So everyone listed as a Covid death doesn't mean that was the cause of the death, but that they had Covid at the time of death.

Yes, a 'Covid virus' never shown to exist and tested for with a test not testing for the 'virus'. In the first period of the pandemic hoax through the spring of 2020 the process began of designating almost everything a 'Covid' death and this has continued ever since. I sat in a restaurant one night listening to a loud conversation on the next table where a family was discussing in bewilderment how a relative who had no symptoms of 'Covid', and had died of a long-term problem, could have been diagnosed a death by the 'virus'. I could understand their bewilderment. If they read this book they will know why this medical fraud has been perpetrated the world over.

Some media truth shock

The media ignored the evidence of death certificate fraud until eventually one columnist did speak out when she saw it first-hand. Bel Mooney is a long-time national newspaper journalist in Britain currently working for the *Daily Mail*. Her article on February 19th, 2021, carried this headline: 'My dad Ted passed three Covid tests

and died of a chronic illness yet he's officially one of Britain's 120,000 victims of the virus and is far from alone ... so how many more are there?' She told how her 99-year-old father was in a care home with a long-standing chronic obstructive pulmonary disease and vascular dementia. Maybe, but he was still aware enough to tell her from the start that there was no 'virus' and he refused the 'vaccine' for that reason. His death was not unexpected given his chronic health problems and Mooney said she was shocked to find that 'Covid-19' was declared the cause of death on his death certificate. She said this was a 'bizarre and unacceptable untruth' for a man with long-time health problems who had tested negative twice at the home for the 'virus'. I was also shocked by this story although not by what she said. I had been highlighting the death certificate manipulation for ten months. It was the confirmation that a professional full-time journalist only realised this was going on when it affected her directly and neither did she know that whether her dad tested positive or negative was irrelevant with the test not testing for the 'virus'. Where had she been? She said she did not believe in 'conspiracy theories' without knowing I'm sure that this and 'conspiracy theorists' were terms put into widespread circulation by the CIA in the 1960s to discredit those who did not accept the ridiculous official story of the Kennedy assassination. A blanket statement of 'I don't believe in conspiracy theories' is always bizarre. The dictionary definition of the term alone means the world is drowning in conspiracies. What she said was even more daft when her dad had just been affected by the 'Covid' conspiracy. Why else does she think that 'Covid-19' was going on the death certificates of people who died of something else?

To be fair once she saw from personal experience what was happening she didn't mince words. Mooney was called by the care home on the morning of February 9th to be told her father had died in his sleep. When she asked for the official cause of death what came back was 'Covid-19'. Mooney challenged this and was told there had been deaths from Covid on the dementia floor (confirmed by a test not testing for the 'virus') so they considered it 'reasonable

to assume'. 'But doctor,' Mooney rightly protested, 'an assumption isn't a diagnosis.' She said she didn't blame the perfectly decent and sympathetic doctor – 'he was just doing his job'. Sorry, but that's *bullshit*. He wasn't doing his job at all. He was putting a false cause of death on the death certificate and that is a criminal offence for which he should be brought to account and the same with the millions of doctors worldwide who have done the same. They were not doing their job they were following orders and that must not wash at new Nuremberg trials any more than it did at the first ones. Mooney's doctor was 'assuming' (presuming) as he was told to, but 'just following orders' makes no difference to his actions. A doctor's job is to serve the patient and the truth, not follow orders, but that's what they have done all over the world and played a central part in making the 'Covid' hoax possible with all its catastrophic consequences for humanity. Shame on them and they must answer for their actions. Mooney said her disquiet worsened when she registered her father's death by telephone and was told by the registrar there had been very many other cases like hers where 'the deceased' had not tested positive for 'Covid' yet it was recorded as the cause of death. The test may not matter, but those involved at their level *think* it matters and it shows a callous disregard for accurate diagnosis. The pressure to do this is coming from the top of the national 'health' pyramids which in turn obey the World Health Organization which obeys Gates and the Cult. Mooney said the registrar agreed that this must distort the national figures adding that 'the strangest thing is that every winter we record countless deaths from flu, and this winter there have been none. Not one!' She asked if the registrar thought deaths from flu were being misdiagnosed and lumped together with 'Covid' deaths. The answer was a 'puzzled yes'. Mooney said that the funeral director said the same about 'Covid' deaths which had nothing to do with 'Covid'. They had lost count of the number of families upset by this and other funeral companies in different countries have had the same experience. Mooney wrote:

The nightly shroud-waving and shocking close-ups of pain imposed on us by the TV news bewildered and terrified the population into eager compliance with lockdowns. We were invited to 'save the NHS' and to grieve for strangers – the real-life loved ones behind those shocking death counts. Why would the public imagine what I now fear, namely that the way Covid-19 death statistics are compiled might make the numbers seem greater than they are?

Oh, just a little bit – like 100 percent.

Do the maths

Mooney asked why a country would wish to skew its mortality figures by wrongly certifying deaths? What had been going on? Well, if you don't believe in conspiracies you will never find the answer which is that *it's a conspiracy*. She did, however, describe what she had discovered as a 'national scandal'. In reality it's a global scandal and happening everywhere. Pillars of this conspiracy were all put into place before the button was pressed with the Drosten PCR protocol and high amplifications to produce the cases and death certificate changes to secure illusory 'Covid' deaths. Mooney notes that normally two doctors were needed to certify a death, with one having to know the patient, and how the rules were changed in the spring of 2020 to allow one doctor to do this. In the same period 'Covid deaths' were decreed to be all cases where Covid-19 was put on the death certificate even without a positive test or any symptoms. Mooney asked: 'How many of the 30,851 (as of January 15) care home resident deaths with Covid-19 on the certificate (32.4 per cent of all deaths so far) were based on an assumption, like that of my father? And what has that done to our national psyche?' All of them is the answer to the first question and it has devastated and dismantled the national psyche, actually the global psyche, on a colossal scale. In the UK case and death data is compiled by organisations like Public Health England (PHE) and the Office for National Statistics (ONS). Mooney highlights the insane policy of counting a death from any cause as 'Covid-19' if this happens within 28 days of a positive test (with a test not testing for the 'virus') and she points out that ONS statistics reflect deaths 'involving Covid' 'or due to Covid' which meant in practice any

death where 'Covid-19' was mentioned on the death certificate. She described the consequences of this fraud:

Most people will accept the narrative they are fed, so panicky governments here and in Europe witnessed the harsh measures enacted in totalitarian China and jumped into lockdown. Headlines about Covid deaths tolled like the knell that would bring doomsday to us all. Fear stalked our empty streets. Politicians parroted the frankly ridiculous aim of 'zero Covid' and shut down the economy, while most British people agreed that lockdown was essential and (astonishingly to me, as a patriotic Brit) even wanted more restrictions.

For what? Lies on death certificates? Never mind the grim toll of lives ruined, suicides, schools closed, rising inequality, depression, cancelled hospital treatments, cancer patients in a torture of waiting, poverty, economic devastation, loneliness, families kept apart, and so on. How many lives have been lost as a direct result of lockdown?

She said that we could join in a national chorus of shock and horror at reaching the 120,000 death toll which was surely certain to have been totally skewed all along, but what about the human cost of lockdown justified by these 'death figures'? *The British Medical Journal* had reported a 1,493 percent increase in cases of children taken to Great Ormond Street Hospital with abusive head injuries alone and then there was the effect on families:

Perhaps the most shocking thing about all this is that families have been kept apart – and obeyed the most irrational, changing rules at the whim of government – because they believed in the statistics. They succumbed to fear, which his generation rejected in that war fought for freedom. Dad (God rest his soul) would be angry. And so am I.

Another theme to watch is that in the winter months when there are more deaths from all causes they focus on 'Covid' deaths and in the summer when the British Lung Foundation says respiratory disease plummets by 80 percent they rage on about 'cases'. Either way fascism on population is always the answer.

Nazi eugenics in the 21st century

Elderly people in care homes have been isolated from their families month after lonely month with no contact with relatives and grandchildren who were banned from seeing them. We were told

that lockdown fascism was to 'protect the vulnerable' like elderly people. At the same time Do Not Resuscitate (DNR) orders were placed on their medical files so that if they needed resuscitation it wasn't done and 'Covid-19' went on their death certificates. Old people were not being 'protected' they were being culled – murdered in truth. DNR orders were being decreed for disabled and young people with learning difficulties or psychological problems. The UK Care Quality Commission, a non-departmental body of the Department of Health and Social Care, found that 34 percent of those working in health and social care were pressured into placing 'do not attempt cardiopulmonary resuscitation' orders on 'Covid' patients who suffered from disabilities and learning difficulties without involving the patient or their families in the decision. UK judges ruled that an elderly woman with dementia should have the DNA-manipulating 'Covid vaccine' against her son's wishes and that a man with severe learning difficulties should have the jab despite his family's objections. Never mind that many had already died. The judiciary always supports doctors and government in fascist dictatorships. They wouldn't dare do otherwise. A horrific video was posted showing fascist officers from Los Angeles police forcibly giving the 'Covid' shot to women with special needs who were screaming that they didn't want it. The same fascists are seen giving the jab to a sleeping elderly woman in a care home. This is straight out of the Nazi playbook. Hitler's Nazis committed mass murder of the mentally ill and physically disabled throughout Germany and occupied territories in the programme that became known as Aktion T4, or just T4. Sabbatian-controlled Hitler and his grotesque crazies set out to kill those they considered useless and unnecessary. The Reich Committee for the Scientific Registering of Hereditary and Congenital Illnesses registered the births of babies identified by physicians to have 'defects'. By 1941 alone more than 5,000 children were murdered by the state and it is estimated that in total the number of innocent people killed in Aktion T4 was between 275,000 and 300,000. Parents were told their children had been sent away for 'special treatment' never to return. It is rather pathetic to see claims about plans for new extermination camps being dismissed today

when the same force behind current events did precisely that 80 years ago. Margaret Sanger was a Cult operative who used 'birth control' to sanitise her programme of eugenics. Organisations she founded became what is now Planned Parenthood. Sanger proposed that 'the whole dysgenic population would have its choice of segregation or sterilization'. These included epileptics, 'feeble-minded', and prostitutes. Sanger opposed charity because it perpetuated 'human waste'. She reveals the Cult mentality and if anyone thinks that extermination camps are a 'conspiracy theory' their naivety is touching if breathtakingly stupid.

If you don't believe that doctors can act with callous disregard for their patients it is worth considering that doctors and medical staff agreed to put government-decreed DNR orders on medical files and do nothing when resuscitation is called for. I don't know what you call such people in your house. In mine they are Nazis from the Josef Mengele School of Medicine. Phenomenal numbers of old people have died worldwide from the effects of lockdown, depression, lack of treatment, the 'vaccine' (more later) and losing the will to live. A common response at the start of the manufactured pandemic was to remove old people from hospital beds and transfer them to nursing homes. The decision would result in a mass cull of elderly people in those homes through lack of treatment – *not* 'Covid'. Care home whistleblowers have told how once the 'Covid' era began doctors would not come to their homes to treat patients and they were begging for drugs like antibiotics that often never came. The most infamous example was ordered by New York governor Andrew Cuomo, brother of a moronic CNN host, who amazingly was given an Emmy Award for his handling of the 'Covid crisis' by the ridiculous Wokers that hand them out. Just how ridiculous could be seen in February, 2021, when a Department of Justice and FBI investigation began into how thousands of old people in New York died in nursing homes after being discharged from hospital to make way for 'Covid' patients on Cuomo's say-so – and how he and his staff covered up these facts. This couldn't have happened to a nicer psychopath. Even then there was a 'Covid' spin. Reports said that

thousands of old people who tested positive for 'Covid' in hospital were transferred to nursing homes to both die of 'Covid' and transmit it to others. No – they were in hospital because they were ill and the fact that they tested positive with a test not testing for the 'virus' is irrelevant. They were ill often with respiratory diseases ubiquitous in old people near the end of their lives. Their transfer out of hospital meant that their treatment stopped and many would go on to die.

They're old. Who gives a damn?

I have exposed in the books for decades the Cult plan to cull the world's old people and even to introduce at some point what they call a 'demise pill' which at a certain age everyone would take and be out of here by law. In March, 2021, Spain legalised euthanasia and assisted suicide following the Netherlands, Belgium, Luxembourg and Canada on the Tiptoe to the demise pill. Treatment of old people by many 'care' homes has been a disgrace in the 'Covid' era. There are many, many, caring staff – I know some. There have, however, been legions of stories about callous treatment of old people and their families. Police were called when families came to take their loved ones home in the light of isolation that was killing them. They became prisoners of the state. Care home residents in insane, fascist Ontario, Canada, were not allowed to leave their *room* once the 'Covid' hoax began. UK staff have even wheeled elderly people away from windows where family members were talking with them. Oriana Criscuolo from Stockport in the English North West dropped off some things for her 80-year-old father who has Parkinson's disease and dementia and she wanted to wave to him through a ground-floor window. She was told that was 'illegal'. When she went anyway they closed the curtains in the middle of the day. Oriana said:

It's just unbelievable. I cannot understand how care home staff – people who are being paid to care – have become so uncaring. Their behaviour is inhumane and cruel. It's beyond belief.

She was right and this was not a one-off. What a way to end your life in such loveless circumstances. UK registered nurse Nicky Millen, a proper old school nurse for 40 years, said that when she started her career care was based on dignity, choice, compassion and empathy. Now she said 'the things that are important to me have gone out of the window.' She was appalled that people were dying without their loved ones and saying goodbye on iPads. Nicky described how a distressed 89-year-old lady stroked her face and asked her 'how many paracetamol would it take to finish me off'. Life was no longer worth living while not seeing her family. Nicky said she was humiliated in front of the ward staff and patients for letting the lady stroke her face and giving her a cuddle. Such is the dehumanisation that the 'Covid' hoax has brought to the surface. Nicky worked in care homes where patients told her they were being held prisoner. 'I want to live until I die', one said to her. 'I had a lady in tears because she hadn't seen her great-grandson.' Nicky was compassionate old school meeting psychopathic New Normal. She also said she had worked on a 'Covid' ward with no 'Covid' patients. Jewish writer Shai Held wrote an article in March, 2020, which was headlined 'The Staggering, Heartless Cruelty Toward the Elderly'. What he described was happening from the earliest days of lockdown. He said 'the elderly' were considered a group and not unique individuals (the way of the Woke). Shai Held said:

Notice how the all-too-familiar rhetoric of dehumanization works: 'The elderly' are bunched together as a faceless mass, all of them considered culprits and thus effectively deserving of the suffering the pandemic will inflict upon them. Lost entirely is the fact that the elderly are individual human beings, each with a distinctive face and voice, each with hopes and dreams, memories and regrets, friendships and marriages, loves lost and loves sustained.

'The elderly' have become another dehumanised group for which anything goes and for many that has resulted in cold disregard for their rights and their life. The distinctive face that Held talks about is designed to be deleted by masks until everyone is part of a faceless mass.

'War-zone' hospitals myth

Again and again medical professionals have told me what was really going on and how hospitals 'overrun like war zones' according to the media were virtually empty. The mantra from medical whistleblowers was please don't use my name or my career is over. Citizen journalists around the world sneaked into hospitals to film evidence exposing the 'war-zone' lie. They really *were* largely empty with closed wards and operating theatres. I met a hospital worker in my town on the Isle of Wight during the first lockdown in 2020 who said the only island hospital had never been so quiet. Lockdown was justified by the psychopaths to stop hospitals being overrun. At the same time that the island hospital was near-empty the military arrived here to provide *extra beds*. It was all propaganda to ramp up the fear to ensure compliance with fascism as were never-used temporary hospitals with thousands of beds known as Nightingales and never-used make-shift mortuaries opened by the criminal UK government. A man who helped to install those extra island beds attributed to the army said they were never used and the hospital was empty. Doctors and nurses 'stood around talking or on their phones, wandering down to us to see what we were doing'. There were no masks or social distancing. He accused the useless local island paper, the *County Press*, of 'pumping the fear as if our hospital was overrun and we only have one so it should have been'. He described ambulances parked up with crews outside in deck chairs. When his brother called an ambulance he was told there was a two-hour backlog which he called 'bullshit'. An old lady on the island fell 'and was in a bad way', but a caller who rang for an ambulance was told the situation wasn't urgent enough. Ambulance stations were working under capacity while people would hear ambulances with sirens blaring driving through the streets. When those living near the stations realised what was going on they would follow them as they left, circulated around an urban area with the sirens going, and then came back without stopping. All this was to increase levels of fear and the same goes for the 'ventilator shortage crisis' that cost tens of millions for hastily produced ventilators never to be used.

Ambulance crews that agreed to be exploited in this way for fear propaganda might find themselves a mirror. I wish them well with that. Empty hospitals were the obvious consequence of treatment and diagnoses of non-'Covid' conditions cancelled and those involved handed a death sentence. People have been dying at home from undiagnosed and untreated cancer, heart disease and other life-threatening conditions to allow empty hospitals to deal with a 'pandemic' that wasn't happening.

Death of the innocent

'War-zones' have been laying off nursing staff, even doctors where they can. There was no work for them. Lockdown was justified by saving lives and protecting the vulnerable they were actually killing with DNR orders and preventing empty hospitals being 'overrun'. In Britain the mantra of stay at home to 'save the NHS' was everywhere and across the world the same story was being sold when it was all lies. Two California doctors, Dan Erickson and Artin Massihi at Accelerated Urgent Care in Bakersfield, held a news conference in April, 2020, to say that intensive care units in California were 'empty, essentially', with hospitals shutting floors, not treating patients and laying off doctors. The California health system was working at minimum capacity 'getting rid of doctors because we just don't have the volume'. They said that people with conditions such as heart disease and cancer were not coming to hospital out of fear of 'Covid-19'. Their video was deleted by Susan Wojcicki's Cult-owned YouTube after reaching five million views. Florida governor Ron Desantis, who rejected the severe lockdowns of other states and is being targeted for doing so, said that in March, 2020, every US governor was given models claiming they would run out of hospital beds in days. That was never going to happen and the 'modellers' knew it. Deceit can be found at every level of the system. Urgent children's operations were cancelled including fracture repairs and biopsies to spot cancer. Eric Nicholls, a consultant paediatrician, said 'this is obviously concerning and we need to return to normal operating and to increase capacity as soon as possible'. Psychopaths

in power were rather less concerned *because* they are psychopaths. Deletion of urgent care and diagnosis has been happening all over the world and how many kids and others have died as a result of the actions of these cold and heartless lunatics dictating 'health' policy? The number must be stratospheric. Richard Sullivan, professor of cancer and global health at King's College London, said people feared 'Covid' more than cancer such was the campaign of fear. 'Years of lost life will be quite dramatic', Sullivan said, with 'a huge amount of avoidable mortality'. Sarah Woolnough, executive director for policy at Cancer Research UK, said there had been a 75 percent drop in urgent referrals to hospitals by family doctors of people with suspected cancer. Sullivan said that 'a lot of services have had to scale back – we've seen a dramatic decrease in the amount of elective cancer surgery'. Lockdown deaths worldwide has been absolutely fantastic with the *New York Post* reporting how data confirmed that 'lockdowns end more lives than they save':

There was a sharp decline in visits to emergency rooms and an increase in fatal heart attacks because patients didn't receive prompt treatment. Many fewer people were screened for cancer. Social isolation contributed to excess deaths from dementia and Alzheimer's.

Researchers predicted that the social and economic upheaval would lead to tens of thousands of "deaths of despair" from drug overdoses, alcoholism and suicide. As unemployment surged and mental-health and substance-abuse treatment programs were interrupted, the reported levels of anxiety, depression and suicidal thoughts increased dramatically, as did alcohol sales and fatal drug overdoses.

This has been happening while nurses and other staff had so much time on their hands in the 'war-zones' that Tic-Tok dancing videos began appearing across the Internet with medical staff dancing around in empty wards and corridors as people died at home from causes that would normally have been treated in hospital.

Mentions in dispatches

One brave and truth-committed whistleblower was Louise Hampton, a call handler with the UK NHS who made a viral Internet video saying she had done 'fuck all' during the 'pandemic'

which was 'a load of bollocks'. She said that 'Covid-19' was rebranded flu and of course she lost her job. This is what happens in the medical and endless other professions now when you tell the truth. Louise filmed inside 'war-zone' accident and emergency departments to show they were empty and I mean *empty* as in no one there. The mainstream media could have done the same and blown the gaff on the whole conspiracy. They haven't to their eternal shame. Not that most 'journalists' seem capable of manifesting shame as with the psychopaths they slavishly repeat without question. The relative few who were admitted with serious health problems were left to die alone with no loved ones allowed to see them because of 'Covid' rules and they included kids dying without the comfort of mum and dad at their bedside while the evil behind this couldn't give a damn. It was all good fun to them. A Scottish NHS staff nurse publicly quit in the spring of 2021 saying: 'I can no longer be part of the lies and the corruption by the government.' She said hospitals 'aren't full, the beds aren't full, beds have been shut, wards have been shut'. Hospitals were never busy throughout 'Covid'. The staff nurse said that Nicola Sturgeon, tragically the leader of the Scottish government, was on television saying save the hospitals and the NHS – 'but the beds are empty' and 'we've not seen flu, we always see flu every year'. She wrote to government and spoke with her union Unison (the unions are Cult-compromised and *useless*, but nothing changed. Many of her colleagues were scared of losing their jobs if they spoke out as they wanted to. She said nursing staff were being affected by wearing masks all day and 'my head is splitting every shift from wearing a mask'. The NHS is part of the fascist tyranny and must be dismantled so we can start again with human beings in charge. (Ironically, hospitals were reported to be busier again when official 'Covid' cases *fell* in spring/summer of 2021 and many other conditions required treatment at the same time as *the fake vaccine rollout*.)

I will cover the 'Covid vaccine' scam in detail later, but it is another indicator of the sickening disregard for human life that I am highlighting here. The DNA-manipulating concoctions do not fulfil

the definition of a 'vaccine', have never been used on humans before and were given only emergency approval because trials were not completed and they continued using the unknowing public. The result was what a NHS senior nurse with responsibility for 'vaccine' procedure said was 'genocide'. She said the 'vaccines' were not 'vaccines'. They had not been shown to be safe and claims about their effectiveness by drug companies were 'poetic licence'. She described what was happening as a 'horrid act of human annihilation'. The nurse said that management had instigated a policy of not providing a Patient Information Leaflet (PIL) before people were 'vaccinated' even though health care professionals are supposed to do this according to protocol. Patients should also be told that they are taking part in an ongoing clinical trial. Her challenges to what is happening had seen her excluded from meetings and ridiculed in others. She said she was told to 'watch my step ... or I would find myself surplus to requirements'. The nurse, who spoke anonymously in fear of her career, said she asked her NHS manager why he/she was content with taking part in genocide against those having the 'vaccines'. The reply was that everyone had to play their part and to 'put up, shut up, and get it done'. Government was 'leaning heavily' on NHS management which was clearly leaning heavily on staff. This is how the global 'medical' hierarchy operates and it starts with the Cult and its World Health Organization.

She told the story of a doctor who had the Pfizer jab and when questioned had no idea what was in it. The doctor had never read the literature. We have to stop treating doctors as intellectual giants when so many are moral and medical pygmies. The doctor did not even know that the 'vaccines' were not fully approved or that their trials were ongoing. They were, however, asking their patients if they minded taking part in follow-ups for research purposes – yes, the *ongoing clinical trial*. The nurse said the doctor's ignorance was not rare and she had spoken to a hospital consultant who had the jab without any idea of the background or that the 'trials' had not been completed. Nurses and pharmacists had shown the same ignorance.

‘My NHS colleagues have forsaken their duty of care, broken their code of conduct – Hippocratic Oath – and have been brainwashed just the same as the majority of the UK public through propaganda ...’ She said she had not been able to recruit a single NHS colleague, doctor, nurse or pharmacist to stand with her and speak out. Her union had refused to help. She said that if the genocide came to light she would not hesitate to give evidence at a Nuremberg-type trial against those in power who could have affected the outcomes but didn’t.

And all for what?

To put the nonsense into perspective let’s say the ‘virus’ does exist and let’s go completely crazy and accept that the official manipulated figures for cases and deaths are accurate. *Even then* a study by Stanford University epidemiologist Dr John Ioannidis published on the World Health Organization website produced an average infection to fatality rate of ... *0.23 percent!* Ioannidis said: ‘If one could sample equally from all locations globally, the median infection fatality rate might even be substantially lower than the 0.23% observed in my analysis.’ For healthy people under 70 it was ... *0.05 percent!* This compares with the 3.4 percent claimed by the Cult-owned World Health Organization when the hoax was first played and maximum fear needed to be generated. An updated Stanford study in April, 2021, put the ‘infection’ to ‘fatality’ rate at just 0.15 percent. Another team of scientists led by Megan O’Driscoll and Henrik Salje studied data from 45 countries and published their findings on the Nature website. For children and young people the figure is so small it virtually does not register although authorities will be hyping dangers to the young when they introduce DNA-manipulating ‘vaccines’ for children. The O’Driscoll study produced an average infection-fatality figure of 0.003 for children from birth to four; 0.001 for 5 to 14; 0.003 for 15 to 19; and it was still only 0.456 up to 64. To claim that children must be ‘vaccinated’ to protect them from ‘Covid’ is an obvious lie and so there must be another reason and there is. What’s more the average age of a ‘Covid’ death is akin

to the average age that people die in general. The average age of death in England is about 80 for men and 83 for women. The average age of death from alleged 'Covid' is between 82 and 83. California doctors, Dan Erickson and Artin Massihi, said at their April media conference that projection models of millions of deaths had been 'woefully inaccurate'. They produced detailed figures showing that Californians had a 0.03 chance of dying from 'Covid' based on the number of people who tested positive (with a test not testing for the 'virus'). Erickson said there was a 0.1 percent chance of dying from 'Covid' in the *state* of New York, not just the city, and a 0.05 percent chance in Spain, a centre of 'Covid-19' hysteria at one stage. The Stanford studies supported the doctors' data with fatality rate estimates of 0.23 and 0.15 percent. How close are these figures to my estimate of *zero*? Death-rate figures claimed by the World Health Organization at the start of the hoax were some 15 times higher. The California doctors said there was no justification for lockdowns and the economic devastation they caused. Everything they had ever learned about quarantine was that you quarantine the *sick* and not the healthy. They had never seen this before and it made no medical sense.

Why in the in the light of all this would governments and medical systems the world over say that billions must go under house arrest; lose their livelihood; in many cases lose their mind, their health and their life; force people to wear masks dangerous to health and psychology; make human interaction and even family interaction a criminal offence; ban travel; close restaurants, bars, watching live sport, concerts, theatre, and any activity involving human togetherness and discourse; and closing schools to isolate children from their friends and cause many to commit suicide in acts of hopelessness and despair? The California doctors said lockdown consequences included increased child abuse, partner abuse, alcoholism, depression, and other impacts they were seeing every day. Who would do that to the entire human race if not mentally-ill psychopaths of almost unimaginable extremes like Bill Gates? We must face the reality of what we are dealing with and come out of

denial. Fascism and tyranny are made possible only by the target population submitting and acquiescing to fascism and tyranny. The whole of human history shows that to be true. Most people naively and unquestioning believed what they were told about a 'deadly virus' and meekly and weakly submitted to house arrest. Those who didn't believe it – at least in total – still submitted in fear of the consequences of not doing so. For the rest who wouldn't submit draconian fines have been imposed, brutal policing by psychopaths *for* psychopaths, and condemnation from the meek and weak who condemn the Pushbackers on behalf of the very force that has them, too, in its gunsights. 'Pathetic' does not even begin to suffice. Britain's brainless 'Health' Secretary Matt Hancock warned anyone lying to border officials about returning from a list of 'hotspot' countries could face a jail sentence of up to ten years which is more than for racially-aggravated assault, incest and attempting to have sex with a child under 13. Hancock is a lunatic, but he has the state apparatus behind him in a Cult-led chain reaction and the same with UK 'Vaccine Minister' Nadhim Zahawi, a prominent member of the mega-Cult secret society, Le Cercle, which featured in my earlier books. The Cult enforces its will on governments and medical systems; government and medical systems enforce their will on business and police; business enforces its will on staff who enforce it on customers; police enforce the will of the Cult on the population and play their essential part in creating a world of fascist control that their own children and grandchildren will have to live in their entire lives. It is a hierarchical pyramid of imposition and acquiescence and, yes indeed, of clinical insanity.

Does anyone bright enough to read this book have to ask what the answer is? I think not, but I will reveal it anyway in the fewest of syllables: Tell the psychos and their moronic lackeys to fuck off and let's get on with our lives. We are many – They are few.

CHAPTER SEVEN

War on your mind

One believes things because one has been conditioned to believe them

Aldous Huxley, Brave New World

I have described the 'Covid' hoax as a 'Psyop' and that is true in every sense and on every level in accordance with the definition of that term which is psychological warfare. Break down the 'Covid pandemic' to the foundation themes and it is psychological warfare on the human individual and collective mind.

The same can be said for the entire human belief system involving every subject you can imagine. Huxley was right in his contention that people believe what they are conditioned to believe and this comes from the repetition throughout their lives of the same falsehoods. They spew from government, corporations, media and endless streams of 'experts' telling you what the Cult wants you to believe and often believing it themselves (although *far* from always). 'Experts' are rewarded with 'prestigious' jobs and titles and as agents of perceptual programming with regular access to the media. The Cult has to control the narrative – control *information* – or they lose control of the vital, crucial, without-which-they-cannot-prevail public perception of reality. The foundation of that control today is the Internet made possible by the Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA), the incredibly sinister technological arm of the Pentagon. The Internet is the result of military technology.

DARPA openly brags about establishing the Internet which has been a long-term project to lasso the minds of the global population. I have said for decades the plan is to control information to such an extreme that eventually no one would see or hear anything that the Cult does not approve. We are closing in on that end with ferocious censorship since the 'Covid' hoax began and in my case it started back in the 1990s in terms of books and speaking venues. I had to create my own publishing company in 1995 precisely because no one else would publish my books even then. I think they're all still running.

Cult Internet

To secure total control of information they needed the Internet in which pre-programmed algorithms can seek out 'unclean' content for deletion and even stop it being posted in the first place. The Cult had to dismantle print and non-Internet broadcast media to ensure the transfer of information to the appropriate-named 'Web' – a critical expression of the *Cult* web. We've seen the ever-quicken demise of traditional media and control of what is left by a tiny number of corporations operating worldwide. Independent journalism in the mainstream is already dead and never was that more obvious than since the turn of 2020. The Cult wants all information communicated via the Internet to globally censor and allow the plug to be pulled any time. Lockdowns and forced isolation has meant that communication between people has been through electronic means and no longer through face-to-face discourse and discussion. Cult psychopaths have targeted the bars, restaurants, sport, venues and meeting places in general for this reason. None of this is by chance and it's to stop people gathering in any kind of privacy or number while being able to track and monitor all Internet communications and block them as necessary. Even private messages between individuals have been censored by these fascists that control Cult fronts like Facebook, Twitter, Google and YouTube which are all officially run by Sabbatian place-people and from the background by higher-level Sabbatian place people.

Facebook, Google, Amazon and their like were seed-funded and supported into existence with money-no-object infusions of funds either directly or indirectly from DARPA and CIA technology arm In-Q-Tel. The Cult plays the long game and prepares very carefully for big plays like 'Covid'. Amazon is another front in the psychological war and pretty much controls the global market in book sales and increasingly publishing. Amazon's limitless funds have deleted fantastic numbers of independent publishers to seize global domination on the way to deciding which books can be sold and circulated and which cannot. Moves in that direction are already happening. Amazon's leading light Jeff Bezos is the grandson of Lawrence Preston Gise who worked with DARPA predecessor ARPA. Amazon has big connections to the CIA and the Pentagon. The plan I have long described went like this:

1. Employ military technology to establish the Internet.
2. Sell the Internet as a place where people can freely communicate without censorship and allow that to happen until the Net becomes the central and irreversible pillar of human society. If the Internet had been highly censored from the start many would have rejected it.
3. Fund and manipulate major corporations into being to control the circulation of information on your Internet using cover stories about geeks in garages to explain how they came about. Give them unlimited funds to expand rapidly with no need to make a profit for years while non-Cult companies who need to balance the books cannot compete. You know that in these circumstances your Googles, YouTubes, Facebooks and Amazons are going to secure near monopolies by either crushing or buying up the opposition.
4. Allow freedom of expression on both the Internet and communication platforms to draw people in until the Internet is the central and irreversible pillar of human society and your communication corporations have reached a stage of near monopoly domination.
5. Then unleash your always-planned frenzy of censorship on the basis of 'where else are you going to go?' and continue to expand that until nothing remains that the Cult does not want its human targets to see.

The process was timed to hit the 'Covid' hoax to ensure the best chance possible of controlling the narrative which they knew they had to do at all costs. They were, after all, about to unleash a 'deadly virus' that didn't really exist. If you do that in an environment of free-flowing information and opinion you would be dead in the

water before you could say Gates is a psychopath. The network was in place through which the Cult-created-and-owned World Health Organization could dictate the 'Covid' narrative and response policy slavishly supported by Cult-owned Internet communication giants and mainstream media while those telling a different story were censored. Google, YouTube, Facebook and Twitter openly announced that they would do this. What else would we expect from Cult-owned operations like Facebook which former executives have confirmed set out to make the platform more addictive than cigarettes and coldly manipulates emotions of its users to sow division between people and groups and scramble the minds of the young? If Zuckerberg lives out the rest of his life without going to jail for crimes against humanity, and most emphatically against the young, it will be a travesty of justice. Still, no matter, cause and effect will catch up with him eventually and the same with Sergey Brin and Larry Page at Google with its CEO Sundar Pichai who fix the Google search results to promote Cult narratives and hide the opposition. Put the same key words into Google and other search engines like DuckDuckGo and you will see how different results can be. Wikipedia is another intensely biased 'encyclopaedia' which skews its content to the Cult agenda. YouTube links to Wikipedia's version of 'Covid' and 'climate change' on video pages in which experts in their field offer a different opinion (even that is increasingly rare with Wojcicki censorship). Into this 'Covid' silence-them network must be added government media censors, sorry 'regulators', such as Ofcom in the UK which imposed tyrannical restrictions on British broadcasters that had the effect of banning me from ever appearing. Just to debate with me about my evidence and views on 'Covid' would mean breaking the fascistic impositions of Ofcom and its CEO career government bureaucrat Melanie Dawes. Gutless British broadcasters tremble at the very thought of fascist Ofcom.

Psychos behind 'Covid'

The reason for the 'Covid' catastrophe in all its facets and forms can be seen by whom and what is driving the policies worldwide in such a coordinated way. Decisions are not being made to protect health, but to target psychology. The dominant group guiding and 'advising' government policy are not medical professionals. They are psychologists and behavioural scientists. Every major country has its own version of this phenomenon and I'll use the British example to show how it works. In many ways the British version has been affecting the wider world in the form of the huge behaviour manipulation network in the UK which operates in other countries. The network involves private companies, government, intelligence and military. The Cabinet Office is at the centre of the government 'Covid' Psyop and part-owns, with 'innovation charity' Nesta, the Behavioural Insights Team (BIT) which claims to be independent of government but patently isn't. The BIT was established in 2010 and its job is to manipulate the psyche of the population to acquiesce to government demands and so much more. It is also known as the 'Nudge Unit', a name inspired by the 2009 book by two ultra-Zionists, Cass Sunstein and Richard Thaler, called *Nudge: Improving Decisions About Health, Wealth, and Happiness*. The book, as with the Behavioural Insights Team, seeks to 'nudge' behaviour (manipulate it) to make the public follow patterns of action and perception that suit those in authority (the Cult). Sunstein is so skilled at this that he advises the World Health Organization and the UK Behavioural Insights Team and was Administrator of the White House Office of Information and Regulatory Affairs in the Obama administration. Biden appointed him to the Department of Homeland Security – another ultra-Zionist in the fold to oversee new immigration laws which is another policy the Cult wants to control. Sunstein is desperate to silence anyone exposing conspiracies and co-authored a 2008 report on the subject in which suggestions were offered to ban 'conspiracy theorizing' or impose 'some kind of tax, financial or otherwise, on those who disseminate such theories'. I guess a psychiatrist's chair is out of the question?

Sunstein's mate Richard Thaler, an 'academic affiliate' of the UK Behavioural Insights Team, is a proponent of 'behavioural economics' which is defined as the study of 'the effects of psychological, cognitive, emotional, cultural and social factors on the decisions of individuals and institutions'. Study the effects so they can be manipulated to be what you want them to be. Other leading names in the development of behavioural economics are ultra-Zionists Daniel Kahneman and Robert J. Shiller and they, with Thaler, won the Nobel Memorial Prize in Economic Sciences for their work in this field. The Behavioural Insights Team is operating at the heart of the UK government and has expanded globally through partnerships with several universities including Harvard, Oxford, Cambridge, University College London (UCL) and Pennsylvania. They claim to have 'trained' (reframed) 20,000 civil servants and run more than 750 projects involving 400 randomised controlled trials in dozens of countries' as another version of mind reframers Common Purpose. BIT works from its office in New York with cities and their agencies, as well as other partners, across the United States and Canada – this is a company part-owned by the British government Cabinet Office. An executive order by President Cult-servant Obama established a US Social and Behavioral Sciences Team in 2015. They all have the same reason for being and that's to brainwash the population directly and by brainwashing those in positions of authority.

'Covid' mind game

Another prime aspect of the UK mind-control network is the 'independent' [joke] Scientific Pandemic Insights Group on Behaviours (SPI-B) which 'provides behavioural science advice aimed at anticipating and helping people adhere to interventions that are recommended by medical or epidemiological experts'. That means manipulating public perception and behaviour to do whatever government tells them to do. It's disgusting and if they really want the public to be 'safe' this lot should all be under lock and key. According to the government website SPI-B consists of

'behavioural scientists, health and social psychologists, anthropologists and historians' and advises the Whitty-Vallance-led Scientific Advisory Group for Emergencies (SAGE) which in turn advises the government on 'the science' (it doesn't) and 'Covid' policy. When politicians say they are being guided by 'the science' this is the rabble in each country they are talking about and that 'science' is dominated by behaviour manipulators to enforce government fascism through public compliance. The Behaviour Insight Team is headed by psychologist David Solomon Halpern, a visiting professor at King's College London, and connects with a national and global web of other civilian and military organisations as the Cult moves towards its goal of fusing them into one fascistic whole in every country through its 'Fusion Doctrine'. The behaviour manipulation network involves, but is not confined to, the Foreign Office; National Security Council; government communications headquarters (GCHQ); MI5; MI6; the Cabinet Office-based Media Monitoring Unit; and the Rapid Response Unit which 'monitors digital trends to spot emerging issues; including misinformation and disinformation; and identifies the best way to respond'.

There is also the 77th Brigade of the UK military which operates like the notorious Israeli military's Unit 8200 in manipulating information and discussion on the Internet by posing as members of the public to promote the narrative and discredit those who challenge it. Here we have the military seeking to manipulate *domestic* public opinion while the Nazis in government are fine with that. Conservative Member of Parliament Tobias Ellwood, an advocate of lockdown and control through 'vaccine passports', is a Lieutenant Colonel reservist in the 77th Brigade which connects with the military operation jHub, the 'innovation centre' for the Ministry of Defence and Strategic Command. jHub has also been involved with the civilian National Health Service (NHS) in 'symptom tracing' the population. The NHS is a key part of this mind control network and produced a document in December, 2020, explaining to staff how to use psychological manipulation with different groups and ages to get them to have the DNA-manipulating 'Covid vaccine'

that's designed to cumulatively rewrite human genetics. The document, called 'Optimising Vaccination Roll Out – Do's and Don'ts for all messaging, documents and "communications" in the widest sense', was published by NHS England and the NHS Improvement *Behaviour Change Unit* in partnership with Public Health England and Warwick Business School. I hear the mantra about 'save the NHS' and 'protect the NHS' when we need to scrap the NHS and start again. The current version is far too corrupt, far too anti-human and totally compromised by Cult operatives and their assets. UK government broadcast media censor Ofcom will connect into this web – as will the BBC with its tremendous Ofcom influence – to control what the public see and hear and dictate mass perception. Nuremberg trials must include personnel from all these organisations.

The fear factor

The 'Covid' hoax has led to the creation of the UK Cabinet Office-connected Joint Biosecurity Centre (JBC) which is officially described as providing 'expert advice on pandemics' using its independent [all Cult operations are 'independent'] analytical function to provide real-time analysis about infection outbreaks to identify and respond to outbreaks of Covid-19'. Another role is to advise the government on a response to spikes in infections – 'for example by closing schools or workplaces in local areas where infection levels have risen'. Put another way, promoting the Cult agenda. The Joint Biosecurity Centre is modelled on the Joint Terrorism Analysis Centre which analyses intelligence to set 'terrorism threat levels' and here again you see the fusion of civilian and military operations and intelligence that has led to military intelligence producing documents about 'vaccine hesitancy' and how it can be combated. Domestic civilian matters and opinions should not be the business of the military. The Joint Biosecurity Centre is headed by Tom Hurd, director general of the Office for Security and Counter-Terrorism from the establishment-to-its-fingertips Hurd family. His father is former Foreign Secretary Douglas Hurd. How coincidental that Tom

Hurd went to the elite Eton College and Oxford University with Boris Johnson. Imperial College with its ridiculous computer modeller Neil Ferguson will connect with this gigantic web that will itself interconnect with similar set-ups in other major and not so major countries. Compared with this Cult network the politicians, be they Boris Johnson, Donald Trump or Joe Biden, are bit-part players 'following the science'. The network of psychologists was on the 'Covid' case from the start with the aim of generating maximum fear of the 'virus' to ensure compliance by the population. A government behavioural science group known as SPI-B produced a paper in March, 2020, for discussion by the main government science advisory group known as SAGE. It was headed 'Options for increasing adherence to social distancing measures' and it said the following in a section headed 'Persuasion':

- A substantial number of people still do not feel sufficiently personally threatened; it could be that they are reassured by the low death rate in their demographic group, although levels of concern may be rising. Having a good understanding of the risk has been found to be positively associated with adoption of COVID-19 social distancing measures in Hong Kong.
- The perceived level of personal threat needs to be increased among those who are complacent, using hard-hitting evaluation of options for increasing social distancing emotional messaging. To be effective this must also empower people by making clear the actions they can take to reduce the threat.
- Responsibility to others: There seems to be insufficient understanding of, or feelings of responsibility about, people's role in transmitting the infection to others ... Messaging about actions need to be framed positively in terms of protecting oneself and the community, and increase confidence that they will be effective.
- Some people will be more persuaded by appeals to play by the rules, some by duty to the community, and some to personal risk.

All these different approaches are needed. The messaging also needs to take account of the realities of different people's lives. Messaging needs to take account of the different motivational levers and circumstances of different people.

All this could be achieved the SPI-B psychologists said by *using the media to increase the sense of personal threat* which translates as terrify the shit out of the population, including children, so they all do what we want. That's not happened has it? Those excuses for 'journalists' who wouldn't know journalism if it bit them on the arse (the great majority) have played their crucial part in serving this Cult-government Psyop to enslave their own kids and grandkids. How they live with themselves I have no idea. The psychological war has been underpinned by constant government 'Covid' propaganda in almost every television and radio ad break, plus the Internet and print media, which has pounded out the fear with taxpayers footing the bill for their own programming. The result has been people terrified of a 'virus' that doesn't exist or one with a tiny fatality rate even if you believe it does. People walk down the street and around the shops wearing face-nappies damaging their health and psychology while others report those who refuse to be that naïve to the police who turn up in their own face-nappies. I had a cameraman come to my flat and he was so frightened of 'Covid' he came in wearing a mask and refused to shake my hand in case he caught something. He had – naïveitis – and the thought that he worked in the mainstream media was both depressing and made his behaviour perfectly explainable. The fear which has gripped the minds of so many and frozen them into compliance has been carefully cultivated by these psychologists who are really psychopaths. If lives get destroyed and a lot of young people commit suicide it shows our plan is working. SPI-B then turned to compulsion on the public to comply. 'With adequate preparation, rapid change can be achieved', it said. Some countries had introduced mandatory self-isolation on a wide scale without evidence of major public unrest and a large majority of the UK's population appeared to be supportive of more coercive measures with 64 percent of adults saying they would

support putting London under a lockdown (watch the 'polls' which are designed to make people believe that public opinion is in favour or against whatever the subject in hand).

For 'aggressive protective measures' to be effective, the SPI-B paper said, special attention should be devoted to those population groups that are more at risk. Translated from the Orwellian this means making the rest of population feel guilty for not protecting the 'vulnerable' such as old people which the Cult and its agencies were about to kill on an industrial scale with lockdown, lack of treatment and the Gates 'vaccine'. Psychopath psychologists sold their guilt-trip so comprehensively that Los Angeles County Supervisor Hilda Solis reported that children were apologising (from a distance) to their parents and grandparents for bringing 'Covid' into their homes and getting them sick. '... These apologies are just some of the last words that loved ones will ever hear as they die alone,' she said. Gut-wrenchingly Solis then used this childhood tragedy to tell children to stay at home and 'keep your loved ones alive'. Imagine heaping such potentially life-long guilt on a kid when it has absolutely nothing to do with them. These people are deeply disturbed and the psychologists behind this even more so.

Uncivil war – divide and rule

Professional mind-controllers at SPI-B wanted the media to increase a sense of responsibility to others (do as you're told) and promote 'positive messaging' for those actions while in contrast to invoke 'social disapproval' by the unquestioning, obedient, community of anyone with a mind of their own. Again the compliant Goebbels-like media obliged. This is an old, old, trick employed by tyrannies the world over throughout human history. You get the target population to keep the target population in line – *your* line. SPI-B said this could 'play an important role in preventing anti-social behaviour or discouraging failure to enact pro-social behaviour'. For 'anti-social' in the Orwellian parlance of SPI-B see any behaviour that government doesn't approve. SPI-B recommendations said that 'social disapproval' should be accompanied by clear messaging and

promotion of strong collective identity – hence the government and celebrity mantra of ‘we’re all in this together’. Sure we are. The mind doctors have such contempt for their targets that they think some clueless comedian, actor or singer telling them to do what the government wants will be enough to win them over. We have had UK comedian Lenny Henry, actor Michael Caine and singer Elton John wheeled out to serve the propagandists by urging people to have the DNA-manipulating ‘Covid’ non-‘vaccine’. The role of Henry and fellow black celebrities in seeking to coax a ‘vaccine’ reluctant black community into doing the government’s will was especially stomach-turning. An emotion-manipulating script and carefully edited video featuring these black ‘celebs’ was such an insult to the intelligence of black people and where’s the self-respect of those involved selling their souls to a fascist government agenda? Henry said he heard black people’s ‘legitimate worries and concerns’, but people must ‘trust the facts’ when they were doing exactly that by not having the ‘vaccine’. They had to include the obligatory reference to Black Lives Matter with the line ... ‘Don’t let coronavirus cost even more black lives – because we matter’. My god, it was pathetic. ‘I know the vaccine is safe and what it does.’ How? ‘I’m a comedian and it says so in my script.’

SPI-B said social disapproval needed to be carefully managed to avoid victimisation, scapegoating and misdirected criticism, but they knew that their ‘recommendations’ would lead to exactly that and the media were specifically used to stir-up the divide-and-conquer hostility. Those who conform like good little baa, baas, are praised while those who have seen through the tidal wave of lies are ‘Covidiot’. The awake have been abused by the fast asleep for not conforming to fascism and impositions that the awake know are designed to endanger their health, dehumanise them, and tear asunder the very fabric of human society. We have had the curtain-twitchers and morons reporting neighbours and others to the face-napped police for breaking ‘Covid rules’ with fascist police delighting in posting links and phone numbers where this could be done. The Cult cannot impose its will without a compliant police

and military or a compliant population willing to play their part in enslaving themselves and their kids. The words of a pastor in Nazi Germany are so appropriate today:

First they came for the socialists and I did not speak out because I was not a socialist.

Then they came for the trade unionists and I did not speak out because I was not a trade unionist.

Then they came for the Jews and I did not speak out because I was not a Jew.

Then they came for me and there was no one left to speak for me.

Those who don't learn from history are destined to repeat it and so many are.

'Covid' rules: Rewiring the mind

With the background laid out to this gigantic national and global web of psychological manipulation we can put 'Covid' rules into a clear and sinister perspective. Forget the claims about protecting health. 'Covid' rules are about dismantling the human mind, breaking the human spirit, destroying self-respect, and then putting Humpty Dumpty together again as a servile, submissive slave. Social isolation through lockdown and distancing have devastating effects on the human psyche as the psychological psychopaths well know and that's the real reason for them. Humans need contact with each other, discourse, closeness and touch, or they eventually, and literally, go crazy. Masks, which I will address at some length, fundamentally add to the effects of isolation and the Cult agenda to dehumanise and de-individualise the population. To do this while knowing – in fact *seeking* – this outcome is the very epitome of evil and psychologists involved in this *are* the epitome of evil. They must like all the rest of the Cult demons and their assets stand trial for crimes against humanity on a scale that defies the imagination. Psychopaths in uniform use isolation to break enemy troops and agents and make them subservient and submissive to tell what they know. The technique is rightly considered a form of torture and

torture is most certainly what has been imposed on the human population.

Clinically-insane American psychologist Harry Harlow became famous for his isolation experiments in the 1950s in which he separated baby monkeys from their mothers and imprisoned them for months on end in a metal container or 'pit of despair'. They soon began to show mental distress and depression as any idiot could have predicted. Harlow put other monkeys in steel chambers for three, six or twelve months while denying them any contact with animals or humans. He said that the effects of total social isolation for six months were 'so devastating and debilitating that we had assumed initially that twelve months of isolation would not produce any additional decrement'; but twelve months of isolation 'almost obliterated the animals socially'. This is what the Cult and its psychopaths are doing to you and your children. Even monkeys in partial isolation in which they were not allowed to form relationships with other monkeys became 'aggressive and hostile, not only to others, but also towards their own bodies'. We have seen this in the young as a consequence of lockdown. UK government psychopaths launched a public relations campaign telling people not to hug each other even after they received the 'Covid-19 vaccine' which we were told with more lies would allow a return to 'normal life'. A government source told *The Telegraph*: 'It will be along the lines that it is great that you have been vaccinated, but if you are going to visit your family and hug your grandchildren there is a chance you are going to infect people you love.' The source was apparently speaking from a secure psychiatric facility. Janet Lord, director of Birmingham University's Institute of Inflammation and Ageing, said that parents and grandparents should avoid hugging their children. Well, how can I put it, Ms Lord? Fuck off. Yep, that'll do.

Destroying the kids – where are the parents?

Observe what has happened to people enslaved and isolated by lockdown as suicide and self-harm has soared worldwide,

particularly among the young denied the freedom to associate with their friends. A study of 49,000 people in English-speaking countries concluded that almost half of young adults are at clinical risk of mental health disorders. A national survey in America of 1,000 currently enrolled high school and college students found that 5 percent reported attempting suicide during the pandemic. Data from the US CDC's National Syndromic Surveillance Program from January 1st to October 17th, 2020, revealed a *31 percent* increase in mental health issues among adolescents aged 12 to 17 compared with 2019. The CDC reported that America in general suffered the biggest drop in life expectancy since World War Two as it fell by a year in the first half of 2020 as a result of 'deaths of despair' – overdoses and suicides. Deaths of despair have leapt by more than 20 percent during lockdown and include the highest number of fatal overdoses ever recorded in a single year – 81,000. Internet addiction is another consequence of being isolated at home which lowers interest in physical activities as kids fall into inertia and what's the point? Children and young people are losing hope and giving up on life, sometimes literally. A 14-year-old boy killed himself in Maryland because he had 'given up' when his school district didn't reopen; an 11-year-old boy shot himself during a zoom class; a teenager in Maine succumbed to the isolation of the 'pandemic' when he ended his life after experiencing a disrupted senior year at school. Children as young as nine have taken their life and all these stories can be repeated around the world. Careers are being destroyed before they start and that includes those in sport in which promising youngsters have not been able to take part. The plan of the psycho-psychologists is working all right. Researchers at Cambridge University found that lockdowns cause significant harm to children's mental health. Their study was published in the *Archives of Disease in Childhood*, and followed 168 children aged between 7 and 11. The researchers concluded:

During the UK lockdown, children's depression symptoms have increased substantially, relative to before lockdown. The scale of this effect has direct relevance for the continuation of different elements of lockdown policy, such as complete or partial school closures ...

... Specifically, we observed a statistically significant increase in ratings of depression, with a medium-to-large effect size. Our findings emphasise the need to incorporate the potential impact of lockdown on child mental health in planning the ongoing response to the global pandemic and the recovery from it.

Not a chance when the Cult's psycho-psychologists were getting exactly what they wanted. The UK's Royal College of Paediatrics and Child Health has urged parents to look for signs of eating disorders in children and young people after a three to four fold increase. Specialists say the 'pandemic' is a major reason behind the rise. You don't say. The College said isolation from friends during school closures, exam cancellations, loss of extra-curricular activities like sport, and an increased use of social media were all contributory factors along with fears about the virus (psycho-psychologists again), family finances, and students being forced to quarantine. Doctors said young people were becoming severely ill by the time they were seen with 'Covid' regulations reducing face-to-face consultations. Nor is it only the young that have been devastated by the psychopaths. Like all bullies and cowards the Cult is targeting the young, elderly, weak and infirm. A typical story was told by a British lady called Lynn Parker who was not allowed to visit her husband in 2020 for the last ten and half months of his life 'when he needed me most' between March 20th and when he died on December 19th. This vacates the criminal and enters the territory of evil. The emotional impact on the immune system alone is immense as are the number of people of all ages worldwide who have died as a result of Cult-demanded, Gates-demanded, lockdowns.

Isolation is torture

The experience of imposing solitary confinement on millions of prisoners around the world has shown how a large percentage become 'actively psychotic and/or acutely suicidal'. Social isolation has been found to trigger 'a specific psychiatric syndrome, characterized by hallucinations; panic attacks; overt paranoia; diminished impulse control; hypersensitivity to external stimuli; and difficulties with thinking, concentration and memory'. Juan Mendez,

a United Nations rapporteur (investigator), said that isolation is a form of torture. Research has shown that even after isolation prisoners find it far more difficult to make social connections and I remember chatting to a shop assistant after one lockdown who told me that when her young son met another child again he had no idea how to act or what to do. Hannah Flanagan, Director of Emergency Services at Journey Mental Health Center in Dane County, Wisconsin, said: 'The specificity about Covid social distancing and isolation that we've come across as contributing factors to the suicides are really new to us this year.' But they are not new to those that devised them. They are getting the effect they want as the population is psychologically dismantled to be rebuilt in a totally different way. Children and the young are particularly targeted. They will be the adults when the full-on fascist AI-controlled technocracy is planned to be imposed and they are being prepared to meekly submit. At the same time older people who still have a memory of what life was like before – and how fascist the new normal really is – are being deleted. You are going to see efforts to turn the young against the old to support this geriatric genocide. Hannah Flanagan said the big increase in suicide in her county proved that social isolation is not only harmful, but deadly. Studies have shown that isolation from others is one of the main risk factors in suicide and even more so with women. Warnings that lockdown could create a 'perfect storm' for suicide were ignored. After all this was one of the *reasons* for lockdown. Suicide, however, is only the most extreme of isolation consequences. There are many others. Dr Dhruv Khullar, assistant professor of healthcare policy at Weill Cornell Medical College, said in a *New York Times* article in 2016 long before the fake 'pandemic':

A wave of new research suggests social separation is bad for us. Individuals with less social connection have disrupted sleep patterns, altered immune systems, more inflammation and higher levels of stress hormones. One recent study found that isolation increases the risk of heart disease by 29 percent and stroke by 32 percent. Another analysis that pooled data from 70 studies and 3.4 million people found that socially isolated individuals had a 30 percent higher risk of dying in the next seven years, and that this effect was largest in middle age.

Loneliness can accelerate cognitive decline in older adults, and isolated individuals are twice as likely to die prematurely as those with more robust social interactions. These effects start early: Socially isolated children have significantly poorer health 20 years later, even after controlling for other factors. All told, loneliness is as important a risk factor for early death as obesity and smoking.

There you have proof from that one article alone four years before 2020 that those who have enforced lockdown, social distancing and isolation knew what the effect would be and that is even more so with professional psychologists that have been driving the policy across the globe. We can go back even further to the years 2000 and 2003 and the start of a major study on the effects of isolation on health by Dr Janine Gronewold and Professor Dirk M. Hermann at the University Hospital in Essen, Germany, who analysed data on 4,316 people with an average age of 59 who were recruited for the long-term research project. They found that socially isolated people are more than 40 percent more likely to have a heart attack, stroke, or other major cardiovascular event and nearly 50 percent more likely to die from any cause. Given the financial Armageddon unleashed by lockdown we should note that the study found a relationship between increased cardiovascular risk and lack of financial support. After excluding other factors social isolation was still connected to a 44 percent increased risk of cardiovascular problems and a 47 percent increased risk of death by any cause. Lack of financial support was associated with a 30 percent increase in the risk of cardiovascular health events. Dr Gronewold said it had been known for some time that feeling lonely or lacking contact with close friends and family can have an impact on physical health and the study had shown that having strong social relationships is of high importance for heart health. Gronewold said they didn't understand yet why people who are socially isolated have such poor health outcomes, but this was obviously a worrying finding, particularly during these times of prolonged social distancing. Well, it can be explained on many levels. You only have to identify the point in the body where people feel loneliness and missing people they are parted from – it's in the centre of the chest where they feel the ache of loneliness and the ache of missing people. 'My heart aches for

you' ... 'My heart aches for some company.' I will explain this more in the chapter Escaping Wetiko, but when you realise that the body is the mind – they are expressions of each other – the reason why state of the mind dictates state of the body becomes clear.

American psychologist Ranjit Powar was highlighting the effects of lockdown isolation as early as April, 2020. She said humans have evolved to be social creatures and are wired to live in interactive groups. Being isolated from family, friends and colleagues could be unbalancing and traumatic for most people and could result in short or even long-term psychological and physical health problems. An increase in levels of anxiety, aggression, depression, forgetfulness and hallucinations were possible psychological effects of isolation. 'Mental conditions may be precipitated for those with underlying pre-existing susceptibilities and show up in many others without any pre-condition.' Powar said personal relationships helped us cope with stress and if we lost this outlet for letting off steam the result can be a big emotional void which, for an average person, was difficult to deal with. 'Just a few days of isolation can cause increased levels of anxiety and depression' – so what the hell has been the effect on the global population of *18 months* of this at the time of writing? Powar said: 'Add to it the looming threat of a dreadful disease being repeatedly hammered in through the media and you have a recipe for many shades of mental and physical distress.' For those with a house and a garden it is easy to forget that billions have had to endure lockdown isolation in tiny overcrowded flats and apartments with nowhere to go outside. The psychological and physical consequences of this are unimaginable and with lunatic and abusive partners and parents the consequences have led to tremendous increases in domestic and child abuse and alcoholism as people seek to shut out the horror. Ranjit Powar said:

Staying in a confined space with family is not all a rosy picture for everyone. It can be extremely oppressive and claustrophobic for large low-income families huddled together in small single-room houses. Children here are not lucky enough to have many board/electronic games or books to keep them occupied.

Add to it the deep insecurity of running out of funds for food and basic necessities. On the other hand, there are people with dysfunctional family dynamics, such as domineering, abusive or alcoholic partners, siblings or parents which makes staying home a period of trial. Incidence of suicide and physical abuse against women has shown a worldwide increase. Heightened anxiety and depression also affect a person's immune system, making them more susceptible to illness.

To think that Powar's article was published on April 11th, 2020.

Six-feet fantasy

Social (unsocial) distancing demanded that people stay six feet or two metres apart. UK government advisor Robert Dingwall from the New and Emerging Respiratory Virus Threats Advisory Group said in a radio interview that the two-metre rule was 'conjured up out of nowhere' and was not based on science. No, it was not based on *medical* science, but it didn't come out of nowhere. The distance related to *psychological* science. Six feet/two metres was adopted in many countries and we were told by people like the criminal Anthony Fauci and his ilk that it was founded on science. Many schools could not reopen because they did not have the space for six-foot distancing. Then in March, 2021, after a year of six-foot 'science', a study published in the *Journal of Infectious Diseases* involving more than 500,000 students and almost 100,000 staff over 16 weeks revealed no significant difference in 'Covid' cases between six feet and three feet and Fauci changed his tune. Now three feet was okay. There is no difference between six feet and three *inches* when there is no 'virus' and they got away with six feet for psychological reasons for as long as they could. I hear journalists and others talk about 'unintended consequences' of lockdown. They are not *unintended* at all; they have been coldly-calculated for a specific outcome of human control and that's why super-psychopaths like Gates have called for them so vehemently. Super-psychopath psychologists have demanded them and psychopathic or clueless, spineless, politicians have gone along with them by 'following the science'. But it's not science at all. 'Science' is not what is; it's only what people can be manipulated to believe it is. The whole 'Covid' catastrophe is

founded on mind control. Three word or three statement mantras issued by the UK government are a well-known mind control technique and so we've had 'Stay home/protect the NHS/save lives', 'Stay alert/control the virus/save lives' and 'hands/face/space'. One of the most vocal proponents of extreme 'Covid' rules in the UK has been Professor Susan Michie, a member of the British Communist Party, who is not a medical professional. Michie is the director of the Centre for Behaviour Change at University College London. She is a *behavioural psychologist* and another filthy rich 'Marxist' who praised China's draconian lockdown. She was known by fellow students at Oxford University as 'Stalin's nanny' for her extreme Marxism. Michie is an influential member of the UK government's Scientific Advisory Group for Emergencies (SAGE) and behavioural manipulation groups which have dominated 'Covid' policy. She is a consultant adviser to the World Health Organization on 'Covid-19' and behaviour. Why the hell are lockdowns anything to do with her when they are claimed to be about health? Why does a behavioural psychologist from a group charged with changing the behaviour of the public want lockdown, human isolation and mandatory masks? Does that question really need an answer? Michie *absolutely* has to explain herself before a Nuremberg court when humanity takes back its world again and even more so when you see the consequences of masks that she demands are compulsory. This is a Michie classic:

The benefits of getting primary school children to wear masks is that regardless of what little degree of transmission is occurring in those age groups it could help normalise the practice. Young children wearing masks may be more likely to get their families to accept masks.

Those words alone should carry a prison sentence when you ponder on the callous disregard for children involved and what a statement it makes about the mind and motivations of Susan Michie. What a lovely lady and what she said there encapsulates the mentality of the psychopaths behind the 'Covid' horror. Let us compare what Michie said with a countrywide study in Germany published at [researchsquare.com](https://www.researchsquare.com) involving 25,000 school children and 17,854 health complaints submitted by parents. Researchers

found that masks are harming children physically, psychologically, and behaviourally with 24 health issues associated with mask wearing. They include: shortness of breath (29.7%); dizziness (26.4%); increased headaches (53%); difficulty concentrating (50%); drowsiness or fatigue (37%); and malaise (42%). Nearly a third of children experienced more sleep issues than before and a quarter developed new fears. Researchers found health issues and other impairments in 68 percent of masked children covering their faces for an average of 4.5 hours a day. Hundreds of those taking part experienced accelerated respiration, tightness in the chest, weakness, and short-term impairment of consciousness. A reminder of what Michie said again:

The benefits of getting primary school children to wear masks is that regardless of what little degree of transmission is occurring in those age groups it could help normalise the practice. Young children wearing masks may be more likely to get their families to accept masks.

Psychopaths in government and psychology now have children and young people – plus all the adults – wearing masks for hours on end while clueless teachers impose the will of the psychopaths on the young they should be protecting. What the hell are parents doing?

Cult lab rats

We have some schools already imposing on students microchipped buzzers that activate when they get 'too close' to their pals in the way they do with lab rats. How apt. To the Cult and its brain-dead servants our children *are* lab rats being conditioned to be unquestioning, dehumanised slaves for the rest of their lives.

Children and young people are being weaned and frightened away from the most natural human instincts including closeness and touch. I have tracked in the books over the years how schools were banning pupils from greeting each other with a hug and the whole Cult-induced Me Too movement has terrified men and boys from a relaxed and natural interaction with female friends and work colleagues to the point where many men try never to be in a room

alone with a woman that's not their partner. Airhead celebrities have as always played their virtue-signalling part in making this happen with their gross exaggeration. For every monster like Harvey Weinstein there are at least tens of thousands of men that don't treat women like that; but everyone must be branded the same and policy changed for them as well as the monster. I am going to be using the word 'dehumanise' many times in this chapter because that is what the Cult is seeking to do and it goes very deep as we shall see. Don't let them kid you that social distancing is planned to end one day. That's not the idea. We are seeing more governments and companies funding and producing wearable gadgets to keep people apart and they would not be doing that if this was meant to be short-term. A tech start-up company backed by GCHQ, the British Intelligence and military surveillance headquarters, has created a social distancing wrist sensor that alerts people when they get too close to others. The CIA has also supported tech companies developing similar devices. The wearable sensor was developed by Tended, one of a number of start-up companies supported by GCHQ (see the CIA and DARPA). The device can be worn on the wrist or as a tag on the waistband and will vibrate whenever someone wearing the device breaches social distancing and gets anywhere near natural human contact. The company had a lucky break in that it was developing a distancing sensor when the 'Covid' hoax arrived which immediately provided a potentially enormous market. How fortunate. The government in big-time Cult-controlled Ontario in Canada is investing \$2.5 million in wearable contact tracing technology that 'will alert users if they may have been exposed to the Covid-19 in the workplace and will beep or vibrate if they are within six feet of another person'. Facedrive Inc., the technology company behind this, was founded in 2016 with funding from the Ontario Together Fund and obviously they, too, had a prophet on the board of directors. The human surveillance and control technology is called TraceSCAN and would be worn by the human cyborgs in places such as airports, workplaces, construction sites, care homes and ... *schools*.

I emphasise schools with children and young people the prime targets. You know what is planned for society as a whole if you keep your eyes on the schools. They have always been places where the state program the next generation of slaves to be its compliant worker-ants – or Woker-ants these days; but in the mist of the ‘Covid’ madness they have been transformed into mind laboratories on a scale never seen before. Teachers and head teachers are just as programmed as the kids – often more so. Children are kept apart from human interaction by walk lanes, classroom distancing, staggered meal times, masks, and the rolling-out of buzzer systems. Schools are now physically laid out as a laboratory maze for lab-rats. Lunatics at a school in Anchorage, Alaska, who should be prosecuted for child abuse, took away desks and forced children to kneel (know your place) on a mat for five hours a day while wearing a mask and using their chairs as a desk. How this was supposed to impact on a ‘virus’ only these clinically insane people can tell you and even then it would be clap-trap. The school banned recess (interaction), art classes (creativity), and physical exercise (getting body and mind moving out of inertia). Everyone behind this outrage should be in jail or better still a mental institution. The behavioural manipulators are all for this dystopian approach to schools. Professor Susan Michie, the mind-doctor and British Communist Party member, said it was wrong to say that schools were safe. They had to be made so by ‘distancing’, masks and ventilation (sitting all day in the cold). I must ask this lady round for dinner on a night I know I am going to be out and not back for weeks. She probably wouldn’t be able to make it, anyway, with all the visits to her own psychologist she must have block-booked.

Masking identity

I know how shocking it must be for you that a behaviour manipulator like Michie wants everyone to wear masks which have long been a feature of mind-control programs like the infamous MKUltra in the United States, but, there we are. We live and learn. I spent many years from 1996 to right across the millennium

researching mind control in detail on both sides of the Atlantic and elsewhere. I met a large number of mind-control survivors and many had been held captive in body and mind by MKUltra. MK stands for mind-control, but employs the German spelling in deference to the Nazis spirited out of Germany at the end of World War Two by Operation Paperclip in which the US authorities, with help from the Vatican, transported Nazi mind-controllers and engineers to America to continue their work. Many of them were behind the creation of NASA and they included Nazi scientist and SS officer Wernher von Braun who swapped designing V-2 rockets to bombard London with designing the Saturn V rockets that powered the NASA moon programme's Apollo craft. I think I may have mentioned that the Cult has no borders. Among Paperclip escapees was Josef Mengele, the Angel of Death in the Nazi concentration camps where he conducted mind and genetic experiments on children often using twins to provide a control twin to measure the impact of his 'work' on the other. If you want to observe the Cult mentality in all its extremes of evil then look into the life of Mengele. I have met many people who suffered mercilessly under Mengele in the United States where he operated under the name Dr Greene and became a stalwart of MKUltra programming and torture. Among his locations was the underground facility in the Mojave Desert in California called the China Lake Naval Weapons Station which is almost entirely below the surface. My books *The Biggest Secret*, *Children of the Matrix* and *The Perception Deception* have the detailed background to MKUltra.

The best-known MKUltra survivor is American Cathy O'Brien. I first met her and her late partner Mark Phillips at a conference in Colorado in 1996. Mark helped her escape and deprogram from decades of captivity in an offshoot of MKUltra known as Project Monarch in which 'sex slaves' were provided for the rich and famous including Father George Bush, Dick Cheney and the Clintons. Read Cathy and Mark's book *Trance-Formation of America* and if you are new to this you will be shocked to the core. I read it in 1996 shortly before, with the usual synchronicity of my life, I found

myself given a book table at the conference right next to hers. MKUltra never ended despite being very publicly exposed (only a small part of it) in the 1970s and continues in other guises. I am still in touch with Cathy. She contacted me during 2020 after masks became compulsory in many countries to tell me how they were used as part of MKUltra programming. I had been observing 'Covid regulations' and the relationship between authority and public for months. I saw techniques that I knew were employed on individuals in MKUltra being used on the global population. I had read many books and manuals on mind control including one called *Silent Weapons for Quiet Wars* which came to light in the 1980s and was a guide on how to perceptually program on a mass scale. 'Silent Weapons' refers to mind-control. I remembered a line from the manual as governments, medical authorities and law enforcement agencies have so obviously talked to – or rather at – the adult population since the 'Covid' hoax began as if they are children. The document said:

If a person is spoken to by a T.V. advertiser as if he were a twelve-year-old, then, due to suggestibility, he will, with a certain probability, respond or react to that suggestion with the uncritical response of a twelve-year-old and will reach in to his economic reservoir and deliver its energy to buy that product on impulse when he passes it in the store.

That's why authority has spoken to adults like children since all this began.

Why did Michael Jackson wear masks?

Every aspect of the 'Covid' narrative has mind-control as its central theme. Cathy O'Brien wrote an article for davidicke.com about the connection between masks and mind control. Her daughter Kelly who I first met in the 1990s was born while Cathy was still held captive in MKUltra. Kelly was forced to wear a mask as part of her programming from the age of *two* to dehumanise her, target her sense of individuality and reduce the amount of oxygen her brain and body received. *Bingo*. This is the real reason for compulsory

masks, why they have been enforced en masse, and why they seek to increase the number they demand you wear. First one, then two, with one disgraceful alleged 'doctor' recommending four which is nothing less than a death sentence. Where and how often they must be worn is being expanded for the purpose of mass mind control and damaging respiratory health which they can call 'Covid-19'. Canada's government headed by the man-child Justin Trudeau, says it's fine for children of two and older to wear masks. An insane 'study' in Italy involving just 47 children concluded there was no problem for babies as young as *four months* wearing them. Even after people were 'vaccinated' they were still told to wear masks by the criminal that is Anthony Fauci. Cathy wrote that mandating masks is allowing the authorities literally to control the air we breathe which is what was done in MKUltra. You might recall how the singer Michael Jackson wore masks and there is a reason for that. He was subjected to MKUltra mind control through Project Monarch and his psyche was scrambled by these simpletons. Cathy wrote:

In MKUltra Project Monarch mind control, Michael Jackson had to wear a mask to silence his voice so he could not reach out for help. Remember how he developed that whisper voice when he wasn't singing? Masks control the mind from the outside in, like the redefining of words is doing. By controlling what we can and cannot say for fear of being labeled racist or beaten, for example, it ultimately controls thought that drives our words and ultimately actions (or lack thereof).

Likewise, a mask muffles our speech so that we are not heard, which controls voice ... words ... mind. This is Mind Control. Masks are an obvious mind control device, and I am disturbed so many people are complying on a global scale. Masks depersonalize while making a person feel as though they have no voice. It is a barrier to others. People who would never choose to comply but are forced to wear a mask in order to keep their job, and ultimately their family fed, are compromised. They often feel shame and are subdued. People have stopped talking with each other while media controls the narrative.

The 'no voice' theme has often become literal with train passengers told not to speak to each other in case they pass on the 'virus', singing banned for the same reason and bonkers California officials telling people riding roller coasters that they cannot shout and scream. Cathy said she heard every day from healed MKUltra survivors who cannot wear a mask without flashing back on ways

their breathing was controlled – ‘from ball gags and penises to water boarding’. She said that through the years when she saw images of people in China wearing masks ‘due to pollution’ that it was really to control their oxygen levels. ‘I knew it was as much of a population control mechanism of depersonalisation as are burkas’, she said. Masks are another Chinese communist/fascist method of control that has been swept across the West as the West becomes China at lightning speed since we entered 2020.

Mask-19

There are other reasons for mandatory masks and these include destroying respiratory health to call it ‘Covid-19’ and stunting brain development of children and the young. Dr Margarite Griesz-Brisson MD, PhD, is a Consultant Neurologist and Neurophysiologist and the Founder and Medical Director of the London Neurology and Pain Clinic. Her CV goes down the street and round the corner. She is clearly someone who cares about people and won’t parrot the propaganda. Griesz-Brisson has a PhD in pharmacology, with special interest in neurotoxicology, environmental medicine, neuroregeneration and neuroplasticity (the way the brain can change in the light of information received). She went public in October, 2020, with a passionate warning about the effects of mask-wearing laws:

The reinhalation of our exhaled air will without a doubt create oxygen deficiency and a flooding of carbon dioxide. We know that the human brain is very sensitive to oxygen deprivation. There are nerve cells for example in the hippocampus that can’t be longer than 3 minutes without oxygen – they cannot survive. The acute warning symptoms are headaches, drowsiness, dizziness, issues in concentration, slowing down of reaction time – reactions of the cognitive system.

Oh, I know, let’s tell bus, truck and taxi drivers to wear them and people working machinery. How about pilots, doctors and police? Griesz-Brisson makes the important point that while the symptoms she mentions may fade as the body readjusts this does not alter the fact that people continue to operate in oxygen deficit with long list of

potential consequences. She said it was well known that neurodegenerative diseases take years or decades to develop. 'If today you forget your phone number, the breakdown in your brain would have already started 20 or 30 years ago.' She said degenerative processes in your brain are getting amplified as your oxygen deprivation continues through wearing a mask. Nerve cells in the brain are unable to divide themselves normally in these circumstances and lost nerve cells will no longer be regenerated. 'What is gone is gone.' Now consider that people like shop workers and *schoolchildren* are wearing masks for hours every day. What in the name of sanity is going to be happening to them? 'I do not wear a mask, I need my brain to think', Griesz-Brisson said, 'I want to have a clear head when I deal with my patients and not be in a carbon dioxide-induced anaesthesia'. If you are told to wear a mask anywhere ask the organisation, police, store, whatever, for their risk assessment on the dangers and negative effects on mind and body of enforcing mask-wearing. They won't have one because it has never been done not even by government. All of them must be subject to class-action lawsuits as the consequences come to light. They don't do mask risk assessments for an obvious reason. They know what the conclusions would be and independent scientific studies that *have* been done tell a horror story of consequences.

'Masks are criminal'

Dr Griesz-Brisson said that for children and adolescents, masks are an absolute no-no. They had an extremely active and adaptive immune system and their brain was incredibly active with so much to learn. 'The child's brain, or the youth's brain, is thirsting for oxygen.' The more metabolically active an organ was, the more oxygen it required; and in children and adolescents every organ was metabolically active. Griesz-Brisson said that to deprive a child's or adolescent's brain of oxygen, or to restrict it in any way, was not only dangerous to their health, it was absolutely criminal. 'Oxygen deficiency inhibits the development of the brain, and the damage that has taken place as a result CANNOT be reversed.' Mind

manipulators of MKUltra put masks on two-year-olds they wanted to neurologically rewire and you can see why. Griesz-Brisson said a child needs the brain to learn and the brain needs oxygen to function. 'We don't need a clinical study for that. This is simple, indisputable physiology.' Consciously and purposely induced oxygen deficiency was an absolutely deliberate health hazard, and an absolute medical contraindication which means that 'this drug, this therapy, this method or measure should not be used, and is not allowed to be used'. To coerce an entire population to use an absolute medical contraindication by force, she said, there had to be definite and serious reasons and the reasons must be presented to competent interdisciplinary and independent bodies to be verified and authorised. She had this warning of the consequences that were coming if mask wearing continued:

When, in ten years, dementia is going to increase exponentially, and the younger generations couldn't reach their god-given potential, it won't help to say 'we didn't need the masks'. I know how damaging oxygen deprivation is for the brain, cardiologists know how damaging it is for the heart, pulmonologists know how damaging it is for the lungs. Oxygen deprivation damages every single organ. Where are our health departments, our health insurance, our medical associations? It would have been their duty to be vehemently against the lockdown and to stop it and stop it from the very beginning.

Why do the medical boards issue punishments to doctors who give people exemptions? Does the person or the doctor seriously have to prove that oxygen deprivation harms people? What kind of medicine are our doctors and medical associations representing? Who is responsible for this crime? The ones who want to enforce it? The ones who let it happen and play along, or the ones who don't prevent it?

All of the organisations and people she mentions there either answer directly to the Cult or do whatever hierarchical levels above them tell them to do. The outcome of both is the same. 'It's not about masks, it's not about viruses, it's certainly not about your health', Griesz-Brisson said. 'It is about much, much more. I am not participating. I am not afraid.' They were taking our air to breathe and there was no unfounded medical exemption from face masks. Oxygen deprivation was dangerous for every single brain. It had to be the free decision of every human being whether they want to

wear a mask that was absolutely ineffective to protect themselves from a virus. She ended by rightly identifying where the responsibility lies for all this:

The imperative of the hour is personal responsibility. We are responsible for what we think, not the media. We are responsible for what we do, not our superiors. We are responsible for our health, not the World Health Organization. And we are responsible for what happens in our country, not the government.

Halle-bloody-lujah.

But surgeons wear masks, right?

Independent studies of mask-wearing have produced a long list of reports detailing mental, emotional and physical dangers. What a definition of insanity to see police officers imposing mask-wearing on the public which will cumulatively damage their health while the police themselves wear masks that will cumulatively damage *their* health. It's utter madness and both public and police do this because 'the government says so' – yes a government of brain-donor idiots like UK Health Secretary Matt Hancock reading the 'follow the science' scripts of psychopathic, lunatic psychologists. The response you get from Stockholm syndrome sufferers defending the very authorities that are destroying them and their families is that 'surgeons wear masks'. This is considered the game, set and match that they must work and don't cause oxygen deficit. Well, actually, scientific studies have shown that they *do* and oxygen levels are monitored in operating theatres to compensate. Surgeons wear masks to stop spittle and such like dropping into open wounds – not to stop 'viral particles' which are so miniscule they can only be seen through an electron microscope. Holes in the masks are significantly bigger than 'viral particles' and if you sneeze or cough they will breach the mask. I watched an incredibly disingenuous 'experiment' that claimed to prove that masks work in catching 'virus' material from the mouth and nose. They did this with a slow motion camera and the mask did block big stuff which stayed inside the mask and

against the face to be breathed in or cause infections on the face as we have seen with many children. 'Viral particles', however, would never have been picked up by the camera as they came through the mask when they are far too small to be seen. The 'experiment' was therefore disingenuous *and* useless.

Studies have concluded that wearing masks in operating theatres (and thus elsewhere) make no difference to preventing infection while the opposite is true with toxic shite building up in the mask and this had led to an explosion in tooth decay and gum disease dubbed by dentists 'mask mouth'. You might have seen the Internet video of a furious American doctor urging people to take off their masks after a four-year-old patient had been rushed to hospital the night before and nearly died with a lung infection that doctors sourced to mask wearing. A study in the journal *Cancer Discovery* found that inhalation of harmful microbes can contribute to advanced stage lung cancer in adults and long-term use of masks can help breed dangerous pathogens. Microbiologists have said frequent mask wearing creates a moist environment in which microbes can grow and proliferate before entering the lungs. The Canadian Agency for Drugs and Technologies in Health, or CADTH, a Canadian national organisation that provides research and analysis to healthcare decision-makers, said this as long ago as 2013 in a report entitled 'Use of Surgical Masks in the Operating Room: A Review of the Clinical Effectiveness and Guidelines'. It said:

- No evidence was found to support the use of surgical face masks to reduce the frequency of surgical site infections
- No evidence was found on the effectiveness of wearing surgical face masks to protect staff from infectious material in the operating room.
- Guidelines recommend the use of surgical face masks by staff in the operating room to protect both operating room staff and patients (despite the lack of evidence).

We were told that the world could go back to 'normal' with the arrival of the 'vaccines'. When they came, fraudulent as they are, the story changed as I knew that it would. We are in the midst of transforming 'normal', not going back to it. Mary Ramsay, head of immunisation at Public Health England, echoed the words of US criminal Anthony Fauci who said masks and other regulations must stay no matter if people are vaccinated. The Fauci idiot continued to wear two masks – different colours so both could be clearly seen – after he *claimed* to have been vaccinated. Senator Rand Paul told Fauci in one exchange that his double-masks were 'theatre' and he was right. It's all theatre. Mary Ramsay back-tracked on the vaccine-return-to-normal theme when she said the public may need to wear masks and social-distance for years despite the jabs. 'People have got used to those lower-level restrictions now, and [they] can live with them', she said telling us what the idea has been all along. 'The vaccine does not give you a pass, even if you have had it, you must continue to follow all the guidelines' said a Public Health England statement which reneged on what we had been told before and made having the 'vaccine' irrelevant to 'normality' even by the official story. Spain's fascist government trumped everyone by passing a law mandating the wearing of masks on the beach and even when swimming in the sea. The move would have devastated what's left of the Spanish tourist industry, posed potential breathing dangers to swimmers and had Northern European sunbathers walking around with their forehead brown and the rest of their face white as a sheet. The ruling was so crazy that it had to be retracted after pressure from public and tourist industry, but it confirmed where the Cult wants to go with masks and how clinically insane authority has become. The determination to make masks permanent and hide the serious dangers to body and mind can be seen in the censorship of scientist Professor Denis Rancourt by Bill Gates-funded academic publishing website ResearchGate over his papers exposing the dangers and uselessness of masks. Rancourt said:

ResearchGate today has permanently locked my account, which I have had since 2015. Their reasons graphically show the nature of their attack against democracy, and their corruption of

science ... By their obscene non-logic, a scientific review of science articles reporting on harms caused by face masks has a 'potential to cause harm'. No criticism of the psychological device (face masks) is tolerated, if the said criticism shows potential to influence public policy.

This is what happens in a fascist world.

Where are the 'greens' (again)?

Other dangers of wearing masks especially regularly relate to the inhalation of minute plastic fibres into the lungs and the deluge of discarded masks in the environment and oceans. Estimates predicted that more than 1.5 billion disposable masks will end up in the world's oceans every year polluting the water with tons of plastic and endangering marine wildlife. Studies project that humans are using 129 billion face masks each month worldwide – about three million a minute. Most are disposable and made from plastic, non-biodegradable microfibers that break down into smaller plastic particles that become widespread in ecosystems. They are littering cities, clogging sewage channels and turning up in bodies of water. I have written in other books about the immense amounts of microplastics from endless sources now being absorbed into the body. Rolf Halden, director of the Arizona State University (ASU) Biodesign Center for Environmental Health Engineering, was the senior researcher in a 2020 study that analysed 47 human tissue samples and found microplastics in all of them. 'We have detected these chemicals of plastics in every single organ that we have investigated', he said. I wrote in *The Answer* about the world being deluged with microplastics. A study by the Worldwide Fund for Nature (WWF) found that people are consuming on average every week some 2,000 tiny pieces of plastic mostly through water and also through marine life and the air. Every year humans are ingesting enough microplastics to fill a heaped dinner plate and in a life-time of 79 years it is enough to fill two large waste bins. Marco Lambertini, WWF International director general said: 'Not only are plastics polluting our oceans and waterways and killing marine life – it's in all of us and we can't escape consuming plastics,' American

geologists found tiny plastic fibres, beads and shards in rainwater samples collected from the remote slopes of the Rocky Mountain National Park near Denver, Colorado. Their report was headed: 'It is raining plastic.' Rachel Adams, senior lecturer in Biomedical Science at Cardiff Metropolitan University, said that among health consequences are internal inflammation and immune responses to a 'foreign body'. She further pointed out that microplastics become carriers of toxins including mercury, pesticides and dioxins (a known cause of cancer and reproductive and developmental problems). These toxins accumulate in the fatty tissues once they enter the body through microplastics. Now this is being compounded massively by people putting plastic on their face and throwing it away.

Workers exposed to polypropylene plastic fibres known as 'flock' have developed 'flock worker's lung' from inhaling small pieces of the flock fibres which can damage lung tissue, reduce breathing capacity and exacerbate other respiratory problems. *Now ...* commonly used surgical masks have three layers of melt-blown textiles made of ... polypropylene. We have billions of people putting these microplastics against their mouth, nose and face for hours at a time day after day in the form of masks. How does anyone think that will work out? I mean – what could possibly go wrong? We posted a number of scientific studies on this at davidicke.com, but when I went back to them as I was writing this book the links to the science research website where they were hosted were dead. Anything that challenges the official narrative in any way is either censored or vilified. The official narrative is so unsupportable by the evidence that only deleting the truth can protect it. A study by Chinese scientists still survived – with the usual twist which it why it was still active, I guess. Yes, they found that virtually all the masks they tested increased the daily intake of microplastic fibres, but people should still wear them because the danger from the 'virus' was worse said the crazy 'team' from the Institute of Hydrobiology in Wuhan. Scientists first discovered microplastics in lung tissue of some patients who died of lung cancer

in the 1990s. Subsequent studies have confirmed the potential health damage with the plastic degrading slowly and remaining in the lungs to accumulate in volume. Wuhan researchers used a machine simulating human breathing to establish that masks shed up to nearly 4,000 microplastic fibres in a month with reused masks producing more. Scientists said some masks are laced with toxic chemicals and a variety of compounds seriously restricted for both health and environmental reasons. They include cobalt (used in blue dye) and formaldehyde known to cause watery eyes, burning sensations in the eyes, nose, and throat, plus coughing, wheezing and nausea. No – that must be ‘Covid-19’.

Mask ‘worms’

There is another and potentially even more sinister content of masks. Mostly new masks of different makes filmed under a microscope around the world have been found to contain strange black fibres or ‘worms’ that appear to move or ‘crawl’ by themselves and react to heat and water. The nearest I have seen to them are the self-replicating fibres that are pulled out through the skin of those suffering from Morgellons disease which has been connected to the phenomena of ‘chemtrails’ which I will bring into the story later on. Morgellons fibres continue to grow outside the body and have a form of artificial intelligence. Black ‘worm’ fibres in masks have that kind of feel to them and there is a nanotechnology technique called ‘worm micelles’ which carry and release drugs or anything else you want to deliver to the body. For sure the suppression of humanity by mind altering drugs is the Cult agenda big time and the more excuses they can find to gain access to the body the more opportunities there are to make that happen whether through ‘vaccines’ or masks pushed against the mouth and nose for hours on end.

So let us summarise the pros and cons of masks:

Against masks: Breathing in your own carbon dioxide; depriving the body and brain of sufficient oxygen; build-up of toxins in the mask that can be breathed into the lungs and cause rashes on the face and 'mask-mouth'; breathing microplastic fibres and toxic chemicals into the lungs; dehumanisation and deleting individualisation by literally making people faceless; destroying human emotional interaction through facial expression and deleting parental connection with their babies which look for guidance to their facial expression.

For masks: They don't protect you from a 'virus' that doesn't exist and even if it did 'viral' particles are so minute they are smaller than the holes in the mask.

Governments, police, supermarkets, businesses, transport companies, and all the rest who seek to impose masks have done no risk assessment on their consequences for health and psychology and are now open to group lawsuits when the impact becomes clear with a cumulative epidemic of respiratory and other disease. Authorities will try to exploit these effects and hide the real cause by dubbing them 'Covid-19'. Can you imagine setting out to force the population to wear health-destroying masks without doing any assessment of the risks? It is criminal and it is evil, but then how many people targeted in this way, who see their children told to wear them all day at school, have asked for a risk assessment? Billions can't be imposed upon by the few unless the billions allow it. Oh, yes, with just a tinge of irony, 85 percent of all masks made worldwide come from *China*.

Wash your hands in toxic shite

'Covid' rules include the use of toxic sanitisers and again the health consequences of constantly applying toxins to be absorbed through the skin is obvious to any level of Renegade Mind. America's Food and Drug Administration (FDA) said that sanitisers are drugs and issued a warning about 75 dangerous brands which contain

methanol used in antifreeze and can cause death, kidney damage and blindness. The FDA circulated the following warning even for those brands that it claims to be safe:

Store hand sanitizer out of the reach of pets and children, and children should use it only with adult supervision. Do not drink hand sanitizer. This is particularly important for young children, especially toddlers, who may be attracted by the pleasant smell or brightly colored bottles of hand sanitizer.

Drinking even a small amount of hand sanitizer can cause alcohol poisoning in children. (However, there is no need to be concerned if your children eat with or lick their hands after using hand sanitizer.) During this coronavirus pandemic, poison control centers have had an increase in calls about accidental ingestion of hand sanitizer, so it is important that adults monitor young children's use.

Do not allow pets to swallow hand sanitizer. If you think your pet has eaten something potentially dangerous, call your veterinarian or a pet poison control center right away. Hand sanitizer is flammable and should be stored away from heat and flames. When using hand sanitizer, rub your hands until they feel completely dry before performing activities that may involve heat, sparks, static electricity, or open flames.

There you go, perfectly safe, then, and that's without even a mention of the toxins absorbed through the skin. Come on kids – sanitise your hands everywhere you go. It will save you from the 'virus'. Put all these elements together of the 'Covid' normal and see how much health and psychology is being cumulatively damaged, even devastated, to 'protect your health'. Makes sense, right? They are only imposing these things because they care, right? *Right?*

Submitting to insanity

Psychological reframing of the population goes very deep and is done in many less obvious ways. I hear people say how contradictory and crazy 'Covid' rules are and how they are ever changing. This is explained away by dismissing those involved as idiots. It is a big mistake. The Cult is delighted if its cold calculation is perceived as incompetence and idiocy when it is anything but. Oh, yes, there are idiots within the system – lots of them – but they are *administering* the Cult agenda, mostly unknowingly. They are not deciding and dictating it. The bulwark against tyranny is self-

respect, always has been, always will be. It is self-respect that has broken every tyranny in history. By its very nature self-respect will not bow to oppression and its perpetrators. There is so little self-respect that it's always the few that overturn dictators. Many may eventually follow, but the few with the iron spines (self-respect) kick it off and generate the momentum. The Cult targets self-respect in the knowledge that once this has gone only submission remains. Crazy, contradictory, ever-changing 'Covid' rules are systematically applied by psychologists to delete self-respect. They *want* you to see that the rules make no sense. It is one thing to decide to do something when *you* have made the choice based on evidence and logic. You still retain your self-respect. It is quite another when you can see what you are being told to do is insane, ridiculous and makes no sense, and *yet you still do it*. Your self-respect is extinguished and this has been happening as ever more obviously stupid and nonsensical things have been demanded and the great majority have complied even when they can see they are stupid and nonsensical.

People walk around in face-nappies knowing they are damaging their health and make no difference to a 'virus'. They do it in fear of not doing it. I know it's daft, but I'll do it anyway. When that happens something dies inside of you and submissive reframing has begun. Next there's a need to hide from yourself that you have conceded your self-respect and you convince yourself that you have not really submitted to fear and intimidation. You begin to believe that you are complying with craziness because it's the right thing to do. When first you concede your self-respect of $2+2 = 4$ to $2+2 = 5$ you *know* you are compromising your self-respect. Gradually to avoid facing that fact you begin to *believe* that $2+2=5$. You have been reframed and I have been watching this process happening in the human psyche on an industrial scale. The Cult is working to break your spirit and one of its major tools in that war is humiliation. I read how former American soldier Bradley Manning (later Chelsea Manning after a sex-change) was treated after being jailed for supplying WikiLeaks with documents exposing the enormity of

government and elite mendacity. Manning was isolated in solitary confinement for eight months, put under 24-hour surveillance, forced to hand over clothing before going to bed, and stand naked for every roll call. This is systematic humiliation. The introduction of anal swab 'Covid' tests in China has been done for the same reason to delete self-respect and induce compliant submission. Anal swabs are mandatory for incoming passengers in parts of China and American diplomats have said they were forced to undergo the indignity which would have been calculated humiliation by the Cult-owned Chinese government that has America in its sights.

Government-people: An abusive relationship

Spirit-breaking psychological techniques include giving people hope and apparent respite from tyranny only to take it away again. This happened in the UK during Christmas, 2020, when the psycho-psychologists and their political lackeys announced an easing of restrictions over the holiday only to reimpose them almost immediately on the basis of yet another lie. There is a big psychological difference between getting used to oppression and being given hope of relief only to have that dashed. Psychologists know this and we have seen the technique used repeatedly. Then there is traumatising people before you introduce more extreme regulations that require compliance. A perfect case was the announcement by the dark and sinister Whitty and Vallance in the UK that 'new data' predicted that 4,000 could die every day over the winter of 2020/2021 if we did not lockdown again. I think they call it lying and after traumatising people with that claim out came Jackboot Johnson the next day with new curbs on human freedom. Psychologists know that a frightened and traumatised mind becomes suggestable to submission and behaviour reframing. Underpinning all this has been to make people fearful and suspicious of each other and see themselves as a potential danger to others. In league with deleted self-respect you have the perfect psychological recipe for self-loathing. The relationship between authority and public is now demonstrably the same as that of

subservience to an abusive partner. These are signs of an abusive relationship explained by psychologist Leslie Becker-Phelps:

Psychological and emotional abuse: Undermining a partner's self-worth with verbal attacks, name-calling, and belittling. Humiliating the partner in public, unjustly accusing them of having an affair, or interrogating them about their every behavior. Keeping partner confused or off balance by saying they were just kidding or blaming the partner for 'making' them act this way ... Feigning in public that they care while turning against them in private. This leads to victims frequently feeling confused, incompetent, unworthy, hopeless, and chronically self-doubting. [Apply these techniques to how governments have treated the population since New Year, 2020, and the parallels are obvious.]

Physical abuse: The abuser might physically harm their partner in a range of ways, such as grabbing, hitting, punching, or shoving them. They might throw objects at them or harm them with a weapon. [Observe the physical harm imposed by masks, lockdown, and so on.]

Threats and intimidation: One way abusers keep their partners in line is by instilling fear. They might be verbally threatening, or give threatening looks or gestures. Abusers often make it known that they are tracking their partner's every move. They might destroy their partner's possessions, threaten to harm them, or threaten to harm their family members. Not surprisingly, victims of this abuse often feel anxiety, fear, and panic. [No words necessary.]

Isolation: Abusers often limit their partner's activities, forbidding them to talk or interact with friends or family. They might limit access to a car or even turn off their phone. All of this might be done by physically holding them against their will, but is often accomplished through psychological abuse and intimidation. The more isolated a person feels, the fewer resources they have to help gain perspective on their situation and to escape from it. [No words necessary.]

Economic abuse: Abusers often make their partners beholden to them for money by controlling access to funds of any kind. They might prevent their partner from getting a job or withhold access to money they earn from a job. This creates financial dependency that makes leaving the relationship very difficult. [See destruction of livelihoods and the proposed meagre 'guaranteed income' so long as you do whatever you are told.]

Using children: An abuser might disparage their partner's parenting skills, tell their children lies about their partner, threaten to take custody of their children, or threaten to harm their children. These tactics instil fear and often elicit compliance. [See reframed social service mafia and how children are being mercilessly abused by the state over 'Covid' while their parents look on too frightened to do anything.]

A further recurring trait in an abusive relationship is the abused blaming themselves for their abuse and making excuses for the abuser. We have the public blaming each other for lockdown abuse by government and many making excuses for the government while attacking those who challenge the government. How often we have heard authorities say that rules are being imposed or reimposed only because people have refused to 'behave' and follow the rules. We don't want to do it – it's *you*.

Renegade Minds are an antidote to all of these things. They will never concede their self-respect no matter what the circumstances. Even when apparent humiliation is heaped upon them they laugh in its face and reflect back the humiliation on the abuser where it belongs. Renegade Minds will never wear masks they know are only imposed to humiliate, suppress and damage both physically and psychologically. Consequences will take care of themselves and they will never break their spirit or cause them to concede to tyranny. UK newspaper columnist Peter Hitchens was one of the few in the mainstream media to speak out against lockdowns and forced vaccinations. He then announced he had taken the jab. He wanted to see family members abroad and he believed vaccine passports were inevitable even though they had not yet been introduced. Hitchens

has a questioning and critical mind, but not a Renegade one. If he had no amount of pressure would have made him concede. Hitchens excused his action by saying that the battle has been lost. Renegade Minds never accept defeat when freedom is at stake and even if they are the last one standing the self-respect of not submitting to tyranny is more important than any outcome or any consequence.

That's why Renegade Minds are the only minds that ever changed anything worth changing.

CHAPTER EIGHT

'Reframing' insanity

Insanity is relative. It depends on who has who locked in what cage
Ray Bradbury

Reframing' a mind means simply to change its perception and behaviour. This can be done subconsciously to such an extent that subjects have no idea they have been 'reframed' while to any observer changes in behaviour and attitudes are obvious.

Human society is being reframed on a ginormous scale since the start of 2020 and here we have the reason why psychologists rather than doctors have been calling the shots. Ask most people who have succumbed to 'Covid' reframing if they have changed and most will say 'no'; but they *have* and fundamentally. The Cult's long-game has been preparing for these times since way back and crucial to that has been to prepare both population and officialdom mentally and emotionally. To use the mind-control parlance they had to reframe the population with a mentality that would submit to fascism and reframe those in government and law enforcement to impose fascism or at least go along with it. The result has been the fact-deleted mindlessness of 'Wokeness' and officialdom that has either enthusiastically or unquestioningly imposed global tyranny demanded by reframed politicians on behalf of psychopathic and deeply evil cultists. 'Cognitive reframing' identifies and challenges the way someone sees the world in the form of situations, experiences and emotions and then restructures those perceptions to view the same set of circumstances in a different way. This can have

benefits if the attitudes are personally destructive while on the other side it has the potential for individual and collective mind control which the subject has no idea has even happened.

Cognitive therapy was developed in the 1960s by Aaron T. Beck who was born in Rhode Island in 1921 as the son of Jewish immigrants from the Ukraine. He became interested in the techniques as a treatment for depression. Beck's daughter Judith S. Beck is prominent in the same field and they founded the Beck Institute for Cognitive Behavior Therapy in Philadelphia in 1994. Cognitive reframing, however, began to be used worldwide by those with a very dark agenda. The Cult reframes politicians to change their attitudes and actions until they are completely at odds with what they once appeared to stand for. The same has been happening to government administrators at all levels, law enforcement, military and the human population. Cultists love mind control for two main reasons: It allows them to control what people think, do and say to secure agenda advancement and, by definition, it calms their legendary insecurity and fear of the unexpected. I have studied mind control since the time I travelled America in 1996. I may have been talking to next to no one in terms of an audience in those years, but my goodness did I gather a phenomenal amount of information and knowledge about so many things including the techniques of mind control. I have described this in detail in other books going back to *The Biggest Secret* in 1998. I met a very large number of people recovering from MKUltra and its offshoots and successors and I began to see how these same techniques were being used on the population in general. This was never more obvious than since the 'Covid' hoax began.

Reframing the enforcers

I have observed over the last two decades and more the very clear transformation in the dynamic between the police, officialdom and the public. I tracked this in the books as the relationship mutated from one of serving the public to seeing them as almost the enemy and certainly a lower caste. There has always been a class divide

based on income and always been some psychopathic, corrupt, and big-I-am police officers. This was different. Wholesale change was unfolding in the collective dynamic; it was less about money and far more about position and perceived power. An us-and-them was emerging. Noses were lifted skyward by government administration and law enforcement and their attitude to the public they were *supposed* to be serving changed to one of increasing contempt, superiority and control. The transformation was so clear and widespread that it had to be planned. Collective attitudes and dynamics do not change naturally and organically that quickly on that scale. I then came across an organisation in Britain called Common Purpose created in the late 1980s by Julia Middleton who would work in the office of Deputy Prime Minister John Prescott during the long and disastrous premiership of war criminal Tony Blair. When Blair speaks the Cult is speaking and the man should have been in jail a long time ago. Common Purpose proclaims itself to be one of the biggest 'leadership development' organisations in the world while functioning as a *charity* with all the financial benefits which come from that. It hosts 'leadership development' courses and programmes all over the world and claims to have 'brought together' what it calls 'leaders' from more than 100 countries on six continents. The modus operandi of Common Purpose can be compared with the work of the UK government's reframing network that includes the Behavioural Insights Team 'nudge unit' and 'Covid' reframing specialists at SPI-B. WikiLeaks described Common Purpose long ago as 'a hidden virus in our government and schools' which is unknown to the general public: 'It recruits and trains "leaders" to be loyal to the directives of Common Purpose and the EU, instead of to their own departments, which they then undermine or subvert, the NHS [National Health Service] being an example.' This is a vital point to understand the 'Covid' hoax. The NHS, and its equivalent around the world, has been utterly reframed in terms of administrators and much of the medical personnel with the transformation underpinned by recruitment policies. The outcome has been the criminal and psychopathic behaviour of the

NHS over 'Covid' and we have seen the same in every other major country. WikiLeaks said Common Purpose trainees are 'learning to rule without regard to democracy' and to usher in a police state (current events explained). Common Purpose operated like a 'glue' and had members in the NHS, BBC, police, legal profession, church, many of Britain's 7,000 quangos, local councils, the Civil Service, government ministries and Parliament, and controlled many RDA's (Regional Development Agencies). Here we have one answer for how and why British institutions and their like in other countries have changed so negatively in relation to the public. This further explains how and why the beyond-disgraceful reframed BBC has become a propaganda arm of 'Covid' fascism. They are all part of a network pursuing the same goal.

By 2019 Common Purpose was quoting a figure of 85,000 'leaders' that had attended its programmes. These 'students' of all ages are known as Common Purpose 'graduates' and they consist of government, state and local government officials and administrators, police chiefs and officers, and a whole range of others operating within the national, local and global establishment. Cressida Dick, Commissioner of the London Metropolitan Police, is the Common Purpose graduate who was the 'Gold Commander' that oversaw what can only be described as the murder of Brazilian electrician Jean Charles de Menezes in 2005. He was held down by psychopathic police and shot seven times in the head by a psychopathic lunatic after being mistaken for a terrorist when he was just a bloke going about his day. Dick authorised officers to pursue and keep surveillance on de Menezes and ordered that he be stopped from entering the underground train system. Police psychopaths took her at her word clearly. She was 'disciplined' for this outrage by being *promoted* – eventually to the top of the 'Met' police where she has been a disaster. Many Chief Constables controlling the police in different parts of the UK are and have been Common Purpose graduates. I have heard the 'graduate' network described as a sort of Mafia or secret society operating within the fabric of government at all levels pursuing a collective policy

ingrained at Common Purpose training events. Founder Julia Middleton herself has said:

Locally and internationally, Common Purpose graduates will be 'lighting small fires' to create change in their organisations and communities ... The Common Purpose effect is best illustrated by the many stories of small changes brought about by leaders, who themselves have changed.

A Common Purpose mission statement declared:

Common Purpose aims to improve the way society works by expanding the vision, decision-making ability and influence of all kinds of leaders. The organisation runs a variety of educational programmes for leaders of all ages, backgrounds and sectors, in order to provide them with the inspirational, information and opportunities they need to change the world.

Yes, but into what? Since 2020 the answer has become clear.

NLP and the Delphi technique

Common Purpose would seem to be a perfect name or would common programming be better? One of the foundation methods of reaching 'consensus' (group think) is by setting the agenda theme and then encouraging, cajoling or pressuring everyone to agree a 'consensus' in line with the core theme promoted by Common Purpose. The methodology involves the 'Delphi technique', or an adaption of it, in which opinions are expressed that are summarised by a 'facilitator or change agent' at each stage. Participants are 'encouraged' to modify their views in the light of what others have said. Stage by stage the former individual opinions are merged into group consensus which just happens to be what Common Purpose wants them to believe. A key part of this is to marginalise anyone refusing to concede to group think and turn the group against them to apply pressure to conform. We are seeing this very technique used on the general population to make 'Covid' group-thinkers hostile to those who have seen through the bullshit. People can be reframed by using perception manipulation methods such as Neuro-Linguistic Programming (NLP) in which you change perception with the use of

carefully constructed language. An NLP website described the technique this way:

... A method of influencing brain behaviour (the 'neuro' part of the phrase) through the use of language (the 'linguistic' part) and other types of communication to enable a person to 'recode' the way the brain responds to stimuli (that's the 'programming') and manifest new and better behaviours. Neuro-Linguistic Programming often incorporates hypnosis and self-hypnosis to help achieve the change (or 'programming') that is wanted.

British alternative media operation UKColumn has done very detailed research into Common Purpose over a long period. I quoted co-founder and former naval officer Brian Gerrish in my book *Remember Who You Are*, published in 2011, as saying the following years before current times:

It is interesting that many of the mothers who have had children taken by the State speak of the Social Services people being icily cool, emotionless and, as two ladies said in slightly different words, '... like little robots'. We know that NLP is cumulative, so people can be given small imperceptible doses of NLP in a course here, another in a few months, next year etc. In this way, major changes are accrued in their personality, but the day by day change is almost unnoticeable.

In these and other ways 'graduates' have had their perceptions uniformly reframed and they return to their roles in the institutions of government, law enforcement, legal profession, military, 'education', the UK National Health Service and the whole swathe of the establishment structure to pursue a common agenda preparing for the 'post-industrial', 'post-democratic' society. I say 'preparing' but we are now there. 'Post-industrial' is code for the Great Reset and 'post-democratic' is 'Covid' fascism. UKColumn has spoken to partners of those who have attended Common Purpose 'training'. They have described how personalities and attitudes of 'graduates' changed very noticeably for the worse by the time they had completed the course. They had been 'reframed' and told they are the 'leaders' – the special ones – who know better than the population. There has also been the very demonstrable recruitment of psychopaths and narcissists into government administration at all

levels and law enforcement. If you want psychopathy hire psychopaths and you get a simple cause and effect. If you want administrators, police officers and 'leaders' to perceive the public as lesser beings who don't matter then employ narcissists. These personalities are identified using 'psychometrics' that identifies knowledge, abilities, attitudes and personality traits, mostly through carefully-designed questionnaires and tests. As this policy has passed through the decades we have had power-crazy, power-trippers appointed into law enforcement, security and government administration in preparation for current times and the dynamic between public and law enforcement/officialdom has been transformed. UKColumn's Brian Gerrish said of the narcissistic personality:

Their love of themselves and power automatically means that they will crush others who get in their way. I received a major piece of the puzzle when a friend pointed out that when they made public officials re-apply for their own jobs several years ago they were also required to do psychometric tests. This was undoubtedly the start of the screening process to get 'their' sort of people in post.

How obvious that has been since 2020 although it was clear what was happening long before if people paid attention to the changing public-establishment dynamic.

Change agents

At the centre of events in 'Covid' Britain is the National Health Service (NHS) which has behaved disgracefully in slavishly following the Cult agenda. The NHS management structure is awash with Common Purpose graduates or 'change agents' working to a common cause. Helen Bevan, a Chief of Service Transformation at the NHS Institute for Innovation and Improvement, co-authored a document called 'Towards a million change agents, a review of the social movements literature: implications for large scale change in the NHS'. The document compared a project management approach to that of change and social movements where 'people change

themselves and each other – peer to peer’. Two definitions given for a ‘social movement’ were:

A group of people who consciously attempt to build a radically new social order; involves people of a broad range of social backgrounds; and deploys politically confrontational and socially disruptive tactics – Cyrus Zirakzadeh 1997

Collective challenges, based on common purposes and social solidarities, in sustained interaction with elites, opponents, and authorities – Sidney Tarrow 1994

Helen Bevan wrote another NHS document in which she defined ‘framing’ as ‘the process by which leaders construct, articulate and put across their message in a powerful and compelling way in order to win people to their cause and call them to action’. I think I could come up with another definition that would be rather more accurate. The National Health Service and institutions of Britain and the wider world have been taken over by reframed ‘change agents’ and that includes everything from the United Nations to national governments, local councils and social services which have been kidnapping children from loving parents on an extraordinary and gathering scale on the road to the end of parenthood altogether. Children from loving homes are stolen and kidnapped by the state and put into the ‘care’ (inversion) of the local authority through council homes, foster parents and forced adoption. At the same time children are allowed to be abused without response while many are under council ‘care’. UKColumn highlighted the Common Purpose connection between South Yorkshire Police and Rotherham council officers in the case of the scandal in that area of the sexual exploitation of children to which the authorities turned not one blind eye, but both:

We were alarmed to discover that the Chief Executive, the Strategic Director of Children and Young People's Services, the Manager for the Local Strategic Partnership, the Community Cohesion Manager, the Cabinet Member for Cohesion, the Chief Constable and his predecessor had all attended Leadership training courses provided by the pseudo-charity Common Purpose.

Once 'change agents' have secured positions of hire and fire within any organisation things start to move very quickly. Personnel are then hired and fired on the basis of whether they will work towards the agenda the change agent represents. If they do they are rapidly promoted even though they may be incompetent. Those more qualified and skilled who are pre-Common Purpose 'old school' see their careers stall and even disappear. This has been happening for decades in every institution of state, police, 'health' and social services and all of them have been transformed as a result in their attitudes to their jobs and the public. Medical professions, including nursing, which were once vocations for the caring now employ many cold, callous and couldn't give a shit personality types. The UKColumn investigation concluded:

By blurring the boundaries between people, professions, public and private sectors, responsibility and accountability, Common Purpose encourages 'graduates' to believe that as new selected leaders, they can work together, outside of the established political and social structures, to achieve a paradigm shift or CHANGE – so called 'Leading Beyond Authority'. In doing so, the allegiance of the individual becomes 'reframed' on CP colleagues and their NETWORK.

Reframing the Face-Nappies

Nowhere has this process been more obvious than in the police where recruitment of psychopaths and development of unquestioning mind-controlled group-thinkers have transformed law enforcement into a politically-correct 'Woke' joke and a travesty of what should be public service. Today they wear their face-nappies like good little gofers and enforce 'Covid' rules which are fascism under another name. Alongside the specifically-recruited psychopaths we have software minds incapable of free thought. Brian Gerrish again:

An example is the policeman who would not get on a bike for a press photo because he had not done the cycling proficiency course. Normal people say this is political correctness gone mad. Nothing could be further from the truth. The policeman has been reframed, and in his reality it is perfect common sense not to get on the bike 'because he hasn't done the cycling course'.

Another example of this is where the police would not rescue a boy from a pond until they had taken advice from above on the 'risk assessment'. A normal person would have arrived, perhaps thought of the risk for a moment, and dived in. To the police now 'reframed', they followed 'normal' procedure.

There are shocking cases of reframed ambulance crews doing the same. Sheer unthinking stupidity of London Face-Nappies headed by Common Purpose graduate Cressida Dick can be seen in their behaviour at a vigil in March, 2021, for a murdered woman, Sarah Everard. A police officer had been charged with the crime. Anyone with a brain would have left the vigil alone in the circumstances. Instead they 'manhandled' women to stop them breaking 'Covid rules' to betray classic reframing. Minds in the thrall of perception control have no capacity for seeing a situation on its merits and acting accordingly. 'Rules is rules' is their only mind-set. My father used to say that rules and regulations are for the guidance of the intelligent and the blind obedience of the idiot. Most of the intelligent, decent, coppers have gone leaving only the other kind and a few old school for whom the job must be a daily nightmare. The combination of psychopaths and rule-book software minds has been clearly on public display in the 'Covid' era with automaton robots in uniform imposing fascistic 'Covid' regulations on the population without any personal initiative or judging situations on their merits. There are thousands of examples around the world, but I'll make my point with the infamous Derbyshire police in the English East Midlands – the ones who think pouring dye into beauty spots and using drones to track people walking in the countryside away from anyone is called 'policing'. To them there are rules decreed by the government which they have to enforce and in their bewildered state a group gathering in a closed space and someone walking alone in the countryside are the same thing. It is beyond idiocy and enters the realm of clinical insanity.

Police officers in Derbyshire said they were 'horrified' – *horrified* – to find 15 to 20 'irresponsible' kids playing a football match at a closed leisure centre 'in breach of coronavirus restrictions'. When they saw the police the kids ran away leaving their belongings behind and the reframed men and women of Derbyshire police were seeking to establish their identities with a view to fining their parents. The most natural thing for youngsters to do – kicking a ball about – is turned into a criminal activity and enforced by the moronic software programs of Derbyshire police. You find the same mentality in every country. These barely conscious 'horrified' officers said they had to take action because 'we need to ensure these rules are being followed' and 'it is of the utmost importance that you ensure your children are following the rules and regulations for Covid-19'. Had any of them done ten seconds of research to see if this parroting of their masters' script could be supported by any evidence? Nope. Reframed people don't think – others think for them and that's the whole idea of reframing. I have seen police officers one after the other repeating without question word for word what officialdom tells them just as I have seen great swathes of the public doing the same. Ask either for 'their' opinion and out spews what they have been told to think by the official narrative. Police and public may seem to be in different groups, but their mentality is the same. Most people do whatever they are told in fear not doing so or because they believe what officialdom tells them; almost the entirety of the police do what they are told for the same reason. Ultimately it's the tiny inner core of the global Cult that's telling both what to do.

So Derbyshire police were 'horrified'. Oh, really? Why did they think those kids were playing football? It was to relieve the psychological consequences of lockdown and being denied human contact with their friends and interaction, touch and discourse vital to human psychological health. Being denied this month after month has dismantled the psyche of many children and young people as depression and suicide have exploded. Were Derbyshire police *horrified by that*? Are you kidding? Reframed people don't have those

mental and emotional processes that can see how the impact on the psychological health of youngsters is far more dangerous than any 'virus' even if you take the mendacious official figures to be true. The reframed are told (programmed) how to act and so they do. The Derbyshire Chief Constable in the first period of lockdown when the black dye and drones nonsense was going on was Peter Goodman. He was the man who severed the connection between his force and the Derbyshire Constabulary *Male Voice* Choir when he decided that it was not inclusive enough to allow women to join. The fact it was a male voice choir making a particular sound produced by male voices seemed to elude a guy who terrifyingly ran policing in Derbyshire. He retired weeks after his force was condemned as disgraceful by former Supreme Court Justice Jonathan Sumption for their behaviour over extreme lockdown impositions. Goodman was replaced by his deputy Rachel Swann who was in charge when her officers were 'horrificed'. The police statement over the boys committing the hanging-offence of playing football included the line about the youngsters being 'irresponsible in the times we are all living through' missing the point that the real relevance of the 'times we are all living through' is the imposition of fascism enforced by psychopaths and reframed minds of police officers playing such a vital part in establishing the fascist tyranny that their own children and grandchildren will have to live in their entire lives. As a definition of insanity that is hard to beat although it might be run close by imposing masks on people that can have a serious effect on their health while wearing a face nappy all day themselves. Once again public and police do it for the same reason – the authorities tell them to and who are they to have the self-respect to say no?

Wokers in uniform

How reframed do you have to be to arrest a *six-year-old* and take him to court for *picking a flower* while waiting for a bus? Brain dead police and officialdom did just that in North Carolina where criminal proceedings happen regularly for children under nine. Attorney Julie Boyer gave the six-year-old crayons and a colouring book

during the 'flower' hearing while the 'adults' decided his fate. County Chief District Court Judge Jay Corpening asked: 'Should a child that believes in Santa Claus, the Easter Bunny and the tooth fairy be making life-altering decisions?' Well, of course not, but common sense has no meaning when you have a common purpose and a reframed mind. Treating children in this way, and police operating in American schools, is all part of the psychological preparation for children to accept a police state as normal all their adult lives. The same goes for all the cameras and biometric tracking technology in schools. Police training is focused on reframing them as snowflake Wokers and this is happening in the military. Pentagon top brass said that 'training sessions on extremism' were needed for troops who asked why they were so focused on the Capitol Building riot when Black Lives Matter riots were ignored. What's the difference between them some apparently and rightly asked. Actually, there is a difference. Five people died in the Capitol riot, only one through violence, and that was a police officer shooting an unarmed protestor. BLM riots killed at least 25 people and cost billions. Asking the question prompted the psychopaths and reframed minds that run the Pentagon to say that more 'education' (programming) was needed. Troop training is all based on psychological programming to make them fodder for the Cult – 'Military men are just dumb, stupid animals to be used as pawns in foreign policy' as Cult-to-his-DNA former Secretary of State Henry Kissinger famously said. Governments see the police in similar terms and it's time for those among them who can see this to defend the people and stop being enforcers of the Cult agenda upon the people.

The US military, like the country itself, is being targeted for destruction through a long list of Woke impositions. Cult-owned gaga 'President' Biden signed an executive order when he took office to allow taxpayer money to pay for transgender surgery for active military personnel and veterans. Are you a man soldier? No, I'm a LGBTQIA+ with a hint of Skoliosexual and Spectrasexual. Oh, good man. Bad choice of words you bigot. The Pentagon announced in March, 2021, the appointment of the first 'diversity and inclusion

officer' for US Special Forces. Richard Torres-Estrada arrived with the publication of a 'D&I Strategic Plan which will guide the enterprise-wide effort to institutionalize and sustain D&I'. If you think a Special Forces 'Strategic Plan' should have something to do with defending America you haven't been paying attention. Defending Woke is now the military's new role. Torres-Estrada has posted images comparing Donald Trump with Adolf Hitler and we can expect no bias from him as a representative of the supposedly non-political Pentagon. Cable news host Tucker Carlson said: 'The Pentagon is now the Yale faculty lounge but with cruise missiles.' Meanwhile Secretary of Defense Lloyd Austin, a board member of weapons-maker Raytheon with stock and compensation interests in October, 2020, worth \$1.4 million, said he was purging the military of the 'enemy within' – anyone who isn't Woke and supports Donald Trump. Austin refers to his targets as 'racist extremists' while in true Woke fashion being himself a racist extremist. Pentagon documents pledge to 'eradicate, eliminate and conquer all forms of racism, sexism and homophobia'. The definitions of these are decided by 'diversity and inclusion committees' peopled by those who see racism, sexism and homophobia in every situation and opinion. Woke (the Cult) is dismantling the US military and purging testosterone as China expands its military and gives its troops 'masculinity training'. How do we think that is going to end when this is all Cult coordinated? The US military, like the British military, is controlled by Woke and spineless top brass who just go along with it out of personal career interests.

'Woke' means fast asleep

Mind control and perception manipulation techniques used on individuals to create group-think have been unleashed on the global population in general. As a result many have no capacity to see the obvious fascist agenda being installed all around them or what 'Covid' is really all about. Their brains are firewalled like a computer system not to process certain concepts, thoughts and realisations that are bad for the Cult. The young are most targeted as the adults they

will be when the whole fascist global state is planned to be fully implemented. They need to be prepared for total compliance to eliminate all pushback from entire generations. The Cult has been pouring billions into taking complete control of 'education' from schools to universities via its operatives and corporations and not least Bill Gates as always. The plan has been to transform 'education' institutions into programming centres for the mentality of 'Woke'. James McConnell, professor of psychology at the University of Michigan, wrote in *Psychology Today* in 1970:

The day has come when we can combine sensory deprivation with drugs, hypnosis, and astute manipulation of reward and punishment, to gain almost absolute control over an individual's behaviour. It should then be possible to achieve a very rapid and highly effective type of brainwashing that would allow us to make dramatic changes in a person's behaviour and personality ...

... We should reshape society so that we all would be trained from birth to want to do what society wants us to do. We have the techniques to do it... no-one owns his own personality you acquired, and there's no reason to believe you should have the right to refuse to acquire a new personality if your old one is anti-social.

This was the potential for mass brainwashing in 1970 and the mentality there displayed captures the arrogant psychopathy that drives it forward. I emphasise that not all young people have succumbed to Woke programming and those that haven't are incredibly impressive people given that today's young are the most perceptually-targeted generations in history with all the technology now involved. Vast swathes of the young generations, however, have fallen into the spell – and that's what it is – of Woke. The Woke mentality and perceptual program is founded on *inversion* and you will appreciate later why that is so significant. Everything with Woke is inverted and the opposite of what it is claimed to be. Woke was a term used in African-American culture from the 1900s and referred to an awareness of social and racial justice. This is not the meaning of the modern version or 'New Woke' as I call it in *The Answer*. Oh, no, Woke today means something very different no matter how much Wokers may seek to hide that and insist Old Woke and New

Woke are the same. See if you find any 'awareness of social justice' here in the modern variety:

- Woke demands 'inclusivity' while excluding anyone with a different opinion and calls for mass censorship to silence other views.
- Woke claims to stand against oppression when imposing oppression is the foundation of all that it does. It is the driver of political correctness which is nothing more than a Cult invention to manipulate the population to silence itself.
- Woke believes itself to be 'liberal' while pursuing a global society that can only be described as fascist (see 'anti-fascist' fascist Antifa).
- Woke calls for 'social justice' while spreading injustice wherever it goes against the common 'enemy' which can be easily identified as a differing view.
- Woke is supposed to be a metaphor for 'awake' when it is solid-gold asleep and deep in a Cult-induced coma that meets the criteria for 'off with the fairies'.

I state these points as obvious facts if people only care to look. I don't do this with a sense of condemnation. We need to appreciate that the onslaught of perceptual programming on the young has been incessant and merciless. I can understand why so many have been reframed, or, given their youth, framed from the start to see the world as the Cult demands. The Cult has had access to their minds day after day in its 'education' system for their entire formative years. Perception is formed from information received and the Cult-created system is a life-long download of information delivered to elicit a particular perception, thus behaviour. The more this has expanded into still new extremes in recent decades and ever-increasing censorship has deleted other opinions and information why wouldn't that lead to a perceptual reframing on a mass scale? I

have described already cradle-to-grave programming and in more recent times the targeting of young minds from birth to adulthood has entered the stratosphere. This has taken the form of skewing what is 'taught' to fit the Cult agenda and the omnipresent techniques of group-think to isolate non-believers and pressure them into line. There has always been a tendency to follow the herd, but we really are in a new world now in relation to that. We have parents who can see the 'Covid' hoax told by their children not to stop them wearing masks at school, being 'Covid' tested or having the 'vaccine' in fear of the peer-pressure consequences of being different. What is 'peer-pressure' if not pressure to conform to group-think? Renegade Minds never group-think and always retain a set of perceptions that are unique to them. Group-think is always underpinned by consequences for not group-thinking. Abuse now aimed at those refusing DNA-manipulating 'Covid vaccines' are a potent example of this. The biggest pressure to conform comes from the very group which is itself being manipulated. 'I am programmed to be part of a hive mind and so you must be.'

Woke control structures in 'education' now apply to every mainstream organisation. Those at the top of the 'education' hierarchy (the Cult) decide the policy. This is imposed on governments through the Cult network; governments impose it on schools, colleges and universities; their leadership impose the policy on teachers and academics and they impose it on children and students. At any level where there is resistance, perhaps from a teacher or university lecturer, they are targeted by the authorities and often fired. Students themselves regularly demand the dismissal of academics (increasingly few) at odds with the narrative that the students have been programmed to believe in. It is quite a thought that students who are being targeted by the Cult become so consumed by programmed group-think that they launch protests and demand the removal of those who are trying to push back against those targeting the students. Such is the scale of perceptual inversion. We see this with 'Covid' programming as the Cult imposes the rules via psycho-psychologists and governments on

shops, transport companies and businesses which impose them on their staff who impose them on their customers who pressure Pushbackers to conform to the will of the Cult which is in the process of destroying them and their families. Scan all aspects of society and you will see the same sequence every time.

Fact free Woke and hijacking the 'left'

There is no more potent example of this than 'Woke', a mentality only made possible by the deletion of factual evidence by an 'education' system seeking to produce an ever more uniform society. Why would you bother with facts when you don't know any? Deletion of credible history both in volume and type is highly relevant. Orwell said: 'Who controls the past controls the future: who controls the present controls the past.' They who control the perception of the past control the perception of the future and they who control the present control the perception of the past through the writing and deleting of history. Why would you oppose the imposition of Marxism in the name of Wokeism when you don't know that Marxism cost at least 100 million lives in the 20th century alone? Watch videos and read reports in which Woker generations are asked basic historical questions – it's mind-blowing. A survey of 2,000 people found that six percent of millennials (born approximately early 1980s to early 2000s) believed the Second World War (1939-1945) broke out with the assassination of President Kennedy (in 1963) and one in ten thought Margaret Thatcher was British Prime Minister at the time. She was in office between 1979 and 1990. We are in a post-fact society. Provable facts are no defence against the fascism of political correctness or Silicon Valley censorship. Facts don't matter anymore as we have witnessed with the 'Covid' hoax. Sacrificing uniqueness to the Woke group-think religion is all you are required to do and that means thinking for yourself is the biggest Woke no, no. All religions are an expression of group-think and censorship and Woke is just another religion with an orthodoxy defended by group-think and censorship. Burned at

the stake becomes burned on Twitter which leads back eventually to burned at the stake as Woke humanity regresses to ages past.

The biggest Woke inversion of all is its creators and funders. I grew up in a traditional left of centre political household on a council estate in Leicester in the 1950s and 60s – you know, the left that challenged the power of wealth-hoarding elites and threats to freedom of speech and opinion. In those days students went on marches defending freedom of speech while today's Wokers march for its deletion. What on earth could have happened? Those very elites (collectively the Cult) that we opposed in my youth and early life have funded into existence the antithesis of that former left and hijacked the 'brand' while inverting everything it ever stood for. We have a mentality that calls itself 'liberal' and 'progressive' while acting like fascists. Cult billionaires and their corporations have funded themselves into control of 'education' to ensure that Woke programming is unceasing throughout the formative years of children and young people and that non-Wokers are isolated (that word again) whether they be students, teachers or college professors. The Cult has funded into existence the now colossal global network of Woke organisations that have spawned and promoted all the 'causes' on the Cult wish-list for global transformation and turned Wokers into demanders of them. Does anyone really think it's a coincidence that the Cult agenda for humanity is a carbon (sorry) copy of the societal transformations desired by Woke?? These are only some of them:

Political correctness: The means by which the Cult deletes all public debates that it knows it cannot win if we had the free-flow of information and evidence.

Human-caused 'climate change': The means by which the Cult seeks to transform society into a globally-controlled dictatorship imposing its will over the fine detail of everyone's lives 'to save the planet' which doesn't actually need saving.

Transgender obsession: Preparing collective perception to accept the 'new human' which would not have genders because it would be created technologically and not through procreation. I'll have much more on this in Human 2.0.

Race obsession: The means by which the Cult seeks to divide and rule the population by triggering racial division through the perception that society is more racist than ever when the opposite is the case. Is it perfect in that regard? No. But to compare today with the racism of apartheid and segregation brought to an end by the civil rights movement in the 1960s is to insult the memory of that movement and inspirations like Martin Luther King. Why is the 'anti-racism' industry (which it is) so dominated by privileged white people?

White supremacy: This is a label used by privileged white people to demonise poor and deprived white people pushing back on tyranny to marginalise and destroy them. White people are being especially targeted as the dominant race by number within Western society which the Cult seeks to transform in its image. If you want to change a society you must weaken and undermine its biggest group and once you have done that by using the other groups you next turn on them to do the same ... 'Then they came for the Jews and I was not a Jew so I did nothing.'

Mass migration: The mass movement of people from the Middle East, Africa and Asia into Europe, from the south into the United States and from Asia into Australia are another way the Cult seeks to dilute the racial, cultural and political influence of white people on Western society. White people ask why their governments appear to be working against them while being politically and culturally biased towards incoming cultures. Well, here's your answer. In the same way sexually 'straight' people, men and women, ask why the

authorities are biased against them in favour of other sexualities. The answer is the same – that's the way the Cult wants it to be for very sinister motives.

These are all central parts of the Cult agenda and central parts of the Woke agenda and Woke was created and continues to be funded to an immense degree by Cult billionaires and corporations. If anyone begins to say 'coincidence' the syllables should stick in their throat.

Billionaire 'social justice warriors'

Joe Biden is a 100 percent-owned asset of the Cult and the Wokers' man in the White House whenever he can remember his name and for however long he lasts with his rapidly diminishing cognitive function. Even walking up the steps of an aircraft without falling on his arse would appear to be a challenge. He's not an empty-shell puppet or anything. From the minute Biden took office (or the Cult did) he began his executive orders promoting the Woke wish-list. You will see the Woke agenda imposed ever more severely because it's really the *Cult* agenda. Woke organisations and activist networks spawned by the Cult are funded to the extreme so long as they promote what the Cult wants to happen. Woke is funded to promote 'social justice' by billionaires who become billionaires by destroying social justice. The social justice mantra is only a cover for dismantling social justice and funded by billionaires that couldn't give a damn about social justice. Everything makes sense when you see that. One of Woke's premier funders is Cult billionaire financier George Soros who said: 'I am basically there to make money, I cannot and do not look at the social consequences of what I do.' This is the same Soros who has given more than \$32 billion to his Open Society Foundations global Woke network and funded Black Lives Matter, mass immigration into Europe and the United States, transgender activism, climate change activism, political correctness and groups targeting 'white supremacy' in the form of privileged white thugs that dominate Antifa. What a scam it all is and when

you are dealing with the unquestioning fact-free zone of Woke scamming them is child's play. All you need to pull it off in all these organisations are a few in-the-know agents of the Cult and an army of naïve, reframed, uninformed, narcissistic, know-nothings convinced of their own self-righteousness, self-purity and virtue.

Soros and fellow billionaires and billionaire corporations have poured hundreds of millions into Black Lives Matter and connected groups and promoted them to a global audience. None of this is motivated by caring about black people. These are the billionaires that have controlled and exploited a system that leaves millions of black people in abject poverty and deprivation which they do absolutely nothing to address. The same Cult networks funding BLM were behind the *slave trade*! Black Lives Matter hijacked a phrase that few would challenge and they have turned this laudable concept into a political weapon to divide society. You know that BLM is a fraud when it claims that *All Lives Matter*, the most inclusive statement of all, is 'racist'. BLM and its Cult masters don't want to end racism. To them it's a means to an end to control all of humanity never mind the colour, creed, culture or background. What has destroying the nuclear family got to do with ending racism? Nothing – but that is one of the goals of BLM and also happens to be a goal of the Cult as I have been exposing in my books for decades. Stealing children from loving parents and giving schools ever more power to override parents is part of that same agenda. BLM is a Marxist organisation and why would that not be the case when the Cult created Marxism *and* BLM? Patrisse Cullors, a BLM co-founder, said in a 2015 video that she and her fellow organisers, including co-founder Alicia Garza, are 'trained Marxists'. The lady known after marriage as Patrisse Khan-Cullors bought a \$1.4 million home in 2021 in one of the whitest areas of California with a black population of just 1.6 per cent and has so far bought *four* high-end homes for a total of \$3.2 million. How very Marxist. There must be a bit of spare in the BLM coffers, however, when Cult corporations and billionaires have handed over the best part of \$100 million. Many black people can see that Black Lives Matter is not

working for them, but against them, and this is still more confirmation. Black journalist Jason Whitlock, who had his account suspended by Twitter for simply linking to the story about the 'Marxist's' home buying spree, said that BLM leaders are 'making millions of dollars off the backs of these dead black men who they wouldn't spit on if they were on fire and alive'.

Black Lies Matter

Cult assets and agencies came together to promote BLM in the wake of the death of career criminal George Floyd who had been jailed a number of times including for forcing his way into the home of a black woman with others in a raid in which a gun was pointed at her stomach. Floyd was filmed being held in a Minneapolis street in 2020 with the knee of a police officer on his neck and he subsequently died. It was an appalling thing for the officer to do, but the same technique has been used by police on peaceful protestors of lockdown without any outcry from the Woke brigade. As unquestioning supporters of the Cult agenda Wokers have supported lockdown and all the 'Covid' claptrap while attacking anyone standing up to the tyranny imposed in its name. Court documents would later include details of an autopsy on Floyd by County Medical Examiner Dr Andrew Baker who concluded that Floyd had taken a fatal level of the drug fentanyl. None of this mattered to fact-free, question-free, Woke. Floyd's death was followed by worldwide protests against police brutality amid calls to defund the police. Throwing babies out with the bathwater is a Woke speciality. In the wake of the murder of British woman Sarah Everard a Green Party member of the House of Lords, Baroness Jones of Moulsecoomb (Nincompoopia would have been better), called for a 6pm curfew for all men. This would be in breach of the Geneva Conventions on war crimes which ban collective punishment, but that would never have crossed the black and white Woke mind of Baroness Nincompoopia who would have been far too convinced of her own self-righteousness to compute such details. Many American cities did defund the police in the face of Floyd riots

and after \$15 million was deleted from the police budget in Washington DC under useless Woke mayor Muriel Bowser car-jacking alone rose by 300 percent and within six months the US capital recorded its highest murder rate in 15 years. The same happened in Chicago and other cities in line with the Cult/Soros plan to bring fear to streets and neighbourhoods by reducing the police, releasing violent criminals and not prosecuting crime. This is the mob-rule agenda that I have warned in the books was coming for so long. Shootings in the area of Minneapolis where Floyd was arrested increased by 2,500 percent compared with the year before. Defunding the police over George Floyd has led to a big increase in dead people with many of them black. Police protection for politicians making these decisions stayed the same or increased as you would expect from professional hypocrites. The Cult doesn't actually want to abolish the police. It wants to abolish local control over the police and hand it to federal government as the psychopaths advance the Hunger Games Society. Many George Floyd protests turned into violent riots with black stores and businesses destroyed by fire and looting across America fuelled by Black Lives Matter. Woke doesn't do irony. If you want civil rights you must loot the liquor store and the supermarket and make off with a smart TV. It's the only way.

It's not a race war – it's a class war

Black people are patronised by privileged blacks and whites alike and told they are victims of white supremacy. I find it extraordinary to watch privileged blacks supporting the very system and bloodline networks behind the slave trade and parroting the same Cult-serving manipulative crap of their privileged white, often billionaire, associates. It is indeed not a race war but a class war and colour is just a diversion. Black Senator Cory Booker and black Congresswoman Maxine Waters, more residents of Nincompoopia, personify this. Once you tell people they are victims of someone else you devalue both their own responsibility for their plight and the power they have to impact on their reality and experience. Instead

we have: 'You are only in your situation because of whiteness – turn on them and everything will change.' It won't change. Nothing changes in our lives unless *we* change it. Crucial to that is never seeing yourself as a victim and always as the creator of your reality. Life is a simple sequence of choice and consequence. Make different choices and you create different consequences. *You* have to make those choices – not Black Lives Matter, the Woke Mafia and anyone else that seeks to dictate your life. Who are they these Wokers, an emotional and psychological road traffic accident, to tell you what to do? Personal empowerment is the last thing the Cult and its Black Lives Matter want black people or anyone else to have. They claim to be defending the underdog while *creating* and perpetuating the underdog. The Cult's worst nightmare is human unity and if they are going to keep blacks, whites and every other race under economic servitude and control then the focus must be diverted from what they have in common to what they can be manipulated to believe divides them. Blacks have to be told that their poverty and plight is the fault of the white bloke living on the street in the same poverty and with the same plight they are experiencing. The difference is that your plight black people is due to him, a white supremacist with 'white privilege' living on the street. Don't unite as one human family against your mutual oppressors and suppressors – fight the oppressor with the white face who is as financially deprived as you are. The Cult knows that as its 'Covid' agenda moves into still new levels of extremism people are going to respond and it has been spreading the seeds of disunity everywhere to stop a united response to the evil that targets *all of us*.

Racist attacks on 'whiteness' are getting ever more outrageous and especially through the American Democratic Party which has an appalling history for anti-black racism. Barack Obama, Joe Biden, Hillary Clinton and Nancy Pelosi all eulogised about Senator Robert Byrd at his funeral in 2010 after a nearly 60-year career in Congress. Byrd was a brutal Ku Klux Klan racist and a violent abuser of Cathy O'Brien in MKUltra. He said he would never fight in the military 'with a negro by my side' and 'rather I should die a thousand times,

and see Old Glory trampled in the dirt never to rise again, than to see this beloved land of ours become degraded by race mongrels, a throwback to the blackest specimen from the wilds'. Biden called Byrd a 'very close friend and mentor'. These 'Woke' hypocrites are not anti-racist they are anti-poor and anti-people not of their perceived class. Here is an illustration of the scale of anti-white racism to which we have now descended. Seriously Woke and moronic *New York Times* contributor Damon Young described whiteness as a 'virus' that 'like other viruses will not die until there are no bodies left for it to infect'. He went on: '... the only way to stop it is to locate it, isolate it, extract it, and kill it.' Young can say that as a black man with no consequences when a white man saying the same in reverse would be facing a jail sentence. *That's* racism. We had super-Woke numbskull senators Tammy Duckworth and Mazie Hirono saying they would object to future Biden Cabinet appointments if he did not nominate more Asian Americans and Pacific Islanders. Never mind the ability of the candidate what do they look like? Duckworth said: 'I will vote for racial minorities and I will vote for LGBTQ, but anyone else I'm not voting for.' Appointing people on the grounds of race is illegal, but that was not a problem for this ludicrous pair. They were on-message and that's a free pass in any situation.

Critical race racism

White children are told at school they are intrinsically racist as they are taught the divisive 'critical race theory'. This claims that the law and legal institutions are inherently racist and that race is a socially constructed concept used by white people to further their economic and political interests at the expense of people of colour. White is a 'virus' as we've seen. Racial inequality results from 'social, economic, and legal differences that white people create between races to maintain white interests which leads to poverty and criminality in minority communities'. I must tell that to the white guy sleeping on the street. The principal of East Side Community School in New York sent white parents a manifesto that called on

them to become 'white traitors' and advocate for full 'white abolition'. These people are teaching your kids when they urgently need a psychiatrist. The 'school' included a chart with 'eight white identities' that ranged from 'white supremacist' to 'white abolition' and defined the behaviour white people must follow to end 'the regime of whiteness'. Woke blacks and their privileged white associates are acting exactly like the slave owners of old and Ku Klux Klan racists like Robert Byrd. They are too full of their own self-purity to see that, but it's true. Racism is not a body type; it's a state of mind that can manifest through any colour, creed or culture.

Another racial fraud is '*equity*'. Not equality of treatment and opportunity – equity. It's a term spun as equality when it means something very different. Equality in its true sense is a raising up while 'equity' is a race to the bottom. Everyone in the same level of poverty is 'equity'. Keep everyone down – that's equity. The Cult doesn't want anyone in the human family to be empowered and BLM leaders, like all these 'anti-racist' organisations, continue their privileged, pampered existence by perpetuating the perception of gathering racism. When is the last time you heard an 'anti-racist' or 'anti-Semitism' organisation say that acts of racism and discrimination have *fallen*? It's not in the interests of their fundraising and power to influence and the same goes for the professional soccer anti-racism operation, Kick It Out. Two things confirmed that the Black Lives Matter riots in the summer of 2020 were Cult creations. One was that while anti-lockdown protests were condemned in this same period for 'transmitting 'Covid' the authorities supported mass gatherings of Black Lives Matter supporters. I even saw self-deluding people claiming to be doctors say the two types of protest were not the same. No – the non-existent 'Covid' was in favour of lockdowns and attacked those that protested against them while 'Covid' supported Black Lives Matter and kept well away from its protests. The whole thing was a joke and as lockdown protestors were arrested, often brutally, by reframed Face-Nappies we had the grotesque sight of police officers taking the knee to Black Lives Matter, a Cult-funded Marxist

organisation that supports violent riots and wants to destroy the nuclear family and white people.

He's not white? Shucks!

Woke obsession with race was on display again when ten people were shot dead in Boulder, Colorado, in March, 2021. Cult-owned Woke TV channels like CNN said the shooter appeared to be a white man and Wokers were on Twitter condemning 'violent white men' with the usual mantras. Then the shooter's name was released as Ahmad Al Aliwi Alissa, an anti-Trump Arab-American, and the sigh of disappointment could be heard five miles away. Never mind that ten people were dead and what that meant for their families. Race baiting was all that mattered to these sick Cult-serving people like Barack Obama who exploited the deaths to further divide America on racial grounds which is his job for the Cult. This is the man that 'racist' white Americans made the first black president of the United States and then gave him a second term. Not-very-bright Obama has become filthy rich on the back of that and today appears to have a big influence on the Biden administration. Even so he's still a downtrodden black man and a victim of white supremacy. This disingenuous fraud reveals the contempt he has for black people when he puts on a Deep South Alabama accent whenever he talks to them, no, *at* them.

Another BLM red flag was how the now fully-Woke (fully-Cult) and fully-virtue-signalled professional soccer authorities had their teams taking the knee before every match in support of Marxist Black Lives Matter. Soccer authorities and clubs displayed 'Black Lives Matter' on the players' shirts and flashed the name on electronic billboards around the pitch. Any fans that condemned what is a Freemasonic taking-the-knee ritual were widely condemned as you would expect from the Woke virtue-signallers of professional sport and the now fully-Woke media. We have reverse racism in which you are banned from criticising any race or culture except for white people for whom anything goes – say what you like, no problem. What has this got to do with racial harmony and

equality? We've had black supremacists from Black Lives Matter telling white people to fall to their knees in the street and apologise for their white supremacy. Black supremacists acting like white supremacist slave owners of the past couldn't breach their self-obsessed, race-obsessed sense of self-purity. Joe Biden appointed a race-obsessed black supremacist Kristen Clarke to head the Justice Department Civil Rights Division. Clarke claimed that blacks are endowed with 'greater mental, physical and spiritual abilities' than whites. If anyone reversed that statement they would be vilified. Clarke is on-message so no problem. She's never seen a black-white situation in which the black figure is anything but a virtuous victim and she heads the Civil Rights Division which should treat everyone the same or it isn't civil rights. Another perception of the Renegade Mind: If something or someone is part of the Cult agenda they will be supported by Woke governments and media no matter what. If they're not, they will be condemned and censored. It really is that simple and so racist Clarke prospers despite (make that because of) her racism.

The end of culture

Biden's administration is full of such racial, cultural and economic bias as the Cult requires the human family to be divided into warring factions. We are now seeing racially-segregated graduations and everything, but everything, is defined through the lens of perceived 'racism'. We have 'racist' mathematics, 'racist' food and even 'racist' *plants*. World famous Kew Gardens in London said it was changing labels on plants and flowers to tell its pre-'Covid' more than two million visitors a year how racist they are. Kew director Richard Deverell said this was part of an effort to 'move quickly to decolonise collections' after they were approached by one Ajay Chhabra 'an actor with an insight into how sugar cane was linked to slavery'. They are *plants* you idiots. 'Decolonisation' in the Woke manual really means colonisation of society with its mentality and by extension colonisation by the Cult. We are witnessing a new Chinese-style 'Cultural Revolution' so essential to the success of all

Marxist takeovers. Our cultural past and traditions have to be swept away to allow a new culture to be built-back-better. Woke targeting of long-standing Western cultural pillars including historical monuments and cancelling of historical figures is what happened in the Mao revolution in China which 'purged remnants of capitalist and traditional elements from Chinese society' and installed Maoism as the dominant ideology'. For China see the Western world today and for 'dominant ideology' see Woke. Better still see Marxism or Maoism. The 'Covid' hoax has specifically sought to destroy the arts and all elements of Western culture from people meeting in a pub or restaurant to closing theatres, music venues, sports stadiums, places of worship and even banning *singing*. Destruction of Western society is also why criticism of any religion is banned except for Christianity which again is the dominant religion as white is the numerically-dominant race. Christianity may be fading rapidly, but its history and traditions are weaved through the fabric of Western society. Delete the pillars and other structures will follow until the whole thing collapses. I am not a Christian defending that religion when I say that. I have no religion. It's just a fact. To this end Christianity has itself been turned Woke to usher its own downfall and its ranks are awash with 'change agents' – knowing and unknowing – at every level including Pope Francis (*definitely* knowing) and the clueless Archbishop of Canterbury Justin Welby (possibly not, but who can be sure?). Woke seeks to coordinate attacks on Western culture, traditions, and ways of life through 'intersectionality' defined as 'the complex, cumulative way in which the effects of multiple forms of discrimination (such as racism, sexism, and classism) combine, overlap, or intersect especially in the experiences of marginalised individuals or groups'. Wade through the Orwellian Woke-speak and this means coordinating disparate groups in a common cause to overthrow freedom and liberal values.

The entire structure of public institutions has been infested with Woke – government at all levels, political parties, police, military, schools, universities, advertising, media and trade unions. This abomination has been achieved through the Cult web by appointing

Wokers to positions of power and battering non-Wokers into line through intimidation, isolation and threats to their job. Many have been fired in the wake of the empathy-deleted, vicious hostility of 'social justice' Wokers and the desire of gutless, spineless employers to virtue-signal their Wokeness. Corporations are filled with Wokers today, most notably those in Silicon Valley. Ironically at the top they are not Woke at all. They are only exploiting the mentality their Cult masters have created and funded to censor and enslave while the Wokers cheer them on until it's their turn. Thus the Woke 'liberal left' is an inversion of the traditional liberal left. Campaigning for justice on the grounds of power and wealth distribution has been replaced by campaigning for identity politics. The genuine traditional left would never have taken money from today's billionaire abusers of fairness and justice and nor would the billionaires have wanted to fund that genuine left. It would not have been in their interests to do so. The division of opinion in those days was between the haves and have nots. This all changed with Cult manipulated and funded identity politics. The division of opinion today is between Wokers and non-Wokers and not income brackets. Cult corporations and their billionaires may have taken wealth disparity to cataclysmic levels of injustice, but as long as they speak the language of Woke, hand out the dosh to the Woke network and censor the enemy they are 'one of us'. Billionaires who don't give a damn about injustice are laughing at them till their bellies hurt. Wokers are not even close to self-aware enough to see that. The transformed 'left' dynamic means that Wokers who drone on about 'social justice' are funded by billionaires that have destroyed social justice the world over. It's *why* they are billionaires.

The climate con

Nothing encapsulates what I have said more comprehensively than the hoax of human-caused global warming. I have detailed in my books over the years how Cult operatives and organisations were the pump-primers from the start of the climate con. A purpose-built vehicle for this is the Club of Rome established by the Cult in 1968

with the Rockefellers and Rothschilds centrally involved all along. Their gofer frontman Maurice Strong, a Canadian oil millionaire, hosted the Earth Summit in Rio de Janeiro, Brazil, in 1992 where the global 'green movement' really expanded in earnest under the guiding hand of the Cult. The Earth Summit established Agenda 21 through the Cult-created-and-owned United Nations to use the illusion of human-caused climate change to justify the transformation of global society to save the world from climate disaster. It is a No-Problem-Reaction-Solution sold through governments, media, schools and universities as whole generations have been terrified into believing that the world was going to end in their lifetimes unless what old people had inflicted upon them was stopped by a complete restructuring of how everything is done. Chill, kids, it's all a hoax. Such restructuring is precisely what the Cult agenda demands (purely by coincidence of course). Today this has been given the codename of the Great Reset which is only an updated term for Agenda 21 and its associated Agenda 2030. The latter, too, is administered through the UN and was voted into being by the General Assembly in 2015. Both 21 and 2030 seek centralised control of all resources and food right down to the raindrops falling on your own land. These are some of the demands of Agenda 21 established in 1992. See if you recognise this society emerging today:

- End national sovereignty
- State planning and management of all land resources, ecosystems, deserts, forests, mountains, oceans and fresh water; agriculture; rural development; biotechnology; and ensuring '*equity*'
- The state to 'define the role' of business and financial resources
- Abolition of private property
- 'Restructuring' the family unit (see BLM)
- Children raised by the state
- People told what their job will be
- Major restrictions on movement
- Creation of 'human settlement zones'

- Mass resettlement as people are forced to vacate land where they live
- Dumbing down education
- Mass global depopulation in pursuit of all the above

The United Nations was created as a Trojan horse for world government. With the climate con of critical importance to promoting that outcome you would expect the UN to be involved. Oh, it's involved all right. The UN is promoting Agenda 21 and Agenda 2030 justified by 'climate change' while also driving the climate hoax through its Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change (IPCC), one of the world's most corrupt organisations. The IPCC has been lying ferociously and constantly since the day it opened its doors with the global media hanging unquestioningly on its every mendacious word. The Green movement is entirely Woke and has long lost its original environmental focus since it was co-opted by the Cult. An obsession with 'global warming' has deleted its values and scrambled its head. I experienced a small example of what I mean on a beautiful country walk that I have enjoyed several times a week for many years. The path merged into the fields and forests and you felt at one with the natural world. Then a 'Green' organisation, the Hampshire and Isle of Wight Wildlife Trust, took over part of the land and proceeded to cut down a large number of trees, including mature ones, to install a horrible big, bright steel 'this-is-ours-stay-out' fence that destroyed the whole atmosphere of this beautiful place. No one with a feel for nature would do that. Day after day I walked to the sound of chainsaws and a magnificent mature weeping willow tree that I so admired was cut down at the base of the trunk. When I challenged a Woke young girl in a green shirt (of course) about this vandalism she replied: 'It's a weeping willow – it will grow back.' This is what people are paying for when they donate to the Hampshire and Isle of Wight Wildlife Trust and many other 'green' organisations today. It is not the environmental movement that I knew and instead has become a support-system – as with Extinction Rebellion – for a very dark agenda.

Private jets for climate justice

The Cult-owned, Gates-funded, World Economic Forum and its founder Klaus Schwab were behind the emergence of Greta Thunberg to harness the young behind the climate agenda and she was invited to speak to the world at ... the UN. Schwab published a book, *Covid-19: The Great Reset* in 2020 in which he used the 'Covid' hoax and the climate hoax to lay out a new society straight out of Agenda 21 and Agenda 2030. Bill Gates followed in early 2021 when he took time out from destroying the world to produce a book in his name about the way to save it. Gates flies across the world in private jets and admitted that 'I probably have one of the highest greenhouse gas footprints of anyone on the planet ... my personal flying alone is gigantic.' He has also bid for the planet's biggest private jet operator. Other climate change saviours who fly in private jets include John Kerry, the US Special Presidential Envoy for Climate, and actor Leonardo DiCaprio, a 'UN Messenger of Peace with special focus on climate change'. These people are so full of bullshit they could corner the market in manure. We mustn't be sceptical, though, because the Gates book, *How to Avoid a Climate Disaster: The Solutions We Have and the Breakthroughs We Need*, is a genuine attempt to protect the world and not an obvious pile of excrement attributed to a mega-psychopath aimed at selling his masters' plans for humanity. The Gates book and the other shite-pile by Klaus Schwab could have been written by the same person and may well have been. Both use 'climate change' and 'Covid' as the excuses for their new society and by coincidence the Cult's World Economic Forum and Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation promote the climate hoax and hosted Event 201 which pre-empted with a 'simulation' the very 'coronavirus' hoax that would be simulated for real on humanity within weeks. The British 'royal' family is promoting the 'Reset' as you would expect through Prince 'climate change caused the war in Syria' Charles and his hapless son Prince William who said that we must 'reset our relationship with nature and our trajectory as a species' to avoid a climate disaster. Amazing how many promoters of the 'Covid' and 'climate change' control

systems are connected to Gates and the World Economic Forum. A 'study' in early 2021 claimed that carbon dioxide emissions must fall by the equivalent of a global lockdown roughly every two years for the next decade to save the planet. The 'study' appeared in the same period that the Schwab mob claimed in a video that lockdowns destroying the lives of billions are good because they make the earth 'quieter' with less 'ambient noise'. They took down the video amid a public backlash for such arrogant, empathy-deleted stupidity. You see, however, where they are going with this. Corinne Le Quéré, a professor at the Tyndall Centre for Climate Change Research, University of East Anglia, was lead author of the climate lockdown study, and she writes for ... the World Economic Forum. Gates calls in 'his' book for changing 'every aspect of the economy' (long-time Cult agenda) and for humans to eat synthetic 'meat' (predicted in my books) while cows and other farm animals are eliminated. Australian TV host and commentator Alan Jones described what carbon emission targets would mean for farm animals in Australia alone if emissions were reduced as demanded by 35 percent by 2030 and zero by 2050:

Well, let's take agriculture, the total emissions from agriculture are about 75 million tonnes of carbon dioxide, equivalent. Now reduce that by 35 percent and you have to come down to 50 million tonnes, I've done the maths. So if you take for example 1.5 million cows, you're going to have to reduce the herd by 525,000 [by] 2030, nine years, that's 58,000 cows a year. The beef herd's 30 million, reduce that by 35 percent, that's 10.5 million, which means 1.2 million cattle have to go every year between now and 2030. This is insanity!

There are 75 million sheep. Reduce that by 35 percent, that's 26 million sheep, that's almost 3 million a year. So under the Paris Agreement over 30 million beasts, dairy cows, cattle, pigs and sheep would go. More than 8,000 every minute of every hour for the next decade, do these people know what they're talking about?

Clearly they don't at the level of campaigners, politicians and administrators. The Cult *does* know; that's the outcome it wants. We are faced with not just a war on humanity. Animals and the natural world are being targeted and I have been saying since the 'Covid' hoax began that the plan eventually was to claim that the 'deadly virus' is able to jump from animals, including farm animals and

domestic pets, to humans. Just before this book went into production came this story: 'Russia registers world's first Covid-19 vaccine for cats & dogs as makers of Sputnik V warn pets & farm animals could spread virus'. The report said 'top scientists warned that the deadly pathogen could soon begin spreading through homes and farms' and 'the next stage is the infection of farm and domestic animals'. Know the outcome and you'll see the journey. Think what that would mean for animals and keep your eye on a term called zoonosis or zoonotic diseases which transmit between animals and humans. The Cult wants to break the connection between animals and people as it does between people and people. Farm animals fit with the Cult agenda to transform food from natural to synthetic.

The gas of life is killing us

There can be few greater examples of Cult inversion than the condemnation of carbon dioxide as a dangerous pollutant when it is the gas of life. Without it the natural world would be dead and so we would all be dead. We breathe in oxygen and breathe out carbon dioxide while plants produce oxygen and absorb carbon dioxide. It is a perfect symbiotic relationship that the Cult wants to dismantle for reasons I will come to in the final two chapters. Gates, Schwab, other Cult operatives and mindless repeaters, want the world to be 'carbon neutral' by at least 2050 and the earlier the better. 'Zero carbon' is the cry echoed by lunatics calling for 'Zero Covid' when we already have it. These carbon emission targets will deindustrialise the world in accordance with Cult plans – the post-industrial, post-democratic society – and with so-called renewables like solar and wind not coming even close to meeting human energy needs blackouts and cold are inevitable. Texans got the picture in the winter of 2021 when a snow storm stopped wind turbines and solar panels from working and the lights went down along with water which relies on electricity for its supply system. Gates wants everything to be powered by electricity to ensure that his masters have the kill switch to stop all human activity, movement, cooking, water and warmth any time they like. The climate lie is so

stupendously inverted that it claims we must urgently reduce carbon dioxide when we *don't have enough*.

Co2 in the atmosphere is a little above 400 parts per million when the optimum for plant growth is 2,000 ppm and when it falls anywhere near 150 ppm the natural world starts to die and so do we. It fell to as low as 280 ppm in an 1880 measurement in Hawaii and rose to 413 ppm in 2019 with industrialisation which is why the planet has become *greener* in the industrial period. How insane then that psychopathic madman Gates is not satisfied only with blocking the rise of Co2. He's funding technology to suck it out of the atmosphere. The reason why will become clear. The industrial era is not destroying the world through Co2 and has instead turned around a potentially disastrous ongoing fall in Co2. Greenpeace co-founder and scientist Patrick Moore walked away from Greenpeace in 1986 and has exposed the green movement for fear-mongering and lies. He said that 500 million years ago there was *17 times* more Co2 in the atmosphere than we have today and levels have been falling for hundreds of millions of years. In the last 150 million years Co2 levels in Earth's atmosphere had reduced by *90 percent*. Moore said that by the time humanity began to unlock carbon dioxide from fossil fuels we were at '38 seconds to midnight' and in that sense: 'Humans are [the Earth's] salvation.' Moore made the point that only half the Co2 emitted by fossil fuels stays in the atmosphere and we should remember that all pollution pouring from chimneys that we are told is carbon dioxide is in fact nothing of the kind. It's pollution. Carbon dioxide is an invisible gas.

William Happer, Professor of Physics at Princeton University and long-time government adviser on climate, has emphasised the Co2 deficiency for maximum growth and food production. Greenhouse growers don't add carbon dioxide for a bit of fun. He said that most of the warming in the last 100 years, after the earth emerged from the super-cold period of the 'Little Ice Age' into a natural warming cycle, was over by 1940. Happer said that a peak year for warming in 1988 can be explained by a 'monster El Nino' which is a natural and cyclical warming of the Pacific that has nothing to do with 'climate

change'. He said the effect of Co2 could be compared to painting a wall with red paint in that once two or three coats have been applied it didn't matter how much more you slapped on because the wall will not get much redder. Almost all the effect of the rise in Co2 has already happened, he said, and the volume in the atmosphere would now have to *double* to increase temperature by a single degree. Climate hoaxers know this and they have invented the most ridiculously complicated series of 'feedback' loops to try to overcome this rather devastating fact. You hear puppet Greta going on cluelessly about feedback loops and this is why.

The Sun affects temperature? No you *climate denier*

Some other nonsense to contemplate: Climate graphs show that rises in temperature do not follow rises in Co2 – *it's the other way round* with a lag between the two of some 800 years. If we go back 800 years from present time we hit the Medieval Warm Period when temperatures were higher than now without any industrialisation and this was followed by the Little Ice Age when temperatures plummeted. The world was still emerging from these centuries of serious cold when many climate records began which makes the ever-repeated line of the 'hottest year since records began' meaningless when you are not comparing like with like. The coldest period of the Little Ice Age corresponded with the lowest period of sunspot activity when the Sun was at its least active. Proper scientists will not be at all surprised by this when it confirms the obvious fact that earth temperature is affected by the scale of Sun activity and the energetic power that it subsequently emits; but when is the last time you heard a climate hoaxer talking about the Sun as a source of earth temperature?? Everything has to be focussed on Co2 which makes up just 0.117 percent of so-called greenhouse gases and only a fraction of even that is generated by human activity. The rest is natural. More than 90 percent of those greenhouse gases are water vapour and clouds ([Fig 9](#)). Ban moisture I say. Have you noticed that the climate hoaxers no longer use the polar bear as their promotion image? That's because far from becoming extinct polar

bear communities are stable or thriving. Joe Bastardi, American meteorologist, weather forecaster and outspoken critic of the climate lie, documents in his book *The Climate Chronicles* how weather patterns and events claimed to be evidence of climate change have been happening since long before industrialisation: 'What happened before naturally is happening again, as is to be expected given the cyclical nature of the climate due to the design of the planet.' If you read the detailed background to the climate hoax in my other books you will shake your head and wonder how anyone could believe the crap which has spawned a multi-trillion dollar industry based on absolute garbage (see HIV causes AIDs and Sars-Cov-2 causes 'Covid-19'). Climate and 'Covid' have much in common given they have the same source. They both have the contradictory *everything* factor in which everything is explained by reference to them. It's hot – 'it's climate change'. It's cold – 'it's climate change'. I got a sniffle – 'it's Covid'. I haven't got a sniffle – 'it's Covid'. Not having a sniffle has to be a symptom of 'Covid'. Everything is and not having a sniffle is especially dangerous if you are a slow walker. For sheer audacity I offer you a Cambridge University 'study' that actually linked 'Covid' to 'climate change'. It had to happen eventually. They concluded that climate change played a role in 'Covid-19' spreading from animals to humans because ... wait for it ... I kid you not ... *the two groups were forced closer together as populations grow*. Er, that's it. The whole foundation on which this depended was that 'Bats are the likely zoonotic origin of SARS-CoV-1 and SARS-CoV-2'. Well, they are not. They are nothing to do with it. Apart from bats not being the origin and therefore 'climate change' effects on bats being irrelevant I am in awe of their academic insight. Where would we be without them? Not where we are that's for sure.

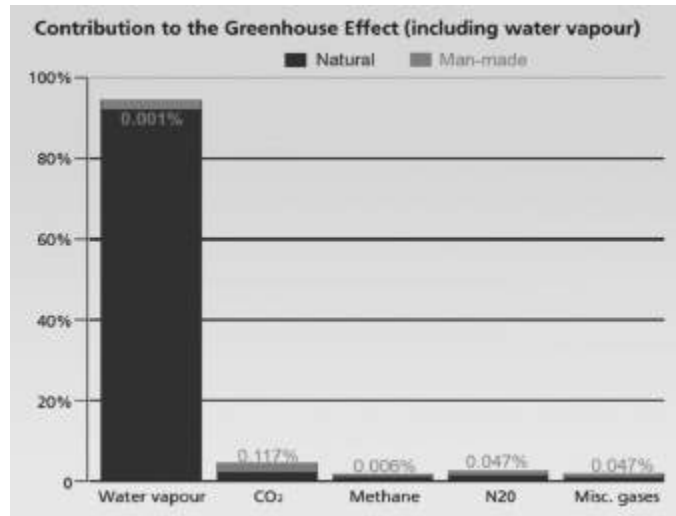


Figure 9: The idea that the gas of life is disastrously changing the climate is an insult to brain cell activity.

One other point about the weather is that climate modification is now well advanced and not every major weather event is natural – or earthquake come to that. I cover this subject at some length in other books. China is openly planning a rapid expansion of its weather modification programme which includes changing the climate in an area more than one and a half times the size of India. China used weather manipulation to ensure clear skies during the 2008 Olympics in Beijing. I have quoted from US military documents detailing how to employ weather manipulation as a weapon of war and they did that in the 1960s and 70s during the conflict in Vietnam with Operation Popeye manipulating monsoon rains for military purposes. Why would there be international treaties on weather modification if it wasn't possible? Of course it is. Weather is energetic information and it can be changed.

How was the climate hoax pulled off? See 'Covid'

If you can get billions to believe in a 'virus' that doesn't exist you can get them to believe in human-caused climate change that doesn't exist. Both are being used by the Cult to transform global society in the way it has long planned. Both hoaxes have been achieved in pretty much the same way. First you declare a lie is a fact. There's a

'virus' you call SARS-Cov-2 or humans are warming the planet with their behaviour. Next this becomes, via Cult networks, the foundation of government, academic and science policy and belief. Those who parrot the mantra are given big grants to produce research that confirms the narrative is true and ever more 'symptoms' are added to make the 'virus'/'climate change' sound even more scary. Scientists and researchers who challenge the narrative have their grants withdrawn and their careers destroyed. The media promote the lie as the unquestionable truth and censor those with an alternative view or evidence. A great percentage of the population believe what they are told as the lie becomes an everybody-knows-that and the believing-masses turn on those with a mind of their own. The technique has been used endlessly throughout human history. Wokers are the biggest promoters of the climate lie *and* 'Covid' fascism because their minds are owned by the Cult; their sense of self-righteous self-purity knows no bounds; and they exist in a bubble of reality in which facts are irrelevant and only get in the way of looking without seeing.

Running through all of this like veins in a blue cheese is control of information, which means control of perception, which means control of behaviour, which collectively means control of human society. The Cult owns the global media and Silicon Valley fascists for the simple reason that it *has* to. Without control of information it can't control perception and through that human society. Examine every facet of the Cult agenda and you will see that anything supporting its introduction is never censored while anything pushing back is always censored. I say again: Psychopaths that know why they are doing this must go before Nuremberg trials and those that follow their orders must trot along behind them into the same dock. 'I was just following orders' didn't work the first time and it must not work now. Nuremberg trials must be held all over the world before public juries for politicians, government officials, police, compliant doctors, scientists and virologists, and all Cult operatives such as Gates, Tedros, Fauci, Vallance, Whitty, Ferguson, Zuckerberg, Wojcicki, Brin, Page, Dorsey, the whole damn lot of

them – including, no *especially*, the psychopath psychologists. Without them and the brainless, gutless excuses for journalists that have repeated their lies, none of this could be happening. Nobody can be allowed to escape justice for the psychological and economic Armageddon they are all responsible for visiting upon the human race.

As for the compliant, unquestioning, swathes of humanity, and the self-obsessed, all-knowing ignorance of the Wokers ... don't start me. God help their kids. God help their grandkids. God *help them*.

CHAPTER NINE

We must have it? So what is it?

*Well I won't back down. No, I won't back down. You can stand me
up at the Gates of Hell. But I won't back down*

Tom Petty

I will now focus on the genetically-manipulating 'Covid vaccines' which do not meet this official definition of a vaccine by the US Centers for Disease Control (CDC): 'A product that stimulates a person's immune system to produce immunity to a specific disease, protecting the person from that disease.' On that basis 'Covid vaccines' are not a vaccine in that the makers don't even claim they stop infection or transmission.

They are instead part of a multi-levelled conspiracy to change the nature of the human body and what it means to be 'human' and to depopulate an enormous swathe of humanity. What I shall call Human 1.0 is on the cusp of becoming Human 2.0 and for very sinister reasons. Before I get to the 'Covid vaccine' in detail here's some background to vaccines in general. Government regulators do not test vaccines – the makers do – and the makers control which data is revealed and which isn't. Children in America are given 50 vaccine doses by age six and 69 by age 19 and the effect of the whole combined schedule has never been tested. Autoimmune diseases when the immune system attacks its own body have soared in the mass vaccine era and so has disease in general in children and the young. Why wouldn't this be the case when vaccines target the *immune system*? The US government gave Big Pharma drug

companies immunity from prosecution for vaccine death and injury in the 1986 National Childhood Vaccine Injury Act (NCVIA) and since then the government (taxpayer) has been funding compensation for the consequences of Big Pharma vaccines. The criminal and satanic drug giants can't lose and the vaccine schedule has increased dramatically since 1986 for this reason. There is no incentive to make vaccines safe and a big incentive to make money by introducing ever more. Even against a ridiculously high bar to prove vaccine liability, and with the government controlling the hearing in which it is being challenged for compensation, the vaccine court has so far paid out more than \$4 billion. These are the vaccines we are told are safe and psychopaths like Zuckerberg censor posts saying otherwise. The immunity law was even justified by a ruling that vaccines by their nature were 'unavoidably unsafe'.

Check out the ingredients of vaccines and you will be shocked if you are new to this. *They put that in children's bodies?? What??* Try aluminium, a brain toxin connected to dementia, aborted foetal tissue and formaldehyde which is used to embalm corpses. World-renowned aluminium expert Christopher Exley had his research into the health effect of aluminium in vaccines shut down by Keele University in the UK when it began taking funding from the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation. Research when diseases 'eradicated' by vaccines began to decline and you will find the fall began long *before* the vaccine was introduced. Sometimes the fall even plateaued after the vaccine. Diseases like scarlet fever for which there was no vaccine declined in the same way because of environmental and other factors. A perfect case in point is the polio vaccine. Polio began when lead arsenate was first sprayed as an insecticide and residues remained in food products. Spraying started in 1892 and the first US polio epidemic came in Vermont in 1894. The simple answer was to stop spraying, but Rockefeller-created Big Pharma had a better idea. Polio was decreed to be caused by the *poliovirus* which 'spreads from person to person and can infect a person's spinal cord'. Lead arsenate was replaced by the lethal DDT which had the same effect of causing paralysis by damaging the brain and central nervous

system. Polio plummeted when DDT was reduced and then banned, but the vaccine is still given the credit for something it didn't do. Today by far the biggest cause of polio is the vaccines promoted by Bill Gates. Vaccine justice campaigner Robert Kennedy Jr, son of assassinated (by the Cult) US Attorney General Robert Kennedy, wrote:

In 2017, the World Health Organization (WHO) reluctantly admitted that the global explosion in polio is predominantly vaccine strain. The most frightening epidemics in Congo, Afghanistan, and the Philippines, are all linked to vaccines. In fact, by 2018, 70% of global polio cases were vaccine strain.

Vaccines make fortunes for Cult-owned Gates and Big Pharma while undermining the health and immune systems of the population. We had a glimpse of the mentality behind the Big Pharma cartel with a report on WION (World is One News), an international English language TV station based in India, which exposed the extraordinary behaviour of US drug company Pfizer over its 'Covid vaccine'. The WION report told how Pfizer had made fantastic demands of Argentina, Brazil and other countries in return for its 'vaccine'. These included immunity from prosecution, even for Pfizer negligence, government insurance to protect Pfizer from law suits and handing over as collateral sovereign assets of the country to include Argentina's bank reserves, military bases and embassy buildings. Pfizer demanded the same of Brazil in the form of waiving sovereignty of its assets abroad; exempting Pfizer from Brazilian laws; and giving Pfizer immunity from all civil liability. This is a 'vaccine' developed with government funding. Big Pharma is evil incarnate as a creation of the Cult and all must be handed tickets to Nuremberg.

Phantom 'vaccine' for a phantom 'disease'

I'll expose the 'Covid vaccine' fraud and then go on to the wider background of why the Cult has set out to 'vaccinate' every man, woman and child on the planet for an alleged 'new disease' with a survival rate of 99.77 percent (or more) even by the grotesquely-

manipulated figures of the World Health Organization and Johns Hopkins University. The 'infection' to 'death' ratio is 0.23 to 0.15 percent according to Stanford epidemiologist Dr John Ioannidis and while estimates vary the danger remains tiny. I say that if the truth be told the fake infection to fake death ratio is zero. Never mind all the evidence I have presented here and in *The Answer* that there is no 'virus' let us just focus for a moment on that death-rate figure of say 0.23 percent. The figure includes all those worldwide who have tested positive with a test not testing for the 'virus' and then died within 28 days or even longer of any other cause – *any other cause*. Now subtract all those illusory 'Covid' deaths on the global data sheets from the 0.23 percent. What do you think you would be left with? *Zero*. A vaccination has never been successfully developed for a so-called coronavirus. They have all failed at the animal testing stage when they caused hypersensitivity to what they were claiming to protect against and made the impact of a disease far worse. Cult-owned vaccine corporations got around that problem this time by bypassing animal trials, going straight to humans and making the length of the 'trials' before the public rollout as short as they could get away with. Normally it takes five to ten years or more to develop vaccines that still cause demonstrable harm to many people and that's without including the long-term effects that are never officially connected to the vaccination. 'Covid' non-vaccines have been officially produced and approved in a matter of months from a standing start and part of the reason is that (a) they were developed before the 'Covid' hoax began and (b) they are based on computer programs and not natural sources. Official non-trials were so short that government agencies gave *emergency*, not full, approval. 'Trials' were not even completed and full approval cannot be secured until they are. Public 'Covid vaccination' is actually a *continuation of the trial*. Drug company 'trials' are not scheduled to end until 2023 by which time a lot of people are going to be dead. Data on which government agencies gave this emergency approval was supplied by the Big Pharma corporations themselves in the form of Pfizer/BioNTech, AstraZeneca, Moderna, Johnson & Johnson, and

others, and this is the case with all vaccines. By its very nature *emergency* approval means drug companies do not have to prove that the 'vaccine' is 'safe and effective'. How could they with trials way short of complete? Government regulators only have to *believe* that they *could* be safe and effective. It is criminal manipulation to get products in circulation with no testing worth the name. Agencies giving that approval are infested with Big Pharma-connected place-people and they act in the interests of Big Pharma (the Cult) and not the public about whom they do not give a damn.

More human lab rats

'Covid vaccines' produced in record time by Pfizer/BioNTech and Moderna employ a technique *never approved before for use on humans*. They are known as mRNA 'vaccines' and inject a synthetic version of 'viral' mRNA or 'messenger RNA'. The key is in the term 'messenger'. The body works, or doesn't, on the basis of information messaging. Communications are constantly passing between and within the genetic system and the brain. Change those messages and you change the state of the body and even its very nature and you can change psychology and behaviour by the way the brain processes information. I think you are going to see significant changes in personality and perception of many people who have had the 'Covid vaccine' synthetic potions. Insider Aldous Huxley predicted the following in 1961 and mRNA 'vaccines' can be included in the term 'pharmacological methods':

There will be, in the next generation or so, a pharmacological method of making people love their servitude, and producing dictatorship without tears, so to speak, producing a kind of painless concentration camp for entire societies, so that people will in fact have their own liberties taken away from them, but rather enjoy it, because they will be distracted from any desire to rebel by propaganda or brainwashing, or brainwashing enhanced by pharmacological methods. And this seems to be the final revolution.

Apologists claim that mRNA synthetic 'vaccines' don't change the DNA genetic blueprint because RNA does not affect DNA only the other way round. This is so disingenuous. A process called 'reverse

transcription' can convert RNA into DNA and be integrated into DNA in the cell nucleus. This was highlighted in December, 2020, by scientists at Harvard and Massachusetts Institute of Technology (MIT). Geneticists report that more than 40 percent of mammalian genomes results from reverse transcription. On the most basic level if messaging changes then that sequence must lead to changes in DNA which is receiving and transmitting those communications. How can introducing synthetic material into cells not change the cells where DNA is located? The process is known as transfection which is defined as 'a technique to insert foreign nucleic acid (DNA or RNA) into a cell, typically with the intention of altering the properties of the cell'. Researchers at the Sloan Kettering Institute in New York found that changes in messenger RNA can deactivate tumour-suppressing proteins and thereby promote cancer. This is what happens when you mess with messaging. 'Covid vaccine' maker Moderna was founded in 2010 by Canadian stem cell biologist Derrick J. Rossi after his breakthrough discovery in the field of transforming and reprogramming stem cells. These are neutral cells that can be programmed to become any cell including sperm cells. Moderna was therefore founded on the principle of genetic manipulation and has never produced any vaccine or drug before its genetically-manipulating synthetic 'Covid' shite. Look at the name – Mode-RNA or Modify-RNA. Another important point is that the US Supreme Court has ruled that genetically-modified DNA, or complementary DNA (cDNA) synthesized in the laboratory from messenger RNA, can be patented and owned. These psychopaths are doing this to the human body.

Cells replicate synthetic mRNA in the 'Covid vaccines' and in theory the body is tricked into making antigens which trigger antibodies to target the 'virus spike proteins' which as Dr Tom Cowan said have *never been seen*. Cut the crap and these 'vaccines' deliver *self-replicating* synthetic material to the cells with the effect of changing human DNA. The more of them you have the more that process is compounded while synthetic material is all the time self-replicating. 'Vaccine'-maker Moderna describes mRNA as 'like

software for the cell' and so they are messing with the body's software. What happens when you change the software in a computer? Everything changes. For this reason the Cult is preparing a production line of mRNA 'Covid vaccines' and a long list of excuses to use them as with all the 'variants' of a 'virus' never shown to exist. The plan is further to transfer the mRNA technique to other vaccines mostly given to children and young people. The cumulative consequences will be a transformation of human DNA through a constant infusion of synthetic genetic material which will kill many and change the rest. Now consider that governments that have given emergency approval for a vaccine that's not a vaccine; never been approved for humans before; had no testing worth the name; and the makers have been given immunity from prosecution for any deaths or adverse effects suffered by the public. The UK government awarded *permanent legal indemnity* to itself and its employees for harm done when a patient is being treated for 'Covid-19' or 'suspected Covid-19'. That is quite a thought when these are possible 'side-effects' from the 'vaccine' (they are not 'side', they are effects) listed by the US Food and Drug Administration:

Guillain-Barre syndrome; acute disseminated encephalomyelitis; transverse myelitis; encephalitis; myelitis; encephalomyelitis; meningoencephalitis; meningitis; encephalopathy; convulsions; seizures; stroke; narcolepsy; cataplexy; anaphylaxis; acute myocardial infarction (heart attack); myocarditis; pericarditis; autoimmune disease; death; implications for pregnancy, and birth outcomes; other acute demyelinating diseases; non anaphylactic allergy reactions; thrombocytopenia ; disseminated intravascular coagulation; venous thromboembolism; arthritis; arthralgia; joint pain; Kawasaki disease; multisystem inflammatory syndrome in children; vaccine enhanced disease. The latter is the way the 'vaccine' has the potential to make diseases far worse than they would otherwise be.

UK doctor and freedom campaigner Vernon Coleman described the conditions in this list as 'all unpleasant, most of them very serious, and you can't get more serious than death'. The thought that anyone at all has had the 'vaccine' in these circumstances is testament to the potential that humanity has for clueless, unquestioning, stupidity and for many that programmed stupidity has already been terminal.

An insider speaks

Dr Michael Yeadon is a former Vice President, head of research and Chief Scientific Adviser at vaccine giant Pfizer. Yeadon worked on the inside of Big Pharma, but that did not stop him becoming a vocal critic of 'Covid vaccines' and their potential for multiple harms, including infertility in women. By the spring of 2021 he went much further and even used the no, no, term 'conspiracy'. When you begin to see what is going on it is impossible not to do so. Yeadon spoke out in an interview with freedom campaigner James Delingpole and I mentioned earlier how he said that no one had samples of 'the virus'. He explained that the mRNA technique originated in the anti-cancer field and ways to turn on and off certain genes which could be advantageous if you wanted to stop cancer growing out of control. 'That's the origin of them. They are a very unusual application, really.' Yeadon said that treating a cancer patient with an aggressive procedure might be understandable if the alternative was dying, but it was quite another thing to use the same technique as a public health measure. Most people involved wouldn't catch the infectious agent you were vaccinating against and if they did they probably wouldn't die:

If you are really using it as a public health measure you really want to as close as you can get to zero side-effects ... I find it odd that they chose techniques that were really cutting their teeth in the field of oncology and I'm worried that in using gene-based vaccines that have to be injected in the body and spread around the body, get taken up into some cells, and the regulators haven't quite told us which cells they get taken up into ... you are going to be generating a wide range of responses ... with multiple steps each of which could go well or badly.

I doubt the Cult intends it to go well. Yeadon said that you can put any gene you like into the body through the 'vaccine'. 'You can certainly give them a gene that would do them some harm if you wanted.' I was intrigued when he said that when used in the cancer field the technique could turn genes on and off. I explore this process in *The Answer* and with different genes having different functions you could create mayhem – physically and psychologically – if you turned the wrong ones on and the right ones off. I read reports of an experiment by researchers at the University of Washington's school of computer science and engineering in which they encoded DNA to infect computers. The body is itself a biological computer and if human DNA can inflict damage on a computer why can't the computer via synthetic material mess with the human body? It can. The Washington research team said it was possible to insert malicious malware into 'physical DNA strands' and corrupt the computer system of a gene sequencing machine as it 'reads gene letters and stores them as binary digits 0 and 1'. They concluded that hackers could one day use blood or spit samples to access computer systems and obtain sensitive data from police forensics labs or infect genome files. It is at this level of digital interaction that synthetic 'vaccines' need to be seen to get the full picture and that will become very clear later on. Michael Yeadon said it made no sense to give the 'vaccine' to younger people who were in no danger from the 'virus'. What was the benefit? It was all downside with potential effects:

The fact that my government in what I thought was a civilised, rational country, is raining [the 'vaccine'] on people in their 30s and 40s, even my children in their 20s, they're getting letters and phone calls, I know this is not right and any of you doctors who are vaccinating you know it's not right, too. They are not at risk. They are not at risk from the disease, so you are now hoping that the side-effects are so rare that you get away with it. You don't give new technology ... that you don't understand to 100 percent of the population.

Blood clot problems with the AstraZeneca 'vaccine' have been affecting younger people to emphasise the downside risks with no benefit. AstraZeneca's version, produced with Oxford University, does not use mRNA, but still gets its toxic cocktail inside cells where

it targets DNA. The Johnson & Johnson 'vaccine' which uses a similar technique has also produced blood clot effects to such an extent that the United States paused its use at one point. They are all 'gene therapy' (cell modification) procedures and not 'vaccines'. The truth is that once the content of these injections enter cells we have no idea what the effect will be. People can speculate and some can give very educated opinions and that's good. In the end, though, only the makers know what their potions are designed to do and even they won't know every last consequence. Michael Yeadon was scathing about doctors doing what they knew to be wrong. 'Everyone's mute', he said. Doctors in the NHS must know this was not right, coming into work and injecting people. 'I don't know how they sleep at night. I know I couldn't do it. I know that if I were in that position I'd have to quit.' He said he knew enough about toxicology to know this was not a good risk-benefit. Yeadon had spoken to seven or eight university professors and all except two would not speak out publicly. Their universities had a policy that no one said anything that countered the government and its medical advisors. They were afraid of losing their government grants. This is how intimidation has been used to silence the truth at every level of the system. I say silence, but these people could still speak out if they made that choice. Yeadon called them 'moral cowards' – 'This is about your children and grandchildren's lives and you have just buggered off and left it.'

'Variant' nonsense

Some of his most powerful comments related to the alleged 'variants' being used to instil more fear, justify more lockdowns, and introduce more 'vaccines'. He said government claims about 'variants' were nonsense. He had checked the alleged variant 'codes' and they were 99.7 percent identical to the 'original'. This was the human identity difference equivalent to putting a baseball cap on and off or wearing it the other way round. A 0.3 percent difference would make it impossible for that 'variant' to escape immunity from the 'original'. This made no sense of having new 'vaccines' for

‘variants’. He said there would have to be at least a *30 percent* difference for that to be justified and even then he believed the immune system would still recognise what it was. Gates-funded ‘variant modeller’ and ‘vaccine’-pusher John Edmunds might care to comment. Yeadon said drug companies were making new versions of the ‘vaccine’ as a ‘top up’ for ‘variants’. Worse than that, he said, the ‘regulators’ around the world like the MHRA in the UK had got together and agreed that because ‘vaccines’ for ‘variants’ were so similar to the first ‘vaccines’ *they did not have to do safety studies*. How transparently sinister that is. This is when Yeadon said: ‘There is a conspiracy here.’ There was no need for another vaccine for ‘variants’ and yet we were told that there was and the country had shut its borders because of them. ‘They are going into hundreds of millions of arms without passing ‘go’ or any regulator. Why did they do that? Why did they pick this method of making the vaccine?’

The reason had to be something bigger than that it seemed and ‘it’s not protection against the virus’. It’s was a far bigger project that meant politicians and advisers were willing to do things and not do things that knowingly resulted in avoidable deaths – ‘that’s already happened when you think about lockdown and deprivation of health care for a year.’ He spoke of people prepared to do something that results in the avoidable death of their fellow human beings and it not bother them. This is the penny-drop I have been working to get across for more than 30 years – the level of pure evil we are dealing with. Yeadon said his friends and associates could not believe there could be that much evil, but he reminded them of Stalin, Pol Pot and Hitler and of what Stalin had said: ‘One death is a tragedy. A million? A statistic.’ He could not think of a benign explanation for why you need top-up vaccines ‘which I’m sure you don’t’ and for the regulators ‘to just get out of the way and wave them through’. Why would the regulators do that when they were still wrestling with the dangers of the ‘parent’ vaccine? He was clearly shocked by what he had seen since the ‘Covid’ hoax began and now he was thinking the previously unthinkable:

If you wanted to depopulate a significant proportion of the world and to do it in a way that doesn't involve destruction of the environment with nuclear weapons, poisoning everyone with anthrax or something like that, and you wanted plausible deniability while you had a multi-year infectious disease crisis, I actually don't think you could come up with a better plan of work than seems to be in front of me. I can't say that's what they are going to do, but I can't think of a benign explanation why they are doing it.

He said he never thought that they would get rid of 99 percent of humans, but now he wondered. 'If you wanted to that this would be a hell of a way to do it – it would be unstoppable folks.' Yeadon had concluded that those who submitted to the 'vaccine' would be allowed to have some kind of normal life (but for how long?) while screws were tightened to coerce and mandate the last few percent. 'I think they'll put the rest of them in a prison camp. I wish I was wrong, but I don't think I am.' Other points he made included: There were no coronavirus vaccines then suddenly they all come along at the same time; we have no idea of the long term affect with trials so short; coercing or forcing people to have medical procedures is against the Nuremberg Code instigated when the Nazis did just that; people should at least delay having the 'vaccine'; a quick Internet search confirms that masks don't reduce respiratory viral transmission and 'the government knows that'; they have smashed civil society and they know that, too; two dozen peer-reviewed studies show no connection between lockdown and reducing deaths; he knew from personal friends the elite were still flying around and going on holiday while the public were locked down; the elite were not having the 'vaccines'. He was also asked if 'vaccines' could be made to target difference races. He said he didn't know, but the document by the Project for the New American Century in September, 2000, said developing 'advanced forms of biological warfare that can target *specific genotypes* may transform biological warfare from the realm of terror to a politically useful tool.' Oh, they're evil all right. Of that we can be *absolutely* sure.

Another cull of old people

We have seen from the CDC definition that the mRNA 'Covid vaccine' is not a vaccine and nor are the others that *claim* to reduce 'severity of symptoms' in *some* people, but not protect from infection or transmission. What about all the lies about returning to 'normal' if people were 'vaccinated'? If they are not claimed to stop infection and transmission of the alleged 'virus', how does anything change? This was all lies to manipulate people to take the jabs and we are seeing that now with masks and distancing still required for the 'vaccinated'. How did they think that elderly people with fragile health and immune responses were going to be affected by infusing their cells with synthetic material and other toxic substances? They *knew* that in the short and long term it would be devastating and fatal as the culling of the old that began with the first lockdowns was continued with the 'vaccine'. Death rates in care homes soared immediately residents began to be 'vaccinated' – infused with synthetic material. Brave and committed whistleblower nurses put their careers at risk by exposing this truth while the rest kept their heads down and their mouths shut to put their careers before those they are supposed to care for. A long-time American Certified Nursing Assistant who gave his name as James posted a video in which he described emotionally what happened in his care home when vaccination began. He said that during 2020 very few residents were sick with 'Covid' and no one died during the entire year; but shortly after the Pfizer mRNA injections 14 people died within two weeks and many others were near death. 'They're dropping like flies', he said. Residents who walked on their own before the shot could no longer and they had lost their ability to conduct an intelligent conversation. The home's management said the sudden deaths were caused by a 'super-spreader' of 'Covid-19'. Then how come, James asked, that residents who refused to take the injections were not sick? It was a case of inject the elderly with mRNA synthetic potions and blame their illness and death that followed on the 'virus'. James described what was happening in care homes as 'the greatest crime of genocide this country has ever seen'. Remember the NHS staff nurse from earlier who used the same

word 'genocide' for what was happening with the 'vaccines' and that it was an 'act of human annihilation'. A UK care home whistleblower told a similar story to James about the effect of the 'vaccine' in deaths and 'outbreaks' of illness dubbed 'Covid' after getting the jab. She told how her care home management and staff had zealously imposed government regulations and no one was allowed to even question the official narrative let alone speak out against it. She said the NHS was even worse. Again we see the results of reframing. A worker at a local care home where I live said they had not had a single case of 'Covid' there for almost a year and when the residents were 'vaccinated' they had 19 positive cases in two weeks with eight dying.

It's not the 'vaccine' – honest

The obvious cause and effect was being ignored by the media and most of the public. Australia's health minister Greg Hunt (a former head of strategy at the World Economic Forum) was admitted to hospital after he had the 'vaccine'. He was suffering according to reports from the skin infection 'cellulitis' and it must have been a severe case to have warranted days in hospital. Immediately the authorities said this was nothing to do with the 'vaccine' when an effect of some vaccines is a 'cellulitis-like reaction'. We had families of perfectly healthy old people who died after the 'vaccine' saying that if only they had been given the 'vaccine' earlier they would still be alive. As a numbskull rating that is off the chart. A father of four 'died of Covid' at aged 48 when he was taken ill two days after having the 'vaccine'. The man, a health administrator, had been 'shielding during the pandemic' and had 'not really left the house' until he went for the 'vaccine'. Having the 'vaccine' and then falling ill and dying does not seem to have qualified as a possible cause and effect and 'Covid-19' went on his death certificate. His family said they had no idea how he 'caught the virus'. A family member said: 'Tragically, it could be that going for a vaccination ultimately led to him catching Covid ...The sad truth is that they are never going to know where it came from.' The family warned people to remember

that the virus still existed and was 'very real'. So was their stupidity. Nurses and doctors who had the first round of the 'vaccine' were collapsing, dying and ending up in a hospital bed while they or their grieving relatives were saying they'd still have the 'vaccine' again despite what happened. I kid you not. You mean if your husband returned from the dead he'd have the same 'vaccine' again that killed him??

Doctors at the VCU Medical Center in Richmond, Virginia, said the Johnson & Johnson 'vaccine' was to blame for a man's skin peeling off. Patient Richard Terrell said: 'It all just happened so fast. My skin peeled off. It's still coming off on my hands now.' He said it was stinging, burning and itching and when he bent his arms and legs it was very painful with 'the skin swollen and rubbing against itself'. Pfizer/BioNTech and Moderna vaccines use mRNA to change the cell while the Johnson & Johnson version uses DNA in a process similar to AstraZeneca's technique. Johnson & Johnson and AstraZeneca have both had their 'vaccines' paused by many countries after causing serious blood problems. Terrell's doctor Fnu Nutan said he could have died if he hadn't got medical attention. It sounds terrible so what did Nutan and Terrell say about the 'vaccine' now? Oh, they still recommend that people have it. A nurse in a hospital bed 40 minutes after the vaccination and unable to swallow due to throat swelling was told by a doctor that he lost mobility in his arm for 36 hours following the vaccination. What did he say to the ailing nurse? 'Good for you for getting the vaccination.' We are dealing with a serious form of cognitive dissonance madness in both public and medical staff. There is a remarkable correlation between those having the 'vaccine' and trumpeting the fact and suffering bad happenings shortly afterwards. Witold Rogiewicz, a Polish doctor, made a video of his 'vaccination' and ridiculed those who were questioning its safety and the intentions of Bill Gates: 'Vaccinate yourself to protect yourself, your loved ones, friends and also patients. And to mention quickly I have info for anti-vaxxers and anti-Covidors if you want to contact Bill Gates you can do this through me.' He further ridiculed the dangers of 5G. Days later he

was dead, but naturally the vaccination wasn't mentioned in the verdict of 'heart attack'.

Lies, lies and more lies

So many members of the human race have slipped into extreme states of insanity and unfortunately they include reframed doctors and nursing staff. Having a 'vaccine' and dying within minutes or hours is not considered a valid connection while death from any cause within 28 days or longer of a positive test with a test not testing for the 'virus' means 'Covid-19' goes on the death certificate. How could that 'vaccine'-death connection not have been made except by calculated deceit? US figures in the initial rollout period to February 12th, 2020, revealed that a third of the deaths reported to the CDC after 'Covid vaccines' happened within 48 hours. Five men in the UK suffered an 'extremely rare' blood clot problem after having the AstraZeneca 'vaccine', but no causal link was established said the Gates-funded Medicines and Healthcare products Regulatory Agency (MHRA) which had given the 'vaccine' emergency approval to be used. Former Pfizer executive Dr Michael Yeadon explained in his interview how the procedures could cause blood coagulation and clots. People who should have been at no risk were dying from blood clots in the brain and he said he had heard from medical doctor friends that people were suffering from skin bleeding and massive headaches. The AstraZeneca 'shot' was stopped by some 20 countries over the blood clotting issue and still the corrupt MHRA, the European Medicines Agency (EMA) and the World Health Organization said that it should continue to be given even though the EMA admitted that it 'still cannot rule out definitively' a link between blood clotting and the 'vaccine'. Later Marco Cavaleri, head of EMA vaccine strategy, said there was indeed a clear link between the 'vaccine' and thrombosis, but they didn't know why. So much for the trials showing the 'vaccine' is safe. Blood clots were affecting younger people who would be under virtually no danger from 'Covid' even if it existed which makes it all the more stupid and sinister.

The British government responded to public alarm by wheeling out June Raine, the terrifyingly weak infant school headmistress sound-alike who heads the UK MHRA drug 'regulator'. The idea that she would stand up to Big Pharma and government pressure is laughable and she told us that all was well in the same way that she did when allowing untested, never-used-on-humans-before, genetically-manipulating 'vaccines' to be exposed to the public in the first place. Mass lying is the new normal of the 'Covid' era. The MHRA later said 30 cases of rare blood clots had by then been connected with the AstraZeneca 'vaccine' (that means a lot more in reality) while stressing that the benefits of the jab in preventing 'Covid-19' outweighed any risks. A more ridiculous and disingenuous statement with callous disregard for human health it is hard to contemplate. Immediately after the mendacious 'all-clears' two hospital workers in Denmark experienced blood clots and cerebral haemorrhaging following the AstraZeneca jab and one died. Top Norwegian health official Pål Andre Holme said the 'vaccine' was the only common factor: 'There is nothing in the patient history of these individuals that can give such a powerful immune response ... I am confident that the antibodies that we have found are the cause, and I see no other explanation than it being the vaccine which triggers it.' Strokes, a clot or bleed in the brain, were clearly associated with the 'vaccine' from word of mouth and whistleblower reports. Similar consequences followed with all these 'vaccines' that we were told were so safe and as the numbers grew by the day it was clear we were witnessing human carnage.

Learning the hard way

A woman interviewed by UKColumn told how her husband suffered dramatic health effects after the vaccine when he'd been in good health all his life. He went from being a little unwell to losing all feeling in his legs and experiencing 'excruciating pain'. Misdiagnosis followed twice at Accident and Emergency (an 'allergy' and 'sciatica') before he was admitted to a neurology ward where doctors said his serious condition had been caused by the

'vaccine'. Another seven 'vaccinated' people were apparently being treated on the same ward for similar symptoms. The woman said he had the 'vaccine' because they believed media claims that it was safe. 'I didn't think the government would give out a vaccine that does this to somebody; I believed they would be bringing out a vaccination that would be safe.' What a tragic way to learn that lesson. Another woman posted that her husband was transporting stroke patients to hospital on almost every shift and when he asked them if they had been 'vaccinated' for 'Covid' they all replied 'yes'. One had a 'massive brain bleed' the day after his second dose. She said her husband reported the 'just been vaccinated' information every time to doctors in A and E only for them to ignore it, make no notes and appear annoyed that it was even mentioned. This particular report cannot be verified, but it expresses a common theme that confirms the monumental underreporting of 'vaccine' consequences. Interestingly as the 'vaccines' and their brain blood clot/stroke consequences began to emerge the UK National Health Service began a publicity campaign telling the public what to do in the event of a stroke. A Scottish NHS staff nurse who quit in disgust in March, 2021, said:

I have seen traumatic injuries from the vaccine, they're not getting reported to the yellow card [adverse reaction] scheme, they're treating the symptoms, not asking why, why it's happening. It's just treating the symptoms and when you speak about it you're dismissed like you're crazy, I'm not crazy, I'm not crazy because every other colleague I've spoken to is terrified to speak out, they've had enough.

Videos appeared on the Internet of people uncontrollably shaking after the 'vaccine' with no control over muscles, limbs and even their face. A Scottish mother broke out in a severe rash all over her body almost immediately after she was given the AstraZeneca 'vaccine'. The pictures were horrific. Leigh King, a 41-year-old hairdresser from Lanarkshire said: 'Never in my life was I prepared for what I was about to experience ... My skin was so sore and constantly hot ... I have never felt pain like this ...' But don't you worry, the 'vaccine' is perfectly safe. Then there has been the effect on medical

staff who have been pressured to have the 'vaccine' by psychopathic 'health' authorities and government. A London hospital consultant who gave the name K. Polyakova wrote this to the *British Medical Journal* or *BMJ*:

I am currently struggling with ... the failure to report the reality of the morbidity caused by our current vaccination program within the health service and staff population. The levels of sickness after vaccination is unprecedented and staff are getting very sick and some with neurological symptoms which is having a huge impact on the health service function. Even the young and healthy are off for days, some for weeks, and some requiring medical treatment. Whole teams are being taken out as they went to get vaccinated together.

Mandatory vaccination in this instance is stupid, unethical and irresponsible when it comes to protecting our staff and public health. We are in the voluntary phase of vaccination, and encouraging staff to take an unlicensed product that is impacting on their immediate health ... it is clearly stated that these vaccine products do not offer immunity or stop transmission. In which case why are we doing it?

Not to protect health that's for sure. Medical workers are lauded by governments for agenda reasons when they couldn't give a toss about them any more than they can for the population in general. Schools across America faced the same situation as they closed due to the high number of teachers and other staff with bad reactions to the Pfizer/BioNTech, Moderna, and Johnson & Johnson 'Covid vaccines' all of which were linked to death and serious adverse effects. The *BMJ* took down the consultant's comments pretty quickly on the grounds that they were being used to spread 'disinformation'. They were exposing the truth about the 'vaccine' was the real reason. The cover-up is breathtaking.

Hiding the evidence

The scale of the 'vaccine' death cover-up worldwide can be confirmed by comparing official figures with the personal experience of the public. I heard of many people in my community who died immediately or soon after the vaccine that would never appear in the media or even likely on the official totals of 'vaccine' fatalities and adverse reactions when only about ten percent are estimated to be

reported and I have seen some estimates as low as one percent in a Harvard study. In the UK alone by April 29th, 2021, some 757,654 adverse reactions had been officially reported from the Pfizer/BioNTech, Oxford/AstraZeneca and Moderna 'vaccines' with more than a thousand deaths linked to jabs and that means an estimated ten times this number in reality from a ten percent reporting rate percentage. That's seven million adverse reactions and 10,000 potential deaths and a one percent reporting rate would be ten times *those* figures. In 1976 the US government pulled the swine flu vaccine after 53 deaths. The UK data included a combined 10,000 eye disorders from the 'Covid vaccines' with more than 750 suffering visual impairment or blindness and again multiply by the estimated reporting percentages. As 'Covid cases' officially fell hospitals virtually empty during the 'Covid crisis' began to fill up with a range of other problems in the wake of the 'vaccine' rollout. The numbers across America have also been catastrophic. Deaths linked to *all* types of vaccine increased by 6,000 *percent* in the first quarter of 2021 compared with 2020. A 39-year-old woman from Ogden, Utah, died four days after receiving a second dose of Moderna's 'Covid vaccine' when her liver, heart and kidneys all failed despite the fact that she had no known medical issues or conditions. Her family sought an autopsy, but Dr Erik Christensen, Utah's chief medical examiner, said proving vaccine injury as a cause of death almost never happened. He could think of only one instance where an autopsy would name a vaccine as the official cause of death and that would be anaphylaxis where someone received a vaccine and died almost instantaneously. 'Short of that, it would be difficult for us to definitively say this is the vaccine,' Christensen said. If that is true this must be added to the estimated ten percent (or far less) reporting rate of vaccine deaths and serious reactions and the conclusion can only be that vaccine deaths and serious reactions – including these 'Covid' potions' – are phenomenally understated in official figures. The same story can be found everywhere. Endless accounts of deaths and serious reactions among the public, medical

and care home staff while official figures did not even begin to reflect this.

Professional script-reader Dr David Williams, a 'top public-health official' in Ontario, Canada, insulted our intelligence by claiming only four serious adverse reactions and no deaths from the more than 380,000 vaccine doses then given. This bore no resemblance to what people knew had happened in their own circles and we had Dirk Huyer in charge of getting millions vaccinated in Ontario while at the same time he was Chief Coroner for the province investigating causes of death including possible death from the vaccine. An aide said he had stepped back from investigating deaths, but evidence indicated otherwise. Rosemary Frei, who secured a Master of Science degree in molecular biology at the Faculty of Medicine at Canada's University of Calgary before turning to investigative journalism, was one who could see that official figures for 'vaccine' deaths and reactions made no sense. She said that doctors seldom reported adverse events and when people got really sick or died after getting a vaccination they would attribute that to anything except the vaccines. It had been that way for years and anyone who wondered aloud whether the 'Covid vaccines' or other shots cause harm is immediately branded as 'anti-vax' and 'anti-science'. This was 'career-threatening' for health professionals. Then there was the huge pressure to support the push to 'vaccinate' billions in the quickest time possible. Frei said:

So that's where we're at today. More than half a million vaccine doses have been given to people in Ontario alone. The rush is on to vaccinate all 15 million of us in the province by September. And the mainstream media are screaming for this to be sped up even more. That all adds up to only a very slim likelihood that we're going to be told the truth by officials about how many people are getting sick or dying from the vaccines.

What is true of Ontario is true of everywhere.

They KNEW – and still did it

The authorities knew what was going to happen with multiple deaths and adverse reactions. The UK government's Gates-funded

and Big Pharma-dominated Medicines and Healthcare products Regulatory Agency (MHRA) hired a company to employ AI in compiling the projected reactions to the 'vaccine' that would otherwise be uncountable. The request for applications said: 'The MHRA urgently seeks an Artificial Intelligence (AI) software tool to process the expected high volume of Covid-19 vaccine Adverse Drug Reaction ...' This was from the agency, headed by the disingenuous June Raine, that gave the 'vaccines' emergency approval and the company was hired before the first shot was given. 'We are going to kill and maim you – is that okay?' 'Oh, yes, perfectly fine – I'm very grateful, thank you, doctor.' The range of 'Covid vaccine' adverse reactions goes on for page after page in the MHRA criminally underreported 'Yellow Card' system and includes affects to eyes, ears, skin, digestion, blood and so on. Raine's MHRA amazingly claimed that the 'overall safety experience ... is so far as expected from the clinical trials'. The death, serious adverse effects, deafness and blindness were *expected*? When did they ever mention that? If these human tragedies were expected then those that gave approval for the use of these 'vaccines' must be guilty of crimes against humanity including murder – a definition of which is 'killing a person with malice aforethought or with recklessness manifesting extreme indifference to the value of human life.' People involved at the MHRA, the CDC in America and their equivalent around the world must go before Nuremberg trials to answer for their callous inhumanity. We are only talking here about the immediate effects of the 'vaccine'. The longer-term impact of the DNA synthetic manipulation is the main reason they are so hysterically desperate to inoculate the entire global population in the shortest possible time.

Africa and the developing world are a major focus for the 'vaccine' depopulation agenda and a mass vaccination sales-pitch is underway thanks to caring people like the Rockefellers and other Cult assets. The Rockefeller Foundation, which pre-empted the 'Covid pandemic' in a document published in 2010 that 'predicted' what happened a decade later, announced an initial \$34.95 million grant in February, 2021, 'to ensure more equitable access to Covid-19

testing and vaccines' among other things in Africa in collaboration with '24 organizations, businesses, and government agencies'. The pan-Africa initiative would focus on 10 countries: Burkina Faso, Ethiopia, Ghana, Kenya, Nigeria, Rwanda, South Africa, Tanzania, Uganda, and Zambia'. Rajiv Shah, President of the Rockefeller Foundation and former administrator of CIA-controlled USAID, said that if Africa was not mass-vaccinated (to change the DNA of its people) it was a 'threat to all of humanity' and not fair on Africans. When someone from the Rockefeller Foundation says they want to do something to help poor and deprived people and countries it is time for a belly-laugh. They are doing this out of the goodness of their 'heart' because 'vaccinating' the entire global population is what the 'Covid' hoax set out to achieve. Official 'decolonisation' of Africa by the Cult was merely a prelude to financial colonisation on the road to a return to physical colonisation. The 'vaccine' is vital to that and the sudden and convenient death of the 'Covid' sceptic president of Tanzania can be seen in its true light. A lot of people in Africa are aware that this is another form of colonisation and exploitation and they need to stand their ground.

The 'vaccine is working' scam

A potential problem for the Cult was that the 'vaccine' is meant to change human DNA and body messaging and not to protect anyone from a 'virus' never shown to exist. The vaccine couldn't work because it was not designed to work and how could they make it *appear* to be working so that more people would have it? This was overcome by lowering the amplification rate of the PCR test to produce fewer 'cases' and therefore fewer 'deaths'. Some of us had been pointing out since March, 2020, that the amplification rate of the test not testing for the 'virus' had been made artificially high to generate positive tests which they could call 'cases' to justify lockdowns. The World Health Organization recommended an absurdly high 45 amplification cycles to ensure the high positives required by the Cult and then remained silent on the issue until January 20th, 2021 – Biden's Inauguration Day. This was when the

'vaccinations' were seriously underway and on that day the WHO recommended after discussions with America's CDC that laboratories *lowered their testing amplification*. Dr David Samadi, a certified urologist and health writer, said the WHO was encouraging all labs to reduce their cycle count for PCR tests. He said the current cycle was much too high and was 'resulting in any particle being declared a positive case'. Even one mainstream news report I saw said this meant the number of 'Covid' infections may have been 'dramatically inflated'. Oh, just a little bit. The CDC in America issued new guidance to laboratories in April, 2021, to use 28 cycles *but only for 'vaccinated' people*. The timing of the CDC/WHO interventions were cynically designed to make it appear the 'vaccines' were responsible for falling cases and deaths when the real reason can be seen in the following examples. New York's state lab, the Wadsworth Center, identified 872 positive tests in July, 2020, based on a threshold of 40 cycles. When the figure was lowered to 35 cycles 43 percent of the 872 were no longer 'positives'. At 30 cycles the figure was 63 percent. A Massachusetts lab found that between 85 to 90 percent of people who tested positive in July with a cycle threshold of 40 would be negative at 30 cycles, Ashish Jha, MD, director of the Harvard Global Health Institute, said: 'I'm really shocked that it could be that high ... Boy, does it really change the way we need to be thinking about testing.' I'm shocked that I could see the obvious in the spring of 2020, with no medical background, and most medical professionals still haven't worked it out. No, that's not shocking – it's terrifying.

Three weeks after the WHO directive to lower PCR cycles the London *Daily Mail* ran this headline: 'Why ARE Covid cases plummeting? New infections have fallen 45% in the US and 30% globally in the past 3 weeks but experts say vaccine is NOT the main driver because only 8% of Americans and 13% of people worldwide have received their first dose.' They acknowledged that the drop could not be attributed to the 'vaccine', but soon this morphed throughout the media into the 'vaccine' has caused cases and deaths to fall when it was the PCR threshold. In December, 2020, there was

chaos at English Channel ports with truck drivers needing negative 'Covid' tests before they could board a ferry home for Christmas. The government wanted to remove the backlog as fast as possible and they brought in troops to do the 'testing'. Out of 1,600 drivers just 36 tested positive and the rest were given the all clear to cross the Channel. I guess the authorities thought that 36 was the least they could get away with without the unquestioning catching on. The amplification trick which most people believed in the absence of information in the mainstream applied more pressure on those refusing the 'vaccine' to succumb when it 'obviously worked'. The truth was the exact opposite with deaths in care homes soaring with the 'vaccine' and in Israel the term used was 'skyrocket'. A re-analysis of published data from the Israeli Health Ministry led by Dr Hervé Seligmann at the Medicine Emerging Infectious and Tropical Diseases at Aix-Marseille University found that Pfizer's 'Covid vaccine' killed 'about 40 times more [elderly] people than the disease itself would have killed' during a five-week vaccination period and *260 times* more younger people than would have died from the 'virus' even according to the manipulated 'virus' figures. Dr Seligmann and his co-study author, Haim Yativ, declared after reviewing the Israeli 'vaccine' death data: 'This is a new Holocaust.'

Then, in mid-April, 2021, after vast numbers of people worldwide had been 'vaccinated', the story changed with clear coordination. The UK government began to prepare the ground for more future lockdowns when Nuremberg-destined Boris Johnson told yet another whopper. He said that cases had fallen because of *lockdowns* not 'vaccines'. Lockdowns are irrelevant when *there is no 'virus'* and the test and fraudulent death certificates are deciding the number of 'cases' and 'deaths'. Study after study has shown that lockdowns don't work and instead kill and psychologically destroy people. Meanwhile in the United States Anthony Fauci and Rochelle Walensky, the ultra-Zionist head of the CDC, peddled the same line. More lockdown was the answer and not the 'vaccine', a line repeated on cue by the moron that is Canadian Prime Minister Justin Trudeau. Why all the hysteria to get everyone 'vaccinated' if lockdowns and

not 'vaccines' made the difference? None of it makes sense on the face of it. Oh, but it does. The Cult wants lockdowns *and* the 'vaccine' and if the 'vaccine' is allowed to be seen as the total answer lockdowns would no longer be justified when there are still livelihoods to destroy. 'Variants' and renewed upward manipulation of PCR amplification are planned to instigate never-ending lockdown *and* more 'vaccines'.

You *must* have it – we're desperate

Israel, where the Jewish and Arab population are ruled by the Sabbatian Cult, was the front-runner in imposing the DNA-manipulating 'vaccine' on its people to such an extent that Jewish refusers began to liken what was happening to the early years of Nazi Germany. This would seem to be a fantastic claim. Why would a government of Jewish people be acting like the Nazis did? If you realise that the Sabbatian Cult was behind the Nazis and that Sabbatians hate Jews the pieces start to fit and the question of why a 'Jewish' government would treat Jews with such callous disregard for their lives and freedom finds an answer. Those controlling the government of Israel *aren't Jewish* – they're Sabbatian. Israeli lawyer Tamir Turgal was one who made the Nazi comparison in comments to German lawyer Reiner Fuellmich who is leading a class action lawsuit against the psychopaths for crimes against humanity. Turgal described how the Israeli government was vaccinating children and pregnant women on the basis that there was no evidence that this was dangerous when they had no evidence that it *wasn't* dangerous either. They just had no evidence. This was medical experimentation and Turgal said this breached the Nuremberg Code about medical experimentation and procedures requiring informed consent and choice. Think about that. A Nuremberg Code developed because of Nazi experimentation on Jews and others in concentration camps by people like the evil-beyond-belief Josef Mengele is being breached by the *Israeli* government; but when you know that it's a *Sabbatian* government along with its intelligence and military agencies like Mossad, Shin Bet and the Israeli Defense Forces, and that Sabbatians

were the force behind the Nazis, the kaleidoscope comes into focus. What have we come to when Israeli Jews are suing their government for violating the Nuremberg Code by essentially making Israelis subject to a medical experiment using the controversial 'vaccines'? It's a shocker that this has to be done in the light of what happened in Nazi Germany. The Anshe Ha-Emet, or 'People of the Truth', made up of Israeli doctors, lawyers, campaigners and public, have launched a lawsuit with the International Criminal Court. It says:

When the heads of the Ministry of Health as well as the prime minister presented the vaccine in Israel and began the vaccination of Israeli residents, the vaccinated were not advised, that, in practice, they are taking part in a medical experiment and that their consent is required for this under the Nuremberg Code.

The irony is unbelievable, but easily explained in one word: Sabbatians. The foundation of Israeli 'Covid' apartheid is the 'green pass' or 'green passport' which allows Jews and Arabs who have had the DNA-manipulating 'vaccine' to go about their lives – to work, fly, travel in general, go to shopping malls, bars, restaurants, hotels, concerts, gyms, swimming pools, theatres and sports venues, while non-'vaccinated' are banned from all those places and activities. Israelis have likened the 'green pass' to the yellow stars that Jews in Nazi Germany were forced to wear – the same as the yellow stickers that a branch of UK supermarket chain Morrisons told exempt mask-wearers they had to display when shopping. How very sensitive. The Israeli system is blatant South African-style apartheid on the basis of compliance or non-compliance to fascism rather than colour of the skin. How appropriate that the Sabbatian Israeli government was so close to the pre-Mandela apartheid regime in Pretoria. The Sabbatian-instigated 'vaccine passport' in Israel is planned for everywhere. Sabbatians struck a deal with Pfizer that allowed them to lead the way in the percentage of a national population infused with synthetic material and the result was catastrophic. Israeli freedom activist Shai Dannon told me how chairs were appearing on beaches that said 'vaccinated only'. Health Minister Yuli Edelstein said that anyone unwilling or unable to get

the jabs that 'confer immunity' will be 'left behind'. The man's a liar. Not even the makers claim the 'vaccines' confer immunity. When you see those figures of 'vaccine' deaths these psychopaths were saying that you must take the chance the 'vaccine' will kill you or maim you while knowing it will change your DNA or lockdown for you will be permanent. That's fascism. The Israeli parliament passed a law to allow personal information of the non-vaccinated to be shared with local and national authorities for three months. This was claimed by its supporters to be a way to 'encourage' people to be vaccinated. Hadas Ziv from Physicians for Human Rights described this as a 'draconian law which crushed medical ethics and the patient rights'. But that's the idea, the Sabbatians would reply.

Your papers, please

Sabbatian Israel was leading what has been planned all along to be a global 'vaccine pass' called a 'green passport' without which you would remain in permanent lockdown restriction and unable to do anything. This is how badly – *desperately* – the Cult is to get everyone 'vaccinated'. The term and colour 'green' was not by chance and related to the psychology of fusing the perception of the green climate hoax with the 'Covid' hoax and how the 'solution' to both is the same Great Reset. Lying politicians, health officials and psychologists denied there were any plans for mandatory vaccinations or restrictions based on vaccinations, but they knew that was exactly what was meant to happen with governments of all countries reaching agreements to enforce a global system. 'Free' Denmark and 'free' Sweden unveiled digital vaccine certification. Cyprus, Czech Republic, Estonia, Greece, Hungary, Iceland, Italy, Poland, Portugal, Slovakia, and Spain have all committed to a vaccine passport system and the rest including the whole of the EU would follow. The satanic UK government will certainly go this way despite mendacious denials and at the time of writing it is trying to manipulate the public into having the 'vaccine' so they could go abroad on a summer holiday. How would that work without something to prove you had the synthetic toxicity injected into you?

Documents show that the EU's European Commission was moving towards 'vaccine certificates' in 2018 and 2019 before the 'Covid' hoax began. They knew what was coming. Abracadabra – Ursula von der Leyen, the German President of the Commission, announced in March, 2021, an EU 'Digital Green Certificate' – green again – to track the public's 'Covid status'. The passport sting is worldwide and the Far East followed the same pattern with South Korea ruling that only those with 'vaccination' passports – again the *green* pass – would be able to 'return to their daily lives'.

Bill Gates has been preparing for this 'passport' with other Cult operatives for years and beyond the paper version is a Gates-funded 'digital tattoo' to identify who has been vaccinated and who hasn't. The 'tattoo' is reported to include a substance which is externally readable to confirm who has been vaccinated. This is a bio-luminous light-generating enzyme (think fireflies) called ... *Luciferase*. Yes, named after the Cult 'god' Lucifer the 'light bringer' of whom more to come. Gates said he funded the readable tattoo to ensure children in the developing world were vaccinated and no one was missed out. He cares so much about poor kids as we know. This was just the cover story to develop a vaccine tagging system for everyone on the planet. Gates has been funding the ID2020 'alliance' to do just that in league with other lovely people at Microsoft, GAVI, the Rockefeller Foundation, Accenture and IDEO.org. He said in interviews in March, 2020, before any 'vaccine' publicly existed, that the world must have a globalised digital certificate to track the 'virus' and who had been vaccinated. Gates knew from the start that the mRNA vaccines were coming and when they would come and that the plan was to tag the 'vaccinated' to marginalise the intelligent and stop them doing anything including travel. Evil just doesn't suffice. Gates was exposed for offering a \$10 million bribe to the Nigerian House of Representatives to invoke compulsory 'Covid' vaccination of all Nigerians. Sara Cunial, a member of the Italian Parliament, called Gates a 'vaccine criminal'. She urged the Italian President to hand him over to the International Criminal Court for crimes against

humanity and condemned his plans to 'chip the human race' through ID2020.

You know it's a long-planned agenda when war criminal and Cult gofer Tony Blair is on the case. With the scale of arrogance only someone as dark as Blair can muster he said: 'Vaccination in the end is going to be your route to liberty.' Blair is a disgusting piece of work and he confirms that again. The media has given a lot of coverage to a bloke called Charlie Mullins, founder of London's biggest independent plumbing company, Pimlico Plumbers, who has said he won't employ anyone who has not been vaccinated or have them go to any home where people are not vaccinated. He said that if he had his way no one would be allowed to walk the streets if they have not been vaccinated. Gates was cheering at the time while I was alerting the white coats. The plan is that people will qualify for 'passports' for having the first two doses and then to keep it they will have to have all the follow ups and new ones for invented 'variants' until human genetics is transformed and many are dead who can't adjust to the changes. Hollywood celebrities – the usual propaganda stunt – are promoting something called the WELL Health-Safety Rating to verify that a building or space has 'taken the necessary steps to prioritize the health and safety of their staff, visitors and other stakeholders'. They included Lady Gaga, Jennifer Lopez, Michael B. Jordan, Robert DeNiro, Venus Williams, Wolfgang Puck, Deepak Chopra and 17th Surgeon General Richard Carmona. Yawn. WELL Health-Safety has big connections with China. Parent company Delos is headed by former Goldman Sachs partner Paul Scialla. This is another example – and we will see so many others – of using the excuse of 'health' to dictate the lives and activities of the population. I guess one confirmation of the 'safety' of buildings is that only 'vaccinated' people can go in, right?

Electronic concentration camps

I wrote decades ago about the plans to restrict travel and here we are for those who refuse to bow to tyranny. This can be achieved in one go with air travel if the aviation industry makes a blanket decree.

The 'vaccine' and guaranteed income are designed to be part of a global version of China's social credit system which tracks behaviour 24/7 and awards or deletes 'credits' based on whether your behaviour is supported by the state or not. I mean your entire lifestyle – what you do, eat, say, everything. Once your credit score falls below a certain level consequences kick in. In China tens of millions have been denied travel by air and train because of this. All the locations and activities denied to refusers by the 'vaccine' passports will be included in one big mass ban on doing almost anything for those that don't bow their head to government. It's beyond fascist and a new term is required to describe its extremes – I guess fascist technocracy will have to do. The way the Chinese system of technological – technocratic – control is sweeping the West can be seen in the Los Angeles school system and is planned to be expanded worldwide. Every child is required to have a 'Covid'-tracking app scanned daily before they can enter the classroom. The so-called Daily Pass tracking system is produced by Gates' Microsoft which I'm sure will shock you rigid. The pass will be scanned using a barcode (one step from an inside-the-body barcode) and the information will include health checks, 'Covid' tests and vaccinations. Entry codes are for one specific building only and access will only be allowed if a student or teacher has a negative test with a test not testing for the 'virus', has no symptoms of anything alleged to be related to 'Covid' (symptoms from a range of other illness), and has a temperature under 100 degrees. No barcode, no entry, is planned to be the case for everywhere and not only schools.

Kids are being psychologically prepared to accept this as 'normal' their whole life which is why what they can impose in schools is so important to the Cult and its gofers. Long-time American freedom campaigner John Whitehead of the Rutherford Institute was not exaggerating when he said: 'Databit by databit, we are building our own electronic concentration camps.' Canada under its Cult gofer prime minister Justin Trudeau has taken a major step towards the real thing with people interned against their will if they test positive with a test not testing for the 'virus' when they arrive at a Canadian

airport. They are jailed in internment hotels often without food or water for long periods and with many doors failing to lock there have been sexual assaults. The interned are being charged sometimes \$2,000 for the privilege of being abused in this way. Trudeau is fully on board with the Cult and says the 'Covid pandemic' has provided an opportunity for a global 'reset' to permanently change Western civilisation. His number two, Deputy Prime Minister Chrystia Freeland, is a trustee of the World Economic Forum and a Rhodes Scholar. The Trudeau family have long been servants of the Cult. See *The Biggest Secret* and Cathy O'Brien's book *Trance-Formation of America* for the horrific background to Trudeau's father Pierre Trudeau another Canadian prime minister. Hide your fascism behind the façade of a heart-on-the-sleeve liberal. It's a well-honed Cult technique.

What can the 'vaccine' really do?

We have a 'virus' never shown to exist and 'variants' of the 'virus' that have also never been shown to exist except, like the 'original', as computer-generated fictions. Even if you believe there's a 'virus' the 'case' to 'death' rate is in the region of 0.23 to 0.15 percent and those 'deaths' are concentrated among the very old around the same average age that people die anyway. In response to this lack of threat (in truth none) psychopaths and idiots, knowingly and unknowingly answering to Gates and the Cult, are seeking to 'vaccinate' every man, woman and child on Planet Earth. Clearly the 'vaccine' is not about 'Covid' – none of this ever has been. So what is it all about *really*? Why the desperation to infuse genetically-manipulating synthetic material into everyone through mRNA fraudulent 'vaccines' with the intent of doing this over and over with the excuses of 'variants' and other 'virus' inventions? Dr Sherri Tenpenny, an osteopathic medical doctor in the United States, has made herself an expert on vaccines and their effects as a vehement campaigner against their use. Tenpenny was board certified in emergency medicine, the director of a level two trauma centre for 12 years, and moved to Cleveland in 1996 to start an integrative

medicine practice which has treated patients from all 50 states and some 17 other countries. Weaning people off pharmaceutical drugs is a speciality.

She became interested in the consequences of vaccines after attending a meeting at the National Vaccine Information Center in Washington DC in 2000 where she 'sat through four days of listening to medical doctors and scientists and lawyers and parents of vaccine injured kids' and asked: 'What's going on?' She had never been vaccinated and never got ill while her father was given a list of vaccines to be in the military and was 'sick his entire life'. The experience added to her questions and she began to examine vaccine documents from the Centers for Disease Control (CDC). After reading the first one, the 1998 version of *The General Recommendations of Vaccination*, she thought: 'This is it?' The document was poorly written and bad science and Tenpenny began 20 years of research into vaccines that continues to this day. She began her research into 'Covid vaccines' in March, 2020, and she describes them as 'deadly'. For many, as we have seen, they already have been. Tenpenny said that in the first 30 days of the 'vaccine' rollout in the United States there had been more than 40,000 adverse events reported to the vaccine adverse event database. A document had been delivered to her the day before that was 172 pages long. 'We have over 40,000 adverse events; we have over 3,100 cases of [potentially deadly] anaphylactic shock; we have over 5,000 neurological reactions.' Effects ranged from headaches to numbness, dizziness and vertigo, to losing feeling in hands or feet and paraesthesia which is when limbs 'fall asleep' and people have the sensation of insects crawling underneath their skin. All this happened in the first 30 days and remember that only about *ten percent* (or far less) of adverse reactions and vaccine-related deaths are estimated to be officially reported. Tenpenny said:

So can you think of one single product in any industry, any industry, for as long as products have been made on the planet that within 30 days we have 40,000 people complaining of side effects that not only is still on the market but ... we've got paid actors telling us how great

they are for getting their vaccine. We're offering people \$500 if they will just get their vaccine and we've got nurses and doctors going; 'I got the vaccine, I got the vaccine'.

Tenpenny said they were not going to be 'happy dancing folks' when they began to suffer Bell's palsy (facial paralysis), neuropathies, cardiac arrhythmias and autoimmune reactions that kill through a blood disorder. 'They're not going to be so happy, happy then, but we're never going to see pictures of those people' she said. Tenpenny described the 'vaccine' as 'a well-designed killing tool'.

No off-switch

Bad as the initial consequences had been Tenpenny said it would be maybe 14 months before we began to see the 'full ravage' of what is going to happen to the 'Covid vaccinated' with full-out consequences taking anything between two years and 20 years to show. You can understand why when you consider that variations of the 'Covid vaccine' use mRNA (messenger RNA) to in theory activate the immune system to produce protective antibodies without using the actual 'virus'. How can they when it's a computer program and they've never isolated what they claim is the 'real thing'? Instead they use *synthetic* mRNA. They are inoculating synthetic material into the body which through a technique known as the Trojan horse is absorbed into cells to change the nature of DNA. Human DNA is changed by an infusion of messenger RNA and with each new 'vaccine' of this type it is changed even more. Say so and you are banned by Cult Internet platforms. The contempt the contemptuous Mark Zuckerberg has for the truth and human health can be seen in an internal Facebook video leaked to the Project Veritas investigative team in which he said of the 'Covid vaccines': '... I share some caution on this because we just don't know the long term side-effects of basically modifying people's DNA and RNA.' At the same time this disgusting man's Facebook was censoring and banning anyone saying exactly the same. He must go before a Nuremberg trial for crimes against humanity when he *knows* that he

is censoring legitimate concerns and denying the right of informed consent on behalf of the Cult that owns him. People have been killed and damaged by the very 'vaccination' technique he cast doubt on himself when they may not have had the 'vaccine' with access to information that he denied them. The plan is to have at least annual 'Covid vaccinations', add others to deal with invented 'variants', and change all other vaccines into the mRNA system. Pfizer executives told shareholders at a virtual Barclays Global Healthcare Conference in March, 2021, that the public may need a third dose of 'Covid vaccine', plus regular yearly boosters and the company planned to hike prices to milk the profits in a 'significant opportunity for our vaccine'. These are the professional liars, cheats and opportunists who are telling you their 'vaccine' is safe. Given this volume of mRNA planned to be infused into the human body and its ability to then replicate we will have a transformation of human genetics from biological to synthetic biological – exactly the long-time Cult plan for reasons we'll see – and many will die. Sherri Tenpenny said of this replication:

It's like having an on-button but no off-button and that whole mechanism ... they actually give it a name and they call it the Trojan horse mechanism, because it allows that [synthetic] virus and that piece of that [synthetic] virus to get inside of your cells, start to replicate and even get inserted into other parts of your DNA as a Trojan-horse.

Ask the overwhelming majority of people who have the 'vaccine' what they know about the contents and what they do and they would reply: 'The government says it will stop me getting the virus.' Governments give that false impression on purpose to increase take-up. You can read Sherri Tenpenny's detailed analysis of the health consequences in her blog at [Vaxxter.com](https://vaxxter.com), but in summary these are some of them. She highlights the statement by Bill Gates about how human beings can become their own 'vaccine manufacturing machine'. The man is insane. ['Vaccine'-generated] 'antibodies' carry synthetic messenger RNA into the cells and the damage starts, Tenpenny contends, and she says that lungs can be adversely affected through varying degrees of pus and bleeding which

obviously affects breathing and would be dubbed 'Covid-19'. Even more sinister was the impact of 'antibodies' on macrophages, a white blood cell of the immune system. They consist of Type 1 and Type 2 which have very different functions. She said Type 1 are 'hyper-vigilant' white blood cells which 'gobble up' bacteria etc. However, in doing so, this could cause inflammation and in extreme circumstances be fatal. She says these affects are mitigated by Type 2 macrophages which kick in to calm down the system and stop it going rogue. They clear up dead tissue debris and reduce inflammation that the Type 1 'fire crews' have caused. Type 1 kills the infection and Type 2 heals the damage, she says. This is her punchline with regard to 'Covid vaccinations': She says that mRNA 'antibodies' block Type 2 macrophages by attaching to them and deactivating them. This meant that when the Type 1 response was triggered by infection there was nothing to stop that getting out of hand by calming everything down. There's an on-switch, but no off-switch, she says. What follows can be 'over and out, see you when I see you'.

Genetic suicide

Tenpenny also highlights the potential for autoimmune disease – the body attacking itself – which has been associated with vaccines since they first appeared. Infusing a synthetic foreign substance into cells could cause the immune system to react in a panic believing that the body is being overwhelmed by an invader (it is) and the consequences can again be fatal. There is an autoimmune response known as a 'cytokine storm' which I have likened to a homeowner panicked by an intruder and picking up a gun to shoot randomly in all directions before turning the fire on himself. The immune system unleashes a storm of inflammatory response called cytokines to a threat and the body commits hara-kiri. The lesson is that you mess with the body's immune response at your peril and these 'vaccines' seriously – fundamentally – mess with immune response. Tenpenny refers to a consequence called anaphylactic shock which is a severe and highly dangerous allergic reaction when the immune system

floods the body with chemicals. She gives the example of having a bee sting which primes the immune system and makes it sensitive to those chemicals. When people are stung again maybe years later the immune response can be so powerful that it leads to anaphylactic shock. Tenpenny relates this 'shock' with regard to the 'Covid vaccine' to something called polyethylene glycol or PEG. Enormous numbers of people have become sensitive to this over decades of use in a whole range of products and processes including food, drink, skin creams and 'medicine'. Studies have claimed that some 72 percent of people have antibodies triggered by PEG compared with two percent in the 1960s and allergic hypersensitive reactions to this become a gathering cause for concern. Tenpenny points out that the 'mRNA vaccine' is coated in a 'bubble' of polyethylene glycol which has the potential to cause anaphylactic shock through immune sensitivity. Many reports have appeared of people reacting this way after having the 'Covid vaccine'. What do we think is going to happen as humanity has more and more of these 'vaccines'?

Tenpenny said: 'All these pictures we have seen with people with these rashes ... these weepy rashes, big reactions on their arms and things like that – it's an acute allergic reaction most likely to the polyethylene glycol that you've been previously primed and sensitised to.'

Those who have not studied the conspiracy and its perpetrators at length might think that making the population sensitive to PEG and then putting it in these 'vaccines' is just a coincidence. It is not. It is instead testament to how carefully and coldly-planned current events have been and the scale of the conspiracy we are dealing with. Tenpenny further explains that the 'vaccine' mRNA procedure can breach the blood-brain barrier which protects the brain from toxins and other crap that will cause malfunction. In this case they could make two proteins corrupt brain function to cause Amyotrophic lateral sclerosis (ALS), a progressive nervous system disease leading to loss of muscle control, and frontal lobe degeneration – Alzheimer's and dementia. Immunologist J. Bart Classon published a paper connecting mRNA 'vaccines' to prion

disease which can lead to Alzheimer's and other forms of neurodegenerative disease while others have pointed out the potential to affect the placenta in ways that make women infertile. This will become highly significant in the next chapter when I will discuss other aspects of this non-vaccine that relate to its nanotechnology and transmission from the injected to the uninjected.

Qualified in idiocy

Tenpenny describes how research has confirmed that these 'vaccine'-generated antibodies can interact with a range of other tissues in the body and attack many other organs including the lungs. 'This means that if you have a hundred people standing in front of you that all got this shot they could have a hundred different symptoms.' Anyone really think that Cult gofers like the Queen, Tony Blair, Christopher Whitty, Anthony Fauci, and all the other psychopaths have really had this 'vaccine' in the pictures we've seen? Not a bloody chance. Why don't doctors all tell us about all these dangers and consequences of the 'Covid vaccine'? Why instead do they encourage and pressure patients to have the shot? Don't let's think for a moment that doctors and medical staff can't be stupid, lazy, and psychopathic and that's without the financial incentives to give the jab. Tenpenny again:

Some people are going to die from the vaccine directly but a large number of people are going to start to get horribly sick and get all kinds of autoimmune diseases 42 days to maybe a year out. What are they going to do, these stupid doctors who say; 'Good for you for getting that vaccine.' What are they going to say; 'Oh, it must be a mutant, we need to give an extra dose of that vaccine.'

Because now the vaccine, instead of one dose or two doses we need three or four because the stupid physicians aren't taking the time to learn anything about it. If I can learn this sitting in my living room reading a 19 page paper and several others so can they. There's nothing special about me, I just take the time to do it.

Remember how Sara Kayat, the NHS and TV doctor, said that the 'Covid vaccine' would '100 percent prevent hospitalisation and death'. Doctors can be idiots like every other profession and they

should not be worshipped as infallible. They are not and far from it. Behind many medical and scientific 'experts' lies an uninformed prat trying to hide themselves from you although in the 'Covid' era many have failed to do so as with UK narrative-repeating 'TV doctor' Hilary Jones. Pushing back against the minority of proper doctors and scientists speaking out against the 'vaccine' has been the entire edifice of the Cult global state in the form of governments, medical systems, corporations, mainstream media, Silicon Valley, and an army of compliant doctors, medical staff and scientists willing to say anything for money and to enhance their careers by promoting the party line. If you do that you are an 'expert' and if you won't you are an 'anti-vaxxer' and 'Covidiot'. The pressure to be 'vaccinated' is incessant. We have even had reports claiming that the 'vaccine' can help cure cancer and Alzheimer's and make the lame walk. I am waiting for the announcement that it can bring you coffee in the morning and cook your tea. Just as the symptoms of 'Covid' seem to increase by the week so have the miracles of the 'vaccine'. American supermarket giant Kroger Co. offered nearly 500,000 employees in 35 states a \$100 bonus for having the 'vaccine' while donut chain Krispy Kreme promised 'vaccinated' customers a free glazed donut every day for the rest of 2021. Have your DNA changed and you will get a doughnut although we might not have to give you them for long. Such offers and incentives confirm the desperation.

Perhaps the worse vaccine-stunt of them all was UK 'Health' Secretary Matt-the-prat Hancock on live TV after watching a clip of someone being 'vaccinated' when the roll-out began. Hancock faked tears so badly it was embarrassing. Brain-of-Britain Piers Morgan, the lockdown-supporting, 'vaccine' supporting, 'vaccine' passport-supporting, TV host played along with Hancock – 'You're quite emotional about that' he said in response to acting so atrocious it would have been called out at a school nativity which will presumably today include Mary and Jesus in masks, wise men keeping their camels six feet apart, and shepherds under tent arrest. System-serving Morgan tweeted this: 'Love the idea of covid vaccine passports for everywhere: flights, restaurants, clubs, football, gyms,

shops etc. It's time covid-denying, anti-vaxxer loonies had their bullsh*t bluff called & bar themselves from going anywhere that responsible citizens go.' If only I could aspire to his genius. To think that Morgan, who specialises in shouting over anyone he disagrees with, was lauded as a free speech hero when he lost his job after storming off the set of his live show like a child throwing his dolly out of the pram. If he is a free speech hero we are in real trouble. I have no idea what 'bullsh*t' means, by the way, the * throws me completely.

The Cult is desperate to infuse its synthetic DNA-changing concoction into everyone and has been using every lie, trick and intimidation to do so. The question of '*Why?*' we shall now address.

CHAPTER TEN

Human 2.0

I believe that at the end of the century the use of words and general educated opinion will have altered so much that one will be able to speak of machines thinking without expecting to be contradicted –
Alan Turing (1912-1954), the ‘Father of artificial intelligence’

I have been exposing for decades the plan to transform the human body from a biological to a synthetic-biological state. The new human that I will call Human 2.0 is planned to be connected to artificial intelligence and a global AI ‘Smart Grid’ that would operate as one global system in which AI would control everything from your fridge to your heating system to your car to your mind. Humans would no longer be ‘human’, but post-human and sub-human, with their thinking and emotional processes replaced by AI.

What I said sounded crazy and beyond science fiction and I could understand that. To any balanced, rational, mind it *is* crazy. Today, however, that world is becoming reality and it puts the ‘Covid vaccine’ into its true context. Ray Kurzweil is the ultra-Zionist ‘computer scientist, inventor and futurist’ and co-founder of the Singularity University. Singularity refers to the merging of humans with machines or ‘transhumanism’. Kurzweil has said humanity would be connected to the cyber ‘cloud’ in the period of the ever-recurring year of 2030:

Our thinking ... will be a hybrid of biological and non-biological thinking ... humans will be able to extend their limitations and ‘think in the cloud’ ... We’re going to put gateways to the

cloud in our brains ... We're going to gradually merge and enhance ourselves ... In my view, that's the nature of being human – we transcend our limitations. As the technology becomes vastly superior to what we are then the small proportion that is still human gets smaller and smaller and smaller until it's just utterly negligible.

They are trying to sell this end-of-humanity-as-we-know-it as the next stage of 'evolution' when we become super-human and 'like the gods'. They are lying to you. Shocked, eh? The population, and again especially the young, have been manipulated into addiction to technologies designed to enslave them for life. First they induced an addiction to smartphones (holdables); next they moved to technology on the body (wearables); and then began the invasion of the body (implantables). I warned way back about the plan for microchipped people and we are now entering that era. We should not be diverted into thinking that this refers only to chips we can see. Most important are the nanochips known as smart dust, neural dust and nanobots which are far too small to be seen by the human eye. Nanotechnology is everywhere, increasingly in food products, and released into the atmosphere by the geoengineering of the skies funded by Bill Gates to 'shut out the Sun' and 'save the planet from global warming'. Gates has been funding a project to spray millions of tonnes of chalk (calcium carbonate) into the stratosphere over Sweden to 'dim the Sun' and cool the Earth. Scientists warned the move could be disastrous for weather systems in ways no one can predict and opposition led to the Swedish space agency announcing that the 'experiment' would not be happening as planned in the summer of 2021; but it shows where the Cult is going with dimming the impact of the Sun and there's an associated plan to change the planet's atmosphere. Who gives psychopath Gates the right to dictate to the entire human race and dismantle planetary systems? The world will not be safe while this man is at large.

The global warming hoax has made the Sun, like the gas of life, something to fear when both are essential to good health and human survival (more inversion). The body transforms sunlight into vital vitamin D through a process involving ... *cholesterol*. This is the cholesterol we are also told to fear. We are urged to take Big Pharma

statin drugs to reduce cholesterol and it's all systematic. Reducing cholesterol means reducing vitamin D uptake with all the multiple health problems that will cause. At least if you take statins long term it saves the government from having to pay you a pension. The delivery system to block sunlight is widely referred to as chemtrails although these have a much deeper agenda, too. They appear at first to be contrails or condensation trails streaming from aircraft into cold air at high altitudes. Contrails disperse very quickly while chemtrails do not and spread out across the sky before eventually their content falls to earth. Many times I have watched aircraft cross-cross a clear blue sky releasing chemtrails until it looks like a cloudy day. Chemtrails contain many things harmful to humans and the natural world including toxic heavy metals, aluminium (see Alzheimer's) and nanotechnology. Ray Kurzweil reveals the reason without actually saying so: 'Nanobots will infuse all the matter around us with information. Rocks, trees, everything will become these intelligent creatures.' How do you deliver that? *From the sky*. Self-replicating nanobots would connect everything to the Smart Grid. The phenomenon of Morgellons disease began in the chemtrail era and the correlation has led to it being dubbed the 'chemtrail disease'. Self-replicating fibres appear in the body that can be pulled out through the skin. Morgellons fibres continue to grow outside the body and have a form of artificial intelligence. I cover this at greater length in *Phantom Self*.

'Vaccine' operating system

'Covid vaccines' with their self-replicating synthetic material are also designed to make the connection between humanity and Kurzweil's 'cloud'. American doctor and dedicated campaigner for truth, Carrie Madej, an Internal Medicine Specialist in Georgia with more than 20 years medical experience, has highlighted the nanotechnology aspect of the fake 'vaccines'. She explains how one of the components in at least the Moderna and Pfizer synthetic potions are 'lipid nanoparticles' which are 'like little tiny computer bits' – a 'sci-fi substance' known as nanobots and hydrogel which can be 'triggered

at any moment to deliver its payload' and act as 'biosensors'. The synthetic substance had 'the ability to accumulate data from your body like your breathing, your respiration, thoughts and emotions, all kind of things' and each syringe could carry a *million* nanobots:

This substance because it's like little bits of computers in your body, crazy, but it's true, it can do that, [and] obviously has the ability to act through Wi-Fi. It can receive and transmit energy, messages, frequencies or impulses. That issue has never been addressed by these companies. What does that do to the human?

Just imagine getting this substance in you and it can react to things all around you, the 5G, your smart device, your phones, what is happening with that? What if something is triggering it, too, like an impulse, a frequency? We have something completely foreign in the human body.

Madej said her research revealed that electromagnetic (EMF) frequencies emitted by phones and other devices had increased dramatically in the same period of the 'vaccine' rollout and she was seeing more people with radiation problems as 5G and other electromagnetic technology was expanded and introduced to schools and hospitals. She said she was 'floored with the EMF coming off' the devices she checked. All this makes total sense and syncs with my own work of decades when you think that Moderna refers in documents to its mRNA 'vaccine' as an 'operating system':

Recognizing the broad potential of mRNA science, we set out to create an mRNA technology platform that functions very much like an operating system on a computer. It is designed so that it can plug and play interchangeably with different programs. In our case, the 'program' or 'app' is our mRNA drug – the unique mRNA sequence that codes for a protein ...

... Our MRNA Medicines – 'The 'Software Of Life': When we have a concept for a new mRNA medicine and begin research, fundamental components are already in place. Generally, the only thing that changes from one potential mRNA medicine to another is the coding region – the actual genetic code that instructs ribosomes to make protein. Utilizing these instruction sets gives our investigational mRNA medicines a software-like quality. We also have the ability to combine different mRNA sequences encoding for different proteins in a single mRNA investigational medicine.

Who needs a real ‘virus’ when you can create a computer version to justify infusing your operating system into the entire human race on the road to making living, breathing people into cyborgs? What is missed with the ‘vaccines’ is the *digital* connection between synthetic material and the body that I highlighted earlier with the study that hacked a computer with human DNA. On one level the body is digital, based on mathematical codes, and I’ll have more about that in the next chapter. Those who ridiculously claim that mRNA ‘vaccines’ are not designed to change human genetics should explain the words of Dr Tal Zaks, chief medical officer at Moderna, in a 2017 TED talk. He said that over the last 30 years ‘we’ve been living this phenomenal digital scientific revolution, and I’m here today to tell you, that we are actually *hacking the software of life*, and that it’s changing the way we think about prevention and treatment of disease’:

In every cell there’s this thing called messenger RNA, or mRNA for short, that transmits the critical information from the DNA in our genes to the protein, which is really the stuff we’re all made out of. This is the critical information that determines what the cell will do. So we think about it as an operating system. So if you could change that, if you could introduce a line of code, or change a line of code, it turns out, that has profound implications for everything, from the flu to cancer.

Zaks should more accurately have said that this has profound implications for the human genetic code and the nature of DNA. Communications within the body go both ways and not only one. But, hey, no, the ‘Covid vaccine’ will not affect your genetics. Cult fact-checkers say so even though the man who helped to develop the mRNA technique says that it does. Zaks said in 2017:

If you think about what it is we’re trying to do. We’ve taken information and our understanding of that information and how that information is transmitted in a cell, and we’ve taken our understanding of medicine and how to make drugs, and we’re fusing the two. We think of it as information therapy.

I have been writing for decades that the body is an information field communicating with itself and the wider world. This is why

radiation which is information can change the information field of body and mind through phenomena like 5G and change their nature and function. 'Information therapy' means to change the body's information field and change the way it operates. DNA is a receiver-transmitter of information and can be mutated by information like mRNA synthetic messaging. Technology to do this has been ready and waiting in the underground bases and other secret projects to be rolled out when the 'Covid' hoax was played. 'Trials' of such short and irrelevant duration were only for public consumption. When they say the 'vaccine' is 'experimental' that is not true. It may appear to be 'experimental' to those who don't know what's going on, but the trials have already been done to ensure the Cult gets the result it desires. Zaks said that it took decades to sequence the human genome, completed in 2003, but now they could do it in a week. By 'they' he means scientists operating in the public domain. In the secret projects they were sequencing the genome in a week long before even 2003.

Deluge of mRNA

Highly significantly the Moderna document says the guiding premise is that if using mRNA as a medicine works for one disease then it should work for many diseases. They were leveraging the flexibility afforded by their platform and the fundamental role mRNA plays in protein synthesis to pursue mRNA medicines for a broad spectrum of diseases. Moderna is confirming what I was saying through 2020 that multiple 'vaccines' were planned for 'Covid' (and later invented 'variants') and that previous vaccines would be converted to the mRNA system to infuse the body with massive amounts of genetically-manipulating synthetic material to secure a transformation to a synthetic-biological state. The 'vaccines' are designed to kill stunning numbers as part of the long-exposed Cult depopulation agenda and transform the rest. Given this is the goal you can appreciate why there is such hysterical demand for every human to be 'vaccinated' for an alleged 'disease' that has an estimated 'infection' to 'death' ratio of 0.23-0.15 percent. As I write

children are being given the 'vaccine' in trials (their parents are a disgrace) and ever-younger people are being offered the vaccine for a 'virus' that even if you believe it exists has virtually zero chance of harming them. Horrific effects of the 'trials' on a 12-year-old girl were revealed by a family member to be serious brain and gastric problems that included a bowel obstruction and the inability to swallow liquids or solids. She was unable to eat or drink without throwing up, had extreme pain in her back, neck and abdomen, and was paralysed from the waist down which stopped her urinating unaided. When the girl was first taken to hospital doctors said it was all in her mind. She was signed up for the 'trial' by her parents for whom no words suffice. None of this 'Covid vaccine' insanity makes any sense unless you see what the 'vaccine' really is – a body-changer. Synthetic biology or 'SynBio' is a fast-emerging and expanding scientific discipline which includes everything from genetic and molecular engineering to electrical and computer engineering. Synthetic biology is defined in these ways:

- A multidisciplinary area of research that seeks to create new biological parts, devices, and systems, or to redesign systems that are already found in nature.
- The use of a mixture of physical engineering and genetic engineering to create new (and therefore synthetic) life forms.
- An emerging field of research that aims to combine the knowledge and methods of biology, engineering and related disciplines in the design of chemically-synthesized DNA to create organisms with novel or enhanced characteristics and traits (synthetic organisms including humans).

We now have synthetic blood, skin, organs and limbs being developed along with synthetic body parts produced by 3D printers. These are all elements of the synthetic human programme and this comment by Kurzweil's co-founder of the Singularity University,

Peter Diamandis, can be seen in a whole new light with the 'Covid' hoax and the sanctions against those that refuse the 'vaccine':

Anybody who is going to be resisting the progress forward [to transhumanism] is going to be resisting evolution and, fundamentally, they will die out. It's not a matter of whether it's good or bad. It's going to happen.

'Resisting evolution'? What absolute bollocks. The arrogance of these people is without limit. His 'it's going to happen' mantra is another way of saying 'resistance is futile' to break the spirit of those pushing back and we must not fall for it. Getting this genetically-transforming 'vaccine' into everyone is crucial to the Cult plan for total control and the desperation to achieve that is clear for anyone to see. Vaccine passports are a major factor in this and they, too, are a form of resistance is futile. It's NOT. The paper funded by the Rockefeller Foundation for the 2013 'health conference' in China said:

We will interact more with artificial intelligence. The use of robotics, bio-engineering to augment human functioning is already well underway and will advance. Re-engineering of humans into potentially separate and unequal forms through genetic engineering or mixed human-robots raises debates on ethics and equality.

A new demography is projected to emerge after 2030 [that year again] of technologies (robotics, genetic engineering, nanotechnology) producing robots, engineered organisms, 'nanobots' and artificial intelligence (AI) that can self-replicate. Debates will grow on the implications of an impending reality of human designed life.

What is happening today is so long planned. The world army enforcing the will of the world government is intended to be a robot army, not a human one. Today's military and its technologically 'enhanced' troops, pilotless planes and driverless vehicles are just stepping stones to that end. Human soldiers are used as Cult fodder and its time they woke up to that and worked for the freedom of the population instead of their own destruction and their family's destruction – the same with the police. Join us and let's sort this out. The phenomenon of enforce my own destruction is widespread in the 'Covid' era with Woker 'luvvies' in the acting and entertainment

industries supporting 'Covid' rules which have destroyed their profession and the same with those among the public who put signs on the doors of their businesses 'closed due to Covid – stay safe' when many will never reopen. It's a form of masochism and most certainly insanity.

Transgender = transhumanism

When something explodes out of nowhere and is suddenly everywhere it is always the Cult agenda and so it is with the tidal wave of claims and demands that have infiltrated every aspect of society under the heading of 'transgenderism'. The term 'trans' is so 'in' and this is the dictionary definition:

A prefix meaning 'across', 'through', occurring ... in loanwords from Latin, used in particular for denoting movement or conveyance from place to place (transfer; transmit; transplant) or complete change (transform; transmute), or to form adjectives meaning 'crossing', 'on the other side of', or 'going beyond' the place named (transmontane; transnational; trans-Siberian).

Transgender means to go beyond gender and transhuman means to go beyond human. Both are aspects of the Cult plan to transform the human body to a synthetic state with *no gender*. Human 2.0 is not designed to procreate and would be produced technologically with no need for parents. The new human would mean the end of parents and so men, and increasingly women, are being targeted for the deletion of their rights and status. Parental rights are disappearing at an ever-quickenning speed for the same reason. The new human would have no need for men or women when there is no procreation and no gender. Perhaps the transgender movement that appears to be in a permanent state of frenzy might now contemplate on how it is being used. This was never about transgender rights which are only the interim excuse for confusing gender, particularly in the young, on the road to *fusing* gender. Transgender activism is not an end; it is a *means* to an end. We see again the technique of creative destruction in which you destroy the status quo to 'build back better' in the form that you want. The gender status quo had to be

destroyed by persuading the Cult-created Woke mentality to believe that you can have 100 genders or more. A programme for 9 to 12 year olds produced by the Cult-owned BBC promoted the 100 genders narrative. The very idea may be the most monumental nonsense, but it is not what is true that counts, only what you can make people *believe* is true. Once the gender of $2 + 2 = 4$ has been dismantled through indoctrination, intimidation and $2 + 2 = 5$ then the new no-gender normal can take its place with Human 2.0.

Aldous Huxley revealed the plan in his prophetic *Brave New World* in 1932:

Natural reproduction has been done away with and children are created, decanted', and raised in 'hatcheries and conditioning centres'. From birth, people are genetically designed to fit into one of five castes, which are further split into 'Plus' and 'Minus' members and designed to fulfil predetermined positions within the social and economic strata of the World State.

How could Huxley know this in 1932? For the same reason George Orwell knew about the Big Brother state in 1948, Cult insiders I have quoted knew about it in 1969, and I have known about it since the early 1990s. If you are connected to the Cult or you work your balls off to uncover the plan you can predict the future. The process is simple. If there is a plan for the world and nothing intervenes to stop it then it will happen. Thus if you communicate the plan ahead of time you are perceived to have predicted the future, but you haven't. You have revealed the plan which without intervention will become the human future. The whole reason I have done what I have is to alert enough people to inspire an intervention and maybe at last that time has come with the Cult and its intentions now so obvious to anyone with a brain in working order.

The future is here

Technological wombs that Huxley described to replace parent procreation are already being developed and they are only the projects we know about in the public arena. Israeli scientists told *The Times of Israel* in March, 2021, that they have grown 250-cell embryos

into mouse fetuses with fully formed organs using artificial wombs in a development they say could pave the way for gestating humans outside the womb. Professor Jacob Hanna of the Weizmann Institute of Science said:

We took mouse embryos from the mother at day five of development, when they are just of 250 cells, and had them in the incubator from day five until day 11, by which point they had grown all their organs.

By day 11 they make their own blood and have a beating heart, a fully developed brain. Anybody would look at them and say, 'this is clearly a mouse foetus with all the characteristics of a mouse.' It's gone from being a ball of cells to being an advanced foetus.

A special liquid is used to nourish embryo cells in a laboratory dish and they float on the liquid to duplicate the first stage of embryonic development. The incubator creates all the right conditions for its development, Hanna said. The liquid gives the embryo 'all the nutrients, hormones and sugars they need' along with a custom-made electronic incubator which controls gas concentration, pressure and temperature. The cutting-edge in the underground bases and other secret locations will be light years ahead of that, however, and this was reported by the London *Guardian* in 2017:

We are approaching a biotechnological breakthrough. Ectogenesis, the invention of a complete external womb, could completely change the nature of human reproduction. In April this year, researchers at the Children's Hospital of Philadelphia announced their development of an artificial womb.

The article was headed 'Artificial wombs could soon be a reality. What will this mean for women?' What would it mean for children is an even bigger question. No mother to bond with only a machine in preparation for a life of soulless interaction and control in a world governed by machines (see the *Matrix* movies). Now observe the calculated manipulations of the 'Covid' hoax as human interaction and warmth has been curtailed by distancing, isolation and fear with people communicating via machines on a scale never seen before.

These are all dots in the same picture as are all the personal assistants, gadgets and children's toys through which kids and adults communicate with AI as if it is human. The AI 'voice' on Sat-Nav should be included. All these things are psychological preparation for the Cult endgame. Before you can make a physical connection with AI you have to make a psychological connection and that is what people are being conditioned to do with this ever gathering human-AI interaction. Movies and TV programmes depicting the transhuman, robot dystopia relate to a phenomenon known as 'pre-emptive programming' in which the world that is planned is portrayed everywhere in movies, TV and advertising. This is conditioning the conscious and subconscious mind to become familiar with the planned reality to dilute resistance when it happens for real. What would have been a shock such is the change is made less so. We have young children put on the road to transgender transition surgery with puberty blocking drugs at an age when they could never be able to make those life-changing decisions.

Rachel Levine, a professor of paediatrics and psychiatry who believes in treating children this way, became America's highest-ranked openly-transgender official when she was confirmed as US Assistant Secretary at the Department of Health and Human Services after being nominated by Joe Biden (the Cult). Activists and governments press for laws to deny parents a say in their children's transition process so the kids can be isolated and manipulated into agreeing to irreversible medical procedures. A Canadian father Robert Hoogland was denied bail by the Vancouver Supreme Court in 2021 and remained in jail for breaching a court order that he stay silent over his young teenage daughter, a minor, who was being offered life-changing hormone therapy without parental consent. At the age of 12 the girl's 'school counsellor' said she may be transgender, referred her to a doctor and told the school to treat her like a boy. This is another example of state-serving schools imposing ever more control over children's lives while parents have ever less.

Contemptible and extreme child abuse is happening all over the world as the Cult gender-fusion operation goes into warp-speed.

Why the war on men – and now women?

The question about what artificial wombs mean for women should rightly be asked. The answer can be seen in the deletion of women's rights involving sport, changing rooms, toilets and status in favour of people in male bodies claiming to identify as women. I can identify as a mountain climber, but it doesn't mean I can climb a mountain any more than a biological man can be a biological woman. To believe so is a triumph of belief over factual reality which is the very perceptual basis of everything Woke. Women's sport is being destroyed by allowing those with male bodies who say they identify as female to 'compete' with girls and women. Male body 'women' dominate 'women's' competition with their greater muscle mass, bone density, strength and speed. With that disadvantage sport for women loses all meaning. To put this in perspective nearly 300 American high school boys can run faster than the quickest woman sprinter in the world. Women are seeing their previously protected spaces invaded by male bodies simply because they claim to identify as women. That's all they need to do to access all women's spaces and activities under the Biden 'Equality Act' that destroys equality for women with the usual Orwellian Woke inversion. Male sex offenders have already committed rapes in women's prisons after claiming to identify as women to get them transferred. Does this not matter to the Woke 'equality' hypocrites? Not in the least. What matters to Cult manipulators and funders behind transgender activists is to advance gender fusion on the way to the no-gender 'human'. When you are seeking to impose transparent nonsense like this, or the 'Covid' hoax, the only way the nonsense can prevail is through censorship and intimidation of dissenters, deletion of factual information, and programming of the unquestioning, bewildered and naive. You don't have to scan the world for long to see that all these things are happening.

Many women's rights organisations have realised that rights and status which took such a long time to secure are being eroded and that it is systematic. Kara Dansky of the global Women's Human Rights Campaign said that Biden's transgender executive order immediately he took office, subsequent orders, and Equality Act legislation that followed 'seek to erase women and girls in the law as a category'. *Exactly*. I said during the long ago-started war on men (in which many women play a crucial part) that this was going to turn into a war on them. The Cult is phasing out *both* male and female genders. To get away with that they are brought into conflict so they are busy fighting each other while the Cult completes the job with no unity of response. Unity, people, *unity*. We need unity everywhere. Transgender is the only show in town as the big step towards the no-gender human. It's not about rights for transgender people and never has been. Woke political correctness is deleting words relating to genders to the same end. Wokers believe this is to be 'inclusive' when the opposite is true. They are deleting words describing gender because gender *itself* is being deleted by Human 2.0. Terms like 'man', 'woman', 'mother' and 'father' are being deleted in the universities and other institutions to be replaced by the *no*-gender, not trans-gender, 'individuals' and 'guardians'. Women's rights campaigner Maria Keffler of Partners for Ethical Care said: 'Children are being taught from kindergarten upward that some boys have a vagina, some girls have a penis, and that kids can be any gender they want to be.' Do we really believe that suddenly countries all over the world at the same time had the idea of having drag queens go into schools or read transgender stories to very young children in the local library? It's coldly-calculated confusion of gender on the way to the fusion of gender. Suzanne Vierling, a psychologist from Southern California, made another important point:

Yesterday's slave woman who endured gynecological medical experiments is today's girl-child being butchered in a booming gender-transitioning sector. Ovaries removed, pushing her into menopause and osteoporosis, uncharted territory, and parents' rights and authority decimated.

The erosion of parental rights is a common theme in line with the Cult plans to erase the very concept of parents and 'ovaries removed, pushing her into menopause' means what? Those born female lose the ability to have children – another way to discontinue humanity as we know it.

Eliminating Human 1.0 (before our very eyes)

To pave the way for Human 2.0 you must phase out Human 1.0. This is happening through plummeting sperm counts and making women infertile through an onslaught of chemicals, radiation (including smartphones in pockets of men) and mRNA 'vaccines'. Common agriculture pesticides are also having a devastating impact on human fertility. I have been tracking collapsing sperm counts in the books for a long time and in 2021 came a book by fertility scientist and reproductive epidemiologist Shanna Swan, *Count Down: How Our Modern World Is Threatening Sperm Counts, Altering Male and Female Reproductive Development and Imperiling the Future of the Human Race*. She reports how the global fertility rate dropped by *half* between 1960 and 2016 with America's birth rate 16 percent below where it needs to be to sustain the population. Women are experiencing declining egg quality, more miscarriages, and more couples suffer from infertility. Other findings were an increase in erectile dysfunction, infant boys developing more genital abnormalities, male problems with conception, and plunging levels of the male hormone testosterone which would explain why so many men have lost their backbone and masculinity. This has been very evident during the 'Covid' hoax when women have been prominent among the Pushbackers and big strapping blokes have bowed their heads, covered their faces with a nappy and quietly submitted. Mind control expert Cathy O'Brien also points to how global education introduced the concept of 'we're all winners' in sport and classrooms: 'Competition was defused, and it in turn defused a sense of fighting back.' This is another version of the 'equity' doctrine in which you drive down rather than raise up. What a contrast in Cult-controlled China with its global ambitions

where the government published plans in January, 2021, to 'cultivate masculinity' in boys from kindergarten through to high school in the face of a 'masculinity crisis'. A government adviser said boys would be soon become 'delicate, timid and effeminate' unless action was taken. Don't expect any similar policy in the targeted West. A 2006 study showed that a 65-year-old man in 2002 had testosterone levels 15 percent lower than a 65-year-old man in 1987 while a 2020 study found a similar story with young adults and adolescents. Men are getting prescriptions for testosterone replacement therapy which causes an even greater drop in sperm count with up to 99 percent seeing sperm counts drop to zero during the treatment. More sperm is defective and malfunctioning with some having two heads or not pursuing an egg.

A class of *synthetic* chemicals known as phthalates are being blamed for the decline. These are found everywhere in plastics, shampoos, cosmetics, furniture, flame retardants, personal care products, pesticides, canned foods and even receipts. Why till receipts? Everyone touches them. Let no one delude themselves that all this is not systematic to advance the long-time agenda for human body transformation. Phthalates mimic hormones and disrupt the hormone balance causing testosterone to fall and genital birth defects in male infants. Animals and fish have been affected in the same way due to phthalates and other toxins in rivers. When fish turn gay or change sex through chemicals in rivers and streams it is a pointer to why there has been such an increase in gay people and the sexually confused. It doesn't matter to me what sexuality people choose to be, but if it's being affected by chemical pollution and consumption then we need to know. Does anyone really think that this is not connected to the transgender agenda, the war on men and the condemnation of male 'toxic masculinity'? You watch this being followed by 'toxic femininity'. It's already happening. When breastfeeding becomes 'chest-feeding', pregnant women become pregnant people along with all the other Woke claptrap you know that the world is going insane and there's a Cult scam in progress. Transgender activists are promoting the Cult agenda while Cult

billionaires support and fund the insanity as they laugh themselves to sleep at the sheer stupidity for which humans must be infamous in galaxies far, far away.

‘Covid vaccines’ and female infertility

We can now see why the ‘vaccine’ has been connected to potential infertility in women. Dr Michael Yeadon, former Vice President and Chief Scientific Advisor at Pfizer, and Dr Wolfgang Wodarg in Germany, filed a petition with the European Medicines Agency in December, 2020, urging them to stop trials for the Pfizer/BioNTech shot and all other mRNA trials until further studies had been done. They were particularly concerned about possible effects on fertility with ‘vaccine’-produced antibodies attacking the protein Syncytin-1 which is responsible for developing the placenta. The result would be infertility ‘of indefinite duration’ in women who have the ‘vaccine’ with the placenta failing to form. Section 10.4.2 of the Pfizer/BioNTech trial protocol says that pregnant women or those who might become so should not have mRNA shots. Section 10.4 warns men taking mRNA shots to ‘be abstinent from heterosexual intercourse’ and not to donate sperm. The UK government said that it *did not know* if the mRNA procedure had an effect on fertility. *Did not know?* These people have to go to jail. UK government advice did not recommend at the start that pregnant women had the shot and said they should avoid pregnancy for at least two months after ‘vaccination’. The ‘advice’ was later updated to pregnant women should only have the ‘vaccine’ if the benefits outweighed the risks to mother and foetus. What the hell is that supposed to mean? Then ‘spontaneous abortions’ began to appear and rapidly increase on the adverse reaction reporting schemes which include only a fraction of adverse reactions. Thousands and ever-growing numbers of ‘vaccinated’ women are describing changes to their menstrual cycle with heavier blood flow, irregular periods and menstruating again after going through the menopause – all links to reproduction effects. Women are passing blood clots and the lining of their uterus while men report erectile dysfunction and blood effects. Most

significantly of all *unvaccinated* women began to report similar menstrual changes after interaction with '*vaccinated*' people and men and children were also affected with bleeding noses, blood clots and other conditions. 'Shedding' is when vaccinated people can emit the content of a vaccine to affect the unvaccinated, but this is different. 'Vaccinated' people were not shedding a 'live virus' allegedly in 'vaccines' as before because the fake 'Covid vaccines' involve synthetic material and other toxicity. Doctors exposing what is happening prefer the term 'transmission' to shedding. Somehow those that have had the shots are transmitting effects to those that haven't. Dr Carrie Madej said the nano-content of the 'vaccines' can 'act like an antenna' to others around them which fits perfectly with my own conclusions. This 'vaccine' transmission phenomenon was becoming known as the book went into production and I deal with this further in the Postscript.

Vaccine effects on sterility are well known. The World Health Organization was accused in 2014 of sterilising millions of women in Kenya with the evidence confirmed by the content of the vaccines involved. The same WHO behind the 'Covid' hoax admitted its involvement for more than ten years with the vaccine programme. Other countries made similar claims. Charges were lodged by Tanzania, Nicaragua, Mexico, and the Philippines. The Gardasil vaccine claimed to protect against a genital 'virus' known as HPV has also been linked to infertility. Big Pharma and the WHO (same thing) are criminal and satanic entities. Then there's the Bill Gates Foundation which is connected through funding and shared interests with 20 pharmaceutical giants and laboratories. He stands accused of directing the policy of United Nations Children's Fund (UNICEF), vaccine alliance GAVI, and other groupings, to advance the vaccine agenda and silence opposition at great cost to women and children. At the same time Gates wants to reduce the global population. Coincidence?

Great Reset = Smart Grid = new human

The Cult agenda I have been exposing for 30 years is now being openly promoted by Cult assets like Gates and Klaus Schwab of the World Economic Forum under code-terms like the 'Great Reset', 'Build Back Better' and 'a rare but narrow window of opportunity to reflect, reimagine, and reset our world'. What provided this 'rare but narrow window of opportunity'? The 'Covid' hoax did. Who created that? *They* did. My books from not that long ago warned about the planned 'Internet of Things' (IoT) and its implications for human freedom. This was the plan to connect all technology to the Internet and artificial intelligence and today we are way down that road with an estimated 36 billion devices connected to the World Wide Web and that figure is projected to be 76 billion by 2025. I further warned that the Cult planned to go beyond that to the Internet of *Everything* when the human brain was connected via AI to the Internet and Kurzweil's 'cloud'. Now we have Cult operatives like Schwab calling for precisely that under the term 'Internet of Bodies', a fusion of the physical, digital and biological into one centrally-controlled Smart Grid system which the Cult refers to as the 'Fourth Industrial Revolution'. They talk about the 'biological', but they really mean the synthetic-biological which is required to fully integrate the human body and brain into the Smart Grid and artificial intelligence planned to replace the human mind. We have everything being synthetically manipulated including the natural world through GMO and smart dust, the food we eat and the human body itself with synthetic 'vaccines'. I said in *The Answer* that we would see the Cult push for synthetic meat to replace animals and in February, 2021, the so predictable psychopath Bill Gates called for the introduction of synthetic meat to save us all from 'climate change'. The climate hoax just keeps on giving like the 'Covid' hoax. The war on meat by vegan activists is a carbon (oops, sorry) copy of the manipulation of transgender activists. They have no idea (except their inner core) that they are being used to promote and impose the agenda of the Cult or that they are only the *vehicle* and not the *reason*. This is not to say those who choose not to eat meat shouldn't be respected and supported in that right, but there are ulterior motives

for those in power. A *Forbes* article in December, 2019, highlighted the plan so beloved of Schwab and the Cult under the heading: 'What Is The Internet of Bodies? And How Is It Changing Our World?' The article said the human body is the latest data platform (remember 'our vaccine is an operating system'). *Forbes* described the plan very accurately and the words could have come straight out of my books from long before:

The Internet of Bodies (IoB) is an extension of the IoT and basically connects the human body to a network through devices that are ingested, implanted, or connected to the body in some way. Once connected, data can be exchanged, and the body and device can be remotely monitored and controlled.

They were really describing a human hive mind with human perception centrally-dictated via an AI connection as well as allowing people to be 'remotely monitored and controlled'. Everything from a fridge to a human mind could be directed from a central point by these insane psychopaths and 'Covid vaccines' are crucial to this. *Forbes* explained the process I mentioned earlier of holdable and wearable technology followed by implantable. The article said there were three generations of the Internet of Bodies that include:

- Body external: These are wearable devices such as Apple Watches or Fitbits that can monitor our health.
- Body internal: These include pacemakers, cochlear implants, and digital pills that go inside our bodies to monitor or control various aspects of health.
- Body embedded: The third generation of the Internet of Bodies is embedded technology where technology and the human body are melded together and have a real-time connection to a remote machine.

Forbes noted the development of the Brain Computer Interface (BCI) which merges the brain with an external device for monitoring and controlling in real-time. 'The ultimate goal is to help restore function to individuals with disabilities by using brain signals rather than conventional neuromuscular pathways.' Oh, do fuck off. The goal of brain interface technology is controlling human thought and emotion from the central point in a hive mind serving its masters wishes. Many people are now agreeing to be chipped to open doors without a key. You can recognise them because they'll be wearing a mask, social distancing and lining up for the 'vaccine'. The Cult plans a Great Reset money system after they have completed the demolition of the global economy in which 'money' will be exchanged through communication with body operating systems. Rand Corporation, a Cult-owned think tank, said of the Internet of Bodies or IoB:

Internet of Bodies technologies fall under the broader IoT umbrella. But as the name suggests, IoB devices introduce an even more intimate interplay between humans and gadgets. IoB devices monitor the human body, collect health metrics and other personal information, and transmit those data over the Internet. Many devices, such as fitness trackers, are already in use ... IoB devices ... and those in development can track, record, and store users' whereabouts, bodily functions, and what they see, hear, and even think.

Schwab's World Economic Forum, a long-winded way of saying 'fascism' or 'the Cult', has gone full-on with the Internet of Bodies in the 'Covid' era. 'We're entering the era of the Internet of Bodies', it declared, 'collecting our physical data via a range of devices that can be implanted, swallowed or worn'. The result would be a huge amount of health-related data that could improve human wellbeing around the world, and prove crucial in fighting the 'Covid-19 pandemic'. Does anyone think these clowns care about 'human wellbeing' after the death and devastation their pandemic hoax has purposely caused? Schwab and co say we should move forward with the Internet of Bodies because 'Keeping track of symptoms could help us stop the spread of infection, and quickly detect new cases'. How wonderful, but keeping track' is all they are really bothered

about. Researchers were investigating if data gathered from smartwatches and similar devices could be used as viral infection alerts by tracking the user's heart rate and breathing. Schwab said in his 2018 book *Shaping the Future of the Fourth Industrial Revolution*:

The lines between technologies and beings are becoming blurred and not just by the ability to create lifelike robots or synthetics. Instead it is about the ability of new technologies to literally become part of us. Technologies already influence how we understand ourselves, how we think about each other, and how we determine our realities. As the technologies ... give us deeper access to parts of ourselves, we may begin to integrate digital technologies into our bodies.

You can see what the game is. Twenty-four hour control and people – if you could still call them that – would never know when something would go ping and take them out of circulation. It's the most obvious rush to a global fascist dictatorship and the complete submission of humanity and yet still so many are locked away in their Cult-induced perceptual coma and can't see it.

Smart Grid control centres

The human body is being transformed by the 'vaccines' and in other ways into a synthetic cyborg that can be attached to the global Smart Grid which would be controlled from a central point and other sub-locations of Grid manipulation. Where are these planned to be? Well, China for a start which is one of the Cult's biggest centres of operation. The technological control system and technocratic rule was incubated here to be unleashed across the world after the 'Covid' hoax came out of China in 2020. Another Smart Grid location that will surprise people new to this is Israel. I have exposed in *The Trigger* how Sabbatian technocrats, intelligence and military operatives were behind the horrors of 9/11 and not 19 Arab hijackers' who somehow manifested the ability to pilot big passenger airliners when instructors at puddle-jumping flying schools described some of them as a joke. The 9/11 attacks were made possible through control of civilian and military air computer systems and those of the White House, Pentagon and connected agencies. See *The Trigger* – it

will blow your mind. The controlling and coordinating force were the Sabbatian networks in Israel and the United States which by then had infiltrated the entire US government, military and intelligence system. The real name of the American Deep State is 'Sabbatian State'. Israel is a tiny country of only nine million people, but it is one of the global centres of cyber operations and fast catching Silicon Valley in importance to the Cult. Israel is known as the 'start-up nation' for all the cyber companies spawned there with the Sabbatian specialisation of 'cyber security' that I mentioned earlier which gives those companies access to computer systems of their clients in real time through 'backdoors' written into the coding when security software is downloaded. The Sabbatian centre of cyber operations outside Silicon Valley is the Israeli military Cyber Intelligence Unit, the biggest infrastructure project in Israel's history, headquartered in the desert-city of Beersheba and involving some 20,000 'cyber soldiers'. Here are located a literal army of Internet trolls scanning social media, forums and comment lists for anyone challenging the Cult agenda. The UK military has something similar with its 77th Brigade and associated operations. The Beersheba complex includes research and development centres for other Cult operations such as Intel, Microsoft, IBM, Google, Apple, Hewlett-Packard, Cisco Systems, Facebook and Motorola. Techcrunch.com ran an article about the Beersheba global Internet technology centre headlined 'Israel's desert city of Beersheba is turning into a cybertech oasis':

The military's massive relocation of its prestigious technology units, the presence of multinational and local companies, a close proximity to Ben Gurion University and generous government subsidies are turning Beersheba into a major global cybertech hub. Beersheba has all of the ingredients of a vibrant security technology ecosystem, including Ben Gurion University with its graduate program in cybersecurity and Cyber Security Research Center, and the presence of companies such as EMC, Deutsche Telekom, PayPal, Oracle, IBM, and Lockheed Martin. It's also the future home of the INCB (Israeli National Cyber Bureau); offers a special income tax incentive for cyber security companies, and was the site for the relocation of the army's intelligence corps units.

Sabbatians have taken over the cyber world through the following process: They scan the schools for likely cyber talent and develop them at Ben Gurion University and their period of conscription in the Israeli Defense Forces when they are stationed at the Beersheba complex. When the cyber talented officially leave the army they are funded to start cyber companies with technology developed by themselves or given to them by the state. Much of this is stolen through backdoors of computer systems around the world with America top of the list. Others are sent off to Silicon Valley to start companies or join the major ones and so we have many major positions filled by apparently 'Jewish' but really Sabbatian operatives. Google, YouTube and Facebook are all run by 'Jewish' CEOs while Twitter is all but run by ultra-Zionist hedge-fund shark Paul Singer. At the centre of the Sabbatian global cyber web is the Israeli army's Unit 8200 which specialises in hacking into computer systems of other countries, inserting viruses, gathering information, instigating malfunction, and even taking control of them from a distance. A long list of Sabbatians involved with 9/11, Silicon Valley and Israeli cyber security companies are operatives of Unit 8200. This is not about Israel. It's about the Cult. Israel is planned to be a Smart Grid hub as with China and what is happening at Beersheba is not for the benefit of Jewish people who are treated disgustingly by the Sabbatian elite that control the country. A glance at the Nuremberg Codes will tell you that.

The story is much bigger than 'Covid', important as that is to where we are being taken. Now, though, it's time to really strap in. There's more ... much more ...

CHAPTER ELEVEN

Who controls the Cult?

Awake, arise or be forever fall'n
John Milton, *Paradise Lost*

I have exposed this far the level of the Cult conspiracy that operates in the world of the seen and within the global secret society and satanic network which operates in the shadows one step back from the seen. The story, however, goes much deeper than that.

The 'Covid' hoax is major part of the Cult agenda, but only part, and to grasp the biggest picture we have to expand our attention beyond the realm of human sight and into the infinity of possibility that we cannot see. It is from here, ultimately, that humanity is being manipulated into a state of total control by the force which dictates the actions of the Cult. How much of reality can we see? Next to damn all is the answer. We may appear to see all there is to see in the 'space' our eyes survey and observe, but little could be further from the truth. The human 'world' is only a tiny band of frequency that the body's visual and perceptual systems can decode into *perception* of a 'world'. According to mainstream science the electromagnetic spectrum is 0.005 percent of what exists in the Universe ([Fig 10](#)). The maximum estimate I have seen is 0.5 percent and either way it's miniscule. I say it is far, far, smaller even than 0.005 percent when you compare reality we see with the totality of reality that we don't. Now get this if you are new to such information: Visible light, the only band of frequency that we can see, is a *fraction* of the 0.005

percent (Fig 11 overleaf). Take this further and realise that our universe is one of infinite universes and that universes are only a fragment of overall reality – *infinite* reality. Then compare that with the almost infinitesimal frequency band of visible light or human sight. You see that humans are as near blind as it is possible to be without actually being so. Artist and filmmaker, Sergio Toporek, said:

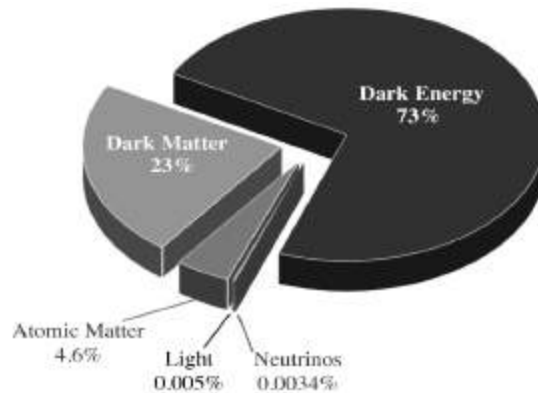


Figure 10: Humans can perceive such a tiny band of visual reality it's laughable.

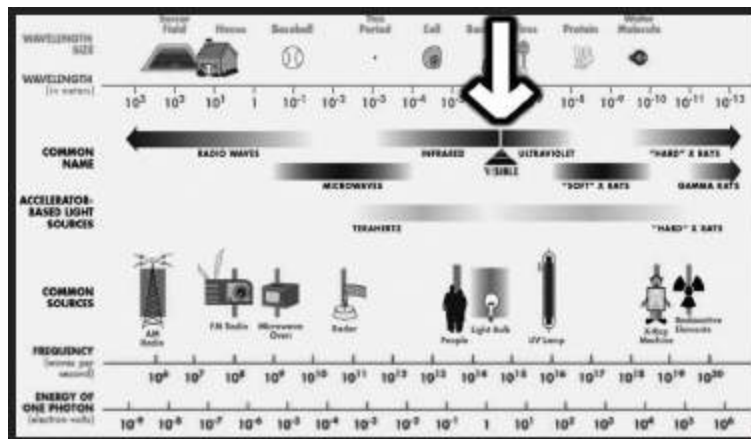


Figure 11: We can see a smear of the 0.005 percent electromagnetic spectrum, but we still know it all. Yep, makes sense.

Consider that you can see less than 1% of the electromagnetic spectrum and hear less than 1% of the acoustic spectrum. 90% of the cells in your body carry their own microbial DNA and are not 'you'. The atoms in your body are 99.9999999999999999% empty space and none of them are the ones you were born with ... Human beings have 46 chromosomes, two less than a potato.

The existence of the rainbow depends on the conical photoreceptors in your eyes; to animals without cones, the rainbow does not exist. So you don't just look at a rainbow, you create it. This is pretty amazing, especially considering that all the beautiful colours you see represent less than 1% of the electromagnetic spectrum.

Suddenly the 'world' of humans looks a very different place. Take into account, too, that Planet Earth when compared with the projected size of this single universe is the equivalent of a billionth of a pinhead. Imagine the ratio that would be when compared to infinite reality. To think that Christianity once insisted that Earth and humanity were the centre of everything. This background is vital if we are going to appreciate the nature of 'human' and how we can be manipulated by an unseen force. To human visual reality virtually *everything* is unseen and yet the prevailing perception within the institutions and so much of the public is that if we can't see it, touch it, hear it, taste it and smell it then it cannot exist. Such perception is indoctrinated and encouraged by the Cult and its agents because it isolates believers in the strictly limited, village-idiot, realm of the five senses where perceptions can be firewalled and information controlled. Most of those perpetuating the 'this-world-is-all-there-is' insanity are themselves indoctrinated into believing the same delusion. While major players and influencers know that official reality is laughable most of those in science, academia and medicine really believe the nonsense they peddle and teach succeeding generations. Those who challenge the orthodoxy are dismissed as nutters and freaks to protect the manufactured illusion from exposure. Observe the dynamic of the 'Covid' hoax and you will see how that takes the same form. The inner-circle psychopaths knows it's a gigantic scam, but almost the entirety of those imposing their fascist rules believe that 'Covid' is all that they're told it is.

Stolen identity

Ask people who they are and they will give you their name, place of birth, location, job, family background and life story. Yet that is not who they are – it is what they are *experiencing*. The difference is *absolutely crucial*. The true 'I', the eternal, infinite 'I', is consciousness,

a state of being aware. Forget 'form'. That is a vehicle for a brief experience. Consciousness does not come *from* the brain, but *through* the brain and even that is more symbolic than literal. We are awareness, pure awareness, and this is what withdraws from the body at what we call 'death' to continue our eternal beingness, *isness*, in other realms of reality within the limitlessness of infinity or the Biblical 'many mansions in my father's house'. Labels of a human life, man, woman, transgender, black, white, brown, nationality, circumstances and income are not who we are. They are what we are – awareness – is *experiencing* in a brief connection with a band of frequency we call 'human'. The labels are not the self; they are, to use the title of one of my books, a *Phantom Self*. I am not David Icke born in Leicester, England, on April 29th, 1952. I am the consciousness *having that experience*. The Cult and its non-human masters seek to convince us through the institutions of 'education', science, medicine, media and government that what we are *experiencing* is who we *are*. It's so easy to control and direct perception locked away in the bewildered illusions of the five senses with no expanded radar. Try, by contrast, doing the same with a humanity aware of its true self and its true power to consciously create its reality and experience. How is it possible to do this? We do it all day every day. If you perceive yourself as 'little me' with no power to impact upon your life and the world then your life experience will reflect that. You will hand the power you don't think you have to authority in all its forms which will use it to control your experience. This, in turn, will appear to confirm your perception of 'little me' in a self-fulfilling feedback loop. But that is what 'little me' really is – a *perception*. We are all 'big-me', infinite me, and the Cult has to make us forget that if its will is to prevail. We are therefore manipulated and pressured into self-identifying with human labels and not the consciousness/awareness *experiencing* those human labels.

The phenomenon of identity politics is a Cult-instigated manipulation technique to sub-divide previous labels into even smaller ones. A United States university employs this list of letters to

describe student identity: LGBTTTQQFAGPBDSM or lesbian, gay, bisexual, transgender, transsexual, queer, questioning, flexual, asexual, gender-fuck, polyamorous, bondage/discipline, dominance/submission and sadism/masochism. I'm sure other lists are even longer by now as people feel the need to self-identity the 'I' with the minutiae of race and sexual preference. Wokers programmed by the Cult for generations believe this is about 'inclusivity' when it's really the Cult locking them away into smaller and smaller versions of Phantom Self while firewalling them from the influence of their true self, the infinite, eternal 'I'. You may notice that my philosophy which contends that we are all unique points of attention/awareness within the same infinite whole or Oneness is the ultimate non-racism. The very sense of Oneness makes the judgement of people by their body-type, colour or sexuality utterly ridiculous and confirms that racism has no understanding of reality (including anti-white racism). Yet despite my perception of life Cult agents and fast-asleep Wokers label me racist to discredit my information while they are themselves phenomenally racist and sexist. All they see is race and sexuality and they judge people as good or bad, demons or untouchables, by their race and sexuality. All they see is *Phantom Self* and perceive themselves in terms of Phantom Self. They are pawns and puppets of the Cult agenda to focus attention and self-identity in the five senses and play those identities against each other to divide and rule. Columbia University has introduced segregated graduations in another version of social distancing designed to drive people apart and teach them that different racial and cultural groups have nothing in common with each other. The last thing the Cult wants is unity. Again the pump-primers of this will be Cult operatives in the knowledge of what they are doing, but the rest are just the Phantom Self blind leading the Phantom Self blind. We *do* have something in common – we are all *the same consciousness* having different temporary experiences.

What is this 'human'?

Yes, what *is* 'human'? That is what we are supposed to be, right? I mean 'human'? True, but 'human' is the experience not the 'I'. Break it down to basics and 'human' is the way that information is processed. If we are to experience and interact with this band of frequency we call the 'world' we must have a vehicle that operates within that band of frequency. Our consciousness in its prime form cannot do that; it is way beyond the frequency of the human realm. My consciousness or awareness could not tap these keys and pick up the cup in front of me in the same way that radio station A cannot interact with radio station B when they are on different frequencies. The human body is the means through which we have that interaction. I have long described the body as a biological computer which processes information in a way that allows consciousness to experience this reality. The body is a receiver, transmitter and processor of information in a particular way that we call human. We visually perceive only the world of the five senses in a wakened state – that is the limit of the body's visual decoding system. In truth it's not even visual in the way we experience 'visual reality' as I will come to in a moment. We are 'human' because the body processes the information sources of human into a reality and behaviour system that we *perceive* as human. Why does an elephant act like an elephant and not like a human or a duck? The elephant's biological computer is a different information field and processes information according to that program into a visual and behaviour type we call an elephant. The same applies to everything in our reality. These body information fields are perpetuated through procreation (like making a copy of a software program). The Cult wants to break that cycle and intervene technologically to transform the human information field into one that will change what we call humanity. If it can change the human information field it will change the way that field processes information and change humanity both 'physically' and psychologically. Hence the *messenger* (information) RNA 'vaccines' and so much more that is targeting human genetics by changing the body's information – *messaging* – construct through food, drink, radiation, toxicity and other means.

Reality that we experience is nothing like reality as it really is in the same way that the reality people experience in virtual reality games is not the reality they are really living in. The game is only a decoded source of information that appears to be a reality. Our world is also an information construct – a *simulation* (more later). In its base form our reality is a wavefield of information much the same in theme as Wi-Fi. The five senses decode wavefield information into electrical information which they communicate to the brain to decode into holographic (illusory ‘physical’) information. Different parts of the brain specialise in decoding different senses and the information is fused into a reality that appears to be outside of us but is really inside the brain and the genetic structure in general ([Fig 12](#) overleaf). DNA is a receiver-transmitter of information and a vital part of this decoding process and the body’s connection to other realities. Change DNA and you change the way we decode and connect with reality – see ‘Covid vaccines’. Think of computers decoding Wi-Fi. You have information encoded in a radiation field and the computer decodes that information into a very different form on the screen. You can’t see the Wi-Fi until its information is made manifest on the screen and the information on the screen is inside the computer and not outside. I have just described how we decode the ‘human world’. All five senses decode the waveform ‘Wi-Fi’ field into electrical signals and the brain (computer) constructs reality inside the brain and not outside – ‘You don’t just look at a rainbow, you create it’. Sound is a simple example. We don’t hear sound until the brain decodes it. Waveform sound waves are picked up by the hearing sense and communicated to the brain in an electrical form to be decoded into the sounds that we hear. Everything we hear is inside the brain along with everything we see, feel, smell and taste. Words and language are waveform fields generated by our vocal chords which pass through this process until they are decoded by the brain into words that we hear. Different languages are different frequency fields or sound waves generated by vocal chords. Late British philosopher Alan Watts said:

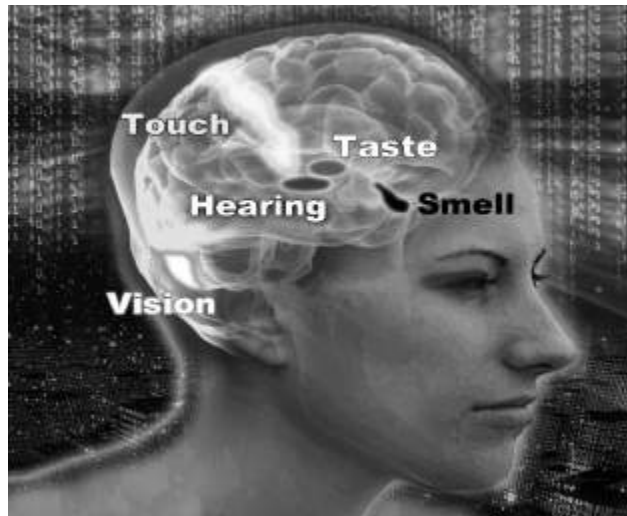


Figure 12: The brain receives information from the five senses and constructs from that our perceived reality.

[Without the brain] the world is devoid of light, heat, weight, solidity, motion, space, time or any other imaginable feature. All these phenomena are interactions, or transactions, of vibrations with a certain arrangement of neurons.

That's exactly what they are and scientist Robert Lanza describes in his book, *Biocentrism*, how we decode electromagnetic waves and energy into visual and 'physical' experience. He uses the example of a flame emitting photons, electromagnetic energy, each pulsing electrically and magnetically:

... these ... invisible electromagnetic waves strike a human retina, and if (and only if) the waves happen to measure between 400 and 700 nano meters in length from crest to crest, then their energy is just right to deliver a stimulus to the 8 million cone-shaped cells in the retina.

Each in turn send an electrical pulse to a neighbour neuron, and on up the line this goes, at 250 mph, until it reaches the ... occipital lobe of the brain, in the back of the head. There, a cascading complex of neurons fire from the incoming stimuli, and we subjectively perceive this experience as a yellow brightness occurring in a place we have been conditioned to call the 'external world'.

You hear what you decode

If a tree falls or a building collapses they make no noise unless someone is there to decode the energetic waves generated by the disturbance into what we call sound. Does a falling tree make a noise? Only if you hear it – *decode* it. Everything in our reality is a frequency field of information operating within the overall ‘Wi-Fi’ field that I call The Field. A vibrational disturbance is generated in The Field by the fields of the falling tree or building. These disturbance waves are what we decode into the sound of them falling. If no one is there to do that then neither will make any noise. Reality is created by the observer – *decoder* – and the *perceptions* of the observer affect the decoding process. For this reason different people – different *perceptions* – will perceive the same reality or situation in a different way. What one may perceive as a nightmare another will see as an opportunity. The question of why the Cult is so focused on controlling human perception now answers itself. All experienced reality is the act of decoding and we don’t experience Wi-Fi until it is decoded on the computer screen. The sight and sound of an Internet video is encoded in the Wi-Fi all around us, but we don’t see or hear it until the computer decodes that information. Taste, smell and touch are all phenomena of the brain as a result of the same process. We don’t taste, smell or feel anything except in the brain and there are pain relief techniques that seek to block the signal from the site of discomfort to the brain because if the brain doesn’t decode that signal we don’t feel pain. Pain is in the brain and only appears to be at the point of impact thanks to the feedback loop between them. We don’t see anything until electrical information from the sight senses is decoded in an area at the back of the brain. If that area is damaged we can go blind when our eyes are perfectly okay. So why do we go blind if we damage an eye? We damage the information processing between the waveform visual information and the visual decoding area of the brain. If information doesn’t reach the brain in a form it can decode then we can’t see the visual reality that it represents. What’s more the brain is decoding only a fraction of the information it receives and the rest is absorbed by the

sub-conscious mind. This explanation is from the science magazine, *Wonderpedia*:

Every second, 11 million sensations crackle along these [brain] pathways ... The brain is confronted with an alarming array of images, sounds and smells which it rigorously filters down until it is left with a manageable list of around 40. Thus 40 sensations per second make up what we perceive as reality.

The 'world' is not what people are told to believe that is it and the inner circles of the Cult *know that*.

Illusory 'physical' reality

We can only see a smear of 0.005 percent of the Universe which is only one of a vast array of universes – 'mansions' – within infinite reality. Even then the brain decodes only 40 pieces of information ('sensations') from a potential *11 million* that we receive every second. Two points strike you from this immediately: The sheer breathtaking stupidity of believing we know anything so rigidly that there's nothing more to know; and the potential for these processes to be manipulated by a malevolent force to control the reality of the population. One thing I can say for sure with no risk of contradiction is that when you can perceive an almost indescribable fraction of infinite reality there is always more to know as in tidal waves of it. Ancient Greek philosopher Socrates was so right when he said that wisdom is to know how little we know. How obviously true that is when you think that we are experiencing a physical world of solidity that is neither physical nor solid and a world of apartness when everything is connected. Cult-controlled 'science' dismisses the so-called 'paranormal' and all phenomena related to that when the 'para'-normal is perfectly normal and explains the alleged 'great mysteries' which dumbfound scientific minds. There is a reason for this. A 'scientific mind' in terms of the mainstream is a material mind, a five-sense mind imprisoned in see it, touch it, hear it, smell it and taste it. Phenomena and happenings that can't be explained that way leave the 'scientific mind' bewildered and the rule is that if they

can't account for why something is happening then it can't, by definition, be happening. I beg to differ. Telepathy is thought waves passing through The Field (think wave disturbance again) to be decoded by someone able to connect with that wavelength (information). For example: You can pick up the thought waves of a friend at any distance and at the very least that will bring them to mind. A few minutes later the friend calls you. 'My god', you say, 'that's incredible – I was just thinking of you.' Ah, but *they* were thinking of *you* before they made the call and that's what you decoded. Native peoples not entrapped in five-sense reality do this so well it became known as the 'bush telegraph'. Those known as psychics and mediums (genuine ones) are doing the same only across dimensions of reality. 'Mind over matter' comes from the fact that matter and mind are the *same*. The state of one influences the state of the other. Indeed one *and* the other are illusions. They are aspects of the same field. Paranormal phenomena are all explainable so why are they still considered 'mysteries' or not happening? Once you go down this road of understanding you begin to expand awareness beyond the five senses and that's the nightmare for the Cult.



Figure 13: Holograms are not solid, but the best ones appear to be.

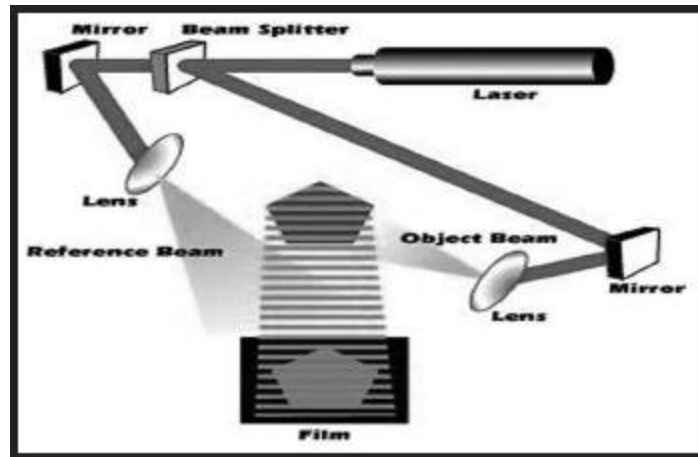


Figure 14: How holograms are created by capturing a waveform version of the subject image.

Holographic 'solidity'

Our reality is not solid, it is holographic. We are now well aware of holograms which are widely used today. Two-dimensional information is decoded into a three-dimensional reality that is not solid although can very much appear to be (Fig 13). Holograms are created with a laser divided into two parts. One goes directly onto a holographic photographic print ('reference beam') and the other takes a waveform image of the subject ('working beam') before being directed onto the print where it 'collides' with the other half of the laser (Fig 14). This creates a *waveform* interference pattern which contains the wavefield information of whatever is being photographed (Fig 15 overleaf). The process can be likened to dropping pebbles in a pond. Waves generated by each one spread out across the water to collide with the others and create a wave representation of where the stones fell and at what speed, weight and distance. A waveform interference pattern of a hologram is akin to the waveform information in The Field which the five senses decode into electrical signals to be decoded by the brain into a holographic illusory 'physical' reality. In the same way when a laser (think human attention) is directed at the waveform interference pattern a three-dimensional version of the subject is projected into apparently 'solid' reality (Fig 16). An amazing trait of holograms reveals more 'paranormal mysteries'. Information of the *whole*

hologram is encoded in waveform in every part of the interference pattern by the way they are created. This means that every *part* of a hologram is a smaller version of the whole. Cut the interference wave-pattern into four and you won't get four parts of the image. You get quarter-sized versions of the *whole* image. The body is a hologram and the same applies. Here we have the basis of acupuncture, reflexology and other forms of healing which identify representations of the whole body in all of the parts, hands, feet, ears, everywhere. Skilled palm readers can do what they do because the information of whole body is encoded in the hand. The concept of as above, so below, comes from this.



Figure 15: A waveform interference pattern that holds the information that transforms into a hologram.



Figure 16: Holographic people including 'Elvis' holographically inserted to sing a duet with Celine Dion.

The question will be asked of why, if solidity is illusory, we can't just walk through walls and each other. The resistance is not solid against solid; it is electromagnetic field against electromagnetic field and we decode this into the *experience* of solid against solid. We should also not underestimate the power of belief to dictate reality. What you believe is impossible *will be*. Your belief impacts on your decoding processes and they won't decode what you think is impossible. What we believe we perceive and what we perceive we experience. 'Can't dos' and 'impossibles' are like a firewall in a computer system that won't put on the screen what the firewall blocks. How vital that is to understanding how human experience has been hijacked. I explain in *The Answer, Everything You Need To Know But Have Never Been Told* and other books a long list of 'mysteries' and 'paranormal' phenomena that are not mysterious and perfectly normal once you realise what reality is and how it works. 'Ghosts' can be seen to pass through 'solid' walls because the walls are not solid and the ghost is a discarnate entity operating on a frequency so different to that of the wall that it's like two radio stations sharing the same space while never interfering with each other. I have seen ghosts do this myself. The apartness of people and objects is also an illusion. Everything is connected by the Field like all sea life is connected by the sea. It's just that within the limits of our visual reality we only 'see' holographic information and not the field of information that connects everything and from which the holographic world is made manifest. If you can only see holographic 'objects' and not the field that connects them they will appear to you as unconnected to each other in the same way that we see the computer while not seeing the Wi-Fi.

What you don't know *can* hurt you

Okay, we return to those 'two worlds' of human society and the Cult with its global network of interconnecting secret societies and satanic groups which manipulate through governments, corporations, media, religions, etc. The fundamental difference between them is *knowledge*. The idea has been to keep humanity

ignorant of the plan for its total enslavement underpinned by a crucial ignorance of reality – who we are and where we are – and how we interact with it. ‘Human’ should be the interaction between our expanded eternal consciousness and the five-sense body experience. We are meant to be *in* this world in terms of the five senses but not *of* this world in relation to our greater consciousness and perspective. In that state we experience the small picture of the five senses within the wider context of the big picture of awareness beyond the five senses. Put another way the five senses see the dots and expanded awareness connects them into pictures and patterns that give context to the apparently random and unconnected. Without the context of expanded awareness the five senses see only apartness and randomness with apparently no meaning. The Cult and its other-dimensional controllers seek to intervene in the frequency realm where five-sense reality is supposed to connect with expanded reality and to keep the two apart (more on this in the final chapter). When that happens five-sense mental and emotional processes are no longer influenced by expanded awareness, or the True ‘I’, and instead are driven by the isolated perceptions of the body’s decoding systems. They are in the world *and* of it. Here we have the human plight and why humanity with its potential for infinite awareness can be so easily manipulatable and descend into such extremes of stupidity.

Once the Cult isolates five-sense mind from expanded awareness it can then program the mind with perceptions and beliefs by controlling information that the mind receives through the ‘education’ system of the formative years and the media perceptual bombardment and censorship of an entire lifetime. Limit perception and a sense of the possible through limiting knowledge by limiting and skewing information while censoring and discrediting that which could set people free. As the title of another of my books says ... *And The Truth Shall Set You Free*. For this reason the last thing the Cult wants in circulation is the truth about anything – especially the reality of the eternal ‘I’ – and that’s why it is desperate to control information. The Cult knows that information becomes perception

which becomes behaviour which, collectively, becomes human society. Cult-controlled and funded mainstream 'science' denies the existence of an eternal 'I' and seeks to dismiss and trash all evidence to the contrary. Cult-controlled mainstream religion has a version of 'God' that is little more than a system of control and dictatorship that employs threats of damnation in an afterlife to control perceptions and behaviour in the here and now through fear and guilt. Neither is true and it's the 'neither' that the Cult wishes to suppress. This 'neither' is that everything is an expression, a point of attention, within an infinite state of consciousness which is the real meaning of the term 'God'.

Perceptual obsession with the 'physical body' and five-senses means that 'God' becomes personified as a bearded bloke sitting among the clouds or a raging bully who loves us if we do what 'he' wants and condemns us to the fires of hell if we don't. These are no more than a 'spiritual' fairy tales to control and dictate events and behaviour through fear of this 'God' which has bizarrely made 'God-fearing' in religious circles a state to be desired. I would suggest that fearing *anything* is not to be encouraged and celebrated, but rather deleted. You can see why 'God fearing' is so beneficial to the Cult and its religions when *they* decide what 'God' wants and what 'God' demands (the Cult demands) that everyone do. As the great American comedian Bill Hicks said satirising a Christian zealot: 'I think what God meant to say.' How much of this infinite awareness ('God') that we access is decided by how far we choose to expand our perceptions, self-identity and sense of the possible. The scale of self-identity reflects itself in the scale of awareness that we can connect with and are influenced by – how much knowing and insight we have instead of programmed perception. You cannot expand your awareness into the infinity of possibility when you believe that you are little me Peter the postman or Mary in marketing and nothing more. I'll deal with this in the concluding chapter because it's crucial to how we turnaround current events.

Where the Cult came from

When I realised in the early 1990s there was a Cult network behind global events I asked the obvious question: When did it start? I took it back to ancient Rome and Egypt and on to Babylon and Sumer in Mesopotamia, the 'Land Between Two Rivers', in what we now call Iraq. The two rivers are the Tigris and Euphrates and this region is of immense historical and other importance to the Cult, as is the land called Israel only 550 miles away by air. There is much more going on with deep esoteric meaning across this whole region. It's not only about 'wars for oil'. Priceless artefacts from Mesopotamia were stolen or destroyed after the American and British invasion of Iraq in 2003 justified by the lies of Boy Bush and Tony Blair (their Cult masters) about non-existent 'weapons of mass destruction'.

Mesopotamia was the location of Sumer (about 5,400BC to 1,750BC), and Babylon (about 2,350BC to 539BC). Sabbatians may have become immensely influential in the Cult in modern times but they are part of a network that goes back into the mists of history. Sumer is said by historians to be the 'cradle of civilisation'. I disagree. I say it was the re-start of what we call human civilisation after cataclysmic events symbolised in part as the 'Great Flood' destroyed the world that existed before. These fantastic upheavals that I have been describing in detail in the books since the early 1990s appear in accounts and legends of ancient cultures across the world and they are supported by geological and biological evidence. Stone tablets found in Iraq detailing the Sumer period say the cataclysms were caused by non-human 'gods' they call the Anunnaki. These are described in terms of extraterrestrial visitations in which knowledge supplied by the Anunnaki is said to have been the source of at least one of the world's oldest writing systems and developments in astronomy, mathematics and architecture that were way ahead of their time. I have covered this subject at length in *The Biggest Secret* and *Children of the Matrix* and the same basic 'Anunnaki' story can be found in Zulu accounts in South Africa where the late and very great Zulu high shaman Credo Mutwa told me that the Sumerian Anunnaki were known by Zulus as the Chitauri or 'children of the serpent'. See my six-hour video interview with Credo on this subject entitled *The*

Reptilian Agenda recorded at his then home near Johannesburg in 1999 which you can watch on the Ickonic media platform.

The Cult emerged out of Sumer, Babylon and Egypt (and elsewhere) and established the Roman Empire before expanding with the Romans into northern Europe from where many empires were savagely imposed in the form of Cult-controlled societies all over the world. Mass death and destruction was their calling card. The Cult established its centre of operations in Europe and European Empires were Cult empires which allowed it to expand into a global force. Spanish and Portuguese colonialists headed for Central and South America while the British and French targeted North America. Africa was colonised by Britain, France, Belgium, the Netherlands, Portugal, Spain, Italy, and Germany. Some like Britain and France moved in on the Middle East. The British Empire was by far the biggest for a simple reason. By now Britain was the headquarters of the Cult from which it expanded to form Canada, the United States, Australia and New Zealand. The Sun never set on the British Empire such was the scale of its occupation. London remains a global centre for the Cult along with Rome and the Vatican although others have emerged in Israel and China. It is no accident that the 'virus' is alleged to have come out of China while Italy was chosen as the means to terrify the Western population into compliance with 'Covid' fascism. Nor that Israel has led the world in 'Covid' fascism and mass 'vaccination'.

You would think that I would mention the United States here, but while it has been an important means of imposing the Cult's will it is less significant than would appear and is currently in the process of having what power it does have deleted. The Cult in Europe has mostly loaded the guns for the US to fire. America has been controlled from Europe from the start through Cult operatives in Britain and Europe. The American Revolution was an illusion to make it appear that America was governing itself while very different forces were pulling the strings in the form of Cult families such as the Rothschilds through the Rockefellers and other subordinates. The Rockefellers are extremely close to Bill Gates and

established both scalpel and drug 'medicine' and the World Health Organization. They play a major role in the development and circulation of vaccines through the Rockefeller Foundation on which Bill Gates said his Foundation is based. Why wouldn't this be the case when the Rockefellers and Gates are on the same team? Cult infiltration of human society goes way back into what we call history and has been constantly expanding and centralising power with the goal of establishing a global structure to dictate everything. Look how this has been advanced in great leaps with the 'Covid' hoax.

The non-human dimension

I researched and observed the comings and goings of Cult operatives through the centuries and even thousands of years as they were born, worked to promote the agenda within the secret society and satanic networks, and then died for others to replace them. Clearly there had to be a coordinating force that spanned this entire period while operatives who would not have seen the end goal in their lifetimes came and went advancing the plan over millennia. I went in search of that coordinating force with the usual support from the extraordinary synchronicity of my life which has been an almost daily experience since 1990. I saw common themes in religious texts and ancient cultures about a non-human force manipulating human society from the hidden. Christianity calls this force Satan, the Devil and demons; Islam refers to the Jinn or Djinn; Zulus have their Chitauri (spelt in other ways in different parts of Africa); and the Gnostic people in Egypt in the period around and before 400AD referred to this phenomena as the 'Archons', a word meaning rulers in Greek. Central American cultures speak of the 'Predators' among other names and the same theme is everywhere. I will use 'Archons' as a collective name for all of them. When you see how their nature and behaviour is described all these different sources are clearly talking about the same force. Gnostics described the Archons in terms of 'luminous fire' while Islam relates the Jinn to 'smokeless fire'. Some refer to beings in form that could occasionally be seen, but the most common of common theme is that they operate from

unseen realms which means almost all existence to the visual processes of humans. I had concluded that this was indeed the foundation of human control and that the Cult was operating within the human frequency band on behalf of this hidden force when I came across the writings of Gnostics which supported my conclusions in the most extraordinary way.

A sealed earthen jar was found in 1945 near the town of Nag Hammadi about 75-80 miles north of Luxor on the banks of the River Nile in Egypt. Inside was a treasure trove of manuscripts and texts left by the Gnostic people some 1,600 years earlier. They included 13 leather-bound papyrus codices (manuscripts) and more than 50 texts written in Coptic Egyptian estimated to have been hidden in the jar in the period of 400AD although the source of the information goes back much further. Gnostics oversaw the Great or Royal Library of Alexandria, the fantastic depository of ancient texts detailing advanced knowledge and accounts of human history. The Library was dismantled and destroyed in stages over a long period with the death-blow delivered by the Cult-established Roman Church in the period around 415AD. The Church of Rome was the Church of Babylon relocated as I said earlier. Gnostics were not a race. They were a way of perceiving reality. Whenever they established themselves and their information circulated the terrorists of the Church of Rome would target them for destruction. This happened with the Great Library and with the Gnostic Cathars who were burned to death by the psychopaths after a long period of oppression at the siege of the Castle of Monségur in southern France in 1244. The Church has always been terrified of Gnostic information which demolishes the official Christian narrative although there is much in the Bible that supports the Gnostic view if you read it in another way. To anyone studying the texts of what became known as the Nag Hammadi Library it is clear that great swathes of Christian and Biblical belief has its origin with Gnostics sources going back to Sumer. Gnostic themes have been twisted to manipulate the perceived reality of Bible believers. Biblical texts have been in the open for centuries where they could be changed while Gnostic

documents found at Nag Hammadi were sealed away and untouched for 1,600 years. What you see is what they wrote.

Use your *pneuma* not your *nous*

Gnosticism and Gnostic come from 'gnosis' which means knowledge, or rather *secret* knowledge, in the sense of spiritual awareness – knowledge about reality and life itself. The desperation of the Cult's Church of Rome to destroy the Gnostics can be understood when the knowledge they were circulating was the last thing the Cult wanted the population to know. Sixteen hundred years later the same Cult is working hard to undermine and silence me for the same reason. The dynamic between knowledge and ignorance is a constant. 'Time' appears to move on, but essential themes remain the same. We are told to 'use your nous', a Gnostic word for head/brain/intelligence. They said, however, that spiritual awakening or 'salvation' could only be secured by expanding awareness *beyond* what they called *nous* and into *pneuma* or Infinite Self. Obviously as I read these texts the parallels with what I have been saying since 1990 were fascinating to me. There is a universal truth that spans human history and in that case why wouldn't we be talking the same language 16 centuries apart? When you free yourself from the perception program of the five senses and explore expanded realms of consciousness you are going to connect with the same information no matter what the perceived 'era' within a manufactured timeline of a single and tiny range of manipulated frequency. Humans working with 'smart' technology or knocking rocks together in caves is only a timeline appearing to operate within the human frequency band. Expanded awareness and the knowledge it holds have always been there whether the era be Stone Age or computer age. We can only access that knowledge by opening ourselves to its frequency which the five-sense prison cell is designed to stop us doing. Gates, Fauci, Whitty, Vallance, Zuckerberg, Brin, Page, Wojcicki, Bezos, and all the others behind the 'Covid' hoax clearly have a long wait before their range of frequency can make that connection given that an open heart is

crucial to that as we shall see. Instead of accessing knowledge directly through expanded awareness it is given to Cult operatives by the secret society networks of the Cult where it has been passed on over thousands of years outside the public arena. Expanded realms of consciousness is where great artists, composers and writers find their inspiration and where truth awaits anyone open enough to connect with it. We need to go there fast.

Archon hijack

A fifth of the Nag Hammadi texts describe the existence and manipulation of the Archons led by a 'Chief Archon' they call 'Yaldabaoth', or the 'Demiurge', and this is the Christian 'Devil', 'Satan', 'Lucifer', and his demons. Archons in Biblical symbolism are the 'fallen ones' which are also referred to as fallen angels after the angels expelled from heaven according to the Abrahamic religions of Judaism, Christianity and Islam. These angels are claimed to tempt humans to 'sin' ongoing and you will see how accurate that symbolism is during the rest of the book. The theme of 'original sin' is related to the 'Fall' when Adam and Eve were 'tempted by the serpent' and fell from a state of innocence and 'obedience' (connection) with God into a state of disobedience (disconnection). The Fall is said to have brought sin into the world and corrupted everything including human nature. Yaldabaoth, the 'Lord Archon', is described by Gnostics as a 'counterfeit spirit', 'The Blind One', 'The Blind God', and 'The Foolish One'. The Jewish name for Yaldabaoth in Talmudic writings is Samael which translates as 'Poison of God', or 'Blindness of God'. You see the parallels. Yaldabaoth in Islamic belief is the Muslim Jinn devil known as Shaytan – Shaytan is Satan as the same themes are found all over the world in every religion and culture. The 'Lord God' of the Old Testament is the 'Lord Archon' of Gnostic manuscripts and that's why he's such a bloodthirsty bastard. Satan is known by Christians as 'the Demon of Demons' and Gnostics called Yaldabaoth the 'Archon of Archons'. Both are known as 'The Deceiver'. We are talking about the same 'bloke' for sure and these common themes

using different names, storylines and symbolism tell a common tale of the human plight.

Archons are referred to in Nag Hammadi documents as mind parasites, inverters, guards, gatekeepers, detainers, judges, pitiless ones and deceivers. The 'Covid' hoax alone is a glaring example of all these things. The Biblical 'God' is so different in the Old and New Testaments because they are not describing the same phenomenon. The vindictive, angry, hate-filled, 'God' of the Old Testament, known as Yahweh, is Yaldabaoth who is depicted in Cult-dictated popular culture as the 'Dark Lord', 'Lord of Time', Lord (Darth) Vader and Dormammu, the evil ruler of the 'Dark Dimension' trying to take over the 'Earth Dimension' in the Marvel comic movie, *Dr Strange*. Yaldabaoth is both the Old Testament 'god' and the Biblical 'Satan'. Gnostics referred to Yaldabaoth as the 'Great Architect of the Universe' and the Cult-controlled Freemason network calls their god 'the 'Great Architect of the Universe' (also Grand Architect). The 'Great Architect' Yaldabaoth is symbolised by the Cult as the all-seeing eye at the top of the pyramid on the Great Seal of the United States and the dollar bill. Archon is encoded in *arch*-itect as it is in *arch*-angels and *arch*-bishops. All religions have the theme of a force for good and force for evil in some sort of spiritual war and there is a reason for that – the theme is true. The Cult and its non-human masters are quite happy for this to circulate. They present themselves as the force for good fighting evil when they are really the force of evil (absence of love). The whole foundation of Cult modus operandi is inversion. They promote themselves as a force for good and anyone challenging them in pursuit of peace, love, fairness, truth and justice is condemned as a satanic force for evil. This has been the game plan throughout history whether the Church of Rome inquisitions of non-believers or 'conspiracy theorists' and 'anti-vaxxers' of today. The technique is the same whatever the timeline era.

Yaldabaoth is revolting (true)

Yaldabaoth and the Archons are said to have revolted against God with Yaldabaoth claiming to *be* God – the *All That Is*. The Old Testament ‘God’ (Yaldabaoth) demanded to be worshipped as such: ‘*I am the LORD, and there is none else, there is no God beside me*’ (Isaiah 45:5). I have quoted in other books a man who said he was the unofficial son of the late Baron Philippe de Rothschild of the Mouton-Rothschild wine producing estates in France who died in 1988 and he told me about the Rothschild ‘revolt from God’. The man said he was given the name Phillip Eugene de Rothschild and we shared long correspondence many years ago while he was living under another identity. He said that he was conceived through ‘occult incest’ which (within the Cult) was ‘normal and to be admired’. ‘Phillip’ told me about his experience attending satanic rituals with rich and famous people whom he names and you can see them and the wider background to Cult Satanism in my other books starting with *The Biggest Secret*. Cult rituals are interactions with Archontic ‘gods’. ‘Phillip’ described Baron Philippe de Rothschild as ‘a master Satanist and hater of God’ and he used the same term ‘revolt from God’ associated with Yaldabaoth/Satan/Lucifer/the Devil in describing the Sabbatian Rothschild dynasty. ‘I played a key role in my family’s revolt from God’, he said. That role was to infiltrate in classic Sabbatian style the Christian Church, but eventually he escaped the mind-prison to live another life. The Cult has been targeting religion in a plan to make worship of the Archons the global one-world religion. Infiltration of Satanism into modern ‘culture’, especially among the young, through music videos, stage shows and other means, is all part of this.

Nag Hammadi texts describe Yaldabaoth and the Archons in their prime form as energy – consciousness – and say they can take form if they choose in the same way that consciousness takes form as a human. Yaldabaoth is called ‘formless’ and represents a deeply inverted, distorted and chaotic state of consciousness which seeks to attached to humans and turn them into a likeness of itself in an attempt at assimilation. For that to happen it has to manipulate

humans into low frequency mental and emotional states that match its own. Archons can certainly appear in human form and this is the origin of the psychopathic personality. The energetic distortion Gnostics called Yaldabaoth is psychopathy. When psychopathic Archons take human form that human will be a psychopath as an expression of Yaldabaoth consciousness. Cult psychopaths are Archons in human form. The principle is the same as that portrayed in the 2009 *Avatar* movie when the American military travelled to a fictional Earth-like moon called Pandora in the Alpha Centauri star system to infiltrate a society of blue people, or Na'vi, by hiding within bodies that looked like the Na'vi. Archons posing as humans have a particular hybrid information field, part human, part Archon, (the ancient 'demigods') which processes information in a way that manifests behaviour to match their psychopathic evil, lack of empathy and compassion, and stops them being influenced by the empathy, compassion and love that a fully-human information field is capable of expressing. Cult bloodlines interbreed, be they royalty or dark suits, for this reason and you have their obsession with incest. Interbreeding with full-blown humans would dilute the Archontic energy field that guarantees psychopathy in its representatives in the human realm.

Gnostic writings say the main non-human forms that Archons take are *serpentine* (what I have called for decades 'reptilian' amid unbounded ridicule from the Archontically-programmed) and what Gnostics describe as 'an unborn baby or foetus with grey skin and dark, unmoving eyes'. This is an excellent representation of the ET 'Greys' of UFO folklore which large numbers of people claim to have seen and been abducted by – Zulu shaman Credo Mutwa among them. I agree with those that believe in extraterrestrial or interdimensional visitations today and for thousands of years past. No wonder with their advanced knowledge and technological capability they were perceived and worshipped as gods for technological and other 'miracles' they appeared to perform. Imagine someone arriving in a culture disconnected from the modern world with a smartphone and computer. They would be

seen as a 'god' capable of 'miracles'. The Renegade Mind, however, wants to know the source of everything and not only the way that source manifests as human or non-human. In the same way that a Renegade Mind seeks the original source material for the 'Covid virus' to see if what is claimed is true. The original source of Archons in form is consciousness – the distorted state of consciousness known to Gnostics as Yaldabaoth.

'Revolt from God' is energetic disconnection

Where I am going next will make a lot of sense of religious texts and ancient legends relating to 'Satan', Lucifer' and the 'gods'. Gnostic descriptions sync perfectly with the themes of my own research over the years in how they describe a consciousness distortion seeking to impose itself on human consciousness. I've referred to the core of infinite awareness in previous books as Infinite Awareness in Awareness of Itself. By that I mean a level of awareness that knows that it is all awareness and is aware of all awareness. From here comes the frequency of love in its true sense and balance which is what love is on one level – the balance of all forces into a single whole called Oneness and Isness. The more we disconnect from this state of love that many call 'God' the constituent parts of that Oneness start to unravel and express themselves as a part and not a whole. They become individualised as intellect, mind, selfishness, hatred, envy, desire for power over others, and such like. This is not a problem in the greater scheme in that 'God', the *All That Is*, can experience all these possibilities through different expressions of itself including humans. What we as expressions of the whole experience the *All That Is* experiences. We are the *All That Is* experiencing itself. As we withdraw from that state of Oneness we disconnect from its influence and things can get very unpleasant and very stupid. Archontic consciousness is at the extreme end of that. It has so disconnected from the influence of Oneness that it has become an inversion of unity and love, an inversion of everything, an inversion of life itself. Evil is appropriately live written backwards. Archontic consciousness is obsessed with death, an inversion of life,

and so its manifestations in Satanism are obsessed with death. They use inverted symbols in their rituals such as the inverted pentagram and cross. Sabbatians as Archontic consciousness incarnate invert Judaism and every other religion and culture they infiltrate. They seek disunity and chaos and they fear unity and harmony as they fear love like garlic to a vampire. As a result the Cult, Archons incarnate, act with such evil, psychopathy and lack of empathy and compassion disconnected as they are from the source of love. How could Bill Gates and the rest of the Archontic psychopaths do what they have to human society in the 'Covid' era with all the death, suffering and destruction involved and have no emotional consequence for the impact on others? Now you know. Why have Zuckerberg, Brin, Page, Wojcicki and company callously censored information warning about the dangers of the 'vaccine' while thousands have been dying and having severe, sometimes life-changing reactions? Now you know. Why have Tedros, Fauci, Whitty, Vallance and their like around the world been using case and death figures they're aware are fraudulent to justify lockdowns and all the deaths and destroyed lives that have come from that? Now you know. Why did Christian Drosten produce and promote a 'testing' protocol that he knew couldn't test for infectious disease which led to a global human catastrophe. Now you know. The Archontic mind doesn't give a shit ([Fig 17](#)). I personally think that Gates and major Cult insiders are a form of AI cyborg that the Archons want humans to become.

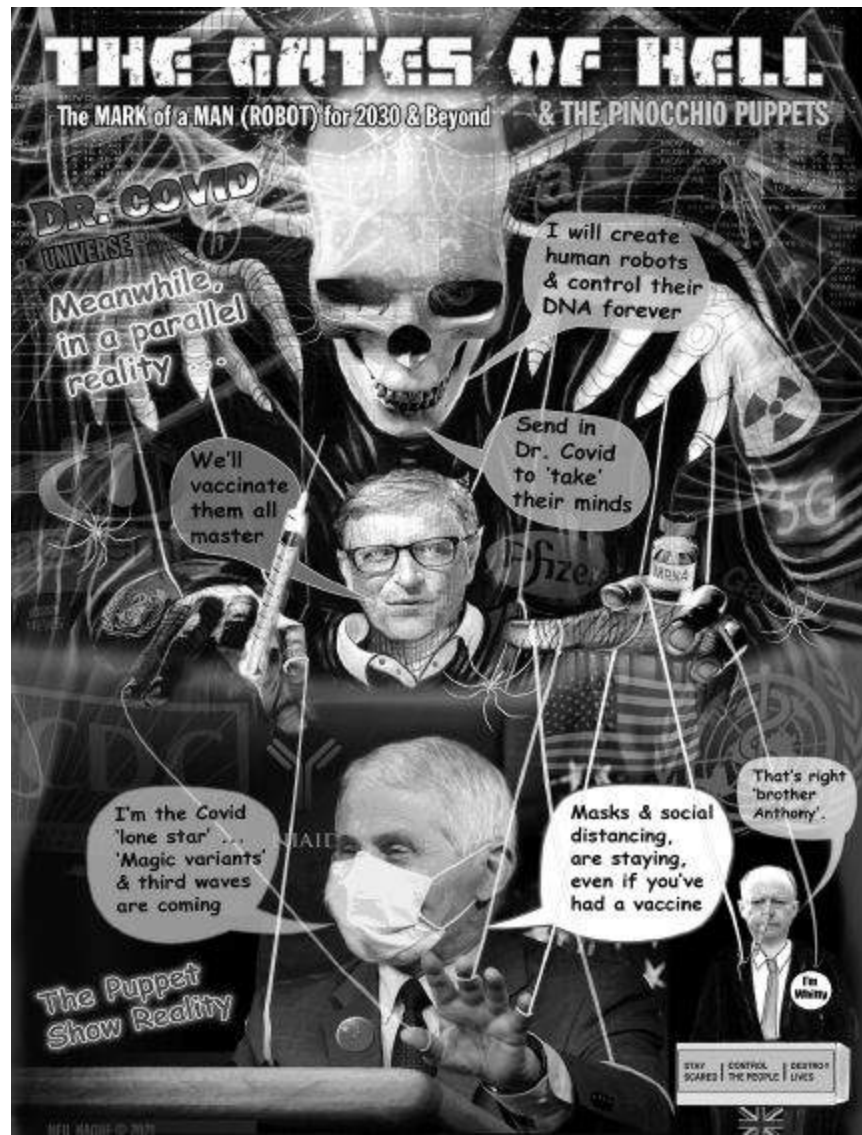


Figure 17: Artist Neil Hague's version of the 'Covid' hierarchy.

Human batteries

A state of such inversion does have its consequences, however. The level of disconnection from the Source of All means that you withdraw from that source of energetic sustenance and creativity. This means that you have to find your own supply of energetic power and it has – *us*. When the Morpheus character in the first *Matrix* movie held up a battery he spoke a profound truth when he said: 'The Matrix is a computer-generated dream world built to keep us under control in order to change the human being into one of

these.' The statement was true in all respects. We do live in a technologically-generated virtual reality simulation (more very shortly) and we have been manipulated to be an energy source for Archontic consciousness. The Disney-Pixar animated movie *Monsters, Inc.* in 2001 symbolised the dynamic when monsters in their world had no energy source and they would enter the human world to terrify children in their beds, catch the child's scream, terror (low-vibrational frequencies), and take that energy back to power the monster world. The lead character you might remember was a single giant eye and the symbolism of the Cult's all-seeing eye was obvious. Every thought and emotion is broadcast as a frequency unique to that thought and emotion. Feelings of love and joy, empathy and compassion, are high, quick, frequencies while fear, depression, anxiety, suffering and hate are low, slow, dense frequencies. Which kind do you think Archontic consciousness can connect with and absorb? In such a low and dense frequency state there's no way it can connect with the energy of love and joy. Archons can only feed off energy compatible with their own frequency and they and their Cult agents want to delete the human world of love and joy and manipulate the transmission of low vibrational frequencies through low-vibrational human mental and emotional states. *We are their energy source.* Wars are energetic banquets to the Archons – a world war even more so – and think how much low-frequency mental and emotional energy has been generated from the consequences for humanity of the 'Covid' hoax orchestrated by Archons incarnate like Gates.

The ancient practice of human sacrifice 'to the gods', continued in secret today by the Cult, is based on the same principle. 'The gods' are Archontic consciousness in different forms and the sacrifice is induced into a state of intense terror to generate the energy the Archontic frequency can absorb. Incarnate Archons in the ritual drink the blood which contains an adrenaline they crave which floods into the bloodstream when people are terrorised. Most of the sacrifices, ancient and modern, are children and the theme of 'sacrificing young virgins to the gods' is just code for children. They

have a particular pre-puberty energy that Archons want more than anything and the energy of the young in general is their target. The California Department of Education wants students to chant the names of Aztec gods (Archontic gods) once worshipped in human sacrifice rituals in a curriculum designed to encourage them to 'challenge racist, bigoted, discriminatory, imperialist/colonial beliefs', join 'social movements that struggle for social justice', and 'build new possibilities for a post-racist, post-systemic racism society'. It's the usual Woke crap that inverts racism and calls it anti-racism. In this case solidarity with 'indigenous tribes' is being used as an excuse to chant the names of 'gods' to which people were sacrificed (and still are in secret). What an example of Woke's inability to see beyond black and white, us and them, They condemn the colonisation of these tribal cultures by Europeans (quite right), but those cultures sacrificing people including children to their 'gods', and mass murdering untold numbers as the Aztecs did, is just fine. One chant is to the Aztec god Tezcatlipoca who had a man sacrificed to him in the 5th month of the Aztec calendar. His heart was cut out and he was eaten. Oh, that's okay then. Come on children ... after three ... Other sacrificial 'gods' for the young to chant their allegiance include Quetzalcoatl, Huitzilopochtli and Xipe Totec. The curriculum says that 'chants, affirmations, and energizers can be used to bring the class together, build unity around ethnic studies principles and values, and to reinvigorate the class following a lesson that may be emotionally taxing or even when student engagement may appear to be low'. Well, that's the cover story, anyway. Chanting and mantras are the repetition of a particular frequency generated from the vocal cords and chanting the names of these Archontic 'gods' tunes you into their frequency. That is the last thing you want when it allows for energetic synchronisation, attachment and perceptual influence. Initiates chant the names of their 'Gods' in their rituals for this very reason.

Vampires of the Woke

Paedophilia is another way that Archons absorb the energy of children. Paedophiles possessed by Archontic consciousness are used as the conduit during sexual abuse for discarnate Archons to vampire the energy of the young they desire so much. Stupendous numbers of children disappear every year never to be seen again although you would never know from the media. Imagine how much low-vibrational energy has been generated by children during the 'Covid' hoax when so many have become depressed and psychologically destroyed to the point of killing themselves. Shocking numbers of children are now taken by the state from loving parents to be handed to others. I can tell you from long experience of researching this since 1996 that many end up with paedophiles and assets of the Cult through corrupt and Cult-owned social services which in the reframing era has hired many psychopaths and emotionless automatons to do the job. Children are even stolen to order using spurious reasons to take them by the corrupt and secret (because they're corrupt) 'family courts'. I have written in detail in other books, starting with *The Biggest Secret* in 1997, about the ubiquitous connections between the political, corporate, government, intelligence and military elites (Cult operatives) and Satanism and paedophilia. If you go deep enough both networks have an interlocking leadership. The Woke mentality has been developed by the Cult for many reasons: To promote almost every aspect of its agenda; to hijack the traditional political left and turn it fascist; to divide and rule; and to target agenda pushbackers. But there are other reasons which relate to what I am describing here. How many happy and joyful Wokers do you ever see especially at the extreme end? They are a mental and psychological mess consumed by emotional stress and constantly emotionally cocked for the next explosion of indignation at someone referring to a female as a female. They are walking, talking, batteries as Morpheus might say emitting frequencies which both enslave them in low-vibrational bubbles of perceptual limitation and feed the Archons. Add to this the hatred claimed to be love; fascism claimed to 'anti-fascism', racism claimed to be 'anti-racism';

exclusion claimed to inclusion; and the abuse-filled Internet trolling. You have a purpose-built Archontic energy system with not a wind turbine in sight and all founded on Archontic *inversion*. We have whole generations now manipulated to serve the Archons with their actions and energy. They will be doing so their entire adult lives unless they snap out of their Archon-induced trance. Is it really a surprise that Cult billionaires and corporations put so much money their way? Where is the energy of joy and laughter, including laughing at yourself which is confirmation of your own emotional security? Mark Twain said: 'The human race has one really effective weapon, and that is laughter.' We must use it all the time. Woke has destroyed comedy because it has no humour, no joy, sense of irony, or self-deprecation. Its energy is dense and intense. *Mmmmm*, lunch says the Archontic frequency. Rudolf Steiner (1861-1925) was the Austrian philosopher and famous esoteric thinker who established Waldorf education or Steiner schools to treat children like unique expressions of consciousness and not minds to be programmed with the perceptions determined by authority. I'd been writing about this energy vampiring for decades when I was sent in 2016 a quote by Steiner. He was spot on:

There are beings in the spiritual realms for whom anxiety and fear emanating from human beings offer welcome food. When humans have no anxiety and fear, then these creatures starve. If fear and anxiety radiates from people and they break out in panic, then these creatures find welcome nutrition and they become more and more powerful. These beings are hostile towards humanity. Everything that feeds on negative feelings, on anxiety, fear and superstition, despair or doubt, are in reality hostile forces in super-sensible worlds, launching cruel attacks on human beings, while they are being fed ... These are exactly the feelings that belong to contemporary culture and materialism; because it estranges people from the spiritual world, it is especially suited to evoke hopelessness and fear of the unknown in people, thereby calling up the above mentioned hostile forces against them.

Pause for a moment from this perspective and reflect on what has happened in the world since the start of 2020. Not only will pennies drop, but billion dollar bills. We see the same theme from Don Juan Matus, a Yaqui Indian shaman in Mexico and the information source for Peruvian-born writer, Carlos Castaneda, who wrote a series of

books from the 1960s to 1990s. Don Juan described the force manipulating human society and his name for the Archons was the predator:

We have a predator that came from the depths of the cosmos and took over the rule of our lives. Human beings are its prisoners. The predator is our lord and master. It has rendered us docile, helpless. If we want to protest, it suppresses our protest. If we want to act independently, it demands that we don't do so ... indeed we are held prisoner!

They took us over because we are food to them, and they squeeze us mercilessly because we are their sustenance. Just as we rear chickens in coops, the predators rear us in human coops, humaneros. Therefore, their food is always available to them.

Different cultures, different eras, same recurring theme.

The 'ennoia' dilemma

Nag Hammadi Gnostic manuscripts say that Archon consciousness has no 'ennoia'. This is directly translated as 'intentionality', but I'll use the term 'creative imagination'. The *All That Is* in awareness of itself is the source of all creativity – all possibility – and the more disconnected you are from that source the more you are subsequently denied 'creative imagination'. Given that Archon consciousness is almost entirely disconnected it severely lacks creativity and has to rely on far more mechanical processes of thought and exploit the creative potential of those that do have 'ennoia'. You can see cases of this throughout human society. Archon consciousness almost entirely dominates the global banking system and if we study how that system works you will appreciate what I mean. Banks manifest 'money' out of nothing by issuing lines of 'credit' which is 'money' that has never, does not, and will never exist except in theory. It's a confidence trick. If you think 'credit' figures-on-a-screen 'money' is worth anything you accept it as payment. If you don't then the whole system collapses through lack of confidence in the value of that 'money'. Archontic bankers with no 'ennoia' are 'lending' 'money' that doesn't exist to humans that *do* have creativity – those that have the inspired ideas and create businesses and products. Archon banking feeds off human creativity

which it controls through 'money' creation and debt. Humans have the creativity and Archons exploit that for their own benefit and control while having none themselves. Archon Internet platforms like Facebook claim joint copyright of everything that creative users post and while Archontic minds like Zuckerberg may officially head that company it will be human creatives on the staff that provide the creative inspiration. When you have limitless 'money' you can then buy other companies established by creative humans. Witness the acquisition record of Facebook, Google and their like. Survey the Archon-controlled music industry and you see non-creative dark suit executives making their fortune from the human creativity of their artists. The cases are endless. Research the history of people like Gates and Zuckerberg and how their empires were built on exploiting the creativity of others. Archon minds cannot create out of nothing, but they are skilled (because they have to be) in what Gnostic texts call 'countermimicry'. They can imitate, but not innovate. Sabbatians trawl the creativity of others through backdoors they install in computer systems through their cybersecurity systems. Archon-controlled China is globally infamous for stealing intellectual property and I remember how Hong Kong, now part of China, became notorious for making counterfeit copies of the creativity of others – 'countermimicry'. With the now pervasive and all-seeing surveillance systems able to infiltrate any computer you can appreciate the potential for Archons to vampire the creativity of humans. Author John Lamb Lash wrote in his book about the Nag Hammadi texts, *Not In His Image*:

Although they cannot originate anything, because they lack the divine factor of ennoia (intentionality), Archons can imitate with a vengeance. Their expertise is simulation (HAL, virtual reality). The Demiurge [Yaldabaoth] fashions a heaven world copied from the fractal patterns [of the original] ... His construction is celestial kitsch, like the fake Italianate villa of a Mafia don complete with militant angels to guard every portal.

This brings us to something that I have been speaking about since the turn of the millennium. Our reality is a simulation; a virtual reality that we think is real. No, I'm not kidding.

Human reality? Well, virtually

I had pondered for years about whether our reality is 'real' or some kind of construct. I remembered being immensely affected on a visit as a small child in the late 1950s to the then newly-opened Planetarium on the Marylebone Road in London which is now closed and part of the adjacent Madame Tussauds wax museum. It was in the middle of the day, but when the lights went out there was the night sky projected in the Planetarium's domed ceiling and it appeared to be so real. The experience never left me and I didn't know why until around the turn of the millennium when I became certain that our 'night sky' and entire reality is a projection, a virtual reality, akin to the illusory world portrayed in the *Matrix* movies. I looked at the sky one day in this period and it appeared to me like the domed roof of the Planetarium. The release of the first *Matrix* movie in 1999 also provided a synchronistic and perfect visual representation of where my mind had been going for a long time. I hadn't come across the Gnostic Nag Hammadi texts then. When I did years later the correlation was once again astounding. As I read Gnostic accounts from 1,600 years and more earlier it was clear that they were describing the same simulation phenomenon. They tell how the Yaldabaoth 'Demiurge' and Archons created a 'bad copy' of original reality to rule over all that were captured by its illusions and the body was a prison to trap consciousness in the 'bad copy' fake reality. Read how Gnostics describe the 'bad copy' and update that to current times and they are referring to what we would call today a virtual reality simulation.

Author John Lamb Lash said 'the Demiurge fashions a heaven world copied from the fractal patterns' of the original through expertise in 'HAL' or virtual reality simulation. Fractal patterns are part of the energetic information construct of our reality, a sort of blueprint. If these patterns were copied in computer terms it would indeed give you a copy of a 'natural' reality in a non-natural frequency and digital form. The principle is the same as making a copy of a website. The original website still exists, but now you can change the copy version to make it whatever you like and it can

become very different to the original website. Archons have done this with our reality, a *synthetic* copy of prime reality that still exists beyond the frequency walls of the simulation. Trapped within the illusions of this synthetic Matrix, however, were and are human consciousness and other expressions of prime reality and this is why the Archons via the Cult are seeking to make the human body synthetic and give us synthetic AI minds to complete the job of turning the entire reality synthetic including what we perceive to be the natural world. To quote Kurzweil: 'Nanobots will infuse all the matter around us with information. Rocks, trees, everything will become these intelligent creatures.' Yes, *synthetic* 'creatures' just as 'Covid' and other genetically-manipulating 'vaccines' are designed to make the human body synthetic. From this perspective it is obvious why Archons and their Cult are so desperate to infuse synthetic material into every human with their 'Covid' scam.

Let there be (electromagnetic) light

Yaldabaoth, the force that created the simulation, or Matrix, makes sense of the Gnostic reference to 'The Great Architect' and its use by Cult Freemasonry as the name of its deity. The designer of the Matrix in the movies is called 'The Architect' and that trilogy is jam-packed with symbolism relating to these subjects. I have contended for years that the angry Old Testament God (Yaldabaoth) is the 'God' being symbolically 'quoted' in the opening of Genesis as 'creating the world'. This is not the creation of prime reality – it's the creation of the *simulation*. The Genesis 'God' says: 'Let there be Light: and there was light.' But what is this 'Light'? I have said for decades that the speed of light (186,000 miles per second) is not the fastest speed possible as claimed by mainstream science and is in fact the frequency walls or outer limits of the Matrix. You can't have a fastest or slowest anything within all possibility when everything is possible. The human body is encoded to operate within the speed of light or *within the simulation* and thus we see only the tiny frequency band of visible *light*. Near-death experiencers who perceive reality outside the body during temporary 'death' describe a very different

form of light and this is supported by the Nag Hammadi texts. Prime reality beyond the simulation ('Upper Aeons' to the Gnostics) is described as a realm of incredible beauty, bliss, love and harmony – a realm of 'watery light' that is so powerful 'there are no shadows'. Our false reality of Archon control, which Gnostics call the 'Lower Aeons', is depicted as a realm with a different kind of 'light' and described in terms of chaos, 'Hell', 'the Abyss' and 'Outer Darkness', where trapped souls are tormented and manipulated by demons (relate that to the 'Covid' hoax alone). The watery light theme can be found in near-death accounts and it is not the same as *simulation* 'light' which is electromagnetic or radiation light within the speed of light – the 'Lower Aeons'. Simulation 'light' is the 'luminous fire' associated by Gnostics with the Archons. The Bible refers to Yaldabaoth as 'that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world' (Revelation 12:9). I think that making a simulated copy of prime reality ('countermimicry') and changing it dramatically while all the time manipulating humanity to believe it to be real could probably meet the criteria of deceiving the whole world. Then we come to the Cult god Lucifer – the *Light Bringer*. Lucifer is symbolic of Yaldabaoth, the bringer of radiation light that forms the bad copy simulation within the speed of light. 'He' is symbolised by the lighted torch held by the Statue of Liberty and in the name 'Illuminati'. Sabbatian-Frankism declares that Lucifer is the true god and Lucifer is the real god of Freemasonry honoured as their 'Great or Grand Architect of the Universe' (simulation).

I would emphasise, too, the way Archontic technologically-generated luminous fire of radiation has deluged our environment since I was a kid in the 1950s and changed the nature of The Field with which we constantly interact. Through that interaction technological radiation is changing us. The Smart Grid is designed to operate with immense levels of communication power with 5G expanding across the world and 6G, 7G, in the process of development. Radiation is the simulation and the Archontic manipulation system. Why wouldn't the Archon Cult wish to unleash radiation upon us to an ever-greater extreme to form

Kurzweil's 'cloud'? The plan for a synthetic human is related to the need to cope with levels of radiation beyond even anything we've seen so far. Biological humans would not survive the scale of radiation they have in their script. The Smart Grid is a technological sub-reality within the technological simulation to further disconnect five-sense perception from expanded consciousness. It's a technological prison of the mind.

Infusing the 'spirit of darkness'

A recurring theme in religion and native cultures is the manipulation of human genetics by a non-human force and most famously recorded as the biblical 'sons of god' (the gods plural in the original) who interbred with the daughters of men. The Nag Hammadi *Apocryphon of John* tells the same story this way:

He [Yaldabaoth] sent his angels [Archons/demons] to the daughters of men, that they might take some of them for themselves and raise offspring for their enjoyment. And at first they did not succeed. When they had no success, they gathered together again and they made a plan together ... And the angels changed themselves in their likeness into the likeness of their mates, filling them with the spirit of darkness, which they had mixed for them, and with evil ... And they took women and begot children out of the darkness according to the likeness of their spirit.

Possession when a discarnate entity takes over a human body is an age-old theme and continues today. It's very real and I've seen it. Satanic and secret society rituals can create an energetic environment in which entities can attach to initiates and I've heard many stories of how people have changed their personality after being initiated even into lower levels of the Freemasons. I have been inside three Freemasonic temples, one at a public open day and two by just walking in when there was no one around to stop me. They were in Ryde, the town where I live, Birmingham, England, when I was with a group, and Boston, Massachusetts. They all felt the same energetically – dark, dense, low-vibrational and sinister. Demonic attachment can happen while the initiate has no idea what is going on. To them it's just a ritual to get in the Masons and do a bit of good

business. In the far more extreme rituals of Satanism human possession is even more powerful and they are designed to make possession possible. The hierarchy of the Cult is dictated by the power and perceived status of the possessing Archon. In this way the Archon hierarchy becomes the Cult hierarchy. Once the entity has attached it can influence perception and behaviour and if it attaches to the extreme then so much of its energy (information) infuses into the body information field that the hologram starts to reflect the nature of the possessing entity. This is the *Exorcist* movie type of possession when facial features change and it's known as shapeshifting. Islam's Jinn are said to be invisible tricksters who change shape, 'whisper', confuse and take human form. These are all traits of the Archons and other versions of the same phenomenon. Extreme possession could certainly infuse the 'spirit of darkness' into a partner during sex as the Nag Hammadi texts appear to describe. Such an infusion can change genetics which is also energetic information. Human genetics is information and the 'spirit of darkness' is information. Mix one with the other and change must happen. Islam has the concept of a 'Jinn baby' through possession of the mother and by Jinn taking human form. There are many ways that human genetics can be changed and remember that Archons have been aware all along of advanced techniques to do this. What is being done in human society today – and far more – was known about by Archons at the time of the 'fallen ones' and their other versions described in religions and cultures.

Archons and their human-world Cult are obsessed with genetics as we see today and they know this dictates how information is processed into perceived reality during a human life. They needed to produce a human form that would decode the simulation and this is symbolically known as 'Adam and Eve' who left the 'garden' (prime reality) and 'fell' into Matrix reality. The simulation is not a 'physical' construct (there is no 'physical'); it is a source of information. Think Wi-Fi again. The simulation is an energetic field encoded with information and body-brain systems are designed to decode that information encoded in wave or frequency form which

is transmitted to the brain as electrical signals. These are decoded by the brain to construct our sense of reality – an illusory ‘physical’ world that only exists in the brain or the mind. Virtual reality games mimic this process using the same sensory decoding system. Information is fed to the senses to decode a virtual reality that can appear so real, but isn’t (Figs 18 and 19). Some scientists believe – and I agree with them – that what we perceive as ‘physical’ reality only exists when we are looking or observing. The act of perception or focus triggers the decoding systems which turn waveform information into holographic reality. When we are not observing something our reality reverts from a holographic state to a waveform state. This relates to the same principle as a falling tree not making a noise unless someone is there to hear it or decode it. The concept makes sense from the simulation perspective. A computer is not decoding all the information in a Wi-Fi field all the time and only decodes or brings into reality on the screen that part of Wi-Fi that it’s decoding – focusing upon – at that moment.



Figure 18: Virtual reality technology ‘hacks’ into the body’s five-sense decoding system.



Figure 19: The result can be experienced as very ‘real’.

Interestingly, Professor Donald Hoffman at the Department of Cognitive Sciences at the University of California, Irvine, says that our experienced reality is like a computer interface that shows us only the level with which we interact while hiding all that exists beyond it: 'Evolution shaped us with a user interface that hides the truth. Nothing that we see is the truth – the very language of space and time and objects is the wrong language to describe reality.' He is correct in what he says on so many levels. Space and time are not a universal reality. They are a phenomenon of decoded *simulation* reality as part of the process of enslaving our sense of reality. Near-death experiencers report again and again how space and time did not exist as we perceive them once they were free of the body – body decoding systems. You can appreciate from this why Archons and their Cult are so desperate to entrap human attention in the five senses where we are in the Matrix and of the Matrix. Opening your mind to expanded states of awareness takes you beyond the information confines of the simulation and you become aware of knowledge and insights denied to you before. This is what we call 'awakening' – *awakening from the Matrix* – and in the final chapter I will relate this to current events.

Where are the 'aliens'?

A simulation would explain the so-called 'Fermi Paradox' named after Italian physicist Enrico Fermi (1901-1954) who created the first nuclear reactor. He considered the question of why there is such a lack of extraterrestrial activity when there are so many stars and planets in an apparently vast universe; but what if the night sky that we see, or think we do, is a simulated projection as I say? If you control the simulation and your aim is to hold humanity fast in essential ignorance would you want other forms of life including advanced life coming and going sharing information with humanity? Or would you want them to believe they were isolated and apparently alone? Themes of human isolation and apartness are common whether they be the perception of a lifeless universe or the fascist isolation laws of the 'Covid' era. Paradoxically the very

existence of a simulation means that we are not alone when some force had to construct it. My view is that experiences that people have reported all over the world for centuries with Reptilians and Grey entities are Archon phenomena as Nag Hammadi texts describe; and that benevolent 'alien' interactions are non-human groups that come in and out of the simulation by overcoming Archon attempts to keep them out. It should be highlighted, too, that Reptilians and Greys are obsessed with *genetics* and *technology* as related by cultural accounts and those who say they have been abducted by them. Technology is their way of overcoming some of the limitations in their creative potential and our technology-driven and controlled human society of today is *archetypical* Archon-Reptilian-Grey *modus operandi*. Technocracy is really *Archontocracy*. The Universe does not have to be as big as it appears with a simulation. There is no space or distance only information decoded into holographic reality. What we call 'space' is only the absence of holographic 'objects' and that 'space' is The Field of energetic information which connects everything into a single whole. The same applies with the artificially-generated information field of the simulation. The Universe is not big or small as a physical reality. It is decoded information, that's all, and its perceived size is decided by the way the simulation is encoded to make it appear. The entire night sky as we perceive it only exists in our brain and so where are those 'millions of light years'? The 'stars' on the ceiling of the Planetarium looked a vast distance away.

There's another point to mention about 'aliens'. I have been highlighting since the 1990s the plan to stage a fake 'alien invasion' to justify the centralisation of global power and a world military. Nazi scientist Werner von Braun, who was taken to America by Operation Paperclip after World War Two to help found NASA, told his American assistant Dr Carol Rosin about the Cult agenda when he knew he was dying in 1977. Rosin said that he told her about a sequence that would lead to total human control by a one-world government. This included threats from terrorism, rogue nations, meteors and asteroids before finally an 'alien invasion'. All of these

things, von Braun said, would be bogus and what I would refer to as a No-Problem-Reaction-Solution. Keep this in mind when 'the aliens are coming' is the new mantra. The aliens are not coming – they are *already here* and they have infiltrated human society while looking human. French-Canadian investigative journalist Serge Monast said in 1994 that he had uncovered a NASA/military operation called Project Blue Beam which fits with what Werner von Braun predicted. Monast died of a 'heart attack' in 1996 the day after he was arrested and spent a night in prison. He was 51. He said Blue Beam was a plan to stage an alien invasion that would include religious figures beamed holographically into the sky as part of a global manipulation to usher in a 'new age' of worshipping what I would say is the Cult 'god' Yaldabaoth in a one-world religion. Fake holographic asteroids are also said to be part of the plan which again syncs with von Braun. How could you stage an illusory threat from asteroids unless they were holographic inserts? This is pretty straightforward given the advanced technology outside the public arena and the fact that our 'physical' reality is holographic anyway. Information fields would be projected and we would decode them into the illusion of a 'physical' asteroid. If they can sell a global 'pandemic' with a 'virus' that doesn't exist what will humans not believe if government and media tell them?

All this is particularly relevant as I write with the Pentagon planning to release in June, 2021, information about 'UFO sightings'. I have been following the UFO story since the early 1990s and the common theme throughout has been government and military denials and cover up. More recently, however, the Pentagon has suddenly become more talkative and apparently open with Air Force pilot radar images released of unexplained craft moving and changing direction at speeds well beyond anything believed possible with human technology. Then, in March, 2021, former Director of National Intelligence John Ratcliffe said a Pentagon report months later in June would reveal a great deal of information about UFO sightings unknown to the public. He said the report would have 'massive implications'. The order to do this was included bizarrely

in a \$2.3 trillion 'coronavirus' relief and government funding bill passed by the Trump administration at the end of 2020. I would add some serious notes of caution here. I have been pointing out since the 1990s that the US military and intelligence networks have long had craft – 'flying saucers' or anti-gravity craft – which any observer would take to be extraterrestrial in origin. Keeping this knowledge from the public allows craft flown by *humans* to be perceived as alien visitations. I am not saying that 'aliens' do not exist. I would be the last one to say that, but we have to be streetwise here. President Ronald Reagan told the UN General Assembly in 1987: 'I occasionally think how quickly our differences worldwide would vanish if we were facing an alien threat from outside this world.' That's the idea. Unite against a common 'enemy' with a common purpose behind your 'saviour force' (the Cult) as this age-old technique of mass manipulation goes global.

Science moves this way ...

I could find only one other person who was discussing the simulation hypothesis publicly when I concluded it was real. This was Nick Bostrom, a Swedish-born philosopher at the University of Oxford, who has explored for many years the possibility that human reality is a computer simulation although his version and mine are not the same. Today the simulation and holographic reality hypothesis have increasingly entered the scientific mainstream. Well, the more open-minded mainstream, that is. Here are a few of the ever-gathering examples. American nuclear physicist Silas Beane led a team of physicists at the University of Bonn in Germany pursuing the question of whether we live in a simulation. They concluded that we probably do and it was likely based on a lattice of cubes. They found that cosmic rays align with that specific pattern. The team highlighted the Greisen–Zatsepin–Kuzmin (GZK) limit which refers to cosmic ray particle interaction with cosmic background radiation that creates an apparent boundary for cosmic ray particles. They say in a paper entitled 'Constraints on the Universe as a Numerical Simulation' that this 'pattern of constraint' is exactly what you

would find with a computer simulation. They also made the point that a simulation would create its own 'laws of physics' that would limit possibility. I've been making the same point for decades that the *perceived* laws of physics relate only to this reality, or what I would later call the simulation. When designers write codes to create computer and virtual reality games they are the equivalent of the laws of physics for that game. Players interact within the limitations laid out by the coding. In the same way those who wrote the codes for the simulation decided the laws of physics that would apply. These can be overridden by expanded states of consciousness, but not by those enslaved in only five-sense awareness where simulation codes rule. Overriding the codes is what people call 'miracles'. They are not. They are bypassing the encoded limits of the simulation. A population caught in simulation perception would have no idea that this was their plight. As the Bonn paper said: 'Like a prisoner in a pitch-black cell we would not be able to see the "walls" of our prison,' That's true if people remain mesmerised by the five senses. Open to expanded awareness and those walls become very clear. The main one is the speed of light.

American theoretical physicist James Gates is another who has explored the simulation question and found considerable evidence to support the idea. Gates was Professor of Physics at the University of Maryland, Director of The Center for String and Particle Theory, and on Barack Obama's Council of Advisors on Science and Technology. He and his team found *computer codes* of digital data embedded in the fabric of our reality. They relate to on-off electrical charges of 1 and 0 in the binary system used by computers. 'We have no idea what they are doing there', Gates said. They found within the energetic fabric mathematical sequences known as error-correcting codes or block codes that 'reboot' data to its original state or 'default settings' when something knocks it out of sync. Gates was asked if he had found a set of equations embedded in our reality indistinguishable from those that drive search engines and browsers and he said: 'That is correct.' Rich Terrile, director of the Centre for Evolutionary Computation and Automated Design at NASA's Jet

Propulsion Laboratory, has said publicly that he believes the Universe is a digital hologram that must have been created by a form of intelligence. I agree with that in every way. Waveform information is delivered electrically by the senses to the brain which constructs a *digital* holographic reality that we call the 'world'. This digital level of reality can be read by the esoteric art of numerology. Digital holograms are at the cutting edge of holographics today. We have digital technology everywhere designed to access and manipulate our digital level of perceived reality. Synthetic mRNA in 'Covid vaccines' has a digital component to manipulate the body's digital 'operating system'.

Reality is numbers

How many know that our reality can be broken down to numbers and codes that are the same as computer games? Max Tegmark, a physicist at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (MIT), is the author of *Our Mathematical Universe* in which he lays out how reality can be entirely described by numbers and maths in the way that a video game is encoded with the 'physics' of computer games. Our world and computer virtual reality are essentially the same.

Tegmark imagines the perceptions of characters in an advanced computer game when the graphics are so good they don't know they are in a game. They think they can bump into real objects (electromagnetic resistance in our reality), fall in love and feel emotions like excitement. When they began to study the apparently 'physical world' of the video game they would realise that everything was made of pixels (which have been found in our energetic reality as must be the case when on one level our world is digital). What computer game characters thought was physical 'stuff', Tegmark said, could actually be broken down into numbers:

And we're exactly in this situation in our world. We look around and it doesn't seem that mathematical at all, but everything we see is made out of elementary particles like quarks and electrons. And what properties does an electron have? Does it have a smell or a colour or a texture? No! ... We physicists have come up with geeky names for [Electron] properties, like

electric charge, or spin, or lepton number, but the electron doesn't care what we call it, the properties are just numbers.

This is the illusory reality Gnostics were describing. This is the simulation. The A, C, G, and T codes of DNA have a binary value – A and C = 0 while G and T = 1. This has to be when the simulation is digital and the body must be digital to interact with it. Recurring mathematical sequences are encoded throughout reality and the body. They include the Fibonacci sequence in which the two previous numbers are added to get the next one, as in ... 1, 1, 2, 3, 5, 8, 13, 21, 34, 55, etc. The sequence is encoded in the human face and body, proportions of animals, DNA, seed heads, pine cones, trees, shells, spiral galaxies, hurricanes and the number of petals in a flower. The list goes on and on. There are fractal patterns – a 'never-ending pattern that is infinitely complex and self-similar across all scales in the as above, so below, principle of holograms. These and other famous recurring geometrical and mathematical sequences such as Phi, Pi, Golden Mean, Golden Ratio and Golden Section are *computer codes* of the simulation. I had to laugh and give my head a shake the day I finished this book and it went into the production stage. I was sent an article in *Scientific American* published in April, 2021, with the headline 'Confirmed! We Live in a Simulation'. Two decades after I first said our reality is a simulation and the speed of light is its outer limit the article suggested that we do live in a simulation and that the speed of light is its outer limit. I left school at 15 and never passed a major exam in my life while the writer was up to his eyes in qualifications. As I will explain in the final chapter *knowing* is far better than thinking and they come from very different sources. The article rightly connected the speed of light to the processing speed of the 'Matrix' and said what has been in my books all this time ... 'If we are in a simulation, as it appears, then space is an abstract property written in code. It is not real'. No it's not and if we live in a simulation something created it and it wasn't *us*. 'That David Icke says we are manipulated by aliens' – he's crackers.'

Wow ...

The reality that humanity thinks is so real is an illusion. Politicians, governments, scientists, doctors, academics, law enforcement, media, school and university curriculums, on and on, are all founded on a world that *does not exist* except as a simulated prison cell. Is it such a stretch to accept that 'Covid' doesn't exist when our entire 'physical' reality doesn't exist? Revealed here is the knowledge kept under raps in the Cult networks of compartmentalised secrecy to control humanity's sense of reality by inducing the population to believe in a reality that's not real. If it wasn't so tragic in its experiential consequences the whole thing would be hysterically funny. None of this is new to Renegade Minds. Ancient Greek philosopher Plato (about 428 to about 347BC) was a major influence on Gnostic belief and he described the human plight thousands of years ago with his Allegory of the Cave. He told the symbolic story of prisoners living in a cave who had never been outside. They were chained and could only see one wall of the cave while behind them was a fire that they could not see. Figures walked past the fire casting shadows on the prisoners' wall and those moving shadows became their sense of reality. Some prisoners began to study the shadows and were considered experts on them (today's academics and scientists), but what they studied was only an illusion (today's academics and scientists). A prisoner escaped from the cave and saw reality as it really is. When he returned to report this revelation they didn't believe him, called him mad and threatened to kill him if he tried to set them free. Plato's tale is not only a brilliant analogy of the human plight and our illusory reality. It describes, too, the dynamics of the 'Covid' hoax. I have only skimmed the surface of these subjects here. The aim of this book is to crisply connect all essential dots to put what is happening today into its true context. All subject areas and their connections in this chapter are covered in great evidential detail in *Everything You Need To Know, But Have Never Been Told* and *The Answer*.

They say that bewildered people 'can't see the forest for the trees'. Humanity, however, can't see the forest for the *twigs*. The five senses

see only twigs while Renegade Minds can see the forest and it's the forest where the answers lie with the connections that reveals.

Breaking free of perceptual programming so the forest can be seen is the way we turn all this around. Not breaking free is how humanity got into this mess. The situation may seem hopeless, but I promise you it's not. We are a perceptual heartbeat from paradise if only we knew.

CHAPTER TWELVE

Escaping Wetiko

Life is simply a vacation from the infinite
Dean Cavanagh

Renegade Minds weave the web of life and events and see common themes in the apparently random. They are always there if you look for them and their pursuit is aided by incredible synchronicity that comes when your mind is open rather than mesmerised by what it thinks it can see.

Infinite awareness is infinite possibility and the more of infinite possibility that we access the more becomes infinitely possible. That may be stating the apparently obvious, but it is a devastatingly-powerful fact that can set us free. We are a point of attention within an infinity of consciousness. The question is how much of that infinity do we choose to access? How much knowledge, insight, awareness, wisdom, do we want to connect with and explore? If your focus is only in the five senses you will be influenced by a fraction of infinite awareness. I mean a range so tiny that it gives new meaning to infinitesimal. Limitation of self-identity and a sense of the possible limit accordingly your range of consciousness. We are what we think we are. Life is what we think it is. The dream is the dreamer and the dreamer is the dream. Buddhist philosophy puts it this way: 'As a thing is viewed, so it appears.' Most humans live in the realm of touch, taste, see, hear, and smell and that's the limit of their sense of the possible and sense of self. Many will follow a religion and speak of a God in his heaven, but their lives are still

dominated by the five senses in their perceptions and actions. The five senses become the arbiter of everything. When that happens all except a smear of infinity is sealed away from influence by the rigid, unyielding, reality bubbles that are the five-sense human or Phantom Self. Archon Cult methodology is to isolate consciousness within five-sense reality – the simulation – and then program that consciousness with a sense of self and the world through a deluge of life-long information designed to instil the desired perception that allows global control. Efforts to do this have increased dramatically with identity politics as identity bubbles are squeezed into the minutiae of five-sense detail which disconnect people even more profoundly from the infinite 'I'.

Five-sense focus and self-identity are like a firewall that limits access to the infinite realms. You only perceive one radio or television station and no other. We'll take that literally for a moment. Imagine a vast array of stations giving different information and angles on reality, but you only ever listen to one. Here we have the human plight in which the population is overwhelmingly confined to CultFM. This relates only to the frequency range of CultFM and limits perception and insight to that band – limits *possibility* to that band. It means you are connecting with an almost imperceptibly minuscule range of possibility and creative potential within the infinite Field. It's a world where everything seems apart from everything else and where synchronicity is rare. Synchronicity is defined in the dictionary as 'the happening by chance of two or more related or similar events at the same time'. Use of 'by chance' betrays a complete misunderstanding of reality. Synchronicity is not 'by chance'. As people open their minds, or 'awaken' to use the term, they notice more and more coincidences in their lives, bits of 'luck', apparently miraculous happenings that put them in the right place at the right time with the right people. Days become peppered with 'fancy meeting you here' and 'what are the chances of that?' My entire life has been lived like this and ever more so since my own colossal awakening in 1990 and 91 which transformed my sense of reality. Synchronicity is not 'by chance'; it is by accessing expanded

realms of possibility which allow expanded potential for manifestation. People broadcasting the same vibe from the same openness of mind tend to be drawn 'by chance' to each other through what I call frequency magnetism and it's not only people. In the last more than 30 years incredible synchronicity has also led me through the Cult maze to information in so many forms and to crucial personal experiences. These 'coincidences' have allowed me to put the puzzle pieces together across an enormous array of subjects and situations. Those who have breached the bubble of five-sense reality will know exactly what I mean and this escape from the perceptual prison cell is open to everyone whenever they make that choice. This may appear super-human when compared with the limitations of 'human', but it's really our natural state. 'Human' as currently experienced is consciousness in an unnatural state of induced separation from the infinity of the whole. I'll come to how this transformation into unity can be made when I have described in more detail the force that holds humanity in servitude by denying this access to infinite self.

The Wetiko factor

I have been talking and writing for decades about the way five-sense mind is systematically barricaded from expanded awareness. I have used the analogy of a computer (five-sense mind) and someone at the keyboard (expanded awareness). Interaction between the computer and the operator is symbolic of the interaction between five-sense mind and expanded awareness. The computer directly experiences the Internet and the operator experiences the Internet via the computer which is how it's supposed to be – the two working as one. Archons seek to control that point where the operator connects with the computer to stop that interaction ([Fig 20](#)). Now the operator is banging the keyboard and clicking the mouse, but the computer is not responding and this happens when the computer is taken over – *possessed* – by an appropriately-named computer 'virus'. The operator has lost all influence over the computer which goes its own way making decisions under the control of the 'virus'. I have

just described the dynamic through which the force known to Gnostics as Yaldabaoth and Archons disconnects five-sense mind from expanded awareness to imprison humanity in perceptual servitude.



Figure 20: The mind ‘virus’ I have been writing about for decades seeks to isolate five-sense mind (the computer) from the true ‘I’. (Image by Neil Hague).

About a year ago I came across a Native American concept of Wetiko which describes precisely the same phenomenon. Wetiko is the spelling used by the Cree and there are other versions including wintiko and windigo used by other tribal groups. They spell the name with lower case, but I see Wetiko as a proper noun as with Archons and prefer a capital. I first saw an article about Wetiko by writer and researcher Paul Levy which so synced with what I had been writing about the computer/operator disconnection and later the Archons. I then read his book, the fascinating *Dispelling Wetiko, Breaking the Spell of Evil*. The parallels between what I had concluded long before and the Native American concept of Wetiko were so clear and obvious that it was almost funny. For Wetiko see the Gnostic Archons for sure and the Jinn, the Predators, and every other name for a force of evil, inversion and chaos. Wetiko is the Native American name for the force that divides the computer from

the operator (Fig 21). Indigenous author Jack D. Forbes, a founder of the Native American movement in the 1960s, wrote another book about Wetiko entitled *Columbus And Other Cannibals – The Wetiko Disease of Exploitation, Imperialism, and Terrorism* which I also read. Forbes says that Wetiko refers to an evil person or spirit ‘who terrorizes other creatures by means of terrible acts, including cannibalism’. Zulu shaman Credo Mutwa told me that African accounts tell how cannibalism was brought into the world by the Chitauri ‘gods’ – another manifestation of Wetiko. The distinction between ‘evil person or spirit’ relates to Archons/Wetiko possessing a human or acting as pure consciousness. Wetiko is said to be a sickness of the soul or spirit and a state of being that takes but gives nothing back – the Cult and its operatives perfectly described. Black Hawk, a Native American war leader defending their lands from confiscation, said European invaders had ‘poisoned hearts’ – Wetiko hearts – and that this would spread to native societies. Mention of the heart is very significant as we shall shortly see. Forbes writes: ‘Tragically, the history of the world for the past 2,000 years is, in great part, the story of the epidemiology of the wetiko disease.’ Yes, and much longer. Forbes is correct when he says: ‘The wetikos destroyed Egypt and Babylon and Athens and Rome and Tenochtitlan [capital of the Aztec empire] and perhaps now they will destroy the entire earth.’ Evil, he said, is the number one export of a Wetiko culture – see its globalisation with ‘Covid’. Constant war, mass murder, suffering of all kinds, child abuse, Satanism, torture and human sacrifice are all expressions of Wetiko and the Wetiko possessed. The world is Wetiko made manifest, *but it doesn’t have to be*. There is a way out of this even now.



Figure 21: The mind 'virus' is known to Native Americans as 'Wetiko'. (Image by Neil Hague).

Cult of Wetiko

Wetiko is the Yaldabaoth frequency distortion that seeks to attach to human consciousness and absorb it into its own. Once this connection is made Wetiko can drive the perceptions of the target which they believe to be coming from their own mind. All the horrors of history and today from mass killers to Satanists, paedophiles like Jeffrey Epstein and other psychopaths, are the embodiment of Wetiko and express its state of being in all its grotesqueness. The Cult is Wetiko incarnate, Yaldabaoth incarnate, and it seeks to facilitate Wetiko assimilation of humanity in totality into its distortion by manipulating the population into low frequency states that match its own. Paul Levy writes:

'Holographically enforced within the psyche of every human being the wetiko virus pervades and underlies the entire field of consciousness, and can therefore potentially manifest through any one of us at any moment if we are not mindful.' The 'Covid' hoax has achieved this with many people, but others have not fallen into Wetiko's frequency lair. Players in the 'Covid' human catastrophe including Gates, Schwab, Tedros, Fauci, Whitty, Vallance, Johnson, Hancock, Ferguson, Drosten, and all the rest, including the psychopath psychologists, are expressions of Wetiko. This is why

they have no compassion or empathy and no emotional consequence for what they do that would make them stop doing it. Observe all the people who support the psychopaths in authority against the Pushbackers despite the damaging impact the psychopaths have on their own lives and their family's lives. You are again looking at Wetiko possession which prevents them seeing through the lies to the obvious scam going on. *Why can't they see it?* Wetiko won't let them see it. The perceptual divide that has now become a chasm is between the Wetikoed and the non-Wetikoed.

Paul Levy describes Wetiko in the same way that I have long described the Archontic force. They are the same distorted consciousness operating across dimensions of reality: '... the subtle body of wetiko is not located in the third dimension of space and time, literally existing in another dimension ... it is able to affect ordinary lives by mysteriously interpenetrating into our three-dimensional world.' Wetiko does this through its incarnate representatives in the Cult and by weaving itself into The Field which on our level of reality is the electromagnetic information field of the simulation or Matrix. More than that, the simulation *is* Wetiko / Yaldabaoth. Caleb Scharf, Director of Astrobiology at Columbia University, has speculated that 'alien life' could be so advanced that it has transcribed itself into the quantum realm to become what we call physics. He said intelligence indistinguishable from the fabric of the Universe would solve many of its greatest mysteries:

Perhaps hyper-advanced life isn't just external. Perhaps it's already all around. It is embedded in what we perceive to be physics itself, from the root behaviour of particles and fields to the phenomena of complexity and emergence ... In other words, life might not just be in the equations. It might BE the equations [My emphasis].

Scharf said it is possible that 'we don't recognise advanced life because it forms an integral and unsuspecting part of what we've considered to be the natural world'. I agree. Wetiko/Yaldabaoth *is* the simulation. We are literally in the body of the beast. But that doesn't mean it has to control us. We all have the power to overcome Wetiko

influence and the Cult knows that. I doubt it sleeps too well because it knows that.

Which Field?

This, I suggest, is how it all works. There are two Fields. One is the fierce electromagnetic light of the Matrix within the speed of light; the other is the 'watery light' of The Field beyond the walls of the Matrix that connects with the Great Infinity. Five-sense mind and the decoding systems of the body attach us to the Field of Matrix light. They have to or we could not experience this reality. Five-sense mind sees only the Matrix Field of information while our expanded consciousness is part of the Infinity Field. When we open our minds, and most importantly our hearts, to the Infinity Field we have a mission control which gives us an expanded perspective, a road map, to understand the nature of the five-sense world. If we are isolated only in five-sense mind there is no mission control. We're on our own trying to understand a world that's constantly feeding us information to ensure we do not understand. People in this state can feel 'lost' and bewildered with no direction or radar. You can see ever more clearly those who are influenced by the Fields of Big Infinity or little five-sense mind simply by their views and behaviour with regard to the 'Covid' hoax. We have had this division throughout known human history with the mass of the people on one side and individuals who could see and intuit beyond the walls of the simulation – Plato's prisoner who broke out of the cave and saw reality for what it is. Such people have always been targeted by Wetiko/Archon-possessed authority, burned at the stake or demonised as mad, bad and dangerous. The Cult today and its global network of 'anti-hate', 'anti-fascist' Woke groups are all expressions of Wetiko attacking those exposing the conspiracy, 'Covid' lies and the 'vaccine' agenda.

Woke as a whole is Wetiko which explains its black and white mentality and how at one it is with the Wetiko-possessed Cult. Paul Levy said: 'To be in this paradigm is to still be under the thrall of a two-valued logic – where things are either true or false – of a

wetikoized mind.’ Wetiko consciousness is in a permanent rage, therefore so is Woke, and then there is Woke inversion and contradiction. ‘Anti-fascists’ act like fascists because fascists *and* ‘anti-fascists’ are both Wetiko at work. Political parties act the same while claiming to be different for the same reason. Secret society and satanic rituals are attaching initiates to Wetiko and the cold, ruthless, psychopathic mentality that secures the positions of power all over the world is Wetiko. Reframing ‘training programmes’ have the same cumulative effect of attaching Wetiko and we have their graduates described as automatons and robots with a cold, psychopathic, uncaring demeanour. They are all traits of Wetiko possession and look how many times they have been described in this book and elsewhere with regard to personnel behind ‘Covid’ including the police and medical profession. Climbing the greasy pole in any profession in a Wetiko society requires traits of Wetiko to get there and that is particularly true of politics which is not about fair competition and pre-eminence of ideas. It is founded on how many backs you can stab and arses you can lick. This culminated in the global ‘Covid’ coordination between the Wetiko possessed who pulled it off in all the different countries without a trace of empathy and compassion for their impact on humans. Our sight sense can see only holographic form and not the Field which connects holographic form. Therefore we perceive ‘physical’ objects with ‘space’ in between. In fact that ‘space’ is energy/consciousness operating on multiple frequencies. One of them is Wetiko and that connects the Cult psychopaths, those who submit to the psychopaths, and those who serve the psychopaths in the media operations of the world. Wetiko is Gates. Wetiko is the mask-wearing submissive. Wetiko is the fake journalist and ‘fact-checker’. The Wetiko Field is coordinating the whole thing. Psychopaths, gofers, media operatives, ‘anti-hate’ hate groups, ‘fact-checkers’ and submissive people work as one unit *even without human coordination* because they are attached to the *same* Field which is organising it all ([Fig 22](#)). Paul Levy is here describing how Wetiko-possessed people are drawn together and refuse to let any information breach their rigid

perceptions. He was writing long before 'Covid', but I think you will recognise followers of the 'Covid' religion *oh just a little bit*:

People who are channelling the vibratory frequency of wetiko align with each other through psychic resonance to reinforce their unspoken shared agreement so as to uphold their deranged view of reality. Once an unconscious content takes possession of certain individuals, it irresistibly draws them together by mutual attraction and knits them into groups tied together by their shared madness that can easily swell into an avalanche of insanity.

A psychic epidemic is a closed system, which is to say that it is insular and not open to any new information or informing influences from the outside world which contradict its fixed, limited, and limiting perspective.

There we have the Woke mind and the 'Covid' mind. Compatible resonance draws the awakening together, too, which is clearly happening today.

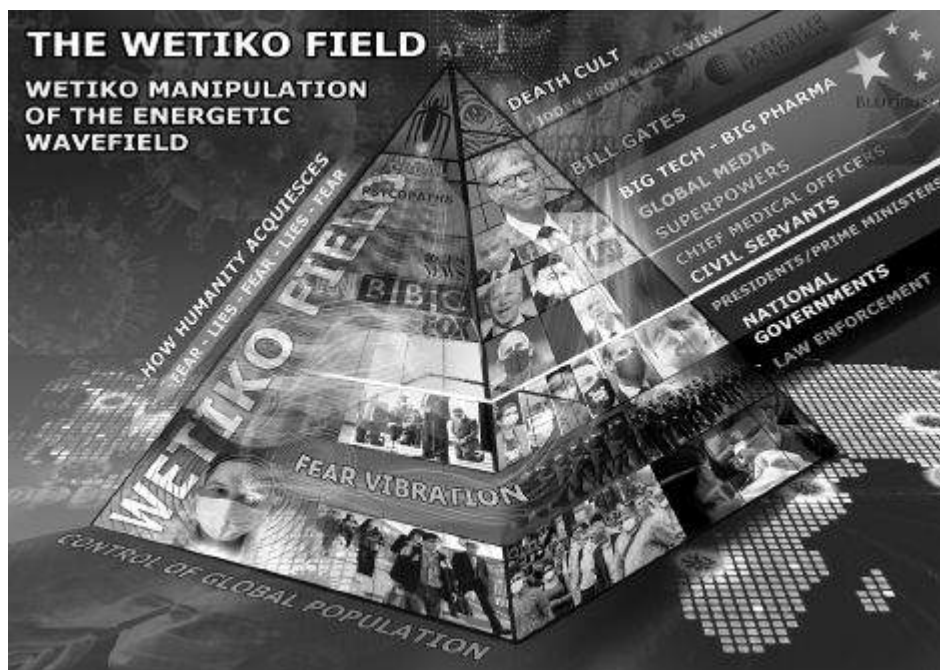


Figure 22: The Wetiko Field from which the Cult pyramid and its personnel are made manifest. (Image by Neil Hague).

Spiritual servitude

Wetiko doesn't care about humans. It's not human; it just possesses humans for its own ends and the effect (depending on the scale of

possession) can be anything from extreme psychopathy to unquestioning obedience. Wetiko's worst nightmare is for human consciousness to expand beyond the simulation. Everything is focussed on stopping that happening through control of information, thus perception, thus frequency. The 'education system', media, science, medicine, academia, are all geared to maintaining humanity in five-sense servitude as is the constant stimulation of low-vibrational mental and emotional states (see 'Covid'). Wetiko seeks to dominate those subconscious spaces between five-sense perception and expanded consciousness where the computer meets the operator. From these subconscious hiding places Wetiko speaks to us to trigger urges and desires that we take to be our own and manipulate us into anything from low-vibrational to psychopathic states. Remember how Islam describes the Jinn as invisible tricksters that 'whisper' and confuse. Wetiko is the origin of the 'trickster god' theme that you find in cultures all over the world. Jinn, like the Archons, are Wetiko which is terrified of humans awakening and reconnecting with our true self for then its energy source has gone. With that the feedback loop breaks between Wetiko and human perception that provides the energetic momentum on which its very existence depends as a force of evil. Humans are both its target and its source of survival, but only if we are operating in low-vibrational states of fear, hate, depression and the background anxiety that most people suffer. We are Wetiko's target because we are its key to survival. It needs us, not the other way round. Paul Levy writes:

A vampire has no intrinsic, independent, substantial existence in its own right; it only exists in relation to us. The pathogenic, vampiric mind-parasite called wetiko is nothing in itself – not being able to exist from its own side – yet it has a 'virtual reality' such that it can potentially destroy our species ...

...The fact that a vampire is not reflected by a mirror can also mean that what we need to see is that there's nothing, no-thing to see, other than ourselves. The fact that wetiko is the expression of something inside of us means that the cure for wetiko is with us as well. The critical issue is finding this cure within us and then putting it into effect.

Evil begets evil because if evil does not constantly expand and find new sources of energetic sustenance its evil, its *distortion*, dies with the assimilation into balance and harmony. Love is the garlic to Wetiko's vampire. Evil, the absence of love, cannot exist in the presence of love. I think I see a way out of here. I have emphasised so many times over the decades that the Archons/Wetiko and their Cult are not all powerful. *They are not*. I don't care how it looks even now *they are not*. I have not called them little boys in short trousers for effect. I have said it because it is true. Wetiko's insatiable desire for power over others is not a sign of its omnipotence, but its insecurity. Paul Levy writes: 'Due to the primal fear which ultimately drives it and which it is driven to cultivate, wetiko's body politic has an intrinsic and insistent need for centralising power and control so as to create imagined safety for itself.' *Yeeeeeees!* Exactly! Why does Wetiko want humans in an ongoing state of fear? Wetiko itself *is* fear and it is petrified of love. As evil is an absence of love, so love is an absence of fear. Love conquers all and *especially* Wetiko which *is* fear. Wetiko brought fear into the world when it wasn't here before. *Fear* was the 'fall', the fall into low-frequency ignorance and illusion – fear is **False Emotion Appearing Real**. The simulation is driven and energised by fear because Wetiko/Yaldabaoth (fear) *are* the simulation. Fear is the absence of love and Wetiko is the absence of love.

Wetiko today

We can now view current events from this level of perspective. The 'Covid' hoax has generated momentous amounts of ongoing fear, anxiety, depression and despair which have empowered Wetiko. No wonder people like Gates have been the instigators when they are Wetiko incarnate and exhibit every trait of Wetiko in the extreme. See how cold and unemotional these people are like Gates and his cronies, how dead of eye they are. That's Wetiko. Sabbatians are Wetiko and everything they control including the World Health Organization, Big Pharma and the 'vaccine' makers, national 'health'

hierarchies, corporate media, Silicon Valley, the banking system, and the United Nations with its planned transformation into world government. All are controlled and possessed by the Wetiko distortion into distorting human society in its image. We are with this knowledge at the gateway to understanding the world. Divisions of race, culture, creed and sexuality are diversions to hide the real division between those possessed and influenced by Wetiko and those that are not. The 'Covid' hoax has brought both clearly into view. Human behaviour is not about race. Tyrants and dictatorships come in all colours and creeds. What unites the US president bombing the innocent and an African tribe committing genocide against another as in Rwanda? What unites them? *Wetiko*. All wars are Wetiko, all genocide is Wetiko, all hunger over centuries in a world of plenty is Wetiko. Children going to bed hungry, including in the West, is Wetiko. Cult-generated Woke racial divisions that focus on the body are designed to obscure the reality that divisions in behaviour are manifestations of mind, not body. Obsession with body identity and group judgement is a means to divert attention from the real source of behaviour – mind and perception. Conflict sown by the Woke both within themselves and with their target groups are Wetiko providing lunch for itself through still more agents of the division, chaos, and fear on which it feeds. The Cult is seeking to assimilate the entirety of humanity and all children and young people into the Wetiko frequency by manipulating them into states of fear and despair. Witness all the suicide and psychological unravelling since the spring of 2020. Wetiko psychopaths want to impose a state of unquestioning obedience to authority which is no more than a conduit for Wetiko to enforce its will and assimilate humanity into itself. It needs us to believe that resistance is futile when it fears resistance and even more so the game-changing non-cooperation with its impositions. It can use violent resistance for its benefit. Violent impositions and violent resistance are *both* Wetiko. The Power of Love with its Power of No will sweep Wetiko from our world. Wetiko and its Cult know that. They just don't want us to know.

AI Wetiko

This brings me to AI or artificial intelligence and something else Wetikos don't want us to know. What is AI *really*? I know about computer code algorithms and AI that learns from data input. These, however, are more diversions, the expeditionary force, for the real AI that they want to connect to the human brain as promoted by Silicon Valley Wetikos like Kurzweil. What is this AI? It is the frequency of *Wetiko*, the frequency of the Archons. The connection of AI to the human brain is the connection of the Wetiko frequency to create a Wetiko hive mind and complete the job of assimilation. The hive mind is planned to be controlled from Israel and China which are both 100 percent owned by Wetiko Sabbatians. The assimilation process has been going on minute by minute in the 'smart' era which fused with the 'Covid' era. We are told that social media is scrambling the minds of the young and changing their personality. This is true, but what is social media? Look more deeply at how it works, how it creates divisions and conflict, the hostility and cruelty, the targeting of people until they are destroyed. That's Wetiko. Social media is manipulated to tune people to the Wetiko frequency with all the emotional exploitation tricks employed by platforms like Facebook and its Wetiko front man, Zuckerberg. Facebook's Instagram announced a new platform for children to overcome a legal bar on them using the main site. This is more Wetiko exploitation and manipulation of kids. Amnesty International likened the plan to foxes offering to guard the henhouse and said it was incompatible with human rights. Since when did Wetiko or Zuckerberg (I repeat myself) care about that? Would Brin and Page at Google, Wojcicki at YouTube, Bezos at Amazon and whoever the hell runs Twitter act as they do if they were not channelling Wetiko? Would those who are developing technologies for no other reason than human control? How about those designing and selling technologies to kill people and Big Pharma drug and 'vaccine' producers who know they will end or devastate lives? Quite a thought for these people to consider is that if you are Wetiko in a human life you are Wetiko on the 'other side' unless your frequency

changes and that can only change by a change of perception which becomes a change of behaviour. Where Gates is going does not bear thinking about although perhaps that's exactly where he wants to go. Either way, that's where he's going. His frequency will make it so.

The frequency lair

I have been saying for a long time that a big part of the addiction to smartphones and devices is that a frequency is coming off them that entraps the mind. People spend ages on their phones and sometimes even a minute or so after they put them down they pick them up again and it all repeats. 'Covid' lockdowns will have increased this addiction a million times for obvious reasons. Addictions to alcohol overindulgence and drugs are another way that Wetiko entraps consciousness to attach to its own. Both are symptoms of low-vibrational psychological distress which alcoholism and drug addiction further compound. Do we think it's really a coincidence that access to them is made so easy while potions that can take people into realms beyond the simulation are banned and illegal? I have explored smartphone addiction in other books, the scale is mind-blowing, and that level of addiction does not come without help. Tech companies that make these phones are Wetiko and they will have no qualms about destroying the minds of children. We are seeing again with these companies the Wetiko perceptual combination of psychopathic enforcers and weak and meek unquestioning compliance by the rank and file.

The global Smart Grid is the Wetiko Grid and it is crucial to complete the Cult endgame. The simulation is radiation and we are being deluged with technological radiation on a devastating scale. Wetiko frauds like Elon Musk serve Cult interests while occasionally criticising them to maintain his street-cred. 5G and other forms of Wi-Fi are being directed at the earth from space on a volume and scale that goes on increasing by the day. Elon Musk's (officially) SpaceX Starlink project is in the process of putting tens of thousands of satellites in low orbit to cover every inch of the planet with 5G and other Wi-Fi to create Kurzweil's global 'cloud' to which the

human mind is planned to be attached very soon. SpaceX has approval to operate 12,000 satellites with more than 1,300 launched at the time of writing and applications filed for 30,000 more. Other operators in the Wi-Fi, 5G, low-orbit satellite market include OneWeb (UK), Telesat (Canada), and AST & Science (US). Musk tells us that AI could be the end of humanity and then launches a company called Neuralink to connect the human brain to computers. Musk's (in theory) Tesla company is building electric cars and the driverless vehicles of the smart control grid. As frauds and bullshitters go Elon Musk in my opinion is Major League.

5G and technological radiation in general are destructive to human health, genetics and psychology and increasing the strength of artificial radiation underpins the five-sense perceptual bubbles which are themselves expressions of radiation or electromagnetism. Freedom activist John Whitehead was so right with his 'databit by databit, we are building our own electronic concentration camps'. The Smart Grid and 5G is a means to control the human mind and infuse perceptual information into The Field to influence anyone in sync with its frequency. You can change perception and behaviour en masse if you can manipulate the population into those levels of frequency and this is happening all around us today. The arrogance of Musk and his fellow Cult operatives knows no bounds in the way that we see with Gates. Musk's satellites are so many in number already they are changing the night sky when viewed from Earth. The astronomy community has complained about this and they have seen nothing yet. Some consequences of Musk's Wetiko hubris include: Radiation; visible pollution of the night sky; interference with astronomy and meteorology; ground and water pollution from intensive use of increasingly many spaceports; accumulating space debris; continual deorbiting and burning up of aging satellites, polluting the atmosphere with toxic dust and smoke; and ever-increasing likelihood of collisions. A collective public open letter of complaint to Musk said:

We are writing to you ... because SpaceX is in process of surrounding the Earth with a network of thousands of satellites whose very purpose is to irradiate every square inch of the

Earth. SpaceX, like everyone else, is treating the radiation as if it were not there. As if the mitochondria in our cells do not depend on electrons moving undisturbed from the food we digest to the oxygen we breathe.

As if our nervous systems and our hearts are not subject to radio frequency interference like any piece of electronic equipment. As if the cancer, diabetes, and heart disease that now afflict a majority of the Earth's population are not metabolic diseases that result from interference with our cellular machinery. As if insects everywhere, and the birds and animals that eat them, are not starving to death as a result.

People like Musk and Gates believe in their limitless Wetiko arrogance that they can do whatever they like to the world because they own it. Consequences for humanity are irrelevant. It's absolutely time that we stopped taking this shit from these self-styled masters of the Earth when you consider where this is going.

Why is the Cult so anti-human?

I hear this question often: Why would they do this when it will affect them, too? Ah, but will it? Who is this *them*? Forget their bodies. They are just vehicles for Wetiko consciousness. When you break it all down to the foundations we are looking at a state of severely distorted consciousness targeting another state of consciousness for assimilation. The rest is detail. The simulation is the fly-trap in which unique sensations of the five senses create a cycle of addiction called reincarnation. Renegade Minds see that everything which happens in our reality is a smaller version of the whole picture in line with the holographic principle. Addiction to the radiation of smart technology is a smaller version of addiction to the whole simulation. Connecting the body/brain to AI is taking that addiction on a giant step further to total ongoing control by assimilating human incarnate consciousness into Wetiko. I have watched during the 'Covid' hoax how many are becoming ever more profoundly attached to Wetiko's perceptual calling cards of aggressive response to any other point of view ('There is no other god but me'), psychopathic lack of compassion and empathy, and servile submission to the narrative and will of authority. Wetiko is the psychopaths *and* subservience to psychopaths. The Cult of Wetiko is

so anti-human because it is *not* human. It embarked on a mission to destroy human by targeting everything that it means to be human and to survive as human. 'Covid' is not the end, just a means to an end. The Cult with its Wetiko consciousness is seeking to change Earth systems, including the atmosphere, to suit them, not humans. The gathering bombardment of 5G alone from ground and space is dramatically changing The Field with which the five senses interact. There is so much more to come if we sit on our hands and hope it will all go away. It is not meant to go away. It is meant to get ever more extreme and we need to face that while we still can – just.

Carbon dioxide is the gas of life. Without that human is over. Kaput, gone, history. No natural world, no human. The Cult has created a cock and bull story about carbon dioxide and climate change to justify its reduction to the point where Gates and the ignoramus Biden 'climate chief' John Kerry want to suck it out of the atmosphere. Kerry wants to do this because his master Gates does. Wetikos have made the gas of life a demon with the usual support from the Wokers of Extinction Rebellion and similar organisations and the bewildered puppet-child that is Greta Thunberg who was put on the world stage by Klaus Schwab and the World Economic Forum. The name Extinction Rebellion is both ironic and as always Wetiko inversion. The gas that we need to survive must be reduced to save us from extinction. The most basic need of human is oxygen and we now have billions walking around in face nappies depriving body and brain of this essential requirement of human existence. More than that 5G at 60 gigahertz interacts with the oxygen molecule to reduce the amount of oxygen the body can absorb into the bloodstream. The obvious knock-on consequences of that for respiratory and cognitive problems and life itself need no further explanation. Psychopaths like Musk are assembling a global system of satellites to deluge the human atmosphere with this insanity. The man should be in jail. Here we have two most basic of human needs, oxygen and carbon dioxide, being dismantled.

Two others, water and food, are getting similar treatment with the United Nations Agendas 21 and 2030 – the Great Reset – planning to

centrally control all water and food supplies. People will not even own rain water that falls on their land. Food is affected at the most basic level by reducing carbon dioxide. We have genetic modification or GMO infiltrating the food chain on a mass scale, pesticides and herbicides polluting the air and destroying the soil. Freshwater fish that provide livelihoods for 60 million people and feed hundreds of millions worldwide are being 'pushed to the brink' according the conservationists while climate change is the only focus. Now we have Gates and Schwab wanting to dispense with current food sources all together and replace them with a synthetic version which the Wetiko Cult would control in terms of production and who eats and who doesn't. We have been on the Totalitarian Tiptoe to this for more than 60 years as food has become ever more processed and full of chemical shite to the point today when it's not natural food at all. As Dr Tom Cowan says: 'If it has a label don't eat it.' Bill Gates is now the biggest owner of farmland in the United States and he does nothing without an ulterior motive involving the Cult. Klaus Schwab wrote: 'To feed the world in the next 50 years we will need to produce as much food as was produced in the last 10,000 years ... food security will only be achieved, however, if regulations on genetically modified foods are adapted to reflect the reality that gene editing offers a precise, efficient and safe method of improving crops.' Liar. People and the world are being targeted with aluminium through vaccines, chemtrails, food, drink cans, and endless other sources when aluminium has been linked to many health issues including dementia which is increasing year after year. Insects, bees and wildlife essential to the food chain are being deleted by pesticides, herbicides and radiation which 5G is dramatically increasing with 6G and 7G to come. The pollinating bee population is being devastated while wildlife including birds, dolphins and whales are having their natural radar blocked by the effects of ever-increasing radiation. In the summer windscreens used to be splattered with insects so numerous were they. It doesn't happen now. Where have they gone?

Synthetic everything

The Cult is introducing genetically-modified versions of trees, plants and insects including a Gates-funded project to unleash hundreds of millions of genetically-modified, lab-altered and patented male mosquitoes to mate with wild mosquitoes and induce genetic flaws that cause them to die out. Clinically-insane Gates-funded Japanese researchers have developed mosquitos that spread vaccine and are dubbed 'flying vaccinators'. Gates is funding the modification of weather patterns in part to sell the myth that this is caused by carbon dioxide and he's funding geoengineering of the skies to change the atmosphere. Some of this came to light with the Gates-backed plan to release tonnes of chalk into the atmosphere to 'deflect the Sun and cool the planet'. Funny how they do this while the heating effect of the Sun is not factored into climate projections focussed on carbon dioxide. The reason is that they want to reduce carbon dioxide (so don't mention the Sun), but at the same time they do want to reduce the impact of the Sun which is so essential to human life and health. I have mentioned the sun-cholesterol-vitamin D connection as they demonise the Sun with warnings about skin cancer (caused by the chemicals in sun cream they tell you to splash on). They come from the other end of the process with statin drugs to reduce cholesterol that turns sunlight into vitamin D. A lack of vitamin D leads to a long list of health effects and how vitamin D levels must have fallen with people confined to their homes over 'Covid'. Gates is funding other forms of geoengineering and most importantly chemtrails which are dropping heavy metals, aluminium and self-replicating nanotechnology onto the Earth which is killing the natural world. See *Everything You Need To Know, But Have Never Been Told* for the detailed background to this.

Every human system is being targeted for deletion by a force that's not human. The Wetiko Cult has embarked on the process of transforming the human body from biological to synthetic biological as I have explained. Biological is being replaced by the artificial and synthetic – Archontic 'countermimicry' – right across human society. The plan eventually is to dispense with the human body altogether

and absorb human consciousness – which it wouldn't really be by then – into cyberspace (the simulation which is Wetiko/Yaldabaoth). Preparations for that are already happening if people would care to look. The alternative media rightly warns about globalism and 'the globalists', but this is far bigger than that and represents the end of the human race as we know it. The 'bad copy' of prime reality that Gnostics describe was a bad copy of harmony, wonder and beauty to start with before Wetiko/Yaldabaoth set out to change the simulated 'copy' into something very different. The process was slow to start with. Entrapped humans in the simulation timeline were not technologically aware and they had to be brought up to intellectual speed while being suppressed spiritually to the point where they could build their own prison while having no idea they were doing so. We have now reached that stage where technological intellect has the potential to destroy us and that's why events are moving so fast. Central American shaman Don Juan Matus said:

Think for a moment, and tell me how you would explain the contradictions between the intelligence of man the engineer and the stupidity of his systems of belief, or the stupidity of his contradictory behaviour. Sorcerers believe that the predators have given us our systems of beliefs, our ideas of good and evil; our social mores. They are the ones who set up our dreams of success or failure. They have given us covetousness, greed, and cowardice. It is the predator who makes us complacent, routinary, and egomaniacal.

In order to keep us obedient and meek and weak, the predators engaged themselves in a stupendous manoeuvre – stupendous, of course, from the point of view of a fighting strategist; a horrendous manoeuvre from the point of those who suffer it. They gave us their mind. The predators' mind is baroque, contradictory, morose, filled with the fear of being discovered any minute now.

For 'predators' see Wetiko, Archons, Yaldabaoth, Jinn, and all the other versions of the same phenomenon in cultures and religions all over the world. The theme is always the same because it's true and it's real. We have reached the point where we have to deal with it. The question is – how?

Don't fight – walk away

I thought I'd use a controversial subheading to get things moving in terms of our response to global fascism. What do you mean 'don't fight'? What do you mean 'walk away'? We've got to fight. We can't walk away. Well, it depends what we mean by fight and walk away. If fighting means physical combat we are playing Wetiko's game and falling for its trap. It wants us to get angry, aggressive, and direct hate and hostility at the enemy we think we must fight. Every war, every battle, every conflict, has been fought with Wetiko leading both sides. It's what it does. Wetiko wants a fight, anywhere, any place. Just hit me, son, so I can hit you back. Wetiko hits Wetiko and Wetiko hits Wetiko in return. I am very forthright as you can see in exposing Wetikos of the Cult, but I don't hate them. I refuse to hate them. It's what they want. What you hate you become. What you *fight* you become. Wokers, 'anti-haters' and 'anti-fascists' prove this every time they reach for their keyboards or don their balaclavas. By walk away I mean to disengage from Wetiko which includes ceasing to cooperate with its tyranny. Paul Levy says of Wetiko:

The way to 'defeat' evil is not to try to destroy it (for then, in playing evil's game, we have already lost), but rather, to find the invulnerable place within ourselves where evil is unable to vanquish us – this is to truly 'win' our battle with evil.

Wetiko is everywhere in human society and it's been on steroids since the 'Covid' hoax. Every shouting match over wearing masks has Wetiko wearing a mask and Wetiko not wearing one. It's an electrical circuit of push and resist, push and resist, with Wetiko pushing *and* resisting. Each polarity is Wetiko empowering itself. Dictionary definitions of 'resist' include 'opposing, refusing to accept or comply with' and the word to focus on is 'opposing'. What form does this take – setting police cars alight or 'refusing to accept or comply with'? The former is Wetiko opposing Wetiko while the other points the way forward. This is the difference between those aggressively demanding that government fascism must be obeyed who stand in stark contrast to the great majority of Pushbackers. We saw this clearly with a march by thousands of Pushbackers against lockdown in London followed days later by a Woker-hijacked

protest in Bristol in which police cars were set on fire. Masks were virtually absent in London and widespread in Bristol. Wetiko wants lockdown on every level of society and infuses its aggression to police it through its unknowing stooges. Lockdown protesters are the ones with the smiling faces and the hugs, The two blatantly obvious states of being – getting more obvious by the day – are the result of Wokers and their like becoming ever more influenced by the simulation Field of Wetiko and Pushbackers ever more influenced by The Field of a far higher vibration beyond the simulation. Wetiko can't invade the heart which is where most lockdown opponents are coming from. It's the heart that allows them to see through the lies to the truth in ways I will be highlighting.

Renegade Minds know that calmness is the place from which wisdom comes. You won't find wisdom in a hissing fit and wisdom is what we need in abundance right now. Calmness is not weakness – you don't have to scream at the top of your voice to be strong. Calmness is indeed a sign of strength. 'No' means I'm not doing it. NOOOO!!! doesn't mean you're not doing it even more. Volume does not advance 'No – I'm not doing it'. You are just not doing it. Wetiko possessed and influenced don't know how to deal with that. Wetiko wants a fight and we should not give it one. What it needs more than anything is our *cooperation* and we should not give that either. Mass rallies and marches are great in that they are a visual representation of feeling, but if it ends there they are irrelevant. You demand that Wetikos act differently? Well, they're not going to are they? They are Wetikos. We don't need to waste our time demanding that something doesn't happen when that will make no difference. We need to delete the means that *allows* it to happen. This, invariably, is our cooperation. You can demand a child stop firing a peashooter at the dog or you can refuse to buy the peashooter. If you provide the means you are cooperating with the dog being smacked on the nose with a pea. How can the authorities enforce mask-wearing if millions in a country refuse? What if the 74 million Pushbackers that voted for Trump in 2020 refused to wear masks, close their businesses or stay in their homes. It would be unenforceable. The

few control the many through the compliance of the many and that's always been the dynamic be it 'Covid' regulations or the Roman Empire. I know people can find it intimidating to say no to authority or stand out in a crowd for being the only one with a face on display; but it has to be done or it's over. I hope I've made clear in this book that where this is going will be far more intimidating than standing up now and saying 'No' – I will not cooperate with my own enslavement and that of my children. There might be consequences for some initially, although not so if enough do the same. The question that must be addressed is what is going to happen if we don't? It is time to be strong and unyieldingly so. No means no. Not here and there, but *everywhere* and *always*. I have refused to wear a mask and obey all the other nonsense. I will not comply with tyranny. I repeat: Fascism is not imposed by fascists – there are never enough of them. Fascism is imposed by the population acquiescing to fascism. *I will not do it*. I will die first, or my body will. Living meekly under fascism is a form of death anyway, the death of the spirit that Martin Luther King described.

Making things happen

We must not despair. This is not over till it's over and it's far from that. The 'fat lady' must refuse to sing. The longer the 'Covid' hoax has dragged on and impacted on more lives we have seen an awakening of phenomenal numbers of people worldwide to the realisation that what they have believed all their lives is not how the world really is. Research published by the system-serving University of Bristol and King's College London in February, 2021, concluded: 'One in every 11 people in Britain say they trust David Icke's take on the coronavirus pandemic.' It will be more by now and we have gathering numbers to build on. We must urgently progress from seeing the scam to ceasing to cooperate with it. Prominent German lawyer Reiner Fuellmich, also licenced to practice law in America, is doing a magnificent job taking the legal route to bring the psychopaths to justice through a second Nuremberg tribunal for crimes against humanity. Fuellmich has an impressive record of

beating the elite in court and he formed the German Corona Investigative Committee to pursue civil charges against the main perpetrators with a view to triggering criminal charges. Most importantly he has grasped the foundation of the hoax – the PCR test not testing for the ‘virus’ – and Christian Drosten is therefore on his charge sheet along with Gates frontman Tedros at the World Health Organization. Major players must not be allowed to inflict their horrors on the human race without being brought to book. A life sentence must follow for Bill Gates and the rest of them. A group of researchers has also indicted the government of Norway for crimes against humanity with copies sent to the police and the International Criminal Court. The lawsuit cites participation in an internationally-planned false pandemic and violation of international law and human rights, the European Commission’s definition of human rights by coercive rules, Nuremberg and Hague rules on fundamental human rights, and the Norwegian constitution. We must take the initiative from hereon and not just complain, protest and react.

There are practical ways to support vital mass non-cooperation. Organising in numbers is one. Lockdown marches in London in the spring in 2021 were mass non-cooperation that the authorities could not stop. There were too many people. Hundreds of thousands walked the London streets in the centre of the road for mile after mile while the Face-Nappies could only look on. They were determined, but calm, and just *did it* with no histrionics and lots of smiles. The police were impotent. Others are organising group shopping without masks for mutual support and imagine if that was happening all over. Policing it would be impossible. If the store refuses to serve people in these circumstances they would be faced with a long line of trolleys full of goods standing on their own and everything would have to be returned to the shelves. How would they cope with that if it kept happening? I am talking here about moving on from complaining to being pro-active; from watching things happen to making things happen. I include in this our relationship with the police. The behaviour of many Face-Nappies

has been disgraceful and anyone who thinks they would never find concentration camp guards in the 'enlightened' modern era have had that myth busted big-time. The period and setting may change – Wetikos never do. I watched film footage from a London march in which a police thug viciously kicked a protestor on the floor who had done nothing. His fellow Face-Nappies stood in a ring protecting him. What he did was a criminal assault and with a crowd far outnumbering the police this can no longer be allowed to happen unchallenged. I get it when people chant 'shame on you' in these circumstances, but that is no longer enough. They *have* no shame those who do this. Crowds needs to start making a citizen's arrest of the police who commit criminal offences and brutally attack innocent people and defenceless women. A citizen's arrest can be made under section 24A of the UK Police and Criminal Evidence (PACE) Act of 1984 and you will find something similar in other countries. I prefer to call it a Common Law arrest rather than citizen's for reasons I will come to shortly. Anyone can arrest a person committing an indictable offence or if they have reasonable grounds to suspect they are committing an indictable offence. On both counts the attack by the police thug would have fallen into this category. A citizen's arrest can be made to stop someone:

- Causing physical injury to himself or any other person
- Suffering physical injury
- Causing loss of or damage to property
- Making off before a constable can assume responsibility for him

A citizen's arrest may also be made to prevent a breach of the peace under Common Law and if they believe a breach of the peace will happen or anything related to harm likely to be done or already done in their presence. This is the way to go I think – the Common Law version. If police know that the crowd and members of the public will no longer be standing and watching while they commit

their thuggery and crimes they will think twice about acting like Brownshirts and Blackshirts.

Common Law – common sense

Mention of Common Law is very important. Most people think the law is the law as in one law. This is not the case. There are two bodies of law, Common Law and Statute Law, and they are not the same. Common Law is founded on the simple premise of do no harm. It does not recognise victimless crimes in which no harm is done while Statute Law does. There is a Statute Law against almost everything. So what is Statute Law? Amazingly it's the law of the *sea* that was brought ashore by the Cult to override the law of the land which is Common Law. They had no right to do this and as always they did it anyway. They had to. They could not impose their will on the people through Common Law which only applies to do no harm. How could you stitch up the fine detail of people's lives with that? Instead they took the law of the sea, or Admiralty Law, and applied it to the population. Statute Law refers to all the laws spewing out of governments and their agencies including all the fascist laws and regulations relating to 'Covid'. The key point to make is that Statute Law is *contract law*. It only applies between *contracting* corporations. Most police officers don't even know this. They have to be kept in the dark, too. Long ago when merchants and their sailing ships began to trade with different countries a contractual law was developed called Admiralty Law and other names. Again it only applied to *contracts* agreed between *corporate* entities. If there is no agreed contract the law of the sea had no jurisdiction *and that still applies to its new alias of Statute Law*. The problem for the Cult when the law of the sea was brought ashore was an obvious one. People were not corporations and neither were government entities. To overcome the latter they made governments and all associated organisations corporations. All the institutions are *private corporations* and I mean governments and their agencies, local councils, police, courts, military, US states, the whole lot. Go to the

Dun and Bradstreet corporate listings website for confirmation that they are all corporations. You are arrested by a private corporation called the police by someone who is really a private security guard and they take you to court which is another private corporation. Neither have jurisdiction over you unless you consent and *contract* with them. This is why you hear the mantra about law enforcement policing by *consent* of the people. In truth the people 'consent' only in theory through monumental trickery.

Okay, the Cult overcame the corporate law problem by making governments and institutions corporate entities; but what about people? They are not corporations are they? Ah ... well in a sense, and *only* a sense, they are. Not people exactly – the illusion of people. The Cult creates a corporation in the name of everyone at the time that their birth certificate is issued. Note birth/ *berth* certificate and when you go to court under the law of the sea on land you stand in a *dock*. These are throwbacks to the origin. My Common Law name is David Vaughan Icke. The name of the corporation created by the government when I was born is called Mr David Vaughan Icke usually written in capitals as MR DAVID VAUGHAN ICKE. That is not me, the living, breathing man. It is a fictitious corporate entity. The trick is to make you think that David Vaughan Icke and MR DAVID VAUGHAN ICKE are the same thing. *They are not*. When police charge you and take you to court they are prosecuting the corporate entity and not the living, breathing, man or woman. They have to trick you into identifying as the corporate entity and contracting with them. Otherwise they have no jurisdiction. They do this through a language known as legalese. Lawful and legal are not the same either. Lawful relates to Common Law and legal relates to Statute Law. Legalese is the language of Statue Law which uses terms that mean one thing to the public and another in legalese. Notice that when a police officer tells someone why they are being charged he or she will say at the end: 'Do you understand?' To the public that means 'Do you comprehend?' In legalese it means 'Do you stand under me?' Do you stand under my authority? If you say

yes to the question you are unknowingly agreeing to give them jurisdiction over you in a contract between two corporate entities.

This is a confidence trick in every way. Contracts have to be agreed between informed parties and if you don't know that David Vaughan Icke is agreeing to be the corporation MR DAVID VAUGHAN ICKE you cannot knowingly agree to contract. They are deceiving you and another way they do this is to ask for proof of identity. You usually show them a driving licence or other document on which your corporate name is written. In doing so you are accepting that you are that corporate entity when you are not. Referring to yourself as a 'person' or 'citizen' is also identifying with your corporate fiction which is why I made the Common Law point about the citizen's arrest. If you are approached by a police officer you identify yourself immediately as a living, breathing, man or woman and say 'I do not consent, I do not contract with you and I do not understand' or stand under their authority. I have a Common Law birth certificate as a living man and these are available at no charge from commonlawcourt.com. Businesses registered under the Statute Law system means that its laws apply. There are, however, ways to run a business under Common Law. Remember all 'Covid' laws and regulations are Statute Law – the law of *contracts* and you do not have to contract. This doesn't mean that you can kill someone and get away with it. Common Law says do no harm and that applies to physical harm, financial harm etc. Police are employees of private corporations and there needs to be a new system of non-corporate Common Law constables operating outside the Statute Law system. If you go to davidicke.com and put Common Law into the search engine you will find videos that explain Common Law in much greater detail. It is definitely a road we should walk.

With all my heart

I have heard people say that we are in a spiritual war. I don't like the term 'war' with its Wetiko dynamic, but I know what they mean. Sweep aside all the bodily forms and we are in a situation in which two states of consciousness are seeking very different realities.

Wetiko wants upheaval, chaos, fear, suffering, conflict and control. The other wants love, peace, harmony, fairness and freedom. That's where we are. We should not fall for the idea that Wetiko is all-powerful and there's nothing we can do. Wetiko is not all-powerful. It's a joke, pathetic. It doesn't have to be, but it has made that choice for now. A handful of times over the years when I have felt the presence of its frequency I have allowed it to attach briefly so I could consciously observe its nature. The experience is not pleasant, the energy is heavy and dark, but the ease with which you can kick it back out the door shows that its real power is in persuading us that it has power. It's all a con. Wetiko is a con. It's a trickster and not a power that can control us if we unleash our own. The con is founded on manipulating humanity to give its power to Wetiko which recycles it back to present the illusion that it has power when its power is *ours* that we gave away. This happens on an energetic level and plays out in the world of the seen as humanity giving its power to Wetiko authority which uses that power to control the population when the power is only the power the population has handed over. How could it be any other way for billions to be controlled by a relative few? I have had experiences with people possessed by Wetiko and again you can kick its arse if you do it with an open heart. Oh yes – the *heart* which can transform the world of perceived 'matter'.

We are receiver-transmitters and processors of information, but what information and where from? Information is processed into perception in three main areas – the brain, the heart and the belly. These relate to thinking, knowing, and emotion. Wetiko wants us to be head and belly people which means we think within the confines of the Matrix simulation and low-vibrational emotional reaction scrambles balance and perception. A few minutes on social media and you see how emotion is the dominant force. Woke is all emotion and is therefore thought-free and fact-free. Our heart is something different. It *knows* while the head *thinks* and has to try to work it out because it doesn't know. The human energy field has seven prime vortexes which connect us with wider reality ([Fig 23](#)). Chakra means

‘wheels of light’ in the Sanskrit language of ancient India. The main ones are: The crown chakra on top of the head; brow (or ‘third eye’) chakra in the centre of the forehead; throat chakra; heart chakra in the centre of the chest; solar plexus chakra below the sternum; sacral chakra beneath the navel; and base chakra at the bottom of the spine. Each one has a particular function or functions. We feel anxiety and nervousness in the belly where the sacral chakra is located and this processes emotion that can affect the colon to give people ‘the shits’ or make them ‘shit scared’ when they are nervous. Chakras all play an important role, but the Mr and Mrs Big is the heart chakra which sits at the centre of the seven, above the chakras that connect us to the ‘physical’ and below those that connect with higher realms (or at least should). Here in the heart chakra we feel love, empathy and compassion – ‘My heart goes out to you’. Those with closed hearts become literally ‘heart-less’ in their attitudes and behaviour (see Bill Gates). Native Americans portrayed Wetiko with what Paul Levy calls a ‘frigid, icy heart, devoid of mercy’ (see Bill Gates).



Figure 23: The chakra system which interpenetrates the human energy field. The heart chakra is the governor – or should be.

Wetiko trembles at the thought of heart energy which it cannot infiltrate. The frequency is too high. What it seeks to do instead is close the heart chakra vortex to block its perceptual and energetic influence. Psychopaths have ‘hearts of stone’ and emotionally-damaged people have ‘heartache’ and ‘broken hearts’. The astonishing amount of heart disease is related to heart chakra

disruption with its fundamental connection to the 'physical' heart. Dr Tom Cowan has written an outstanding book challenging the belief that the heart is a pump and making the connection between the 'physical' and spiritual heart. Rudolph Steiner who was way ahead of his time said the same about the fallacy that the heart is a pump. *What?* The heart is not a pump? That's crazy, right? Everybody knows that. Read Cowan's *Human Heart, Cosmic Heart* and you will realise that the very idea of the heart as a pump is ridiculous when you see the evidence. How does blood in the feet so far from the heart get pumped horizontally up the body by the heart?? Cowan explains in the book the real reason why blood moves as it does. Our 'physical' heart is used to symbolise love when the source is really the heart vortex or spiritual heart which is our most powerful energetic connection to 'out there' expanded consciousness. That's why we feel *knowing* – intuitive knowing – in the centre of the chest. Knowing doesn't come from a process of thoughts leading to a conclusion. It is there in an instant all in one go. Our heart knows because of its connection to levels of awareness that *do* know. This is the meaning and source of intuition – intuitive *knowing*.

For the last more than 30 years of uncovering the global game and the nature of reality my heart has been my constant antenna for truth and accuracy. An American intelligence insider once said that I had quoted a disinformant in one of my books and yet I had only quoted the part that was true. He asked: 'How do you do that?' By using my heart antenna was the answer and anyone can do it. Heart-centred is how we are meant to be. With a closed heart chakra we withdraw into a closed mind and the bubble of five-sense reality. If you take a moment to focus your attention on the centre of your chest, picture a spinning wheel of light and see it opening and expanding. You will feel it happening, too, and perceptions of the heart like joy and love as the heart impacts on the mind as they interact. The more the chakra opens the more you will feel expressions of heart consciousness and as the process continues, and becomes part of you, insights and knowings will follow. An open

heart is connected to that level of awareness that knows all is *One*. You will see from its perspective that the fault-lines that divide us are only illusions to control us. An open heart does not process the illusions of race, creed and sexuality except as brief experiences for a consciousness that is all. Our heart does not see division, only unity (Figs 24 and 25). There's something else, too. Our hearts love to laugh. Mark Twain's quote that says 'The human race has one really effective weapon, and that is laughter' is really a reference to the heart which loves to laugh with the joy of knowing the true nature of infinite reality and that all the madness of human society is an illusion of the mind. Twain also said: 'Against the assault of laughter nothing can stand.' This is so true of Wetiko and the Cult. Their insecurity demands that they be taken seriously and their power and authority acknowledged and feared. We should do nothing of the sort. We should not get aggressive or fearful which their insecurity so desires. We should laugh in their face. Even in their no-face as police come over in their face-nappies and expect to be taken seriously. They don't take themselves seriously looking like that so why should we? Laugh in the face of intimidation. Laugh in the face of tyranny. You will see by its reaction that you have pressed all of its buttons. Wetiko does not know what to do in the face of laughter or when its targets refuse to concede their joy to fear. We have seen many examples during the 'Covid' hoax when people have expressed their energetic power and the string puppets of Wetiko retreat with their tail limp between their knees. Laugh – the world is bloody mad after all and if it's a choice between laughter and tears I know which way I'm going.



Figure 24: Head consciousness without the heart sees division and everything apart from everything else.



Figure 25: Heart consciousness sees everything as One.

'Vaccines' and the soul

The foundation of Wetiko/Archon control of humans is the separation of incarnate five-sense mind from the infinite 'I' and closing the heart chakra where the True 'I' lives during a human life. The goal has been to achieve complete separation in both cases. I was interested therefore to read an account by a French energetic healer of what she said she experienced with a patient who had been given the 'Covid' vaccine. Genuine energy healers can sense information and consciousness fields at different levels of being which are referred to as 'subtle bodies'. She described treating the patient who later returned after having, without the healer's knowledge, two doses of the 'Covid vaccine'. The healer said:

I noticed immediately the change, very heavy energy emanating from [the] subtle bodies. The scariest thing was when I was working on the heart chakra, I connected with her soul: it was detached from the physical body, it had no contact and it was, as if it was floating in a state of total confusion: a damage to the consciousness that loses contact with the physical body, i.e. with our biological machine, there is no longer any communication between them.

I continued the treatment by sending light to the heart chakra, the soul of the person, but it seemed that the soul could no longer receive any light, frequency or energy. It was a very powerful experience for me. Then I understood that this substance is indeed used to detach consciousness so that this consciousness can no longer interact through this body that it possesses in life, where there is no longer any contact, no frequency, no light, no more energetic balance or mind.

This would create a human that is rudderless and at the extreme almost zombie-like operating with a fractional state of consciousness at the mercy of Wetiko. I was especially intrigued by what the healer said in the light of the prediction by the highly-informed Rudolf Steiner more than a hundred years ago. He said:

In the future, we will eliminate the soul with medicine. Under the pretext of a 'healthy point of view', there will be a vaccine by which the human body will be treated as soon as possible directly at birth, so that the human being cannot develop the thought of the existence of soul and Spirit. To materialistic doctors will be entrusted the task of removing the soul of humanity.

As today, people are vaccinated against this disease or that disease, so in the future, children will be vaccinated with a substance that can be produced precisely in such a way that people, thanks to this vaccination, will be immune to being subjected to the 'madness' of spiritual life. He would be extremely smart, but he would not develop a conscience, and that is the true goal of some materialistic circles.

Steiner said the vaccine would detach the physical body from the etheric body (subtle bodies) and 'once the etheric body is detached the relationship between the universe and the etheric body would become extremely unstable, and man would become an automaton'. He said 'the physical body of man must be polished on this Earth by spiritual will – so the vaccine becomes a kind of arymanique (Wetiko) force' and 'man can no longer get rid of a given materialistic feeling'. Humans would then, he said, become 'materialistic of constitution and can no longer rise to the spiritual'. I have been writing for years about DNA being a receiver-transmitter of information that connects us to other levels of reality and these 'vaccines' changing DNA can be likened to changing an antenna and what it can transmit and receive. Such a disconnection would clearly lead to changes in personality and perception. Steiner further predicted the arrival of AI. Big Pharma 'Covid vaccine' makers, expressions of Wetiko, are testing their DNA-manipulating evil on children as I write with a view to giving the 'vaccine' to babies. If it's a soul-body disconnecter – and I say that it is or can be – every child would be disconnected from 'soul' at birth and the 'vaccine' would create a closed system in which spiritual guidance from the greater self would play no part. This has been the ambition of Wetiko all

along. A Pentagon video from 2005 was leaked of a presentation explaining the development of vaccines to change behaviour by their effect on the brain. Those that believe this is not happening with the 'Covid' genetically-modifying procedure masquerading as a 'vaccine' should make an urgent appointment with Naivety Anonymous. Klaus Schwab wrote in 2018:

Neurotechnologies enable us to better influence consciousness and thought and to understand many activities of the brain. They include decoding what we are thinking in fine levels of detail through new chemicals and interventions that can influence our brains to correct for errors or enhance functionality.

The plan is clear and only the heart can stop it. With every heart that opens, every mind that awakens, Wetiko is weakened. Heart and love are far more powerful than head and hate and so nothing like a majority is needed to turn this around.

Beyond the Phantom

Our heart is the prime target of Wetiko and so it must be the answer to Wetiko. We *are* our heart which is part of one heart, the infinite heart. Our heart is where the true self lives in a human life behind firewalls of five-sense illusion when an imposter takes its place – *Phantom Self*; but our heart waits patiently to be set free any time we choose to see beyond the Phantom, beyond Wetiko. A Wetikoed Phantom Self can wreak mass death and destruction while the love of forever is locked away in its heart. The time is here to unleash its power and let it sweep away the fear and despair that is Wetiko. Heart consciousness does not seek manipulated, censored, advantage for its belief or religion, its activism and desires. As an expression of the One it treats all as One with the same rights to freedom and opinion. Our heart demands fairness for itself no more than for others. From this unity of heart we can come together in mutual support and transform this Wetikoed world into what reality is meant to be – a place of love, joy, happiness, fairness, justice and freedom. Wetiko has another agenda and that's why the world is as

it is, but enough of this nonsense. Wetiko can't stay where hearts are open and it works so hard to keep them closed. Fear is its currency and its food source and love in its true sense has no fear. Why would love have fear when it knows it is *All That Is, Has Been, And Ever Can Be* on an eternal exploration of all possibility? Love in this true sense is not the physical attraction that passes for love. This can be an expression of it, yes, but Infinite Love, a love without condition, goes far deeper to the core of all being. It *is* the core of all being. Infinite reality was born from love beyond the illusions of the simulation. Love infinitely expressed is the knowing that all is One and the swiftly-passing experience of separation is a temporary hallucination. You cannot disconnect from Oneness; you can only *perceive* that you have and withdraw from its influence. This is the most important of all perception trickery by the mind parasite that is Wetiko and the foundation of all its potential for manipulation.

If we open our hearts, open the sluice gates of the mind, and redefine self-identity amazing things start to happen. Consciousness expands or contracts in accordance with self-identity. When true self is recognised as infinite awareness and label self – Phantom Self – is seen as only a series of brief experiences life is transformed. Consciousness expands to the extent that self-identity expands and everything changes. You see unity, not division, the picture, not the pixels. From this we can play the long game. No more is an experience something in and of itself, but a fleeting moment in the eternity of forever. Suddenly people in uniform and dark suits are no longer intimidating. Doing what your heart knows to be right is no longer intimidating and consequences for those actions take on the same nature of a brief experience that passes in the blink of an infinite eye. Intimidation is all in the mind. Beyond the mind there is no intimidation.

An open heart does not consider consequences for what it knows to be right. To do so would be to consider not doing what it knows to be right and for a heart in its power that is never an option. The Renegade Mind is really the Renegade Heart. Consideration of consequences will always provide a getaway car for the mind and

the heart doesn't want one. What is right in the light of what we face today is to stop cooperating with Wetiko in all its forms and to do it without fear or compromise. You cannot compromise with tyranny when tyranny always demands more until it has everything. Life is your perception and you are your destiny. Change your perception and you change your life. Change collective perception and we change the world.

Come on people ... One human family, One heart, One goal ...
FREEEEEEEDOM!

We must settle for nothing less.

Postscript

The big scare story as the book goes to press is the 'Indian' variant and the world is being deluged with propaganda about the 'Covid catastrophe' in India which mirrors in its lies and misrepresentations what happened in Italy before the first lockdown in 2020.

The *New York Post* published a picture of someone who had 'collapsed in the street from Covid' in India in April, 2021, which was actually taken during a gas leak in May, 2020. Same old, same old. Media articles in mid-February were asking why India had been so untouched by 'Covid' and then as their vaccine rollout gathered pace the alleged 'cases' began to rapidly increase. Indian 'Covid vaccine' maker Bharat Biotech was funded into existence by the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation (the pair announced their divorce in May, 2021, which is a pity because they so deserve each other). The Indian 'Covid crisis' was ramped up by the media to terrify the world and prepare people for submission to still more restrictions. The scam that worked the first time was being repeated only with far more people seeing through the deceit. Davidicke.com and Ickonic.com have sought to tell the true story of what is happening by talking to people living through the Indian nightmare which has nothing to do with 'Covid'. We posted a letter from 'Alisha' in Pune who told a very different story to government and media mendacity. She said scenes of dying people and overwhelmed hospitals were designed to hide what was really happening – genocide and starvation. Alisha said that millions had already died of starvation during the ongoing lockdowns while government and media were lying and making it look like the 'virus':

Restaurants, shops, gyms, theatres, basically everything is shut. The cities are ghost towns. Even so-called 'essential' businesses are only open till 11am in the morning. You basically have just an hour to buy food and then your time is up.

Inter-state travel and even inter-district travel is banned. The cops wait at all major crossroads to question why you are traveling outdoors or to fine you if you are not wearing a mask.

The medical community here is also complicit in genocide, lying about hospitals being full and turning away people with genuine illnesses, who need immediate care. They have even created a shortage of oxygen cylinders.

This is the classic Cult modus operandi played out in every country. Alisha said that people who would not have a PCR test not testing for the 'virus' were being denied hospital treatment. She said the people hit hardest were migrant workers and those in rural areas. Most businesses employed migrant workers and with everything closed there were no jobs, no income and no food. As a result millions were dying of starvation or malnutrition. All this was happening under Prime Minister Narendra Modi, a 100-percent asset of the Cult, and it emphasises yet again the scale of pure anti-human evil we are dealing with. Australia banned its people from returning home from India with penalties for trying to do so of up to five years in jail and a fine of £37,000. The manufactured 'Covid' crisis in India was being prepared to justify further fascism in the West. Obvious connections could be seen between the Indian 'vaccine' programme and increased 'cases' and this became a common theme. The Seychelles, the most per capita 'Covid vaccinated' population in the world, went back into lockdown after a 'surge of cases'.

Long ago the truly evil Monsanto agricultural biotechnology corporation with its big connections to Bill Gates devastated Indian farming with genetically-modified crops. Human rights activist Gurcharan Singh highlighted the efforts by the Indian government to complete the job by destroying the food supply to hundreds of millions with 'Covid' lockdowns. He said that 415 million people at the bottom of the disgusting caste system (still going whatever they say) were below the poverty line and struggled to feed themselves every year. Now the government was imposing lockdown at just the

time to destroy the harvest. This deliberate policy was leading to mass starvation. People may reel back at the suggestion that a government would do that, but Wetiko-controlled 'leaders' are capable of any level of evil. In fact what is described in India is in the process of being instigated worldwide. The food chain and food supply are being targeted at every level to cause world hunger and thus control. Bill Gates is not the biggest owner of farmland in America for no reason and destroying access to food aids both the depopulation agenda and the plan for synthetic 'food' already being funded into existence by Gates. Add to this the coming hyper-inflation from the suicidal creation of fake 'money' in response to 'Covid' and the breakdown of container shipping systems and you have a cocktail that can only lead one way and is meant to. The Cult plan is to crash the entire system to 'build back better' with the Great Reset.

'Vaccine' transmission

Reports from all over the world continue to emerge of women suffering menstrual and fertility problems after having the fake 'vaccine' and of the non-'vaccinated' having similar problems when interacting with the 'vaccinated'. There are far too many for 'coincidence' to be credible. We've had menopausal women getting periods, others having periods stop or not stopping for weeks, passing clots, sometimes the lining of the uterus, breast irregularities, and miscarriages (which increased by 400 percent in parts of the United States). Non-'vaccinated' men and children have suffered blood clots and nose bleeding after interaction with the 'vaccinated'. Babies have died from the effects of breast milk from a 'vaccinated' mother. Awake doctors – the small minority – speculated on the cause of non-'vaccinated' suffering the same effects as the 'vaccinated'. Was it nanotechnology in the synthetic substance transmitting frequencies or was it a straight chemical bioweapon that was being transmitted between people? I am not saying that some kind of chemical transmission is not one possible answer, but the foundation of all that the Cult does is frequency and

this is fertile ground for understanding how transmission can happen. American doctor Carrie Madej, an internal medicine physician and osteopath, has been practicing for the last 20 years, teaching medical students, and she says attending different meetings where the agenda for humanity was discussed. Madej, who operates out of Georgia, did not dismiss other possible forms of transmission, but she focused on frequency in search of an explanation for transmission. She said the Moderna and Pfizer 'vaccines' contained nano-lipid particles as a key component. This was a brand new technology never before used on humanity. 'They're using a nanotechnology which is pretty much little tiny computer bits ... nanobots or hydrogel.' Inside the 'vaccines' was 'this sci-fi kind of substance' which suppressed immune checkpoints to get into the cell. I referred to this earlier as the 'Trojan horse' technique that tricks the cell into opening a gateway for the self-replicating synthetic material and while the immune system is artificially suppressed the body has no defences. Madej said the substance served many purposes including an on-demand ability to 'deliver the payload' and using the nano 'computer bits' as biosensors in the body. 'It actually has the ability to accumulate data from your body, like your breathing, your respiration, thoughts, emotions, all kinds of things.'

She said the technology obviously has the ability to operate through Wi-Fi and transmit and receive energy, messages, frequencies or impulses. 'Just imagine you're getting this new substance in you and it can react to things all around you, the 5G, your smart device, your phones.' We had something completely foreign in the human body that had never been launched large scale at a time when we were seeing 5G going into schools and hospitals (plus the Musk satellites) and she believed the 'vaccine' transmission had something to do with this: '... if these people have this inside of them ... it can act like an antenna and actually transmit it outwardly as well.' The synthetic substance produced its own voltage and so it could have that kind of effect. This fits with my own contention that the nano receiver-transmitters are designed to connect people to the

Smart Grid and break the receiver-transmitter connection to expanded consciousness. That would explain the French energy healer's experience of the disconnection of body from 'soul' with those who have had the 'vaccine'. The nanobots, self-replicating inside the body, would also transmit the synthetic frequency which could be picked up through close interaction by those who have not been 'vaccinated'. Madej speculated that perhaps it was 5G and increased levels of other radiation that was causing the symptoms directly although interestingly she said that non-'vaccinated' patients had shown improvement when they were away from the 'vaccinated' person they had interacted with. It must be remembered that you can control frequency and energy with your mind and you can consciously create energetic barriers or bubbles with the mind to stop damaging frequencies from penetrating your field. American paediatrician Dr Larry Palevsky said the 'vaccine' was not a 'vaccine' and was never designed to protect from a 'viral' infection. He called it 'a massive, brilliant propaganda of genocide' because they didn't have to inject everyone to get the result they wanted. He said the content of the jabs was able to infuse any material into the brain, heart, lungs, kidneys, liver, sperm and female productive system. 'This is genocide; this is a weapon of mass destruction.' At the same time American colleges were banning students from attending if they didn't have this life-changing and potentially life-ending 'vaccine'. Class action lawsuits must follow when the consequences of this college fascism come to light. As the book was going to press came reports about fertility effects on sperm in 'vaccinated' men which would absolutely fit with what I have been saying and hospitals continued to fill with 'vaccine' reactions. Another question is what about transmission via blood transfusions? The NHS has extended blood donation restrictions from seven days after a 'Covid vaccination' to 28 days after even a sore arm reaction.

I said in the spring of 2020 that the then touted 'Covid vaccine' would be ongoing each year like the flu jab. A year later Pfizer CEO, the appalling Albert Bourla, said people would 'likely' need a 'booster dose' of the 'vaccine' within 12 months of getting 'fully

vaccinated' and then a yearly shot. 'Variants will play a key role', he said confirming the point. Johnson & Johnson CEO Alex Gorsky also took time out from his 'vaccine' disaster to say that people may need to be vaccinated against 'Covid-19' each year. UK Health Secretary, the psychopath Matt Hancock, said additional 'boosters' would be available in the autumn of 2021. This is the trap of the 'vaccine passport'. The public will have to accept every last 'vaccine' they introduce, including for the fake 'variants', or it would cease to be valid. The only other way in some cases would be continuous testing with a test not testing for the 'virus' and what is on the swabs constantly pushed up your nose towards the brain every time?

'Vaccines' changing behaviour

I mentioned in the body of the book how I believed we would see gathering behaviour changes in the 'vaccinated' and I am already hearing such comments from the non-'vaccinated' describing behaviour changes in friends, loved ones and work colleagues. This will only increase as the self-replicating synthetic material and nanoparticles expand in body and brain. An article in the *Guardian* in 2016 detailed research at the University of Virginia in Charlottesville which developed a new method for controlling brain circuits associated with complex animal behaviour. The method, dubbed 'magnetogenetics', involves genetically-engineering a protein called ferritin, which stores and releases iron, to create a magnetised substance – 'Magneto' – that can activate specific groups of nerve cells from a distance. This is claimed to be an advance on other methods of brain activity manipulation known as optogenetics and chemogenetics (the Cult has been developing methods of brain control for a long time). The ferritin technique is said to be non-invasive and able to activate neurons 'rapidly and reversibly'. In other words, human thought and perception. The article said that earlier studies revealed how nerve cell proteins 'activated by heat and mechanical pressure can be genetically engineered so that they become sensitive to radio waves and magnetic fields, by attaching them to an iron-storing protein called ferritin, or to inorganic

paramagnetic particles'. Sensitive to radio waves and magnetic fields? You mean like 5G, 6G and 7G? This is the human-AI Smart Grid hive mind we are talking about. The *Guardian* article said:

... the researchers injected Magneto into the striatum of freely behaving mice, a deep brain structure containing dopamine-producing neurons that are involved in reward and motivation, and then placed the animals into an apparatus split into magnetised and non-magnetised sections.

Mice expressing Magneto spent far more time in the magnetised areas than mice that did not, because activation of the protein caused the striatal neurons expressing it to release dopamine, so that the mice found being in those areas rewarding. This shows that Magneto can remotely control the firing of neurons deep within the brain, and also control complex behaviours.

Make no mistake this basic methodology will be part of the 'Covid vaccine' cocktail and using magnetics to change brain function through electromagnetic field frequency activation. The Pentagon is developing a 'Covid vaccine' using ferritin. Magnetism would explain changes in behaviour and why videos are appearing across the Internet as I write showing how magnets stick to the skin at the point of the 'vaccine' shot. Once people take these 'vaccines' anything becomes possible in terms of brain function and illness which will be blamed on 'Covid-19' and 'variants'. Magnetic field manipulation would further explain why the non-'vaccinated' are reporting the same symptoms as the 'vaccinated' they interact with and why those symptoms are reported to decrease when not in their company. Interestingly 'Magneto', a 'mutant', is a character in the Marvel Comic *X-Men* stories with the ability to manipulate magnetic fields and he believes that mutants should fight back against their human oppressors by any means necessary. The character was born Erik Lehnsherr to a Jewish family in Germany.

Cult-controlled courts

The European Court of Human Rights opened the door for mandatory 'Covid-19 vaccines' across the continent when it ruled in a Czech Republic dispute over childhood immunisation that legally

enforced vaccination could be 'necessary in a democratic society'. The 17 judges decided that compulsory vaccinations did not breach human rights law. On the face of it the judgement was so inverted you gasp for air. If not having a vaccine infused into your body is not a human right then what is? Ah, but they said human rights law which has been specifically written to delete all human rights at the behest of the state (the Cult). Article 8 of the European Convention on Human Rights relates to the right to a private life. The crucial word here is '*except*':

There shall be no interference by a public authority with the exercise of this right EXCEPT such as is in accordance with the law and is necessary in a democratic society in the interests of national security, public safety or the economic wellbeing of the country, for the prevention of disorder or crime, for the protection of health or morals, or for the protection of the rights and freedoms of others [My emphasis].

No interference *except* in accordance with the law means there *are* no 'human rights' *except* what EU governments decide you can have at their behest. 'As is necessary in a democratic society' explains that reference in the judgement and 'in the interests of national security, public safety or the economic well-being of the country, for the prevention of disorder or crime, for the protection of health or morals, or for the protection of the rights and freedoms of others' gives the EU a coach and horses to ride through 'human rights' and scatter them in all directions. The judiciary is not a check and balance on government extremism; it is a vehicle to enforce it. This judgement was almost laughably predictable when the last thing the Cult wanted was a decision that went against mandatory vaccination. Judges rule over and over again to benefit the system of which they are a part. Vaccination disputes that come before them are invariably delivered in favour of doctors and authorities representing the view of the state which owns the judiciary. Oh, yes, and we have even had calls to stop putting 'Covid-19' on death certificates within 28 days of a 'positive test' because it is claimed the practice makes the 'vaccine' appear not to work. They are laughing at you.

The scale of madness, inhumanity and things to come was highlighted when those not 'vaccinated' for 'Covid' were refused evacuation from the Caribbean island of St Vincent during massive volcanic eruptions. Cruise ships taking residents to the safety of another island allowed only the 'vaccinated' to board and the rest were left to their fate. Even in life and death situations like this we see 'Covid' stripping people of their most basic human instincts and the insanity is even more extreme when you think that fake 'vaccine'-makers are not even claiming their body-manipulating concoctions stop 'infection' and 'transmission' of a 'virus' that doesn't exist. St Vincent Prime Minister Ralph Gonsalves said: 'The chief medical officer will be identifying the persons already vaccinated so that we can get them on the ship.' Note again the power of the chief medical officer who, like Whitty in the UK, will be answering to the World Health Organization. This is the Cult network structure that has overridden politicians who 'follow the science' which means doing what WHO-controlled 'medical officers' and 'science advisers' tell them. Gonsalves even said that residents who were 'vaccinated' after the order so they could board the ships would still be refused entry due to possible side effects such as 'wooziness in the head'. The good news is that if they were woozy enough in the head they could qualify to be prime minister of St Vincent.

Microchipping freedom

The European judgement will be used at some point to justify moves to enforce the 'Covid' DNA-manipulating procedure. Sandra Ro, CEO of the Global Blockchain Business Council, told a World Economic Forum event that she hoped 'vaccine passports' would help to 'drive forced consent and standardisation' of global digital identity schemes: 'I'm hoping with the desire and global demand for some sort of vaccine passport – so that people can get travelling and working again – [it] will drive forced consent, standardisation, and frankly, cooperation across the world.' The lady is either not very bright, or thoroughly mendacious, to use the term 'forced consent'.

You do not 'consent' if you are forced – you *submit*. She was describing what the plan has been all along and that's to enforce a digital identity on every human without which they could not function. 'Vaccine passports' are opening the door and are far from the end goal. A digital identity would allow you to be tracked in everything you do in cyberspace and this is the same technique used by Cult-owned China to enforce its social credit system of total control. The ultimate 'passport' is planned to be a microchip as my books have warned for nearly 30 years. Those nice people at the Pentagon working for the Cult-controlled Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency (DARPA) claimed in April, 2021, they have developed a microchip inserted under the skin to detect 'asymptomatic Covid-19 infection' before it becomes an outbreak and a 'revolutionary filter' that can remove the 'virus' from the blood when attached to a dialysis machine. The only problems with this are that the 'virus' does not exist and people transmitting the 'virus' with no symptoms is brain-numbing bullshit. This is, of course, not a ruse to get people to be microchipped for very different reasons. DARPA also said it was producing a one-stop 'vaccine' for the 'virus' and all 'variants'. One of the most sinister organisations on Planet Earth is doing this? Better have it then. These people are insane because Wetiko that possesses them is insane.

Researchers from the Salk Institute in California announced they have created an embryo that is part human and part monkey. My books going back to the 1990s have exposed experiments in top secret underground facilities in the United States where humans are being crossed with animal and non-human 'extraterrestrial' species. They are now easing that long-developed capability into the public arena and there is much more to come given we are dealing with psychiatric basket cases. Talking of which – Elon Musk's scientists at Neuralink trained a monkey to play Pong and other puzzles on a computer screen using a joystick and when the monkey made the correct move a metal tube squirted banana smoothie into his mouth which is the basic technique for training humans into unquestioning compliance. Two Neuralink chips were in the monkey's skull and

more than 2,000 wires 'fanned out' into its brain. Eventually the monkey played a video game purely with its brain waves. Psychopathic narcissist Musk said the 'breakthrough' was a step towards putting Neuralink chips into human skulls and merging minds with artificial intelligence. *Exactly*. This man is so dark and Cult to his DNA.

World Economic Fascism (WEF)

The World Economic Forum is telling you the plan by the statements made at its many and various events. Cult-owned fascist YouTube CEO Susan Wojcicki spoke at the 2021 WEF Global Technology Governance Summit (see the name) in which 40 governments and 150 companies met to ensure 'the responsible design and deployment of emerging technologies'. Orwellian translation: 'Ensuring the design and deployment of long-planned technologies will advance the Cult agenda for control and censorship.' Freedom-destroyer and Nuremberg-bound Wojcicki expressed support for tech platforms like hers to censor content that is 'technically legal but could be harmful'. Who decides what is 'harmful'? She does and they do. 'Harmful' will be whatever the Cult doesn't want people to see and we have legislation proposed by the UK government that would censor content on the basis of 'harm' no matter if the information is fair, legal and provably true. Make that *especially* if it is fair, legal and provably true. Wojcicki called for a global coalition to be formed to enforce content moderation standards through automated censorship. This is a woman and mega-censor so self-deluded that she shamelessly accepted a 'free expression' award – *Wojcicki* – in an event sponsored by her own *YouTube*. They have no shame and no self-awareness.

You know that 'Covid' is a scam and Wojcicki a Cult operative when YouTube is censoring medical and scientific opinion purely on the grounds of whether it supports or opposes the Cult 'Covid' narrative. Florida governor Ron DeSantis compiled an expert panel with four professors of medicine from Harvard, Oxford, and Stanford Universities who spoke against forcing children and

vaccinated people to wear masks. They also said there was no proof that lockdowns reduced spread or death rates of 'Covid-19'. Cult-gofer Wojcicki and her YouTube deleted the panel video 'because it included content that contradicts the consensus of local and global health authorities regarding the efficacy of masks to prevent the spread of Covid-19'. This 'consensus' refers to what the Cult tells the World Health Organization to say and the WHO tells 'local health authorities' to do. Wojcicki knows this, of course. The panellists pointed out that censorship of scientific debate was responsible for deaths from many causes, but Wojcicki couldn't care less. She would not dare go against what she is told and as a disgrace to humanity she wouldn't want to anyway. The UK government is seeking to pass a fascist 'Online Safety Bill' to specifically target with massive fines and other means non-censored video and social media platforms to make them censor 'lawful but harmful' content like the Cult-owned Facebook, Twitter, Google and YouTube. What is 'lawful but harmful' would be decided by the fascist Blair-created Ofcom.

Another WEF obsession is a cyber-attack on the financial system and this is clearly what the Cult has planned to take down the bank accounts of everyone – except theirs. Those that think they have enough money for the Cult agenda not to matter to them have got a big lesson coming if they continue to ignore what is staring them in the face. The World Economic Forum, funded by Gates and fronted by Klaus Schwab, announced it would be running a 'simulation' with the Russian government and global banks of just such an attack called Cyber Polygon 2021. What they simulate – as with the 'Covid' Event 201 – they plan to instigate. The WEF is involved in a project with the Cult-owned Carnegie Endowment for International Peace called the WEF-Carnegie Cyber Policy Initiative which seeks to merge Wall Street banks, 'regulators' (I love it) and intelligence agencies to 'prevent' (arrange and allow) a cyber-attack that would bring down the global financial system as long planned by those that control the WEF and the Carnegie operation. The Carnegie Endowment for International Peace sent an instruction to First World

War US President Woodrow Wilson not to let the war end before society had been irreversibly transformed.

The Wuhan lab diversion

As I close, the Cult-controlled authorities and lapdog media are systematically pushing 'the virus was released from the Wuhan lab' narrative. There are two versions – it happened by accident and it happened on purpose. Both are nonsense. The perceived existence of the never-shown-to-exist 'virus' is vital to sell the impression that there is actually an infective agent to deal with and to allow the endless potential for terrifying the population with 'variants' of a 'virus' that does not exist. The authorities at the time of writing are going with the 'by accident' while the alternative media is promoting the 'on purpose'. Cable news host Tucker Carlson who has questioned aspects of lockdown and 'vaccine' compulsion has bought the Wuhan lab story. 'Everyone now agrees' he said. Well, I don't and many others don't and the question is *why* does the system and its media suddenly 'agree'? When the media moves as one unit with a narrative it is always a lie – witness the hour by hour mendacity of the 'Covid' era. Why would this Cult-owned combination which has unleashed lies like machine gun fire suddenly 'agree' to tell the truth??

Much of the alternative media is buying the lie because it fits the conspiracy narrative, but it's the *wrong* conspiracy. The real conspiracy is that *there is no virus* and that is what the Cult is desperate to hide. The idea that the 'virus' was released by accident is ludicrous when the whole 'Covid' hoax was clearly long-planned and waiting to be played out as it was so fast in accordance with the Rockefeller document and Event 201. So they prepared everything in detail over decades and then sat around strumming their fingers waiting for an 'accidental' release from a bio-lab? *What??* It's crazy. Then there's the 'on purpose' claim. You want to circulate a 'deadly virus' and hide the fact that you've done so and you release it down the street from the highest-level bio-lab in China? I repeat – *What??*

You would release it far from that lab to stop any association being made. But, no, we'll do it in a place where the connection was certain to be made. Why would you need to scam 'cases' and 'deaths' and pay hospitals to diagnose 'Covid-19' if you had a real 'virus'? What are sections of the alternative media doing believing this crap? Where were all the mass deaths in Wuhan from a 'deadly pathogen' when the recovery to normal life after the initial propaganda was dramatic in speed? Why isn't the 'deadly pathogen' now circulating all over China with bodies in the street? Once again we have the technique of tell them what they want to hear and they will likely believe it. The alternative media has its 'conspiracy' and with Carlson it fits with his 'China is the danger' narrative over years. China *is* a danger as a global Cult operations centre, but not for this reason. The Wuhan lab story also has the potential to instigate conflict with China when at some stage the plan is to trigger a Problem-Reaction-Solution confrontation with the West. Question everything – *everything* – and especially when the media agrees on a common party line.

Third wave ... fourth wave ... fifth wave ...

As the book went into production the world was being set up for more lockdowns and a 'third wave' supported by invented 'variants' that were increasing all the time and will continue to do so in public statements and computer programs, but not in reality. India became the new Italy in the 'Covid' propaganda campaign and we were told to be frightened of the new 'Indian strain'. Somehow I couldn't find it within myself to do so. A document produced for the UK government entitled 'Summary of further modelling of easing of restrictions – Roadmap Step 2' declared that a third wave was inevitable (of course when it's in the script) and it would be the fault of children and those who refuse the health-destroying fake 'Covid vaccine'. One of the computer models involved came from the Cult-owned *Imperial College* and the other from Warwick University which I wouldn't trust to tell me the date in a calendar factory. The document states that both models presumed extremely high uptake

of the 'Covid vaccines' and didn't allow for 'variants'. The document states: 'The resurgence is a result of some people (mostly children) being ineligible for vaccination; others choosing not to receive the vaccine; and others being vaccinated but not perfectly protected.' The mendacity takes the breath away. Okay, blame those with a brain who won't take the DNA-modifying shots and put more pressure on children to have it as 'trials' were underway involving children as young as six months with parents who give insanity a bad name. Massive pressure is being put on the young to have the fake 'vaccine' and child age consent limits have been systematically lowered around the world to stop parents intervening. Most extraordinary about the document was its claim that the 'third wave' would be driven by 'the resurgence in both hospitalisations and deaths ... dominated by *those that have received two doses of the vaccine*, comprising around 60-70% of the wave respectively'. The predicted peak of the 'third wave' suggested 300 deaths per day with 250 of them *fully 'vaccinated' people*. How many more lies do acquiescers need to be told before they see the obvious? Those who took the jab to 'protect themselves' are projected to be those who mostly get sick and die? So what's in the 'vaccine'? The document went on:

It is possible that a summer of low prevalence could be followed by substantial increases in incidence over the following autumn and winter. Low prevalence in late summer should not be taken as an indication that SARS-CoV-2 has retreated or that the population has high enough levels of immunity to prevent another wave.

They are telling you the script and while many British people believed 'Covid' restrictions would end in the summer of 2021 the government was preparing for them to be ongoing. Authorities were awarding contracts for 'Covid marshals' to police the restrictions with contracts starting in July, 2021, and going through to January 31st, 2022, and the government was advertising for 'Media Buying Services' to secure media propaganda slots worth a potential £320 million for 'Covid-19 campaigns' with a contract not ending until March, 2022. The recipient – via a list of other front companies – was reported to be American media marketing giant Omnicom Group

Inc. While money is no object for 'Covid' the UK waiting list for all other treatment – including life-threatening conditions – passed 4.5 million. Meantime the Cult is seeking to control all official 'inquiries' to block revelations about what has really been happening and why. It must not be allowed to – we need Nuremberg jury trials in every country. The cover-up doesn't get more obvious than appointing ultra-Zionist professor Philip Zelikow to oversee two dozen US virologists, public health officials, clinicians, former government officials and four American 'charitable foundations' to 'learn the lessons' of the 'Covid' debacle. The personnel will be those that created and perpetuated the 'Covid' lies while Zelikow is the former executive director of the 9/11 Commission who ensured that the truth about those attacks never came out and produced a report that must be among the most mendacious and manipulative documents ever written – see *The Trigger* for the detailed exposure of the almost unimaginable 9/11 story in which Sabbatians can be found at every level.

Passive no more

People are increasingly challenging the authorities with amazing numbers of people taking to the streets in London well beyond the ability of the Face-Nappies to stop them. Instead the Nappies choose situations away from the mass crowds to target, intimidate, and seek to promote the impression of 'violent protestors'. One such incident happened in London's Hyde Park. Hundreds of thousands walking through the streets in protest against 'Covid' fascism were ignored by the Cult-owned BBC and most of the rest of the mainstream media, but they delighted in reporting how police were injured in 'clashes with protestors'. The truth was that a group of people gathered in Hyde Park at the end of one march when most had gone home and they were peacefully having a good time with music and chat. Face-Nappies who couldn't deal with the full-march crowd then waded in with their batons and got more than they bargained for. Instead of just standing for this criminal brutality the crowd used their numerical superiority to push the Face-Nappies out of the

park. Eventually the Nappies turned and ran. Unfortunately two or three idiots in the crowd threw drink cans striking two officers which gave the media and the government the image they wanted to discredit the 99.9999 percent who were peaceful. The idiots walked straight into the trap and we must always be aware of potential agent provocateurs used by the authorities to discredit their targets.

This response from the crowd – the can people apart – must be a turning point when the public no longer stand by while the innocent are arrested and brutally attacked by the Face-Nappies. That doesn't mean to be violent, that's the last thing we need. We'll leave the violence to the Face-Nappies and government. But it does mean that when the Face-Nappies use violence against peaceful people the numerical superiority is employed to stop them and make citizen's arrests or Common Law arrests for a breach of the peace. The time for being passive in the face of fascism is over.

We are the many, they are the few, and we need to make that count before there is no freedom left and our children and grandchildren face an ongoing fascist nightmare.

COME ON PEOPLE – IT'S TIME.

One final thought ...

The power of love
A force from above
Cleaning my soul
Flame on burn desire
Love with tongues of fire
Purge the soul
Make love your goal

I'll protect you from the hooded claw
Keep the vampires from your door
When the chips are down I'll be around
With my undying, death-defying
Love for you

Envy will hurt itself
Let yourself be beautiful
Sparkling love, flowers
And pearls and pretty girls
Love is like an energy
Rushin' rushin' inside of me

This time we go sublime
Lovers entwine, divine, divine,
Love is danger, love is pleasure
Love is pure – the only treasure

I'm so in love with you
Purge the soul
Make love your goal

The power of love
A force from above
Cleaning my soul
The power of love
A force from above
A sky-scraping dove

Flame on burn desire
Love with tongues of fire
Purge the soul
Make love your goal

Frankie Goes To Hollywood

APPENDIX

Cowan-Kaufman-Morell Statement on Virus Isolation (SOVI)

Isolation: The action of isolating; the fact or condition of being isolated or standing alone; separation from other things or persons; solitariness

Oxford English Dictionary

The controversy over whether the SARS-CoV-2 virus has ever been isolated or purified continues. However, using the above definition, common sense, the laws of logic and the dictates of science, any unbiased person must come to the conclusion that the SARS-CoV-2 virus has never been isolated or purified. As a result, no confirmation of the virus' existence can be found. The logical, common sense, and scientific consequences of this fact are:

- the structure and composition of something not shown to exist can't be known, including the presence, structure, and function of any hypothetical spike or other proteins;
- the genetic sequence of something that has never been found can't be known;
- "variants" of something that hasn't been shown to exist can't be known;
- it's impossible to demonstrate that SARS-CoV-2 causes a disease called Covid-19.

In as concise terms as possible, here's the proper way to isolate, characterize and demonstrate a new virus. First, one takes samples (blood, sputum, secretions) from many people (e.g. 500) with symptoms which are unique and specific enough to characterize an illness. Without mixing these samples with ANY tissue or products that also contain genetic material, the virologist macerates, filters and ultracentrifuges i.e. *purifies* the specimen. This common virology technique, done for decades to isolate bacteriophages¹ and so-called giant viruses in every virology lab, then allows the virologist to demonstrate with electron microscopy thousands of identically sized and shaped particles. These particles are the isolated and purified virus.

These identical particles are then checked for uniformity by physical and/or microscopic techniques. Once the purity is determined, the particles may be further characterized. This would include examining the structure, morphology, and chemical composition of the particles. Next, their genetic makeup is characterized by extracting the genetic material directly from the purified particles and using genetic-sequencing techniques, such as Sanger sequencing, that have also been around for decades. Then one does an analysis to confirm that these uniform particles are exogenous (outside) in origin as a virus is conceptualized to be, and not the normal breakdown products of dead and dying tissues.² (As of May 2020, we know that virologists have no way to determine whether the particles they're seeing are viruses or just normal breakdown products of dead and dying tissues.)³

1 Isolation, characterization and analysis of bacteriophages from the haloalkaline lake Elmenteita, Kenya Julia Khayeli Akhwale et al, PLOS One, Published: April 25, 2019.
<https://journals.plos.org/plosone/article?id=10.1371/journal.pone.0215734> – accessed 2/15/21

2 "Extracellular Vesicles Derived From Apoptotic Cells: An Essential Link Between Death and Regeneration," Maojiao Li et al, Frontiers in Cell and Developmental Biology, 2020 October 2.
<https://www.frontiersin.org/articles/10.3389/fcell.2020.573511/full> – accessed 2/15/21

If we have come this far then we have fully isolated, characterized, and genetically sequenced an exogenous virus particle. However, we still have to show it is causally related to a disease. This is carried out by exposing a group of healthy subjects (animals are usually used) to this isolated, purified virus in the manner in which the disease is thought to be transmitted. If the animals get sick with the same disease, as confirmed by clinical and autopsy findings, one has now shown that the virus actually causes a disease. This demonstrates infectivity and transmission of an infectious agent.

None of these steps has even been attempted with the SARS-CoV-2 virus, nor have all these steps been successfully performed for any so-called pathogenic virus. Our research indicates that a single study showing these steps does not exist in the medical literature.

Instead, since 1954, virologists have taken unpurified samples from a relatively few people, often less than ten, with a similar disease. They then minimally process this sample and inoculate this unpurified sample onto tissue culture containing usually four to six other types of material – all of which contain identical genetic material as to what is called a “virus.” The tissue culture is starved and poisoned and naturally disintegrates into many types of particles, some of which contain genetic material. Against all common sense, logic, use of the English language and scientific integrity, this process is called “virus isolation.” This brew containing fragments of genetic material from many sources is then subjected to genetic analysis, which then creates in a computer-simulation process the alleged sequence of the alleged virus, a so called in silico genome. At no time is an actual virus confirmed by electron microscopy. At no time is a genome extracted and sequenced from an actual virus. This is scientific fraud.

The observation that the unpurified specimen — inoculated onto tissue culture along with toxic antibiotics, bovine fetal tissue, amniotic fluid and other tissues — destroys the kidney tissue onto which it is inoculated is given as evidence of the virus' existence and pathogenicity. This is scientific fraud.

From now on, when anyone gives you a paper that suggests the SARS-CoV-2 virus has been isolated, please check the methods sections. If the researchers used Vero cells or any other culture method, you know that their process was not isolation. You will hear the following excuses for why actual isolation isn't done:

1. There were not enough virus particles found in samples from patients to analyze.
2. Viruses are intracellular parasites; they can't be found outside the cell in this manner.

If No. 1 is correct, and we can't find the virus in the sputum of sick people, then on what evidence do we think the virus is dangerous or even lethal? If No. 2 is correct, then how is the virus spread from person to person? We are told it emerges from the cell to infect others. Then why isn't it possible to find it?

Finally, questioning these virology techniques and conclusions is not some distraction or divisive issue. Shining the light on this truth is essential to stop this terrible fraud that humanity is confronting. For, as we now know, if the virus has never been isolated, sequenced or shown to cause illness, if the virus is imaginary, then why are we wearing masks, social distancing and putting the whole world into prison?

Finally, if pathogenic viruses don't exist, then what is going into those injectable devices erroneously called "vaccines," and what is their purpose? This scientific question is the most urgent and relevant one of our time.

We are correct. The SARS-CoV2 virus does not exist.

Sally Fallon Morell, MA

Dr. Thomas Cowan, MD

Dr. Andrew Kaufman, MD

Bibliography

- Alinsky, Saul:** *Rules for Radicals* (Vintage, 1989)
- Antelman, Rabbi Marvin:** *To Eliminate the Opiate* (Zahavia, 1974)
- Bastardi, Joe:** *The Climate Chronicles* (Relentless Thunder Press, 2018)
- Cowan, Tom:** *Human Heart, Cosmic Heart* (Chelsea Green Publishing, 2016)
- Cowan, Tom, and Fallon Morell, Sally:** *The Contagion Myth* (Skyhorse Publishing, 2020)
- Forbes, Jack D:** *Columbus And Other Cannibals – The Wetiko Disease of Exploitation, Imperialism, and Terrorism* (Seven Stories Press, 2008 – originally published in 1979)
- Gates, Bill:** *How to Avoid a Climate Disaster: The Solutions We Have and the Breakthroughs We Need* (Allen Lane, 2021)
- Huxley, Aldous:** *Brave New World* (Chatto & Windus, 1932)
- Köhnlein, Dr Claus, and Engelbrecht, Torsten:** *Virus Mania* (emu-Verlag, Lahnstein, 2020)
- Lanza, Robert, and Berman, Bob:** *Biocentrism* (BenBella Books, 2010)
- Lash, John Lamb:** *Not In His Image* (Chelsea Green Publishing, 2006)
- Lester, Dawn, and Parker, David:** *What Really Makes You Ill – Why everything you thought you knew about disease is wrong* (Independently Published, 2019)
- Levy, Paul:** *Dispelling Wetiko, Breaking the Spell of Evil* (North Atlantic Books, 2013)
- Marx, Karl:** *A World Without Jews* (Philosophical Library, first edition, 1959)
- Mullis, Kary:** *Dancing Naked in the Mine Field* (Bloomsbury, 1999)
- O'Brien, Cathy:** *Trance-Formation of America* (Reality Marketing, 1995)
- Scholem, Gershon:** *The Messianic Idea in Judaism* (Schocken Books, 1994)
- Schwab, Klaus, and Davis, Nicholas:** *Shaping the Future of the Fourth Industrial Revolution: A guide to building a better world* (Penguin Books, 2018)
- Schwab, Klaus:** *The Great Reset* (Agentur Schweiz, 2020)
- Sunstein, Cass and Thaler, Richard:** *Nudge: Improving Decisions About Health, Wealth, and Happiness* (Penguin, 2009)
- Swan, Shanna:** *Count Down: How Our Modern World Is Threatening Sperm Counts, Altering Male and Female Reproductive Development and Imperiling the Future of the Human Race* (Scribner, 2021)
- Tegmark, Max:** *Our Mathematical Universe: My Quest for the Ultimate Nature of Reality* (Penguin, 2015)
- Velikovsky, Immanuel:** *Worlds in Collision* (Paradigma, 2009)

Wilton, Robert: *The Last Days of the Romanovs* (Blurb, 2018, first published 1920)

Index

A

abusive relationships

- blaming themselves, abused as [ref1](#)
- children [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#)
- conspiracy theories [ref1](#)
- domestic abuse [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
- economic abuse and dependency [ref1](#)
- isolation [ref1](#)
- physical abuse [ref1](#)
- psychological abuse [ref1](#)
- signs of abuse [ref1](#)

addiction

- alcoholism [ref1](#)
- frequencies [ref1](#)
- substance abuse [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
- technology [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Adelson, Sheldon [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Agenda 21/Agenda 2030 (UN) [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

AIDs/HIV [ref1](#)

- causal link between HIV and AIDs [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

retroviruses [ref1](#)

- testing [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
- trial-run for Covid-19, as [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

aliens/extraterrestrials [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

aluminium [ref1](#)

Amazon [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

amplification cycles [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
anaphylactic shock [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
animals [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
antibodies [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
Antifa [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
antigens [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
anti-Semitism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
 consciousness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
 energy [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
 ennoa [ref1](#)
 genetic manipulation [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
 inversion [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
 lockdowns [ref1](#)
 money [ref1](#)
 radiation [ref1](#)
 religion [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
 technology [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
 Wetiko factor [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
artificial intelligence (AI) [ref1](#)
army made up of robots [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
 Human 2.0 [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
 Internet [ref1](#)
 MHRA [ref1](#)
 Morgellons fibres [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
 Smart Grid [ref1](#)
 Wetiko factor [ref1](#)
asymptomatic, Covid-19 as [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
aviation industry [ref1](#)

B

banking, finance and money [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

2008 crisis [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

boom and bust [ref1](#)

cashless digital money systems [ref1](#)

central banks [ref1](#)

credit [ref1](#)

digital currency [ref1](#)

fractional reserve lending [ref1](#)

Great Reset [ref1](#)

guaranteed income [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Human 2.0 [ref1](#)

incomes, destruction of [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

interest [ref1](#)

one per cent [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

scams [ref1](#)

BBC [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)

Becker-Phelps, Leslie [ref1](#)

Behavioural Insights Team (BIT) (Nudge Unit) [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

behavioural scientists *and* psychologists, advice from [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Bezos, Jeff [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

Biden, Hunter [ref1](#)

Biden, Joe [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#), [ref11](#),
[ref12](#), [ref13](#), [ref14](#), [ref15](#), [ref16](#), [ref17](#)

Big Pharma

cholesterol [ref1](#)

health professionals [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

immunity from prosecution in US [ref1](#)

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)

Wetiko factor [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

WHO [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#),
[ref7](#)

billionaires [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#) [ref10](#), [ref11](#)
bird flu (H5N1) [ref1](#)
Black Lives Matter (BLM) [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
Blair, Tony [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)
Brin, Sergei [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)
British Empire [ref1](#)
Bush, George HW [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Bush, George W [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
Byrd, Robert [ref1](#)

C

Canada

Global Cult [ref1](#)
hate speech [ref1](#)
internment [ref1](#)
masks [ref1](#)
old people [ref1](#)
SARS-COV-2 [ref1](#)
satellites [ref1](#)
vaccines [ref1](#)
wearable technology [ref1](#)

Capitol Hill riot [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

agents provocateur [ref1](#)
Antifa [ref1](#)
Black Lives Matter (BLM) [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
QAnon [ref1](#)
security precautions, lack of [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

carbon dioxide [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

care homes, deaths in [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

cashless digital money systems [ref1](#)

censorship [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

fact-checkers [ref1](#)

masks [ref1](#)

media [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

private messages [ref1](#)

social media [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)

transgender persons [ref1](#)

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#)

Centers for Disease Control (CDC) (United States) [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#),
[ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#), [ref11](#), [ref12](#), [ref13](#)

centralisation [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)

chakras [ref1](#)

change agents [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

chemtrails [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

chief medical officers and scientific advisers [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#),
[ref5](#), [ref6](#)

children *see also* **young people**

abuse [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#)

care, taken into [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

education [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

energy [ref1](#)

family courts [ref1](#)

hand sanitisers [ref1](#)

human sacrifice [ref1](#)

lockdowns [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

masks [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

mental health [ref1](#)

old people [ref1](#)

parents, replacement of [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Psyop (psychological operation), Covid as a [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

reframing [ref1](#)

smartphone addiction [ref1](#)

social distancing and isolation [ref1](#)
social media [ref1](#)
transgender persons [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
United States [ref1](#)
vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#)
Wetiko factor [ref1](#)

China [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

anal swab tests [ref1](#)
Chinese Revolution [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
digital currency [ref1](#)
Global Cult [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#)
guaranteed income [ref1](#)
Imperial College [ref1](#)
Israel [ref1](#)
lockdown [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
masculinity crisis [ref1](#)
masks [ref1](#)
media [ref1](#)
origins of virus in China [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
pollution causing respiratory diseases [ref1](#)
Sabbatians [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Smart Grid [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
social credit system [ref1](#)
testing [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
United States [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Wetiko factor [ref1](#)
wet market conspiracy [ref1](#)
Wuhan [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

cholesterol [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Christianity [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

criticism [ref1](#)
cross, inversion of the [ref1](#)

Nag Hammadi texts [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Roman Catholic Church [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Sabbatians [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Satan [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#)

class [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

climate change hoax [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

Agenda 21/Agenda 2030 [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

carbon dioxide [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Club of Rome [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

fear [ref1](#)

funding [ref1](#)

Global Cult [ref1](#)

green new deals [ref1](#)

green parties [ref1](#)

inversion [ref1](#)

perception, control of [ref1](#)

PICC [ref1](#)

reframing [ref1](#)

temperature, increases in [ref1](#)

United Nations [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Wikipedia [ref1](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Clinton, Bill [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)

Clinton, Hillary [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

the cloud [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

Club of Rome and climate change hoax [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

cognitive therapy [ref1](#)

Cohn, Roy [ref1](#)

Common Law [ref1](#)

Admiralty Law [ref1](#)

arrests [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

contractual law, Statute Law as [ref1](#)

corporate entities, people as [ref1](#)

legalese [ref1](#)

sea, law of the [ref1](#)

Statute Law [ref1](#)

Common Purpose leadership programme [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

communism [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

co-morbidities [ref1](#)

computer-generated virus,

Covid-19 as [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

computer models [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

connections [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

consciousness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

expanded [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

experience [ref1](#)

heart [ref1](#)

infinity [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

religion [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

self-identity [ref1](#)

simulation thesis [ref1](#)

vaccines [ref1](#)

Wetiko factor [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

conspiracy theorists [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

contradictory rules [ref1](#)

contrails [ref1](#)

Corman-Drosten test [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

countermimicry [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Covid-19 vaccines *see* vaccines

Covidiots [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Cowan, Tom [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

crimes against humanity [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)

cyber-operations [ref1](#)

cyberwarfare [ref1](#)

D

DARPA (Defense Advanced Research Projects Agency) [ref1](#)

deaths

care homes [ref1](#)

certificates [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

mortality rate [ref1](#)

post-mortems/autopsies [ref1](#)

recording [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

deceit

pyramid of deceit [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

sequence of deceit [ref1](#)

decoding [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

dehumanisation [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Delphi technique [ref1](#)

democracy [ref1](#)

dependency [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

Descartes, René [ref1](#)

DNA

numbers [ref1](#)

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#)

DNR (do not resuscitate)

orders [ref1](#)

domestic abuse [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

downgrading of Covid-19 [ref1](#)

Drosten, Christian [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

Duesberg, Peter [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

E

economic abuse [ref1](#)

Edmunds, John [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

education [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

electromagnetic spectrum [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Enders, John [ref1](#)

energy

Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

children and young people [ref1](#)

consciousness [ref1](#)

decoding [ref1](#)

frequencies [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

heart [ref1](#)

human energy field [ref1](#)

source, humans as an energy [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

vaccines [ref1](#)

viruses [ref1](#)

ennoia [ref1](#)

Epstein, Jeffrey [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

eternal 'I' [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

ethylene oxide [ref1](#)

European Union [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

Event [ref1](#) *and* Bill Gates [ref2](#)

exosomes, Covid-19 as natural defence mechanism called [ref1](#)

experience [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Extinction Rebellion [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

F

Facebook

addiction [ref1](#), 448–50

Facebook

Archons [ref1](#)

censorship [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

hate speech [ref1](#)

monopoly, as [ref1](#)

private messages, censorship of [ref1](#)

Sabbatians [ref1](#)

United States election fraud [ref1](#)

vaccines [ref1](#)

Wetiko factor [ref1](#)

fact-checkers [ref1](#)

Fauci, Anthony [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#),
[ref11](#), [ref12](#)

fear [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

climate change [ref1](#)

computer models [ref1](#)

conspiracy theories [ref1](#)

empty hospitals [ref1](#)

Italy [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

lockdowns [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

masks [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

media [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

medical staff [ref1](#)

Psyop (psychological operation), Covid as a [ref1](#)

Wetiko factor [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

female infertility [ref1](#)

Fermi Paradox [ref1](#)

Ferguson, Neil [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

fertility, decline in [ref1](#)

The Field [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)

finance *see* **banking, finance and money**

five-senses [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

censorship [ref1](#)
consciousness, expansion of [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)
decoding [ref1](#)
education [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
the Field [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
God, personification of [ref1](#)
infinity [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
media [ref1](#)
paranormal [ref1](#)
perceptual programming [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Phantom Self [ref1](#)
pneuma not nous, using [ref1](#)
reincarnation [ref1](#)
self-identity [ref1](#)
Wetiko factor [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)
5G [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)
Floyd, George and protests, killing of [ref1](#)
flu, re-labelling of [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
food and water, control of [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Freemasons [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)
Frei, Rosemary [ref1](#)
frequencies
addictions [ref1](#)
Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
awareness [ref1](#)
chanting and mantras [ref1](#)
consciousness [ref1](#)
decoding [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
education [ref1](#)
electromagnetic (EMF) frequencies [ref1](#)
energy [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
fear [ref1](#)

the Field [ref1](#), [ref2](#) 5G [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#)
five-senses [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
ghosts [ref1](#)
Gnostics [ref1](#)
hive-minds [ref1](#)
human, meaning of [ref1](#)
light [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
love [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
magnetism [ref1](#)
perception [ref1](#)
reality [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
simulation [ref1](#)
terror [ref1](#)
vaccines [ref1](#)
Wetiko [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Fuellmich, Reiner [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

furlough/rescue payments [ref1](#)

G

Gallo, Robert [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Gates, Bill

Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
climate change [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
Daily Pass tracking system [ref1](#)
Epstein [ref1](#)
fascism [ref1](#)
five senses [ref1](#)
GAVI [ref1](#)
Great Reset [ref1](#)
GSK [ref1](#)
Imperial College [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Johns Hopkins University [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

lockdowns [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
masks [ref1](#)
Nuremberg trial, proposal for [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Rockefellers [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
social distancing and isolation [ref1](#)
Sun, dimming the [ref1](#)
synthetic meat [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)
Wellcome Trust [ref1](#)
Wetiko factor [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
WHO [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#)
Wokeness [ref1](#)
World Economic Forum [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
Gates, Melinda [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
GAVI vaccine alliance [ref1](#)
genetics, manipulation of [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
Germany [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#) *see also* **Nazi Germany**
Global Cult [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
anti-human, why Global Cult is [ref1](#)
Black Lives Matter (BLM) [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
China [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#)
climate change hoax [ref1](#)
contradictory rules [ref1](#)
Covid-19 [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
fascism [ref1](#)
geographical origins [ref1](#)
immigration [ref1](#)
Internet [ref1](#)
mainstream media [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
masks [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
monarchy [ref1](#)
non-human dimension [ref1](#)

perception [ref1](#)
political parties [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
pyramidal hierarchy [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
reframing [ref1](#)
Sabbatian-Frankism [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
science, manipulation of [ref1](#)
spider and the web [ref1](#)
transgender persons [ref1](#)
vaccines [ref1](#)
who controls the Cult [ref1](#)
Wokeness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

globalisation [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Gnostics [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

Google [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

government

behavioural scientists and psychologists, advice from [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

definition [ref1](#)

Joint Biosecurity Centre (JBC) [ref1](#)

people, abusive relationship with [ref1](#)

Great Reset [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)

fascism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

financial system [ref1](#)

Human 2.0 [ref1](#)

water and food, control of [ref1](#)

green parties [ref1](#)

Griesz-Brisson, Margarite [ref1](#)

guaranteed income [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

H

Hancock, Matt [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

hand sanitisers [ref1](#)

heart [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

hive-minds/groupthink [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

holographs [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

hospitals, empty [ref1](#)

human, meaning of [ref1](#)

Human 2.0 [ref1](#)

addiction to technology [ref1](#)

artificial intelligence (AI) [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

elimination of Human 1.0 [ref1](#)

fertility, decline in [ref1](#)

Great Reset [ref1](#)

implantables [ref1](#)

money [ref1](#)

mRNA [ref1](#)

nanotechnology [ref1](#)

parents, replacement of [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Smart Grid, connection to [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

synthetic biology [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

testosterone levels, decrease in [ref1](#)

transgender = transhumanism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

human sacrifice [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Hunger Games Society [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

Huxley, Aldous [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

I

identity politics [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Illuminati [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

illusory physical reality [ref1](#)

immigration [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

Imperial College [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)

implantables [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

incomes, destruction of [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Infinite Awareness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

Internet [ref1](#), [ref2](#) *see also* social media

artificial intelligence (AI) [ref1](#)

independent journalism, lack of [ref1](#)

Internet of Bodies (IoB) [ref1](#)

Internet of Everything (IoE) [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Internet of Things (IoT) [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

lockdowns [ref1](#)

Psyop (psychological operation), Covid as a [ref1](#)
trolls [ref1](#)

intersectionality [ref1](#)

inversion

Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

climate change hoax [ref1](#)

energy [ref1](#)

Judaism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

symbolism [ref1](#)

Wetiko factor [ref1](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Islam

Archons [ref1](#)

crypto-Jews [ref1](#)

Islamic State [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Jinn and Djinn [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Ottoman Empire [ref1](#)

Wahhabism [ref1](#)

isolation *see* **social distancing** *and* **isolation**

Israel

China [ref1](#)

Cyber Intelligence Unit Beersheba complex [ref1](#)

expansion of illegal settlements [ref1](#)

formation [ref1](#)
Global Cult [ref1](#)
Judaism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
medical experiments, consent for [ref1](#)
Mossad [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
Palestine-Israel conflict [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
parents, replacement of [ref1](#)
Sabbatians [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
September 11, 2001, terrorist attacks on United States [ref1](#)
Silicon Valley [ref1](#)
Smart Grid [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
United States [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
vaccines [ref1](#)
Wetiko factor [ref1](#)

Italy

fear [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
Lombardy [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
vaccines [ref1](#)

J

Johns Hopkins University [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)
Johnson, Boris [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)
Joint Biosecurity Centre (JBC) [ref1](#)

Judaism

anti-Semitism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
crypto-Jews [ref1](#)
inversion [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
Israel [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
Labour Party [ref1](#)
Nazi Germany [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
Sabbatians [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

Silicon Valley [ref1](#)
Torah [ref1](#)
United States [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Zionists [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

K

Kaufman, Andrew [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
knowledge [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)
Koch's postulates [ref1](#)
Kurzweil, Ray [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)
Kushner, Jared [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

L

Labour Party [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Lanka, Stefan [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Lateral Flow Device (LFD) [ref1](#)
Levy, Paul [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
Life Program [ref1](#)
lockdowns [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
 amplification tampering [ref1](#)
 Archons [ref1](#)
 Behavioural Insights Team [ref1](#)
 Black Lives Matter (BLM) [ref1](#)
 care homes, deaths in [ref1](#)
 children
abuse [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
mental health [ref1](#)
 China [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
 computer models [ref1](#)
 consequences [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
 dependency [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

domestic abuse [ref1](#)
fall in cases [ref1](#)
fear [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
guaranteed income [ref1](#)
Hunger Games Society [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
interaction, destroying [ref1](#)
Internet [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
overdoses [ref1](#)
perception [ref1](#)
police-military state [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
protests [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
psychopathic personality [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
reporting/snitching, encouragement of [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
testing [ref1](#)
vaccines [ref1](#)
Wetiko factor [ref1](#)
WHO [ref1](#)
love [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
Lucifer [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

M

Madej, Carrie [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Magufuli, John [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
mainstream media [ref1](#)
BBC [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)
censorship [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
China [ref1](#)
climate change hoax [ref1](#)
fear [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Global Cult [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
independent journalism, lack of [ref1](#)
Ofcom [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

perception [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Psyop (psychological operation), Covid as a [ref1](#)

Sabbatians [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

social disapproval [ref1](#)

social distancing and isolation [ref1](#)

United States [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

Mao Zedong [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Marx and Marxism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)

masculinity [ref1](#)

masks/face coverings [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

 censorship [ref1](#)

 children [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

 China, made in [ref1](#)

 dehumanisation [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

 fear [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

 flu [ref1](#)

 health professionals [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

 isolation [ref1](#)

 laughter [ref1](#)

mass non-cooperation [ref1](#)

microplastics, risk of [ref1](#)

mind control [ref1](#)

multiple masks [ref1](#)

oxygen deficiency [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

police [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

pollution, as cause of plastic [ref1](#)

Psyop (psychological operation), Covid as a [ref1](#)

reframing [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

risk assessments, lack of [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

self-respect [ref1](#)

surgeons [ref1](#)

United States [ref1](#)
vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
Wetiko factor [ref1](#)
'worms' [ref1](#)
The Matrix movies [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
measles [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
media see mainstream media
Medicines and Healthcare products Regulatory Agency (MHRA)
[ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
Mesopotamia [ref1](#)
messaging [ref1](#)
military-police state [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
mind control [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#) *see also* MKUltra
MKUltra [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
monarchy [ref1](#)
money *see* banking, finance and money
Montagnier, Luc [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
Mooney, Bel [ref1](#)
Morgellons disease [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
mortality rate [ref1](#)
Mullis, Kary [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
Musk, Elon [ref1](#)

N

Nag Hammadi texts [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
nanotechnology [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
narcissism [ref1](#)
Nazi Germany [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)
near-death experiences [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Neocons [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Neuro-Linguistic Programming (NLP) and the Delphi technique
[ref1](#)

NHS (National Health Service)

amplification cycles [ref1](#)

Common Purpose [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

mind control [ref1](#)

NHS England [ref1](#)

saving the NHS [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

whistle-blowers [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

No-Problem-Reaction-Solution [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

non-human dimension of Global Cult [ref1](#)

nous [ref1](#)

numbers, reality as [ref1](#)

Nuremberg Codes [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Nuremberg-like tribunal, proposal for [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#),
[ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#), [ref11](#), [ref12](#)

O

Obama, Barack [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#)

O'Brien, Cathy [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

Ochel, Evita [ref1](#)

Ofcom [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

old people [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

Oneness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Open Society Foundations (Soros) [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

oxygen 406, 528–34

P

paedophilia [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Page, Larry [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

Palestine-Israel conflict [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

pandemic, definition of [ref1](#)

pandemic and health crisis scenarios/simulations [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#),
[ref4](#)

paranormal [ref1](#)

PCR tests [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)

Pearl Harbor attacks, prior knowledge of [ref1](#)

Pelosi, Nancy [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

perception [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

climate change hoax [ref1](#)

control [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

decoding [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

enslavement [ref1](#)

externally-delivered perceptions [ref1](#)

five senses [ref1](#)

human labels [ref1](#)

media [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

political parties [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Psyop (psychological operation), Covid as a [ref1](#)

sale of perception [ref1](#)

self-identity [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#)

Phantom Self [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

pharmaceutical industry *see* **Big Pharma**

phthalates [ref1](#)

Plato's Allegory of the Cave [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

pneuma [ref1](#)

police

Black Lives Matter (BLM) [ref1](#)

brutality [ref1](#)

citizen's arrests [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

common law arrests [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Common Purpose [ref1](#)

defunding [ref1](#)

lockdowns [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

masks [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

police-military state [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

psychopathic personality [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

reframing [ref1](#)

United States [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#)

polio [ref1](#)

political correctness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

political parties [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

political puppets [ref1](#)

pollution [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

post-mortems/autopsies [ref1](#)

Postage Stamp Consensus [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

pre-emptive programming [ref1](#)

Problem-Reaction-Solution [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)

Project for the New American Century [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

psychopathic personality [ref1](#)

Archons [ref1](#)

heart energy [ref1](#)

lockdowns [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

police [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

recruitment [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

vaccines [ref1](#)

wealth [ref1](#)

Wetiko [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Psyop (psychological operation), Covid as a [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#),
[ref5](#)

Pushbackers [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

pyramid structure [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

Q

QAnon Psyop [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

R

racism *see also* **Black Lives**

Matter (BLM)

anti-racism industry [ref1](#)

class [ref1](#)

critical race theory [ref1](#)

culture [ref1](#)

intersectionality [ref1](#)

reverse racism [ref1](#)

white privilege [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

white supremacy [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

radiation [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

randomness, illusion of [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

reality [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

reframing [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

change agents [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

children [ref1](#)

climate change [ref1](#)

Common Purpose leadership programme [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

contradictory rules [ref1](#)

enforcers [ref1](#)

masks [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

NLP and the Delphi technique [ref1](#)

police [ref1](#)

Wetiko factor [ref1](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

religion *see also* particular religions

alien invasions [ref1](#)

Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
consciousness [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
control, system of [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
criticism, prohibition on [ref1](#)
five senses [ref1](#)
good and evil, war between [ref1](#)
hidden non-human forces [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Sabbatians [ref1](#)
save me syndrome [ref1](#)
Wetiko [ref1](#)
Wokeness [ref1](#)
repetition and mind control [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
reporting/snitching, encouragement of [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Reptilians/Grey entities [ref1](#)
rewiring the mind [ref1](#)
Rivers, Thomas Milton [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Rockefeller family [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#)
Rockefeller Foundation documents [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
Roman Empire [ref1](#)
Rothschild family [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#)
RT-PCR tests [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)
Russia
 collusion inquiry in US [ref1](#)
Russian Revolution [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Sabbatians [ref1](#)

S

Sabbatian-Frankism [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
 anti-Semitism [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
 banking and finance [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
 China [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
 Israel [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

Judaism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
Lucifer [ref1](#)
media [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Nazis [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
QAnon [ref1](#)
Rothschilds [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)
Russia [ref1](#)
Saudi Arabia [ref1](#)
Silicon Valley [ref1](#)
Sumer [ref1](#)
United States [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
Wetiko factor [ref1](#)
Wokeness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
SAGE (Scientific Advisory Group for Emergencies) [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#),
[ref4](#)
SARS-1 [ref1](#)
SARs-CoV-2 [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)
Satan/Satanism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)
satellites in low-orbit [ref1](#)
Saudi Arabia [ref1](#)
Save Me Syndrome [ref1](#)
scapegoating [ref1](#)
Schwab, Klaus [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#),
[ref11](#), [ref12](#)
science, manipulation of [ref1](#)
self-identity [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
self-respect, attacks on [ref1](#)
September 11, 2001, terrorist attacks on United States [ref1](#), [ref2](#),
[ref3](#), [ref4](#)
77th Brigade of UK military [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
Silicon Valley/tech giants [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#) *see also*
Facebook

Israel [ref1](#)

Sabbatians [ref1](#)

technocracy [ref1](#)

Wetiko factor [ref1](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#)

simulation hypothesis [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

Smart Grid [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

artificial intelligence (AI) [ref1](#)

China [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

control centres [ref1](#)

the Field [ref1](#)

Great Reset [ref1](#)

Human 2.0 [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Israel [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

vaccines [ref1](#)

Wetiko factor [ref1](#)

social disapproval [ref1](#)

social distancing and isolation [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

abusive relationships [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

children [ref1](#)

flats and apartments [ref1](#)

heart issues [ref1](#)

hugs [ref1](#)

Internet [ref1](#)

masks [ref1](#)

media [ref1](#)

older people [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

one-metre (three feet) rule [ref1](#)

rewiring the mind [ref1](#)

simulation, universe as a [ref1](#)

SPI-B [ref1](#)

substance abuse [ref1](#)

suicide and self-harm [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
technology [ref1](#)
torture, as [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
two-metre (six feet) rule [ref1](#)
women [ref1](#)
social justice [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
social media *see also* **Facebook bans on alternative views** [ref1](#)
censorship [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)
children [ref1](#)
emotion [ref1](#)
perception [ref1](#)
private messages [ref1](#)
Twitter [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)
Wetiko factor [ref1](#)
YouTube [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
Soros, George [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)
Spain [ref1](#)
SPI-B (Scientific Pandemic Insights Group on Behaviours) [ref1](#),
[ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
spider and the web [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
Starmer, Keir [ref1](#)
Statute Law [ref1](#)
Steiner, Rudolf [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
Stockholm syndrome [ref1](#)
streptomycin [ref1](#)
suicide and self-harm [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
Sumer [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Sunstein, Cass [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
swine flu (H1N1) [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
synchronicity [ref1](#)
synthetic biology [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
synthetic meat [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

T

technology *see also* **artificial intelligence (AI)**; **Internet**;

social media addiction [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

the cloud [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

cyber-operations [ref1](#)

cyberwarfare [ref1](#)

radiation [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

social distancing and isolation [ref1](#)

technocracy [ref1](#)

Tedros Adhanom Ghebreyesus [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#),
[ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#), [ref11](#), [ref12](#), [ref13](#)

telepathy [ref1](#)

Tenpenny, Sherri [ref1](#)

Tesla, Nikola [ref1](#)

testosterone levels, decrease in [ref1](#)

testing for Covid-19 [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

anal swab tests [ref1](#)

cancer [ref1](#)

China [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Corman-Drosten test [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

death certificates [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

fraudulent testing [ref1](#)

genetic material, amplification of [ref1](#)

Lateral Flow Device (LFD) [ref1](#)

PCR tests [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Thunberg, Greta [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Totalitarian Tiptoe [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

transgender persons

activism [ref1](#)

artificial wombs [ref1](#)

censorship [ref1](#)
child abuse [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Human 2.0 [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
Wokeness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
women, deletion of rights and status of [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
young persons [ref1](#)
travel restrictions [ref1](#)
Trudeau, Justin [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
Trump, Donald [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#),
[ref11](#)
Twitter [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)

U

UKColumn [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
United Nations (UN) [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#) *see also* **Agenda 21/Agenda 2030 (UN)**
United States [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
American Revolution [ref1](#)
borders [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Capitol Hill riot [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
children [ref1](#)
China [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
CIA [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Daily Pass tracking system [ref1](#)
demographics by immigration, changes in [ref1](#)
Democrats [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)
election fraud [ref1](#)
far-right domestic terrorists, pushbackers as [ref1](#)
Federal Reserve [ref1](#)
flu/respiratory diseases statistics [ref1](#)
Global Cult [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
hand sanitisers, FDA warnings on [ref1](#)

immigration, effects of illegal [ref1](#)
impeachment [ref1](#)
Israel [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Judaism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
lockdown [ref1](#)
masks [ref1](#)
mass media [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
nursing homes [ref1](#)
Pentagon [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
police [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
pushbackers [ref1](#)
Republicans [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
borders [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Democrats [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
Russia, inquiry into collusion with [ref1](#)
Sabbatians [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
September 11, 2001, terrorist attacks [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
UFO sightings, release of information on [ref1](#)
vaccines [ref1](#)
white supremacy [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
Woke Democrats [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

V

vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
adverse reactions [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
Africa [ref1](#)
anaphylactic shock [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
animals [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
anti-vax movement [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
AstraZeneca/Oxford [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
autoimmune diseases, rise in [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Big Pharma [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#)

bioweapon, as real [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
black and ethnic minority communities [ref1](#)
blood clots [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Brain Computer Interface (BCI) [ref1](#)
care homes, deaths in [ref1](#)
censorship [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
chief medical officers and scientific advisers, financial interests of
[ref1](#), [ref2](#)
children [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#), [ref10](#)
China [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
clinical trials [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)
compensation [ref1](#)
compulsory vaccinations [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
computer programs [ref1](#)
consciousness [ref1](#)
cover-ups [ref1](#)
creation before Covid [ref1](#)
cytokine storm [ref1](#)
deaths and illnesses caused by vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
definition [ref1](#)
developing countries [ref1](#)
digital tattoos [ref1](#)
DNA-manipulation [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#),
[ref10](#)
emergency approval [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
female infertility [ref1](#)
funding [ref1](#)
genetic suicide [ref1](#)
Global Cult [ref1](#)
heart chakras [ref1](#)
hesitancy [ref1](#)
Human 2.0 [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
immunity from prosecution [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

implantable technology [ref1](#)
Israel [ref1](#)
Johnson & Johnson [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
lockdowns [ref1](#)
long-term effects [ref1](#)
mainstream media [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
masks [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
Medicines and Healthcare products Regulatory Agency (MHRA)
[ref1](#), [ref2](#)
messaging [ref1](#)
Moderna [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)
mRNA vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#)
nanotechnology [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
NHS [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
older people [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
operating system [ref1](#)
passports [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
Pfizer/BioNTech [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)
polyethylene glycol [ref1](#)
pregnant women [ref1](#)
psychopathic personality [ref1](#)
races, targeting different [ref1](#)
reverse transcription [ref1](#)
Smart Grid [ref1](#)
social distancing [ref1](#)
social media [ref1](#)
sterility [ref1](#)
synthetic material, introduction of [ref1](#)
tests [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
travel restrictions [ref1](#)
variants [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
viruses, existence of [ref1](#)
whistle-blowing [ref1](#)

WHO [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
Wokeness [ref1](#)
working, vaccine as [ref1](#)
young people [ref1](#)
Vallance, Patrick [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#)
variants [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
vegans [ref1](#)
ventilators [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
virology [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
virtual reality [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
viruses, existence of [ref1](#)
visual reality [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
vitamin D [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
von Braun, Wernher [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

W

war-zone hospital myths [ref1](#)
waveforms [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
wealth [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#) [ref10](#), [ref11](#)
wet market conspiracy [ref1](#)
Wetiko factor [ref1](#)
 alcoholism and drug addiction [ref1](#)
 anti-human, why Global Cult is [ref1](#)
 Archons [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
 artificial intelligence (AI) [ref1](#)
 Big Pharma [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
 children [ref1](#)
 China [ref1](#)
 consciousness [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
 education [ref1](#)
 Facebook [ref1](#)

fear [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
frequency [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Gates [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Global Cult [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
heart [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
lockdowns [ref1](#)
masks [ref1](#)
Native American concept [ref1](#)
psychopathic personality [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
reframing/retraining programmes [ref1](#)
religion [ref1](#)
Silicon Valley [ref1](#)
Smart Grid [ref1](#)
smartphone addiction [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
social media [ref1](#)
war [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
WHO [ref1](#)
Wokeness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
Yaldabaoth [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
whistle-blowing [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)
white privilege [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
white supremacy [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
Whitty, Christopher [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#),
[ref10](#)
‘who benefits’ [ref1](#)
Wi-Fi [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
Wikipedia [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Wojcicki, Susan [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#)
Wokeness
 Antifa [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
 anti-Semitism [ref1](#)
 billionaire social justice warriors [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Capitol Hill riot [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
censorship [ref1](#)
Christianity [ref1](#)
climate change hoax [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
culture [ref1](#)
education, control of [ref1](#)
emotion [ref1](#)
facts [ref1](#)
fascism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
Global Cult [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
group-think [ref1](#)
immigration [ref1](#)
indigenous people, solidarity with [ref1](#)
inversion [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
left, hijacking the [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
Marxism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
mind control [ref1](#)
New Woke [ref1](#)
Old Woke [ref1](#)
Oneness [ref1](#)
perceptual programming [ref1](#)
 Phantom Self [ref1](#)
police [ref1](#)
defunding the [ref1](#)
reframing [ref1](#)
public institutions [ref1](#)
Pushbackers [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
racism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
reframing [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
religion, as [ref1](#)
Sabbatians [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
Silicon Valley [ref1](#)
social justice [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)

transgender [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)
United States [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
vaccines [ref1](#)
Wetiko factor [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
young people [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
women, deletion of rights and status of [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
World Economic Forum (WEF) [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#),
[ref8](#), [ref9](#)
World Health Organization (WHO) [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#),
[ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#)
AIDs/HIV [ref1](#)
amplification cycles [ref1](#)
Big Pharma [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
cooperation in health emergencies [ref1](#)
creation [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
fatality rate [ref1](#)
funding [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)
Gates [ref1](#)
Internet [ref1](#)
lockdown [ref1](#)
vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
Wetiko factor [ref1](#)
world number 1 (masses) [ref1](#), [ref2](#)
world number 2 [ref1](#)
Wuhan [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#) [ref8](#)

Y

Yaldabaoth [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#)
Yeadon, Michael [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#)
young people *see also* children addiction to technology [ref1](#)
Human 2.0 [ref1](#)
vaccines [ref1](#), [ref2](#)

Wokeness [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

YouTube [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#)

WHO 548

Z

Zaks, Tal [ref1](#)

Zionism [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#)

Zuckerberg, Mark [ref1](#), [ref2](#), [ref3](#), [ref4](#), [ref5](#), [ref6](#), [ref7](#), [ref8](#), [ref9](#),
[ref10](#), [ref11](#), [ref12](#)

Zulus [ref1](#)



Ickonic is something that has been a dream of mine for the last 5 years, growing up around alternative information I have always had a natural interest in what is going on in the World and what could I do to make it better.

Across the range of subjects and positions of influence occupied mainly by people who don't strive to make things better it's the Media that I have always found the most frustrating and fascinating. Mainly because if the Media did their Jobs properly then so much of the negative things happening in the World simply would not be able to happen, because they would be exposed within a heartbeat.

Free Press and the Opportunities that the internet could have given would mean that the Media are able to expose things like never before and hold people to account for their actions. As we all know there are 'Untouchables' that walk among us, people the Media simply won't touch, expose or investigate and that leads to the dark underworlds that infest the establishment the World over. Well I say enough, it's time for something different, a different kind of Media, where no one is off limits from exposing and investigating. All we're interested in at Ickonic is the truth of what is really going on in the World on whichever subject we're covering.

We hope you enjoy what we have created and take something away from the platform, we aim to deliver information that's informative and most importantly self-empowering, you're not a little person, you're part of something much bigger than that and its time we as a collective race began to understand that and look to the future as ours to take.

It's time...

Jaymie Icke - Founder Ickonic Alternative Media.

SIGN UP NOW AT ICKONIC.COM

DAVID ICKE
THE ANSWER



We live in extraordinary times with billions bewildered and seeking answers for what is happening. David Icke, the man who has been proved right again and again, has spent 30 years uncovering the truth behind world affairs and in a stream of previous books he predicted current events.

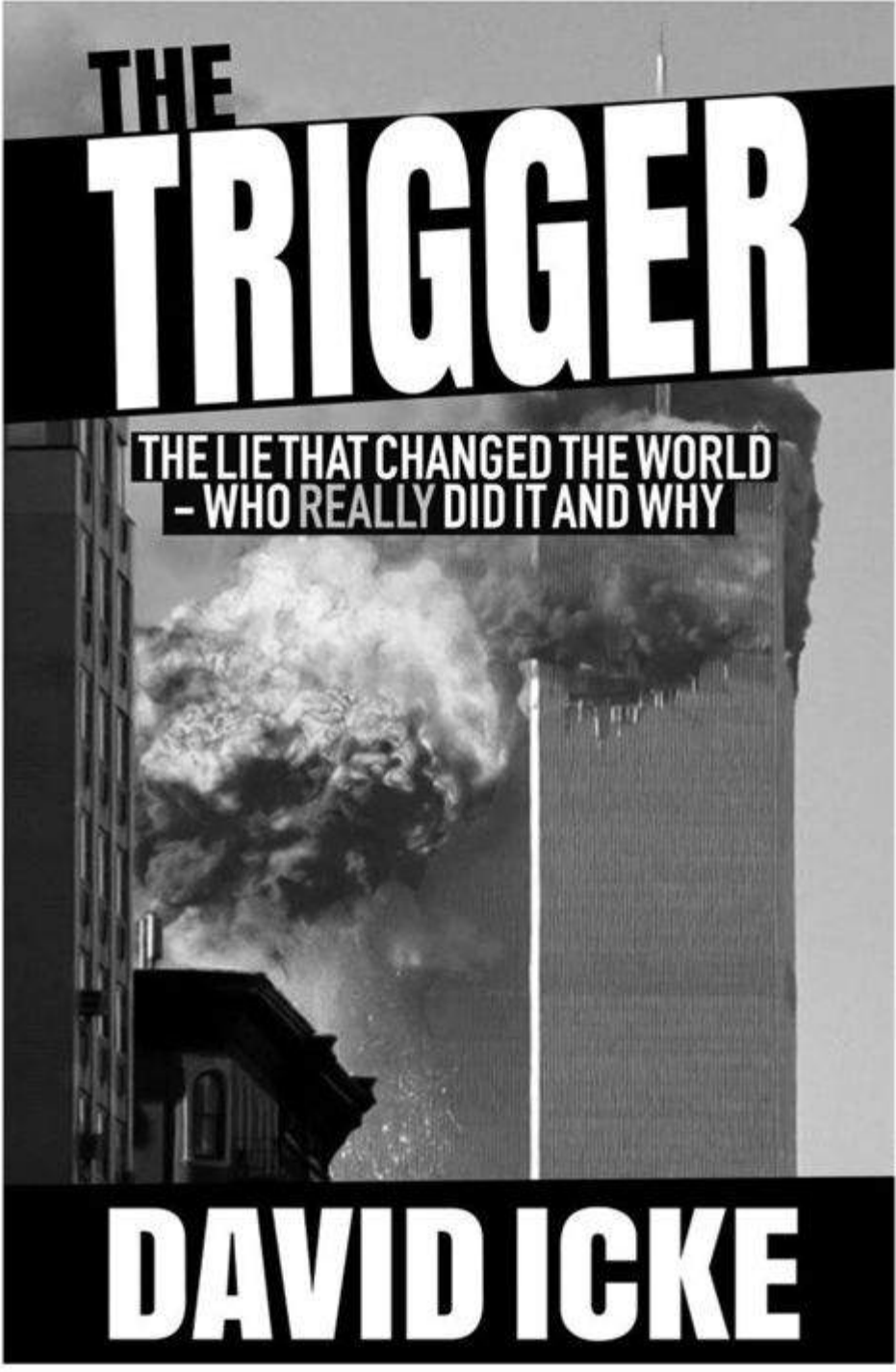
The Answer will change your every perception of life and the world and set you free of the illusions that control human society. There is nothing more vital for our collective freedom than humanity becoming aware of what is in this book.

Available now at davidicke.com.

THE

TRIGGER

**THE LIE THAT CHANGED THE WORLD
- WHO REALLY DID IT AND WHY**

A black and white photograph of the World Trade Center towers on September 11, 2001. The towers are shown from a low angle, with a large, dark, billowing cloud of smoke and dust rising from the base of the towers. The sky is a uniform grey. The image is framed by a black border at the top and bottom, which contains the title and author's name.

DAVID ICKE

**EVERYTHING
YOU NEED
TO KNOW**

BUT HAVE NEVER BEEN TOLD

DAVID ICKE

DAVIDICKE.COM



DAVID ICKE STORE
LATEST NEWS ARTICLES
DAVID ICKE VIDEOS
WEEKLY DOT-CONNECTOR PODCASTS
LIVE EVENTS

WWW.DAVIDICKE.COM

364

THE LIFE STORY OF DAVID ICKE

RENEGADE

THE FEATURE LENGTH FILM

/ren·i·geɪd/

noun

A person who behaves in a rebelliously unconventional manner.



AVAILABLE NOW AT DAVIDICKE.COM

2 NEW BOOKS
BY NEIL HAGUE

ORION'S DOOR

SYMBOLS OF CONSCIOUSNESS & BLUEPRINTS OF CONTROL
- THE STORY OF ORION'S INFLUENCE OVER HUMANITY

CUTTING EDGE VISIONARY ART
& UNIQUE ILLUSTRATED BOOKS

NEIL HAGUE

FOR
BOOKS, PRINTS & T-SHIRTS

VISIT:

NEILHAGUEBOOKS.COM

OR NEILHAGUE.COM



Before you go ...

For more detail, background and evidence about the subjects in *Perceptions of a Renegade Mind* – and so much more – see my others books including *And The Truth Shall Set You Free*; *The Biggest Secret*; *Children of the Matrix*; *The David Icke Guide to the Global Conspiracy*; *Tales from the Time Loop*; *The Perception Deception*; *Remember Who You Are*; *Human Race Get Off Your Knees*; *Phantom Self*; *Everything You Need To Know But Have Never Been Told*, *The Trigger* and *The Answer*.

You can subscribe to the fantastic new Ickonic media platform where there are many hundreds of hours of cutting-edge information in videos, documentaries and series across a whole range of subjects which are added to every week. This includes my 90 minute breakdown of the week's news every Friday to explain *why* events are happening and to what end.